

[6/3, 11:11] Lynne: Page 01

I could hear the sound of the rain pouring outside, the thunderbolt. I could tell there was a big storm. The pouring shower water was nothing compared to what was outside, the water was doing a good job in washing away my tears. I could not stop scrubbing my body, the abhorrence in my soul was getting bigger by seconds. I knew for sure that I hated myself, maybe if I didn't have such a tempting body, I wouldn't be subjected to such abuse and cruelty. After that shower I wore my clothes and mask. The man who I had just sexual pleased was laying there on that bed I never wanted to see again. To save the little dignity I had left, I left quietly. At the age of 17 I had slept with enough men a 71 years old whore would have slept with. But I had to make a living and survive too in this jungle of wolves. I had to hold on just a little bit longer if I wanted to make it till the end. By midnight I reached my apartment, I was one of the best places in the Kasi neighborhood. It was a 7 floors building. And the apartments were

an open plan. It was nothing classic but it was a roof over my head, right. I made myself a cup of coffee, I needed the extra energy to study. I was doing grade 12 and it was the mid-term. Even today I still cannot believe that I shut down every memory of the bitter life when it was time to study. At 3Am on the dot I went to sleep but as usual I took my anti-depressant capsule. Three hours of sleep wasn't enough for a student who was about to write an examination, but it ain't like I had a choice. I liked to remind myself that when the going gets tough, the tough gets going and I was the toughest.

Exactly at 600hrs my my vibrating alarm vibrated. I wore my jogging pants and vest. Thanks God it was the examination month so I had 1hr and 30 minutes on my side. I hit the unending road, most of the people were still asleep, some jogging just like I was, some driving to work. Like the plumbing team which was fixing the bursted water pipe four houses down my apartment. As usual when I was jogging back I had the typical steer's, deep down in my gut I knew I

wasn't the favorite of most of the women in the Kasi neighborhood, as they call it. The reason for that was probably because their husbands had their eyes on me Everytime I walked by. Some had apparently approached me, asking about how I afforded to live in such a place, as usual I'd tell 'em my aunt from overseas was paying for it. If the people came to know i sold my body for a living, they'd surely kick me out of the neighborhood or worse burn me to ashes like the old lady who suffered such a misfortune a few months ago because he was apparently caught practising witchcraft.

[6/3, 11:12] Lynne: Page 02

The examination wasn't hard nor easy but I nailed it anyways. I was on my way home when my favorite teacher, miss Knight called me to ask about the examination. "As I was saying star if you don't get that 90%, I will deprive you of that badge. Don't disappoint me please" she said warningly. She was the coolest teacher in the whole school. Everybody loved her. " Miss K, You ain't getting that badge back,

it's mine. " I said smiling." I know you won't ever disappoint me star but please don't let your success get into your head just focus on the bright picture. OK?"

She said patting my shoulder. " I won't miss K, can I go now... You know I have to catch a taxi right" I said glancing at my wrist watch. "Ok, don't forget what we talked about. " She said a little bit louder because I was more than a few inches away.

As usual I took a taxi home. I watched as the rich kids were being fetched by their drivers and parents. I could have been one of the if only my father was I sane man. If only my mother was alive, if only I hadn't killed her allegedly accused. Even though I wasn't from a rich family, I still managed to get into one of the best school around Africa, The Harmonic Paradise Secondary School. The owner or the founder of the school chooses ten best students and gives them free education and I happened to be chosen. I was chosen a year & 4 months ago when I was still living with my father and my stepmother.

Who also happens to be my aunt. The school also sponsors free university bursaries to ten best students once again and I had to work hard if I wanted out of the dirty life I was living.

By 2pm on the dot I reached my apartment. I was starving so I had my 1% fat frozen yogurt . I was busy making green salad while eating when my business phone beeped. It was a message from Dolly, my rank manager, the one and only woman who introduced me to this business. I read the message and I couldn't believe my eyes. Hotel Paradise, The one and only hotel Paradisé . I've heard other prostitutes talk about it, apparently it's one of the best in the city. Considering the fact that it was the capital city, the hotel could be The best in the country. The men's details were there. Mr Salvatore. Room 225 and the address. I wondered if the surname was for real or not because most of the client used fake names and it was a good thing to hide their identity because most of the were married or renowned business man or either politicians. I

looked at the details once more. He had paid for 3 hours, it's funny how I didn't even know the payment in details but I was the one who was going to be grinding and faking orgasms. I noted that I had 3 hours till the time to get ready and go.

[6/3, 11:12] Lynne: I took the 2hrs to study and the remaining hour to get ready and go. I was in my little skin tight red dress, thigh high black 4inch hills boots. Made an effort in putting on makeup, which by the way I didn't like. I made sure to wear my ballroom mask and my overcoat because my outfit was beyond inappropriate. By 5:30 I was done and the cab was waiting for me outside the building. It was cloudy and drizzling.

The car dropped me off at The Hotel Paradise 5:55. I got out and the hotel usher welcomed me, I went over to the receptionist who was on the telephone by the way, I put my hand bag on the counter. "Yes ma'am, how can I help you"she asked. "Well, I'm here to meet Mr Salvatore" I said tapping on my foot. "Do you have an appointment?"she asked impatiently

and there was this look on her face that I couldn't fathom."look miss, sir doesn't meet strangers without an appointment, so you might as well go back to where ever you came from. I'm sorry"she said fixing her lipstick."but look, your sir is..."

"Excuse me miss" a voice said from behind me. "You must be starlight... You are here to meet Mr Salvatore, right?" The voice said and i turned around to find the ganetor standing there."Yes I'm Starlight. Do you know where I can find Mr Salvatore." I asked walking towards him with my hand bag. "Follow me miss sir is waiting for you" he said. "Wait, Mike... How come I do not know about this and where do you think you are going"that was the receptionist. "look Bianca, we do not want to keep sir Waiting now do we... We both know what will happen if he gets angry now, don't we? And non of us wants to lose our jobs. So Let me just do what I was ordered to do. Miss follow me, please" he said and if anger could actually make people burst literally, I would have said. She was bursting with anger. We walked over to the elevator and he pressed the top floor button.

A few seconds later it opened and we entered. It was kind of awkward and the tension was so thick that you could actually cut it with a knife. " I am Mike by the way and don't mind Bianca, all she knows is to just bark but she doesn't bite, I promise" he said. I tried to hold myself but I could not help but laugh, the Mike guy was literally calling her a dog indirectly. " Do you realize that you just called her a Dog" I asked giggling. " I ,I didn't mean...by the way I like your mask, were you at some fancy party..." And then the elevator opened. "This is it for me, room 255 is on the left side of the lobby. Have a good night" he said before the elevator closed. I was standing at the door of the room marked 255, I was 5 minutes late by the way. I rang the door bell the heard a faint voice shouting" come in" . I went inside and wow, talk of heaven on earth. The room was ridiculously huge. The design was furniture in gold and royal blue. The room or should I say the house because from where I was standing I could only see the sitting room, dining room and the kitchen. I could hear the shower water running... I looked around. The kitchen was amazing and modern. Now I knew

why the girls were dying to get clients from the hotel Paradisé, a thought crossed my mind. I sat down in the sitting room and waited for whom ever was in the shower to come out. And 15 minutes later I had foot steps, I was really starting to get annoyed. " I didn't know that you actually really wear those masks" As voice said, I mean the voice. It was so soothing, tender, I could go on but it actually did some wonders on my body. Somethings I could not figure out." Hi, I'm Salvatore. You might know me" he said and I stood up, his presence demanded respect. Mind you, he had a towel only wrapped around his waist. As if that wasn't very shocking enough, he had to be white and so, so, so gorgeous. Such beautiful in a man, it felt like crime to Even look at him. His eyes...

[6/3, 11:19] Lynne: The hazel green colour in them seemed to get me drawn." You might want to take a picture,you know. It will Last longer." He said, bringing me back to planet earth. Bringing me back to the main reason I was there, my duty was to certify him sexual not to drool or fantasise like I was.

" Hi I'm Starlight, you'd be in control or should I be, baby" I asked seductively while putting my hands around his neck. " I'm sure that's not even your real name, Starlight?. Oh come on just cut the crap." He said smiling, it was as if he just said something nice. "I'm going to get something to wear" he said removing my arms around his neck. Off he was gone. I sat back down once again, it was strange. Why would you put your clothes on, only to take them off in a few minutes. Think Cora think, my inner self screamed. What is going on here? . Ok, I had to get my acting straight. He came back a few minutes later, in white track pants and a see through unbuttoned white shirt, he was walking on barefoot. " Ok, look, you only have two hours left. So are we going to do this or not. What size are you, I've got small, media, large... which one are you. " I asked, impatiently taking the condoms out from my hand bag and flashing them Infront on his face. " Neither... You really don't want to know my size. Go and take a shower and then we can talk about what you are here for...." He said sitting down on a couch, so relaxed. "Your wish is my command sir" I said so

irritated. But I obeyed because it was his time and he had payed for it. And I knew very well what happened to girls who didn't please the client.page 03 coming soon. Please like, share and comment

[6/3, 14:24] Lynne: Page 03

The bathroom, ohh my goodness the bathroom was out of this world. It was heaven on earth, it also had a jacuzzi. I took a short shower then made sure to wear my mask. The Don might have been the most evil men I've ever met but he made sure to protect our Identity in the community. He'd let us have most of the hours to ourselves. It was like he knew we needed him more than he needed us. Some of us had made prostitution a sport. Sometimes I just wondered if my way out would work because once you were in there was no way out unless you got sold to the highest bidder. I wore the shirt that was played for me on the bed as I got out, there was a note written wear this.i then went to the sitting room, he was sitting in the dinner table with all kinds of food layed on the table. "Come here, I ordered some

refreshments and snacks." He said and I obeyed. "I must say my shirt looks good on you" he said but there was this edge to his voice that I couldn't pin point, is he being sarcastic. My inner self asked but I brushed that thought off and joined him on the table. " Mr Salvatore, what is it that you want... if you are not going to have sex with me then why am I here?" I asked alerted...

[6/3, 14:25] Lynne: " I just needed someone to talk to, I just got divorced you know. Who does she think she is divorcing me, Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore. I gave that women everything. Well of course except love...how does that matter" he kept on going on about his wife, it was more of him talking to himself than me. "Why did you marry her then? I mean if you don't love her. Why marry her" I cut him off. " Everybody was doing it so... I mean I'm 33 years old so why not get married and how does that matter anyway. I gave her everything even though she couldn't bear me a child.... Anyway have some food it's getting cold. " I might not know a thing about love but there is one thing I know for sure women love to

be loved and love." I said having some snacks. It was more like food to me. " By the way why did you choose me...I mean to talk to" I asked uncomfortably shrugging. " There is something about you that drew my spirit. You seemed not to belong... You must be 18,right?" He said." I'd be turning 18 this coming month." I said shortly. I glanced at my watch for a while " by the way you have 60 minutes left." I said, there was this knot twisting in my tummy. " Let us go in bed then." He said taking my hand. What were you thinking Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo. Every man is the same, they all just want one thing don't they. My inner self screamed saddened. I felt tears threatening to come out but I held them just in time. He opened the bed covers and got in. I also did. We were facing each other so closely. He was 15 years older than me, very old but better than the other man I'd shared a bed with, why does it matter anyway. I just had to close my eyes and get it over and done with.i thought to myself. " I hate to sleep alone so, you'd be here until I fall asleep. Do not worry your pretty self. I'm not going to touch you" he said brushing my cheek as if he had just read my

thoughts. I smiled awkwardly. " I like your hair." He said getting closer, that day I figured it was more easier to have sex with a man than to get that close to one. I had blonde hair with a touch of dark brown but I'd just dye it black and curl it up most of the time. " Thanks" that's all I managed to say. I did not like the topic of my hair. It was the one thing that I got from that evil man I used to call my father and ohh the eyes too. " So what made your wife leave you, I mean. If she knew from the beginning that she was not to get the love that she wanted. Why would she..."

I asked. " I know what you mean, she met someone. They were more like friends. I don't know how come I didn't see it coming" he was once again talking to himself. "Maybe you just didn't care enough to see what was going on. I mean why would you care for something you do not even love. It's only logical to..." He cut me off by brushing my cheek. " You are such a beautiful woman... your eyes reflect so much pain and suffering, sadness" he said looking at me so closely with emotions I couldn't get. " But they also reflect a strong, intelligent, kind-hearted woman" he

added." So now you are psycho analysing me... it's weird. It's weird don't you think?" I asked giggling uncomfortably. " Your lips are looks so kissable too" he said running his course finger on my lips. He then came closer, I couldn't help but close my eyes. His lips took mine, they were so soft and tender. "What are you doing, you are not allowed to kiss a client" my inner self asked shaking. My mouth automatically granted his tongue to enter. It was like he knew the code to every corner and the access was granted. He hands on my waist sent chills and electrical shock down my spine. I didn't even realize that the shirt was off. His hands on my boob. Rubbing on my nipple which was already hard for him. The next minute he was down there. Nibbling and kissing me so tenderly. The next thing I knew I was soaking wet and shaking like a dynamite.i was screaming his surname and begging. Whatever he was doing to me felt so great and my body and soul didn't want him to stop. My brain which I trusted so well to come to my rescue didn't seem to be functioning well at that time.

[6/3, 14:25] Lynne: Page 04

The next thing I knew he was out of bed and I was busy begging him to have me right there and then. He plainly refused, saying I didn't know what I was saying as if I was high on some drug or something. Maybe he was right a part of me thought, whatever he was doing to me I wanted more of it like I never needed anything. The same me would never beg a man for his touch, the same me resented men, she was scared of men. There was something different about him, he made me feel so alive and bad at the same time. I was left alone on those bed sheets for almost 15 minutes a moment later he came back with a damp cloth and wiped me clean. No words were exchanged, I felt so exposed. He then went away with the cloth and came back again this time he got undercovers... I was still naked and he was in his white pants only. He had tattoos on his arms, hairy chest, the abs and the six pack that could last for a lifetime. But why hadn't he made love to me, no I meant fuck me

because we prostitutes had no right to be made love to. We were loose whores at the end of the day, right?. He was right next to me, his face six inches away from mine. " Can I see you face?" He asked, but it all came out as a whisper to me. I had forgotten I wore a mask, he had no right to ask that of me, he had none, why would he ask me that when he knew very well that my body and soul was under his spell. " Please " he begged. And I saw my hands reaching out for the knot at the back of my head. Just like that, the mask was off and he was caressing my face. " You are more beautiful than I thought." He said.

[6/3, 14:25] Lynne: I don't know when I felt asleep but when I woke up it was 3 am in the morning, I had spent more time than he had payed for. And why I'd never know. I was laying on his chest, he was so deep in his sleep that he didn't hear me leave the bed. I wrote a note then left. Usually I would have took a shower but it was too risky, that men could ask me to hang myself and I'd do it without even thinking twice. He had this dangerous hold over me, I

could not help myself around him. I took a meter taxi home. I arrived at 4 am on the dot. I took a two hour of sleep, my body was kind of aching, two hours later I woke up and took a 30 minutes jog and later on a bath. By 7:10 I was waiting for a cab to school, thanks God we were only going to revise computer science and technology or else I would have failed if we were going to write the actual paper. I reached school at 8:00. I was 1 hour early," Hey Zee, I called you yesterday night but you didn't answer. I needed your help on my Life orientation project." That was Amanda Timber, my friend, well recently. She and I meet one month ago through miss Knight. She was a new student and I was asked to show her around. Well she kept on nagging me after that and I couldn't get rid of her. That's how we became friends, she was a year younger than me and white too. She was so alive and lovely, so bright well not so bright when it came to pen and paper but that's why I was in her life, right. " I went to bed early last night, sorry" I said hugging her. " But Zee, the deadline is tomorrow morning and I haven't got a lot done. What will I do. my parents will kill me. God I'm so suspended from

school once again" she kept on going on. Well she had been suspended from 4 schools in the last two years. Her parents were never around that much but they made sure she had everything she needed. She had the mansion to herself. " You could come with me to my apartment and then I will help you with your project before I go to work" I said. All the necessary people in my life thoughts that I was working at some eatery in town and I intended to keep it that way. "Ohh thank you Zee, you are the best friend in the whole world." She said kissing me all over my face...

Salvatore's POV

I woke up at 4am, the bed shirts were no longer warm as they were when I went to sleep last night. I took a shower as usual then had breakfast. When I went back to the bedroom, I noticed something I hadn't seen when I woke up. There was a little written paper , I picked it up and read it. It was

written: YOU ARE A GOOD MAN SALVATORE AND DON'T BOTHER LOOKING FOR ME BECAUSE YOU WON'T FIND ME. It magically put a smile on my face, " I sure wouldn't, like hell I would have" I thought to myself. My phone rang, the caller ID was written, Telescope." Sure, what's the good news?" I asked. " Boss, we have found the snitch, guess who it is" he said." I don't have time for jokes Kevin, just do your fucking job and tell me who it is this instant moment" I said through my gritted teeth." Hade bozza, well it's has been your right man all along, lone wolf. Boss, so what do we do now." He asked. " Make sure he comes to my house warming tonight, go to the mortuary and fetch me his mother's body. I need it at my basement by the time I get there, before my guests get there. I want to see the bustards face when I make him eat his mother's long dead vagina" I said then switched off my phone

[6/3, 14:26] Lynne: Page 05

Cora's pov

"Code 5, be at the department at 6pm sharp" that was the message I got from Dolly, my rank manager. Well, the Don, my boss had about five ranks of prostitution. The first rank had those he trusted the most and who had been with him for a long time and who did a job well done. It was like in school, you get your pass certificate and done, you're in the next best rank. The money was better as you were going up. In each rank there were about a total of 20 girls or more but not more than 25. Every rank had an assigned manager and for my rank it was Dolly. She was 35 years of age on my guess. The Don had an internet web site where by he gets to advertise us his girls as he would call us. The deals were made there, it had all the unholy trinity you could think of, each rank has a max of a month to be on the web and be bought, each rank had a month to there. While you are not on the web, it was the street prostitution or strip clubs or the bachelor parties. My rank month ended Last night. The Don also had tracking devices inserted in the back of our heads.

There was no escaping that life. I looked at the message one last time." See... Thanks wasn't so hard now, was it." I asked slightly hitting Amanda's head. We had come back from school and she was at my crib, doing her project." Hey don't hit my head like that...it was hard ok." She whined like a baby." It's all in your brain Amanda... There's nothing so hard, climate change just needs your general knowledge. Even if you went to Google it would have told you the same thing" I said chewing on my non fat cheese sandwich. "I wish I was like you, no actually I wish I was you. Look at your eyes, your flawless skin, your huge behind, your wide hips. Your bread..." . "ok stop it, I'm so sick of this. Everybody wants to be me but they don't know me, you don't know me. You don't know what I went through, what I'm going through. What I have to face behind the closed doors. I'm an orphan for God's sake ..." Ok, by the look on her face I realized I had just said enough. there was a thick tension for a while. "I'm sorry.... didn't mean to shout. It's just that I get so emotional when the..." I couldn't finish, i could feel tears threatening to come out but like a big girl I was

I held them in.

[6/3, 14:26] Lynne: Salvatore's POV

The house was at the sea view, in fact I had my own private beach side. It was Australian designed, on the mountain top, you could actually jump from the pool to the sea. It had five bedrooms and seven bathroom. An open plan garage which could fit about six cars max. It was every family man's dream except the fact that I was not a family man. It was around 7 o'clock when the guests arrived. The basement was long set up. I was in my office with my business partners when, we were discussing some business. "so as I was saying the merchandise will be arriving around 9:00 tonight. As for you Tony there is no extra merchandise you will be getting. I'm charging you for your last mistake, gentlemen make sure that your buyers stay the hell away from me or else you will suffer the consequences like Tony." I said standing up from the chair. "Kong my man, come one. How would I have known that that junkie would get in contact with you. Come on my man." He

said. " Gentlemen my work here is done ,if you'd excuse me." I said getting out."kong my man come on..." He begged following me." Stop begging like a fucking wet pussy and man up. And if I were you I'd be careful, things could get a lot worse than this" I said patting his shoulder. " What could be worse than this" he asked chuckling ."who knows, you could wake up in hell instead of earth" I said then left. The entertainment was full of guests, my business partners on the good side of the law. "Guys I hope you are enjoying the party and of course the booze the only thing that's missing is just some strippers for us the single man" I said faking a giggle." Boss the basement is ready, lone wolf is already there." Telescope whispered in to my ear." Ladies and gentlemen if you'd excuse me" I said leaving the entertainment. The basement was dimmer in light than the whole house. There was a table set for two there. He was already sitting down, the barstard had the nerve to double cross me, The King Kong. After I picked him up from the streets, raised him up like he was my own brother. Too bad I was so fond of him.

"Kong, my man" he said standing up to give me a shoulder hug." Hey kid, how have you been holding up. You know since the mall incident." I asked not really interested. "I'm trying brother... Why are we hear." He asked as we were sitting down. "I just wanted to let you know how much I appreciate you and your royalty to me and my business.i thought we should have dinner together,as brothers" I said looking him straight in the eyes. There was some hidden rage,fear and sadness in them." So shall we dig in," I asked while unveiling my dish. 10 minutes later he said" wow brother, you must have hired one of your Italian chefs. The steak is so tender and scrumptious." He complicated. "I'm glad you still enjoy sucking on your mother's breasts, brother. One thing I did not know is that you also enjoy eating old wrinkled dead flesh. " I said wiping my lips while flashing him one of my best smiles." You are kidding right" he said chuckling unbelievably. "If this is one of those faces I wear when I am kidding than you can continue eating your tender steak." I said than stood up. "You twisted barstard. You motherfuc..... He could not even finish saying that, the next thing I

knew he was puking all over the place. Then he came on charging on me but with just one punch he was on the floor with a bleeding nose. "Do you know how much money I've lost because of your ass. The whole container Carlos. My fucking cocaine, you two faced snitching barstard. " I shouted holding him by his shirt collar. " You killed my mother you devil's advocate. The only family I had left." He shouted back. Well a week ago there was a shooting at the mall between my guys and our business rivals. His mother happened to be there and he was accidentally shot. We were not sure who shot him exactly. " Telescope, I want his eyes and tongue ASAP. I

My work here is done.

[6/3, 14:27] Lynne: Cora's pov

Well I had gone to the meeting earlier that day, when Amanda had just left. The meeting was about how to attract clients. The new tips in the game and about what what we were assigned to do in within the few

months we were offline. I was assigned to working in the streets for the two months the third month was my leave and I was to work in the strip club the next one. It was going to be my first time working in the strip club. The Don had so about six clubs in town and four of them had strippers. It was twelve in the middle of the night and I was preparing for my last English examination paper. I thought crossed my mind or more like someone crossed my mind. Salvatore , since that night he had been intoxicated my brain. His masculine body, his eyes lastly but not least, what he did to me. I found myself unconsciously biting my lips. " Who are you kidding Cora" my inner self asked in disappointment. " He is not your and he will never be. You are just a little prostitute" another thought stinged my mind. I knew from then that I had to forget about that night, he had already did anyways. It's was 0100hrs in the morning and I was feeling sleepy, so I took a shower before going to sleep.

Salvatore's POV

The merchandise was delivered and distributed without any hustles. The party went well, and Telescope's crippled body was delivered to some NGO in town. But still there was something wrong with my sleep, I couldn't shake the feeling that it had to do with that girl but I ignored the feeling. In the morning I woke up and took a jog with my bodyguards behind me, the only difference was that they were in the car. I liked to jog, it cleared my mind just a bit. I had my breakfast and shower within 30 minutes. The my phone had to ring just when I was wearing my pants. " Papa" I answered laughing." Hey don't call me that you son of a bitc...of a gun" he almost choked." You know you were right the first time" I said not so laughing. " She is still your mother you know" he said seriously. I put my phone on loud speaker then continued with what I was doing. "Let's not talk about that, not now... Anyways how can I help you?" I asked. " Can't a father call his son without being suspected of asking for something" he asked in a husky voice. " Ohh come on father, I know

you like I know the mole on my ass" I said chuckling." You are still a son of a gun, you motherfudge" he said I couldn't help but laugh. He had this gentleman code within him. " Anyways your little brother called, he's hosting an engagement party. He asked for your presence." He said on a serious note." I knew it... anyways tell him I'll be busy on that day" I said putting my wrist watch on." Don't be a jerk, you don't even know the date" he said and I could tell, the old man was pissed. " I'll be busy on what ever date he'd choose. He is my half brother by the way. His mother left me on your doorstep the same day I was born." I said emotionless. "Don't be a baby, that was 33years ago besides the last time I checked you and your brothers and sister were in good terms. So what's this new drama about." He asked. " I was just pulling your leg. email me the date and I'll see what I can do or just tell Siboniso to call me" I said then hung up, just to get under the old man's skin. He hated it when people hung up on him. I had two half brothers and a sister. My so called mother was working for my father a few years ago, as a maid. She was married to my siblings father,

Dlamini. They had one son, Sandile. Who does not like me that much by the way. My father fell in love with her, then she fell pregnant, few days earlier before I was born she found out that my father was a thug. That's the reason why she left me at his doorstep the daily was born. She went back to her husband who she was planning to leave before she found out that my father was a thug. A part of me resented that women but some still said she was my mother. An hour later I was at the club Paradisé, checking the stock and the monthly income book and not forgetting the cameras. Cameras were a crucial part of the business, if you were in my type of business line.

Cora's pov

I had been two hours since I've been standing on the streets, there were set up spots where we were told to be. There was a set up tent near the road. We were ten there, the stars and the moon were shining so bright. The only stable thing in my life. I remembered the time my aunt and I used to stay on

the porch for a full hour just to watch the stars and moon with a bowl of popcorn. Just before my world came crumbling and crushing down on me.

[6/3, 14:27] Lynne: Page 06

Cora's pov

An hour later I got a client and we drove to his house in some fancy neighborhood. He seemed scared. Like it was his first time with a hooker. "Relax sweetheart, I'm gonna take good care of you" I whispered to his ear, we were now in his room. I seductively pushed him to his bed and got on top of him. " "I'm gonna take good care of you" I said taking his pants off. " Ohhk" he said in a Shakey voice. I did what I was payed for and took a taxi him the morning. Since the schools were closed I had plenty of time to myself. I was blasting my whole apartment with some music, just to rewind a bit. I was singing in the shower. After that shower I wore my tight skinny jeans and my knitted sweater and

sneakers. I was to go to town in the afternoon to buy my monthly groceries and necessities since I got my monthly payment last night. The weather was quite chilly that day. I made a mental note to go to church on Sunday since it was Saturday. I tried by every means to make my life normal. If didn't I was surely going to go crazy. I did some studying for the next coming term. It was very helpful for me to study early because I had less hours to myself then the rest of the students. 3hours later I was done. I decided to walk to the main road and take a taxi from there, since I couldn't have my usual morning jog that day.

Salvatore's POV

"Come on Telescope, it's not like she is a CIA agent or something. She is just a mare girl, I need you to find her. If you cannot do your job properly just let me know. I'll hire someone who can" I said pissed off. Telescope was personal investigator, who could find just about anyone, anywhere , anything without a snap of a finger. But that day he failed miserably, I

had asked him to find out where the women I hired a few days ago lived and who exactly she was. I know she had told me that her name was starlight but that sounded like pure bullshit to me. Since that night I have been turning and tossing in my bed. She had this hold over me that I couldn't fathom. I wanted answer, I wanted to get it over and done with. I was not the kind of man to get attached to things let alone a women and she was worse than that, which drove me even more farther mad. I could see her light brown eyes and hair, what nonsense was that. I could still feel her soft lips against mine, it was such a torment. "Boss , I'm working on it but there's nothing on this woman your talking about. The web address you gave me have got new girls which were uploaded the night you were with her. The picture we drew doesn't match any of these girl. The cab on the cameras is owned by The Don, it appears. I couldn't get much information from the driver, bribe didn't work. She is not on social media either. Are you sure she is even alive" he explained." I don't pay you to question me, just do what I pay you for Kevin" I said then hung up. I should have known that she was

working for the Don, of course the looks, the neatness. She was pure, only The Don owned clean hookers, he didn't want his girls on drugs either way she didn't seem like someone who would waste her life on drugs even if she had the right to.s he looked like a smart girl. She was smart indeed to have me thinking about her nonstop. 4hours later I was taking a shower in my new house when my mobile phone rang, I quickly got out of the shower and wrapped a towel around my waist, it was on my bed. I took it and answered on the second ring." Hello" I said . " Big brother, are you Still coming to the party or what" Siboniso asked, there was too much noise in the background and he sounded drunk. " ,Shit the party, what time is it" I asked searching for my wrist watch." It's 7:00 pm bro relax. There's a lot of booze here. Just bring your ass." He said giggling but I really didn't Catch the joke. " Ok I'll be there in a jiffy" I said then hung up on him. Let me take two more hours to myself. My inner self said arrogantly. An hour later

[6/3, 14:28] Lynne: An hour later I was done

preparing my Italian dinner. I had my dinner than freshened up to hit the party. I could use some destruction, I haven't been myself lately. It took me an hour to get to the venue, Siboniso had booked the whole restaurant in the neighborhood they lived in. He was a university lecturer. Sandile was an engineer. They lived a normal life while I on the other side had to look behind my back when ever I was out. Sandile was married to a school teacher Monella , while Siboniso was recently engaged. I on the other side was divorced and single. The restaurant was blasting with music. There were a lot of black people, I noticed a few whited and coloured, while I on the other side didn't know which race I deleted in because my mother was coloured while my dad was white but I looked more white than coloured. In fact there was nothing that showed that my mother was coloured. When I was little my father sent me to live in Italy with my grandma and grandpa. I came back when I was seventeen and done with highscool that was when I met Kyle and fell in love but that's a story for another day. I was standing on the door way when I saw Siboniso approaching my way. " Big bro,

you are really here" he screamed hugging me. He was really high on booze. "Hey" I said shoulder hugging him." So where is the booze and the girls you've been nagging me about" I asked taking a few steps in. " The girls are in the house the booze is over there, come let me show you. Here is the bartender" he screamed as we reached the bar. He was literally dragging me there. I was not the guy of many words, Infront of strangers. I took a high chair Infront of the bar table counter and he did the same. " So where is the wife to be" I asked. " There's no way I'm showing you my wifey, not after what you did with my girlfriend." He said sipping on his drink. " Rocks on the beach, please" I screamed to the bar man. " Firstly she was not yet yours, she was just some loose girl we met in the club... She willing gave herself to me. She was not my type either" I said. " Hey, I liked that girl... But yeah you are right she was just some loose cunt. But you had no right to seduce her to your bed" he screamed. " Come on I saved your ass young brother, you didn't love her either and it had been like...one week since you met?" I screamed back. The music was really loud in there. "

It had been a full long month, she was sucking my pocket dry." He screamed laughing. " Where is Sandile" I asked not really interested. " He had to go home early, his wife is pregnant remember?" He said. " Oh, I didn't even know" I said not so surprised. " You guys really need to mend your relationship. You are brothers for crying out loud" he said seriously. " What can I do when he can't be a brother of a gangster. " I said chuckling. " Don't sit there and pretend like you try cause I know you don't... And your old lady said Hi" he added. At that instant moment I found myself clenching my jaws. " Yeah right, where are the girls bro ..." I said ignoring the twist in my intestines. " Ohh the girls. Let me find you some" he said standing up, he was already stumbling and it hadn't been 12:00 yet, the night was still young.a moment later a woman occupied a chair he was sitting, she turned to face me, crossed her legs. She was in her mid 20s if I was not wrong. She was pretty and slender built. " Hi my name is Nina" she introduced her self , extended her hand for a handshake." Hello, Nina can I buy you a drink." I asked shaking hand seductively. " My name is

Alonzo by the way... I must say, you look so lovely." I added. We had the same drinks. We talked about the weather, cars, food, her Job occupation. A few hours later I found myself driving to the nearest hotel with her in my car. We were so eager that the time the hotel room door open I found myself pinning her on the wall. A few minutes later I was making her screamed on my bed shirts. " Ahhh yes, yes Alonzo. Ohh yes." She was screaming and I was thrusting so roughly. Her leg on my shoulder. We had a few rounds until I fell asleep. It was weird how I kept seeing Starlights face every time I thrust. She was nothing like Starlight but she was a woman too, she was not so naive and pure. Her skin was not so soft like hers but she had what I wanted at the moment. Every time I felt like fucking, she was the one I would call and she would willingly oblige. It had been weeks and there was still no hope of finding star light. Until one fateful night I received a call from Telescope with the good news I had been waiting for, for the past few weeks. I knew from then that nothing would ever be the same.

Cora's pov

Schools were opened up, in a week's time the harmonic Paradise Secondary School's owner was to visit the school for the second time that year, the purpose of his visit was to interview the students for the university bursaries which were to cover all of the students need. I had applied for NSFAs bursary too but that one was better than that of NSFAS. I have been studying non stop for the interview plus the stripping thing, my life was a living hell during those months. I also had to prepare for the next coming examinations. Sometimes I'd find myself thinking it was better to die than to continue living like that. I finally went to sleep at 2:00 in the morning not forgetting to set up the alarm but there was one thing I forgot and...

He was on top of me with a knife on his left hand. He was already naked and ready for me. The anger and rage in his face was like a blazing fire that night. His big thing was already up. " No father, father, no please. I'll go find mommy." I was pleading with him

in agony but that seemed to add gasoline on the already blazing fire. He teared up my vest and underwear with the knife. I could feel the tip of the knife scratching my skin." You killed my wife, you little slut" he shouted slapping me so hard across my face. " But don't worry, you look just like her. I'll marry you one day" with just those words he penetrated into my vagina.i couldn't help but scream out loud and scratch his back....I woke up screaming and realised it was just a nightmare. He was not there. I was soaking wet and tears kept on escaping my eyes. I took my anti-depressent capsule and held on to my pillow tightly before my capsule knocked me back to sleep again...

[6/3, 14:28] Lynne: Page 07

Narrated...

Salvatore had received a call from his friend/PI, who eventually had spotted starlight at the mall shopping and have been pinning her move for almost the whole month and of course Salvatore was angry

with him for delaying such news. Kevin told him where she lived, where she went to school, where she works, her friends, when she came back from the strip club. He knew almost every thing about her. That night Salvatore called her dad to arrange for a meeting.

Salvatore's POV

My father lived in a gated community with a lot of security. You had to pass through two gates before getting to the actual house which also had his own personal guardsmen. The design of his mansion was that of the 90s. It was huge and he lived alone with his guardsmen, a senator, a driver and a Cook. Who occupied the backyard guests house by the way. " Father, father where as are you?," I shouted pouring myself the brandy beside the staircase. " Junior sir, senior sir is in his office" The senator said approaching my way. " Thank you Mr Kumar" I said walking to the direction of the office. I knocked..." You know the code" he said from the inside. I punched the code and confirmed with my

fingerprints and the door open. " Really you should change this thing, it's creepy" I said walking inside." Look who's talking, the man who feeds people old dead female private parts. " The devil said laughing. " Don't even try to go there...what are you doing in this man cave " I asked after a long time of staring into each other's eyes. " Doing some research on my students. By the way what does the son of a gun want from me. " He asked standing up. " The way you say it makes me think of you as the school principal, let me get down to business because you seem like a busy man Mr Salvatore senior" I said chuckling. " Ok out with it already," he snapped curiously. " Relax old man or else you will get a heart attack" I said sitting down on the L shaped couch. He was a fan of white while I liked black. " Do you remember 15years ago when you asked me to join the family business but I wanted to start my own thing." I asked slightly sipping on my drink. " Yeah man, so..." He asked casually. "Well I've been giving it a lot of thought and I want to try it out, who knows. I might love it" I said shrugging my shoulders. " Really son... Who are you trying to fool here, is it me or you. The Kong I know

would never ever mention the word love, I'm hardly 60 and it's not like I am dying. You have opened the grandest hotel in the country, not to mention the clubs, the restaurant and the lodge Why would you... Did you think this lie through before you actually tried it on me" he asked laughing. "Ok,ok,ok. Damn how come you know me so well..." I said running my fingers through my hair. I was caught it was either I go home or go honest. " You're my son Joaquin I raised you" he said , the situation was emotional and I knew it because he called me by my second name which he used when he was serious. There was silence for a while. " I really need to interview the students instead of you Dad... please" I said, I hated saying please. " Desperation ain't attractive Kong. This is my business we're talking about. There are a lot of files to go through any there's a little time left. That's not even the point... why exactly do you want to be my substitute?" He asked. " You trust me right... You know I'd never do anything that could subottage your business." I asked ,my hand on his shoulder. We were now sitting on the same couch, facing each other." I know but I still want to know why" he said

with a sigh." Okay... there's this young woman I met wees ago, we lost contact and I suddenly found out she was there. So I've been thinking of a way to meet her without getting her suspicious of me." I explained. It was not the entire truth but at least it was not a lie either. I hated doing that to the old man. " Ok... Here's a deal. My PA will email you the files and you will go through them, the same goes for me too. And you will email me the summary after that. If think you are worth it, you will go there. But I must warn you, it's not a kids play. Spending 6hours in a school full of kids.... imagine the entire week of doing just that. So are you game?" He asked extending his hand for a handshake. " I'm always games... thanks old man" I said shoulder hugging him." This young woman you just told me about... Are you sure she didn't feed you a love portion." He asked giggling. "Well that's what planning to find out" I said jokingly but some part of me was serious. Some part of me really was puzzled by the sudden change of my feelings. The morning I found the note I was so sure I would never look for her but there was something about her that drew me in.... Few

days later

The first day of the interview had arrived, the students were excited, some were nervous just like I was. That morning the principal gathered all the students into the school assembly hall. He was to announce the top ten students in all the classes for the Last term. I really wasn't interested, my mind kept drifting off to the person i bumped into yesterday evening, I couldn't see his face properly. It was dark and he was in a hoody... I was taking a short jog just to prepare my body for the strip pole when I bumped into him. He murmured sorry then left me on my butt on the pavement. His voice, i was so sure I had heard it from somewhere. And then there had to be that psychotic audience at the club the had to grab me by my leg while I was onstage performing, the bouncers had to grab him and drag him out of the club. Making me sprain my ankle. Dolly had to give me three days off and darn it my salary?. The psychotic man really cost me an arm and a leg. "Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo" I heard a faint voice shouting my name, I was still in the midst

of my thoughts. " Zee, go up on stage" Amanda shouted pinching my arm. I was a bit confused but when I stood up it all came to me ...ohh the top ten and there were already 9 students on stage so I figured I was number 1 again for the past months since I arrived at Harmonic Paradise. I dragged my feet on stage to receive my trophy and certificate. The principal gave me one of his best fake smiles and I returned it back with interest. Speeches were made etcetera. Students kept on congratulating me as if they weren't fed up with the hybrid always taking home the trophies. Some were genuine but most were... well who cares because I didn't. I was just there to get my ticket to get me out of hell. An hour later we were returning to the assembly hall on my way there with Zee we noticed a group of students checking out some very fine, I mean very fine car. Some said it was a Ferrari. I felt the need to use the bathroom so I went to the bathroom Zee had to go to the hall alone. I peeing, wiped up, washed my hands and got out. I headed to the assembly hall. It was on the verge third floor of the main school building. It took me a few minutes to get there... I

wished I had thought earlier to use the ladies room near the hall, my ankle was killing me. From a distance I could tell that there was a speech being said. I opened the door and entered, it was so quiet. I took a look around searching for Amanda. Then looked up on stage, which I still wish I hadn't. Suddenly my breathing hyperventilated. There he was, why was he here, no what was he doing here... To ruin my life? A few voices kept going on in my head. I was suddenly feeling hot. I couldn't breath. " Hey star, are you okay... I noticed you've been standing here for a while now... what's wrong" miss Knight asked." I, I am fine but what is he doing here" I asked pointing on stage" Ohh... that's Mr Salvatore's son, Salvatore junior. His father is sick, he sent him instead. We will be working with him the whole week" miss Knight said casually." The whole week" I asked unbelievably. "Yes, is there a problem Cora" she asked. " No" I said so fast that it was unconvincing.

[6/3, 14:29] Lynne: Page 08

" Well, come and sit down. There's a sit right there in the front row. " No I'll go sit over there with my friend, Amanda. You go ahead" I said already moving away from her. " But you are a member of the SR... but never mind" she said hesitatingly. I could feel his eyes on me. The question" what was he doing here" kept on ringing in my head even though I had already got an answer for it. He kept on talking but I could not here what he was saying. I knew from that day that nothing would ever be the same, was he there to expose me. Yes, he must be. The day went on and I decided to go to the library to study since I was far from being interviewed. The list was so long and i was somewhere in the middle. " What do you think of junior Salvatore, isn't he hot. I swear he is the hottest guy I've ever met" Amanda whispered, noise was a no,no in the library and the librarian was so straight about the rules. " Isn't he old too... Please spare me" I said scornfully. " Mxm, what is wrong with you. You look like you've just seen a ghost" she said dramatically annoyed. " Can we please get back to work. I've got examination s coming up. So please" I said then concentrated on my Life sciences

book, at least tried to.

The last bell rang. And God knows how long I was waiting for that bell to ring. On normal days I wouldn't have been so excited because I knew it was that bell that sent me to hell every evening. On normal days I wished school would go on and on. I put my books in my back pack, we both got out of the library hand in hand." You should ride with me today" she said." We talked about that now ,didn't we?" I said getting my hand loose from hers. " Mmh, you are such a jerk for a best friend, you know that right" she said pouting, giving me the puppy eyes look. " It's not going to work on me, you know that right" I said hugging her good bye. " Besides I am not Josh" I added already walking away. " You are so dead " she said trying to chase me but I out ran her. " Yeah, I love you too" I said laughing. Her driver was already waiting for her in the parking lot. I was six inches near the gate when a voice called out my name. " Hey Cora, come here would you." The principal shouted out to me. I turned around and there he was with the last person I wanted to see on

planet earth. I walked back with my heart threatening to come out of my chest. I was sweating but it was very cloudy and chilly that day. " Sir?" I said avoiding looking into HIS direction. " Salvatore meet Cora Maphumulo, our school head girl and the number one student so far" he said. " Nice to meet you...Cora." he said with a smirk on his face. What was that for, I still don't know. " Nice, meeting you sir. umh if you'd excuse me. " I said already taking a few steps backwards. " But I thought you might want to ask Mr Salvatore a few questions, since I know you to be inquisitive" the principal said confused. " No, not today. Sir, I'm in a hurry" I said then turned back on my way . I couldn't be there, I didn't want to be there. 15 minutes later I was still on the road hitch hiking but there was no hope. Just when I thought I was having a bad day, just when I thought things couldn't get any worse than that. He said to find me standing then and worse he had to stop by. His passage door rolled up to open. " Get in" it was more like a command. " No, thanks" I said looking everywhere but not him. " I wasn't asking you, I'm telling you to" he said chuckling." No I'm not going

to" I protested. " Get in before I get you in myself" he said clenching his jaws. " Do whatever you want to do but I am not getting in" I said standing my ground. " Ok, you asked for it" he said opening his door. " Okay!, I'll get in. Just don't embarrass me" I said getting in. He seemed pissed, so not the man I saw laughing with the kids a few moments ago. He pressed some button and then the doors both closed. The car was so classic, I just didn't belong there. I put my back pack on my thighs, after making sure that my skirt was reaching out to my knees. He moved his body closer to mine, his other hand on my other side. I found myself shutting my eyes and holding on tight to my back pack. " Relax, I was just buckling you up" he said smiling, there it was. That smile, which made my inside tingle. " Where are you taking me?" I asked angry, puzzled and angry at the same. " I'm taking you home of course" he said casually. The car was so fast, it took half the time I usually get home by. He stopped the car right Infront of the building i lived in. Wait a minute, how did he know how I lived. " How did you know where I lived" I asked looking at him straight in the eyes. He just.

Laughed. " I didn't Catch the joke, so what's funny" I asked. " Maybe that's because I didn't throw any, il mio cuero batte" he said laughing even more. "What ever man" I said. " Just open the darn door" I said annoyed. I didn't even know what" il mio... what so ever meant. " I'll escort you in" he said opening the doors. He quickly got to my side. " I don't need your fucking help" I said limping away, my leg was betraying me. It must've been because I was standing on the road for so long. " What did you just say" he asked swinging me around roughly, making my leg hurt even more. I feel on my butt. " You don't fucking swear on" " Ouch,ouch what... mhh" I screamed in pain. " I'm sorry, did I hurt you." he asked squirting near my ankle. " Don't touch me you jerk, don't you dare pretend as if you give a damn" I shouted in pain. " I said I'm sorry, just stop being stubborn and let me help you.ok" he said already carrying me in his arms with my bag.

[6/3, 14:29] Lynne: Continuing...

Cora's pov

" Ok, you can put me down now, so that I can open

the door" I said fighting my way down, at least tried to. He took the steps to my room which was on the 4th floor but he still look so fresh, I mean not sweaty at all. It was either he hit the gym frequently or I was a really light weight. " I'm not putting you down, just search for the keys and open up" he said holding me still. I was so frustrated. I did just that and he entered. " That was not so hard now, was it" he said with a smirk after putting me on my bed. " You can get out now" I said with anger. " You're not going to offer me a drink/coffee" he asked making himself comfortable on the other side of my bed. We were sitting back to back. I kept quiet, there was silence for a long while. " What do you want Mr Salvatore" I asked after taking a deep breath. " I haven't figured that out yet" he said , his voice carried no emotion. " Then why are you here, you should go. You are just drawing the unwanted attention to my direction, I'll be in trouble with my neighbors. And your expensive car could get stolen outside. This is not a safe neighborhood. You should just go" I kept on going I did not even realize he was now squirting Infront of me. With both my hands in his. " Do you ever stop

talking, relax. Nothing will happen to me or my car. That should be the least of your worries" he said looking into my eyes, as if he was searching for something. " Who said I was worried, please don't flirtter your self" I said yanking my hands from his but things just got worse because he just put both his hands on my thighs. " I just texted my doctor, he will be here in 30minutes. To check out your leg." He said. " I don't need your help, I'm fine. I just want to get out of here. I want to take a shower" I said standing up ... I limped to the shower. I opened the tap. " Get out of here Salvatore" I shouted. What did he really want from me, I was 18, well recently turned 18... Didn't even celebrate the birthday. A whore, who slept with a quarter of man in the city, that might have been exaggerated but I sleep with dozens of man. I had nothing... He must have pity on me, just like all the other man I've slept with. Well he hadn't slept with me yet but eventually he would. It was in every man's veins. He looked at me for a very long time." I'm not going, il mio cuero batte" he said. He sounded hurt. But I didn't give a fuck, he must have some nice, decent woman warming up his bed every

night he went to sleep. " Well suit your self" I said . Retrieving a towel and my underwear from the wardrobe. I got into the shop, closed the sliding glass door and a curtain. Hanged my towel and underwear on top of the shower door, took off my clothes. I threw them out and took a nice long shower. Thanks God the shower had a curtain or else I would have had to wait for him to get going until I took a shower. The apartments had no walls diving room by room. Everything was in the open. I took the towel wiped my body and wore my underwear. Then got out. He was still there,sitting on the bed. I went to the wardrobe, searching for my sleeping shorts and a gown. I dropped the towel with my back on him then wore my clothes. I limped to the kitchen area to make myself something to eat. " I have already ordered a pizza for dinner" he said holding my waist. He caught me off guard because I found myself breathing so loudly. I was so sure he heard me, what was he doing to me. He tightened his grip. I couldn't breath, not because he was holding me so tightly, i was because of his touch, it was like a poisonous venom to my body. Even

though I had two garments on my body. His touch could still reach my skin somehow. " Breath il mio cuero batte, breath" he whispered in to my ear. His Italian was so seductive even though I didn't know what it meant. It sounded like something good. My heart was pounding, I could feel the adrenaline rush on my body. His hands moved slowly from the side of my waist to my whole tummy area and I was held tight. It felt so good, like I was in a dream. I had never had a man to hold me so tightly. I found myself leaning my head backwards on his chest. He put his head on the left side of my neck. " The day you left, I found the note and I thought... yeah I'd never look for you. Why would I but the a few days later I found you I inscripted on my brain. I couldn't get you out. I've been looking for you for the past few weeks. I don't know why yet, but that's why I am here. I want to find out. And I won leave you alone until I have the answers I am looking for. All I know is that it feels so good to hold you in my arms Cora" he said, I forgot he now knew my name.

[6/3, 14:29] Lynne: Page 09

Cora's pov

An hour later the doctor left, I had thought that Salvatore was going to leave along with the doctor but he showed no signs of a man leaving any time soon. The doctor said it was just a minor sprain and I was going to be fine in few days. he gave me painkillers and pain balm to rub on the ankle. The pizza had also arrived, in fact there were two boxes of two different flavored pizzas. I was sitting on my study desk doing some mathematics equations, at least trying to. Because I couldn't focus with him sittings just 30 centimeters away from me. He had dragged the only couch I had in the sitting room position. " Ok, this is weird enough. What do you want" I asked closing the book. " Me? Nothing" he said shrugging his shoulders. He almost looked innocent but there was just something sinister about him. That I couldn't figure out. He had this dark Aura lingering around him. " I'm just enjoying the perfect view Infront of me" he said with a little bit of smile. " Whatever man" I said standing up but he swiftly

pulled me back down to the sit. And turn it around so that I could face him. " What the fuck man" I shouted holding my breath. He really took me by surprise. Everything just happened so fast. " Don't you fucking swear at me Cora" he shouted back, scaring the hell out of me. He really liked pissed off. I just kept quiet stable, in the same position. " Ok, sorry. But don't ever repeat that again" he said running his hand on my left cheek and lips. " Ok" i said faintly. " Can I go to bed now." I asked not really asking. I went over to bed with my books after he let go of my cheek. I got rid of the gown and got undercovers, I put a pillow on my back because my bed had metal rails for a headboard. He came over, took off his shoes and got in bed but not undercovers. " Don't you want to know my name" he asked while putting a pillow on his back. " Sure, why not" I said casually. " Well 33 years ago a boy named Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore was born and his mother didn't want him for classified reasons. He was raised by his father but than again he was kind of a problem child so he was sent to Italy to live with his grandparents. He adjusted there, he decided that he wanted to be a

business man just like his dad. When he was 18 he came back to South Africa and fell in love for the first time but one day a girl he loved was tragically taken away from him. From that day he fell into the darkness. He never wanted anything to do with love but few weeks ago something happened, something he doesn't know yet but it's so beautiful. That's it" he said holding my hand. It was like a bedtime story I never knew. It was sad and left me with a lot of questions. But I held them back." Well it's nice to meet you Mr Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore" I said shaking his hand. " It's nice to meet you too, miss?..." He said it in a asking manner. " Miss Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo" I said smiling. "Well it's nice to meet you miss Cora Zaber-na.... Mapurmu..." He tried to say but just couldn't. I just laughed at him until my stomach hurts. " Forget it, you will never be able to get it right" I said giggling. " That's not fair. I was still trying. Hey" he said dramatically pretending to be hurt. " Tell you what. The day I'll be able to get it right, you will have coffee with me. Out" he said. " It's a deal" I said shaking my head while chuckling. I had tears in my eyes due to laughing so hard. " You really

need to get going now, I really need to study" I said serious. " Mhh, let's do this. I'll go to my car get my laptop and I'll also get some work done while you study. Other than that I'm not going" he suggested." Ok, then" I said getting my books. He did what he said he'd do. I went over to the study desk. 3hours later I was tired, I kept on yawning.....

.....

Salvatore's POV

I watched as she was studying, I was done with the bank statements I was dealing with 30 minutes earlier before she started yawning, I was just watching her, she was the most beautiful young woman I've ever seen. Not just that she also had brains, she was ambitious and smart. She didn't deserve what she was going through. She deserved finer things in life. I felt the need to protect her, wash away her tears and worries. I wanted to know who

Cora was beneath the hard shield she had built to protect her self from this cruel world. I wanted to know her dreams and desires, he fantasies. Her goal, her favourite colour if she had any. What I am trying to say is that I basically just wanted to know everything about her. I walked up to her and retrieved the books from her thighs, she tried to protested but I was stronger than her. " that's enough for the day, you should take your medication and get some sleep. It's 23:00already. I said getting her medication for her." Could you please get me my other pills in the left 3rd drawer. The ones on the black container." She asked. I did just that but the capsules were just strange so I scanned a few words to my brain before giving them to her with a glass of water. She took them and I put the glass on the kitchen counter. And warmed up 4slices of pizza. I came back to bed, got undercovers and put the plate of pizza on her thighs before taking one slice. We had the pizza in silence... After we were done I put the plate on the table counter and came back to bed. I cuddle up with her, she was half asleep, it must have been the effect of the pills. " Alonzo" he

called out my name slowly and faintly." Yes il mio cuero batte" I said drawing my self closer to her. He back was on me. Our heads on the same pillow, my hand on her waist. " Why are you here, you know what I do in the darkness, right" she asked, her voice held a lot of disappointment and hurt. " I know il mio cuero batte, but let's just put that aside and enjoy each and every moment we spend together. When the time is right I'll deal with that. Don't worry, I'm here. Now go to sleep..." I said brushing her hair that I liked. I almost didn't believe that those words came from my mouth.

[6/3, 14:29] Lynne: Page 10

Cora's pov

.....

When I woke up at 4:30 he was no longer there. The bed was cold, the door was locked and the key was on the kitchen counter. How did he get out, I asked myself. Anyway I wore my jogging track suit and sneakers, It was windy and cold outside but I needed to rewind a bit. There was a lot of things going on in

my life at the moment, Alonzo was just confusing the hell out of me, what exactly did he want from a hooker like me. I asked myself, she must have been after The Don, my inner self said suspiciously. I took an hour of jogging, on my way back I came across Mrs Zulu. " Good morning Cora dear" she said smiling. She was the noisiest woman in the neighborhood. " Morning Mrs Zulu, how are the twins, I mean the last time I saw you, you were taking them to the doctor" I said trying to divert her attention from the actual topic she wanted to indulge herself in. I knew what she wanted to ask before she asked. " The twins are fine, dear who was the white man you came back from school with yesterday" she asked and I was prepared to answer. " He is my mathematics tutor, my aunt suggested him after seeing how low my mathematics level has got" I said casually while jogging on the same spot. " Ohh, I told Mrs Zulu that you aren't one of those loose girls who would sell their..." I could not take what was coming next. " Mrs Zulu I have to go or else I'll be late for school, see you on Sunday" I said jogging off. Getting home I neatly ironed my school uniform, it

was a knee length scotch skirt, white short sleeved shirt and white socks. The information screamed English but I still rocked it. It made me feel like I belong somewhere, I felt noble and pure in it. I had shower than my usual two slices of bread and coffee for breakfast. An hour later I was done and off I was gone to school.

.....

I finally managed to fix my tie, I was wearing my simple black tuxedo, I choose a watch from the wall of watches in my closet. I chose to go with the one my father gifted me on my 30th birthday, it was a Versace and coated a quarter of a million. I wore my ankle high boots for man. That day the driver was going to drive me around, I decided to go and have breakfast at the hotel. My Lexus GS 3 was already waiting for me at the garage. 30minutes later I reached hotel Paradisé. I was having my English breakfast in peace until Nina decided to budge in my penthouses uninvited. " Sorry sir, I tried to stop her." Bianca said all sweaty and she looked like someone who was about to whip on me any moment. She

knew the consequences of failing me in duty. But luckily for her I was in a good mood, if it was one of those days she would have won herself a written warning. " It's ok Bianca, you can get out" I said wiping my lips and standing up. " What do you want Nina" I asked pouring myself a glass of moëtChampagne. " Salvatore, I've been calling you for the past 48hours and you have not been taking my call, what the fuck is going on Salvatore, I've been..." I found myself grabbing her by the collar of the dress she was in, her back leaning on the wall. " Don't you ever fucking swear at me woman, don't you dare. You don't really want to know me on that level" I cursed through my gritted teeth. " Ok

, I'm sorry,sorry. "' she said trying to release herself from my grip. She was suddenly sweaty and jumpy. " What is going on Salvatore" she asked putting on the puppy eyes look which really didn't work on me. " Nina, what ever It is that we were doing or should I say the fucking is over" I said taking a sip. " What do you mean it's over, it can't be. Salvatore you can't do this to us" she said approaching me. " Nina just go

while you have your dignity intact, it's over. I'm tired of the fucking around and shit. just go" I said picking up my iPhone and keys. " Please Salvatore, you can't leave me, I love you, I love you baby" she said holding my hand. I yanked it and walked up to the door. "There's is no love between you and I. Just go already, maybe you will find someone who will love you out there. " I said. She suddenly wrapped her arms around me, I turned back to face her..."Nina, leave while I am still asking you nicely." I said holding her hands in mine. " Ok, ok... I'll leave you alone, forever but please fuck me once, just to say goodbye. Just one last time Salvatore please." She pleaded taking her dress off, she pleaded naked Infront of me. I couldn't think properly. She was a fine woman. " Ok just this once, where is the condom" I asked pushing her to the couch near by.... unedited. Comments, curse, and don't forget to like and share

[6/3, 14:30] Lynne: Continuing...

An hour later I was done, I freshened up and hurried to the underground parking lot of the hotel to hit the

road. I was so sure going to be late that day and my father was not going to be so forgiving about it. Punctuality was very important to the old man. I reached the school 20 minutes later than I was supposed to. We got down to the business, another 16 students to interview in a day, each student was given 30 minutes. The interview focussed on questions like: the type of carrier a student has chosen for and why. The university, and then the rest of the year's results, that was the most important thing to go through. I had all the students files. The question were quite basic information. At the end of the day it was the matriculation certificate that talked. I went through the daily interview and 8 hours 30 minutes later I was done. I was just not really interested in what I was doing that day. I was rather thinking about what I was to do with Cora after school. What I was to tell her about Nina, but wait a minute. What was there to tell. I was not like she and I are seeing each other. My inner self said in guilt. So I decided not to ever mention it again. It was the last time I was going to do something like that, not while I had Cora in my life. Who I was not so sure she was

going to accept me after finding out what I did for living, after discovering the Kong in me.

.....

I drove out of school but Cora was no longer on the spot where I picked her up from the other day. So I told the driver to drive to her apartment. When I got there she was getting out of the taxi, I told the driver to drive in and I got out of the car and leaned on it passenger's side. "Hi, il mio cuero batte" I said getting her hand because she was ignoring me like I didn't exist, like she was passing me by. "Mr Salvatore, leave my hand" she said with eyes blazing fire. "What's wrong, my heart beat" I asked alarmed by the sudden change of mood, I mean when we went to sleep last night everything was fine. "Just leave my hand this instant" she said trying to break loose from my grip. But I held on her hand even more tightly. "Not until you tell me what's wrong, what have I done to upset you so much" I asked drawing myself closer to her but she just moved away. "If you don't not fucking let go of my hand. I will call the cops and trust me Salvatore you

wouldn't like that" she said looking me straight in the eyes. " Seems like I missed out one characteristic of you. You are such a... argh!" I chuckled scratching my head. I knew from the fear in her eyes that my eyes were probably blood spot red and I was unmasking the unknown. " You don't fucking swear at me Cora, how..." I just couldn't finish the sentence. I was boiling. " I told you not to fucking swear at me...I, I,... argh Cor" I kept on chuckling and scratching my head in anger." What are you going to do about it Salvatore, are you going to kill me too" she asked standing her ground. " To hell with you, I don't ever want to see your face again" she said." Cora!" I was about to grab her by her collar but the driver held me just in time" Kong, you don't want to do this. At least not now. People are watching" he said showing me a couple of neighbors watching through the fence. " You will regret messing with my head, sweetheart" I whispered to her ear before getting into the car. The driver drove away, she was still standing there like a pole.

.....

An hour later..." She is fucking mad Kylie, to hell with her." I was in the cemetery. Talking on my beloved girlfriend Kylie Smith's grave. The first woman I've ever loved, the one and only who had managed to keep me going even in her grave. She was my strength and life. " Who needs her anyways, I have you right. I don't need her. She is mad." I said kneeling down." I'm sorry I even considered her to be in my life, the truth is no woman could ever take your place in my heart. I love you Kylie" I said tears streaming down my face. " But why did you have to leave me so soon my love, why,why..." I screamed in pain. I could literally feel the pain in my chest, my head was pounding. " She , she... I thought I was going to fix her, maybe, just maybe she would have fixed me too." I whispered in a husky voice. " What was I thinking, she is a fucking prostitute. I don't need her in my life. Since I have you. Everything is going to be alright.... please tell me everything is going to be alright Kylie" I whispered .

.....

I need just 15comments and 40likes. What are your

thoughts on Salvatore so far

[6/3, 14:30] Lynne: Page 11

Cora's pov

The day for my interview arrived and I was so not looking forward to it. I knew it was going to be the toughest day of my life. And I had no power over it. Plus the 3 days Dolly gave me was over. I had to go back to work in the evening. Salvatore's words were still lingering in my head. but I still didn't regret it, ok maybe I did just a little bit but after finding out the nasty things he was accused of, any girl would have probably done the same or even worse. I knew from my gut that he was going to slice me and fry me to my grave that day. I reached school at 7 am on the dot. Time just seemed to fly that more. " Miss Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo, it's your turn" the principal called for me in the waiting room. I walked in to the interview room. Which seemed to be more brighter than usual that day. Everything was exposed. Even the thundering vein in my neck. " Good morning miss Maphumulo, sit down" he said raising his head to look at me. I occupied the only sit which was 10

feet's across his desk. " Introduce yourself" he said." Good morning Mr Salvatore. My name is Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo. I am a matriculation students. And I am here for the tertiary institutions bursaries offered by Mr S.S Salvatore to ten students. I believe I have the potential to earn one for myself and I..." And then he had to cut me off. " That's enough miss Zabenathi Maphumulo... Could you briefly explain the harmonic Paradise foundation should offer you a bursary" he asked turn over the pages. I swear I nearly peed on my self right on the spot. The man who was Infront of me was nothing compared to furiously angry man I saw and never wished to see yesterday. He was nothing near the man who held me so tightly the other night and told me everything was going to alright. The man who was sitting across the room was fiercely intimidating, he held power no man has ever had upon me not even my biological father who forcefully shared a bed with me with every chance he got. " Well since I was admitted here, I've been nothing but a straight A student." I said shortly. " It appears in your file that you have chosen

gynaecology as your first choice, I'd like to know why." He said looking me straight in the eyes." It has always been my dream to be a doctor and give back to the community but for many years I have not really discovered the type of a doctor I wanted to be. Until recently when I did my research on medicine, I discovered that about a thousand million of mother's and unborn babies die just because there was no proper medical care of a or a gynecologist specialist around. I want to be there for the mothers and their infants." I explained proudly. "You are not really answering my question here, miss Maphumulo. Let me rephrase my question. Why do you want to be a gynecologist?" He asked closing the file. " With all due respect sir, I think I just did answer to your question" I said blinking a few times." what you just said, I've heard it many times. It's somewhere in the interview preparatory books. I want to know personally why do you want to be a gynecologist, what makes you think that a girl like you can be a gynecologist, do you have what it takes. What makes you..." I could not let him insult me just like that he was getting into my nerves. He was being

personal. " Mr Salvatore, do you really want to know why I want to be a gynecologist" I asked a little bit louder than my normal voice would have sounded. It was More like I shouted." Yes, I want to know, what makes the mighty Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo to think that she can do it" he said moving his hands around in an insulting manner. " I Zabenathi Maphumulo think can and will be a gynecologist, you know why because for 3 years I was blamed for the B death of my mother. She died while giving birth to me. I was just a little baby when she died, what did I know about killing a Human being let alone my own mother. But no, my father didn't see it like that. I was the most evil child in his eyes, a sin. I never got to know his love, all I got was torture. I don't ever want to see another child suffering the same fate I did." I kept on going on. I didn't even realize that I was now crying on my knees. He had called the principal to take me out. His day went on just like that.

.....

I stood on the road waiting for the taxi to take me home, bringing back the past was not good for my

soul and old concealed wounds.... Tears were cascading down my face at I was standing Infront of the mirror preparing myself for the club. I had to hold on there until a few more years. I closed my eyes and said the embracing pray of them all. It was strange of a prostitute,right?

The Lord is my shepherd. Even though I walk in the valley of death, I shall fear no evil.....10 minutes later the tears dried up and I washed my face to put on my light make up. I did want the neighbors to be suspicious of the way I dressed up every evening. I put on my boyfriend jeans and a white vest, the 6inch hills I was going to strip on. I packed my makeup kit and Brazil thong in my overnight bag. My hair was tied in a neat pony tail. I looked more mature than usually. I also packed my long sweater, just in case it got called on my way back home. I reached the club at 7:15 which meant that I had 45 minutes to get ready.

..... I was on stage swinging around the stripping pole, I had my Brazilian thong and bra on. Which covered on the most private parts, when I

say the most I really mean it. My huge butt as Amanda liked to call it was out. The bra practical only covered by nipples. Anyway I scanned through the crowd I saw the last person I wanted to see on planet earth. I was distracted for a minute but then I got back to the audience. Who were throwing 50 rands note. Which weren't even mine, already not all. I decided I was going to look anywhere but him. With 15 minutes left I took off the tiniest bra I had on. The crowd went crazy. Most of the men there were married or either just divorced and looking for a great time.

.....

I'm tired guys.this one is for you Rethabila
Helen comment and like

[6/3, 14:30] Lynne: Continuing...

It was 12:00 AM midnight, I was done. After the dancing, we had to go back to the audience, share a drink with them for entertainment. They probably wanted to whip about their life, we just had to sit there with them and listen, there were good tips too.

Sometimes we had to give lap dances in private. I checked myself one more time on the mirror before leaving, I was now in the clothes I came in. It looked like it wanted to rain. I had called a cab. I was waiting on the sidewalk when a tall muscular man suddenly stood beside me. I could tell from the Cologne that it was him. " It looks like there's a storm coming up" he said casually. I just kept my mouth shut. " I didn't know you were such a great exotic dancer" he added. I just walked away. I was not such a great idea to walk far away from the club after dancing. There were a lot of psychotic and perverted men in the club, who knew what they could do. " Cora wait, about earlier. I,i,..." he stuttered. " What do you want Joaquin, you want to insult me once again, huh." I asked tired." You want to tell me I would not be able to make it?, you want my soul?. How girls like me are not worth it?, Huh!. What do you want" I asked spiritual broken, no man has ever had the power to crush my soul like he did. " I'm sorry" that all he could say. The cab arrived just in time, I heard him calling out my name after I got into the car. I still don't remember how or when the cab

driver got me home. When I got there, there was a strange car on the parking. I decided to take the staircase, when I got into the floor I lived in, there he was. leaning towards the wall on the Left side of the door, I thought of going back but where would I go. I mastered the courage and walked up to my apartment. I searched for my keys and opened up, he also got in uninvited. I should have slammed the door on his face but I couldn't find the courage to do it. Something inside me was holding me back. I locked the door behind him and tossed the key on the table counter and tossed the bag on the couch. "Cora?" He said in low voice. "Please" I said shaking my head. I went over to the shower and got warm water running. I took off my clothes, it was no use to hide, when he knew my nakedness. He sat on the bed. I went over to my wardrobe, searching for my pyjamas. I found them and tossed them on the bed along with my underwear. I got into the shower and showered for 15 minutes maximum. I went over to the bed, he was watching my every move like a hawk. I wore my underwear after dropping down the towel I had covered myself with after the shower. Any man

would have gagged and swallowed his saliva after I drop the towel but he was not just any man, he was Salvatore. The Kong as I have seen on the internet. I decided that I was not going to study that night, I needed to sleep my sorrows down. I got undercovers and he was taking off his shoes. I had my back on him. I set up the alarm system to wake me up at 5am on the dot. I needed to take long jog. " Cora, I'm sorry I said those mean things. I didn't know that you have gone through so much pain. I was just so angry at you for what you did the other day. You were right, I should have listened. I should have leaved you alone. I'm sorry" he said cuddling to my back, his head was above mine. I guess he wanted to see my face. " Why don't you just leave me alone then, why do you keep on coming to me" I asked but it all came out as a whisper. " I can't find it in myself to leave you alone, I just can't. Believe me I tried for the first few days after I met you but I could not. It's like you keep on drawing me with..." I couldn't hear it. " That's rubbish you are about to utter. I haven't not given you a reason to keep on tailing me rather I've done everything in my power to

make you leave me alone. I told you in that note to never try to find me. Then why did you" I shouted sitting on my butt. " Maybe that's what drew me closer to you. The fact that you don't want me around, please stop cursing. I don't like it" he said keeping composure. " Maybe this is all just my fault, I always do this to myself. I shouldn't have showed you my face. I still don't know why I did. What exactly made me do it. Maybe it's because of the way you begged me or maybe the fact that you held me so gentle. Why did I really do it...I,I,i..."it was more like I was talking to myself rather than him. I was like a mad woman. I wasn't even looking at him. " Cora stop it, stop doing that to yourself" he said shaking my body. I looked at him for a while and then leaned over to the headboard and closed my eyes for a long time. We sat like that in silence.

.....

" Cora why did you chase me away the other day. Why do you hate me so much" he asked breaking the silence. " I don't have it in me to hate you. I just hate the things you do. And I want you to stay away from

me. I have enough troubles to last me a life time, I don't need you to add up to that. I read about the cocaine you sell, the people you killed, the man you send to the mental asylum. The land you forced an old man to sell. The disappearance of the case dockets. The disappearing witnesses and the ones who refused to be court witnesses just in the last hour of the court." I said my eyes still closed. " Those are just false accusations, nothing has been proven. You say it like you know for a fact that I did those awful things" he said, the fact that he didn't defend himself added to my conclusion that he was a dangerous men, more dangerous than The Don because he has been arrested a couple of times. " I know you did it Salvatore, there is no need for me to get proof. I could tell from the look in your eyes. I don't need another Don in my life or even worse." I said eyes still closed. " Are you judging me?" He asked emotionless. I needed to look into his eyes so I opened mine. " Who am I to judge, only the Lord Jesus Christ has the right to judge. I'm just looking out for myself" I said shortly. Then there was silence once again. I leaned back and closed my eyes.

I had the mattress move but I didn't open them up, somehow I felt safe in his presence. " Take these" he said. I opened my eyes and there he was with a glass of water and painkillers. I took them and drank up. " How did you know that I was coming down with headache" I asked closing my eyes once again. He came back after putting the glass somewhere in the kitchen area. I could feel his body getting undercovers. He came closer to me. I could feel his breath." I just knew" he said. " Do you really think that I would never be a gynecologist" I asked out of nowhere, just that his words had been ringing in my head constantly. " You know that I said that just to spite you"he said holding my hand. " I remember I was seven years old, I had drawn up myself in a doctor's coat and ran to my dad to show him" I said slowly. " But do you know what he said.... he said. Get out of here you cursed child. You think you are going to be a doctor, huh. You will never succeed in life Cora... He pulled my cheek so hard that I ran to my aunt crying. He was drunk then and I was still naïve so I forgave him.... But he never stopped saying those words even when he was sober. He

kept on saying them and hurting me until couldn't take it anymore. He was such a bad man but what I did was even...I, I" I could not go on. I remembered the day I ran away with my hands covered in blood." Shh...shh. it's okay now. You are safe. I am here. Don't cry. He said embracing me. I didn't even realize that I was crying. I cried even louder, I needed to let it all out. Since that day I left home I promised myself never to cry. I bottled everything inside and it was killing me slowly but surely. After a while I kept quiet, he wiped the tears off my cheeks, he jacket was dumped in tears and saliva. He took his handkerchief and wiped my face. " I think you will make a good doctor" he said holding my head from both sides. " Next time you decide to make it rain please remind me to bring my tank" he said then side. " You are such a rude man" I said slightly hitting his chest and giggling. " Hey, I'm just looking out for the both of us. You almost drowned us in tears" he said laughing. " Laughing does not suit you" I said getting out of bed." Ouch, that hurts" he said dramatically. I just laughed out loud. " I'm making myself a sandwich, do you want one" I asked. "

What's in it" he asked. " Non fat cheese and butter. Lettuce and tomatoes zucchini" I said. " I'll have to pass. I'm so not eating rabbit food" he said making a call. Ordered fast food. " So you are indirectly calling me a rabbit" I asked

.....

" No I'm not, I was just saying that I am not a rabbit. That has got nothing to do with you il mio cuero batte" he said slowly approach me and finally stood beside me. I was spreading butter on my two slices of bread. " What does that mean?" I asked really curious. " What? " He asked holding my waist and putting his head between my head and shoulder. Shivers ran through my spine all the way down to the sacred valley. " Those Italian words you always utter" I asked chopping the zucchini into small pieces. " Il mio cuero batte?" He asked the obvious. " Why don't you try to find out yourself Zabenathi Maphumulo " he said tightening his grip on my waist. " That's not fair and don't call me Zabenathi Maphumulo. It's just weird" I said moving to the refrigerator to put back the things I was using. I put

water in the kettle and plugged it, for tea. " I also want a cup of tea" he said, it was so not a request. " Ask nicely" I said walking around. He was following me around, hands still on my waist. " I'd also appreciate a cup of tea" he said slowly. " That's close but just not it" I said putting two spots of sugar in my cup. " Could you please make me a cup of tea, is that it?" He asked chuckling unbelievably. " that's more like it" i said smiling. But I have a condition" I said casually. " Let us hear the condition than" he said. " You will have to tell me what il mio cuero batte means and you can get your tea other than that you wouldn't even get the fast food that you ordered" I said serious. " Is that so" he asked turning me around so that I could face him. I nodded, suddenly not feeling like myself. His hands were on my butt. " Are you sure that you want to hear it" he asked taking a few steps towards me and I moving backwards until I reached the built-in wall unit, he scooped me up to put me on top of it. My heart was suddenly racing. He pulled my legs apart and got in between them. He put his hands on both sides of my head. I had nowhere to turn to. I was stuck. Every

cell in my body was discovered and awakened. " What are you doing" I asked in a husky tiny voice. " I'm trying to get you close so that you could get to hear properly what, " il mio cuero batte" means" he said, drawing his face closer to me. Then closer to my ear. " It means-my-heart-beat" he said slowly and seductively. He was intentional dragging the words. Why would he call me that, he didn't know me that much. The words made my heart race and I was suddenly feeling hot. " From the first day I met you, you made my heart beat so fast. No woman has ever been able to do that in years. it's strange isn't it?" He said moving his hands from my face to my waist. Underneath the thin fabric of my top. I couldn't find the words to say. Before I knew it his lips found mine, the kiss was so tenderising and slowly. My hands found themselves around his sexy large neck. His hands kept on moving slowly on both sides of my waist. I let in his tongue, I felt like crying in ecstasy. I was moaning and he was groaning. My nipples were getting harder with every second passing by. My fingers were moving through his soft, silky smooth hair. And then the delivery guy had to

knock

.....

Like and comment

[6/3, 14:31] Lynne: Page 12

Salvatore's POV

.....

I opened the door and the the delivery guy was standing there with plastics of food I ordered. I paid him and tipped him. Closed the door but when I turned back in Cora was no longer in the position I had left her in, I mean on top of the counter. I was a little bit disappointed, OK a lot more disappointed. She was now in bed, undercovers. " Who told you to move, il mio cuero batte? " I asked walking towards the bed. " It's 1:00 in the morning Joaquin. I have school tomorrow and you have work too." She said getting herself comfortable in bed. Mind you I was turned on, what are you doing Salvatore. My inner self screamed. " At least eat something" I said sitting down on bed. " I had the sandwich. Thanks" she said. I just retried the blankets and threw them on the

floor. " What are you doing" she asked louder. " You can't possibly call what you set food. You haven't had anything to eat the whole day. Eat something and then you can go to sleep" I said. " No, I don't want to. Just leave me alone. It's raining cats and dogs outside. You should really get going. Besides eating junk food is not good for me" she protested and then got her head under the pillow. She was such a stubborn young woman to deal with. I pulled her by her leg. She was busy fighting me the whole time. " Gee, what is wrong with you " I asked after finally managing to get her to sit on her butt on the edge of the bed. I took the two containers of Chinese noodles and gave one to her. She took it, she was in the sulking mood of some sort. We ate in silence, she actually finished the whole container. She seemed to be enjoying the noodles but I knew she was not about to admit it. " Would you like to have some dessert, I have ordered tiramisu" I asked casually. " No, I don't want it , are you going to force me to have it too" she asked throwing me an awful glance. " Yes, if I have to. My heart beat" I said serious. " Whatever man" she murmured softly but I

had it anyways. She went and threw her container into the rubbish bin by the corner of the apartment. She went over to the refrigerator and retrieved a bottle of water and poured it into the glass. " You know I ordered drinks too, right?" I asked chuckling. Women and drama, same WhatsApp group. She just kept quiet and drank on. I had the juice that I ordered right from the container. I cleared up, put the left food in the refrigerator and disposed the plastics. She was in bed. I switched off the lights and joined her. She had her back on me." My heart ?, Are you asleep" I asked, putting my arm around her neck. I could feel that she was not asleep yet, she was just angry at me, for what reason. I still don't know. " Cora" I said softly. It was more like a whisper. " Ok, I am sorry. I made you eat forcefully." I said but she didn't budge. We slept like that for a while. I was really getting impatient, " ok, I'm going to go now" I said moving but she held my arm tightly around her neck. I smiled a little " what is it that you want Cora, a few minutes ago you were asking me to leave and now that I am leaving you are holding my arm. What is it that you want. I could feel her pulse rising and

falling. She seemed to be scared from the body language she was giving out. " Don't go" that was all she managed to say." You want me to hold you just like this" I asked slowly and gently.i could feel her nodding " yes" in the dark. That was not enough, I wanted her to say it. To say that she wanted me as much as I wanted her. To tell me she felt helpless when my body was against hers as much as I was feeling. To tell me she had dreams of me as much as I was having. But I didn't say anything, I didn't want to scare her away by pushing things too far. She seemed so fragile and more scared than I was. Something male, something hard, something damp from me was poking her butt. I could feel her breath rising and she was tossing. Her grip on my arm even more tighter. If she was fully mine I could have had her right there and then. But something held me back, the fact that she was every man's woman. No she was not, but her body was. The fact that a lot of man had seen her naked made my heart sting. If she was going to be mine, she was going to be mine alone. Her body and soul, all mine. I took the extra pillow and put it between us. Fighting the painful

male need. After a while she was asleep, I stayed for a while and then climbed out of the window. She stayed in the third floor but it was not such a long building at least not for me.

.....

I got home at 3:13 in the morning. I took a shower just to cool down and had some sleep. I made a mental note to call in a meeting with my Kevin. I woke up at 6:00, there was no time to go to the gym I called Kevin while taking a shower. He was to arrive in 30 minutes. So in the mean time I decided to take a shower and have breakfast. I had to be at the school within the next 2 hours. He arrived when I was having my breakfast, it was not such a proper breakfast. " We can't just go to war" he said after I explained everything to him. " Since when have you become so weak, are you a pussy now? " I asked calmly. " You know that's not the point Kong. We made peace with the East wing." He said drawing in a sharp breath. " We need to have a strategy if we are going to start a war" he add. I had my jaws clenched. " You know that I am not scared of The

Don, right" I said banging on the table. " I can take him down, I can reduce him to nothing, just like that" I said through gritted teeth. " I know Kong, I was there when you took down, Marcus along with his gang, but that almost got you arrested" he said sighing. " Does your father even know about this girl" he asked. I threw him a stare . " If we are going to start a war, you have to warn the old man. He must get ready. That's even if he goes along with this" he said standing up from the chair. " He knows about her, just a little. He doesn't know that she is one of his students, I bet he thinks she is one of the teachers. He doesn't know what she does. Only you and I know about this and I tend to keep it that way." I said pouring myself a glass of water from the refrigerator. " Let's just collect our heads and think about this, way our options before going to war" he said. " If we can't get a solution, you're going to have no choice but to let the others know. You know scorpion is a better thinker than I am" he said glancing at his wrist watch. " Going somewhere?" I asked dismissing the idea of getting the other guys involved. " Yeah, I have a doctor's appointment with

Dr Davis. My wife is pregnant, remember?" He said impatiently. "Dude, I know that but why are you upset, is there something wrong" I asked chuckling. "Nothing major, just that there have been a lot of complications with this pregnancy and then I have to deal with the hormones and the cravings" he said scratching his head. "You know how these things are" he added. "No, no I don't" I said laughing. "Mxmm fuck you" he said leaving the house. "No thanks, your dick is too small for my asshole" I shouted laughing out loud. "By the way you should keep this one, she brought back your sense of humour and laughter, you child fucker" he said picking through the door. "Hey, but I haven't fucked her yet" I said bursting with laughter and joy. "Go to hell" I heard him say while he was getting into his ride. I checked myself one more time on the mirror and got into my car, drove off. I couldn't see my bodyguards behind me on my rearview mirror. I had bodyguards but they weren't the type that stayed close. They kept their distance. I knew there were somewhere around wherever I went. I kept on thinking about what Kevin said, I really had to think

of something fast. I couldn't watch her suffer no more . I got to the school 10 minutes earlier, the office i worked in was unlocked so I got in and had a sit . My phone rang and I answered it , really not in the mood to talk to anyone. It was my dad." Hey dude, how can I help you" I asked casually. " You dick, you better start showing me some respect. I'm your father you fool" he said dramatically pretending to be angry. " Is that all" I asked calmly." Your ex wife has passed by" he said. " What did she want" I asked. " Just to say hello" he said laughing. " It's not working, try again later" I said. " She said she misses you, she is really not my enemy. " He said spiteful. " She misses me or my money, what ever game she is playing tell her I'm not interested in playing with. Next time you see her please tell I said congratulations on her relationship and when are they getting married?" I said my voice pitch a little bit higher than usual. " Hey don't bite the messenger.... anyways how are things going there." He asked. " Great actually, I'll let you know on the report I'll be writing when I am done. Old man I have to go, see you on Saturday." I said then hung up. I was time for

an interview....

.....

Comment on the mission rescue Cora, my writing skills, not to forget the love that's brewing. Do not forget to like and share

[6/3, 14:31] Lynne: Continuing...

Cora's pov

It was raining during lunch time, all the students were gathered in the cafeteria. I was having my usual low sugar muffin and orange juice. "Is it true?" Amanda asked once again. "He gave me a lift home, only once. What's a big deal in that?" I asked chewing on my muffin. "Of course there is a big deal Cora. He gave you a lift, in his million rands Ferrari. You" she said on a low voice. "I still don't get it, is that why they are all giving me the awful looks" I asked not really interested. I had more things to be ashamed of than just a mere lift to my apartment. "Are you sure there's nothing going on between the two of you" she asked with raised eyebrows. "Cause if there is I would not mind, you guys would look

great together" she said picking for more spicy news. I knew her like the back of my hand. She loved spicy news and drama." I wouldn't know, really" I said standing up and then the bell rang. " Hey what do you mean you don't know" she asked eager she couldn't hold herself. " There's nothing going on between us, he is too old for me. Don't you think" I asked walking out of the cafeteria. " That's just a number, we both know that. He looks 25 and hot" she said all dreamy. " Snap out of it, Amanda" I said slightly poking her silly head." I mean if you don't want him, lend him to me. I could use a muscular man like him in that lonely house" she said laughing. Amanda was all talks but no action. She was still a virgin, her parents were always on some road trip in some countries. Doing charity work. She lived alone in the suburbs of Jo'burg in a big English mansion. But there is a housekeeper and a cook, who lives in the backyard guests house. Anyways we had the last periods of the day and the last bell rang. I was the first one to get out of the gate,. I needed to get started on serious studying for the examination. Just when I got there I got a taxi and off I was gone.

.....I got home at 3o' clock . I got started on studying as soon as I got inside the apartment. I took the usual 3 hours of study by 6 on the dot I was done. I took a shower and prepared myself for the night. I was done by 7:00 . I took a taxi to the club and the rest is history.

.....

2 days later

.....

The last time I saw Joaquin was on Friday, when he gave me another forceful ride home. He dropped me off and drove off, he seemed occupied. He was just so distant and cold. I had not seen him on Saturday, it didn't sit well with me. I kinda missed him a bit. It was Sunday and I was walking to church in my black block high heels and black pencil skirt and pink blouse. My baby pink bag with my necessities and Bible on my right hand. The weather was perfect for a walk out, the church was just a few streets away. " Do you mind if I join you" asked a voice behind me. I turned around to look. It was Amanga, he was a

good guy from the neighborhood, as I've heard. I had seen him a few times at church, we had never talked to each until that day." Sure, why not" I said casually. My Zulu wasn't really good, not even near to good. I was raised by my aunt and she was white. The man called my father was not around that much. I would know my father's language if he was a good man. I knew a few words. " Hi, I'm Smangaliso Zungu. I've seen you in church but we haven't really talked" he said giving me his hand for a handshake. " I'm Cora Maphumulo, it's nice to meet you Smanga. " I said shortly. We walked together to church, we talked about the wheather, the summons, the Bible until I heard a car hooter from my side. It was a township so we walked in the middle of the road but on the opposing car's side of the road. I looked on my side and it was the latest Austin Martin. The window rolled down, and the he was. " Can I give you a ride to church" Joaquin asked. " No, we're fine sir. It's not so far from here" Smanga answered first. " I wasn't talking to you small boy, I was referring to the beautiful lady , you are walking with." He said. " Do you know him" Smanga asked me. I shook my head "

no" . By the look on his face, he seemed extremely pissed. He was ready to murder someone and why?, I've never known. " Sir, we appreciate your offer. But please just drive along." Smanga said. Joaquin got out of the car swiftly. He was wearing long black leather overcoat, a white vest and jeans and boots. He seemed out of place. " Do you know what this is" he asked. Showing Smanga a pick of a gun from his waist side. " Joaquin" I said running to his side. " I wasn't kidding when I said run along. Are you riding with or you would like to see a blood sample of your little friend here" he asked looking down at me. I was so close to him. My hands on his chest. " Let's go" I said. Going to the other side of the car, he came along and opened the door for me. With the things I read about him, I was not willing to take the risk with someone's life. He drove slowly in silence. We reached the church in no time. He switched off the car engine. I could see the church members steering, thanks God it was a deemed car. You could only pick from the front and back to see who was inside. " Are you coming with me" I asked casually. He looked at me for a long time before answering. " Maybe some

other time. " Thanks for the ride" I said opening the door to get off. He didn't answer. I then closed it, I knocked on the window and he rolled it down." You look cute when you are jealous" I said bending over
[6/3, 14:31] Lynne: Page 13

It was such a great Sunday service, the preacher gave me a new reason to keep the faith and hope growing in my life. The church service ended at 13:30pm as usual. We were in the church premises when Mrs Zulu and the other two church ladies from the neighborhood approached me. " Child could you spare us a few minutes of your time" she asked and the other girls I was chatting with got their cue to leave. " How can I help you Mrs Zulu?" I asked putting my Bible in my bag. " Child about the man you have been seen several times with, umh I don't know if it's" I couldn't let her finish. " Mrs Zulu I thought I told you that he is my mathematics tutor" I said tapping my foot in impatience. " I heard that but I don't think that it's appropriate of him to drive you to church, it is not really good for the other young girls around here. What I'm trying to say is.." . Then

the other lady cut in " child what we're basically saying is that he is a very dangerous men, we've heard stuff about him on the news. He is not good for you,i really didn't know that he is a mathematics tutor now. When did that start" she said scornfully. " There's absolutely nothing going on between the two..." ..." Excuse me ladies" I heard that voice again from my behind. " Can I take my future wife home now, we have a dinner date to catch up and we're already late" he said putting his hands on my waist. Right there, from that moment I wished the grounds of the earth could just swallow me alive. What was he doing, my inner self screamed in shame. " She is your future wife?, Cora you didn't tell us that you were going to get married-to him. I thought you said he was your tutor" Mrs Zulu asked so fast, she couldn't believe what she was hearing and between her and I trust me, the feeling was mutual. " Ohh, she didn't tell you? , He asked dramatically pretending to be surprised and hurt. " We got engaged a few weeks ago. sweetheart I thought you said you were going to announce it to the church members and your priest but never mind. It must have slipped your

mind" he said so fast that I couldn't fathom a thing he was saying. It was all just passing by along with the wind. " Wow" the other lady said in astonishment. " Yeah, hard to believe huh?. My heart is just too shy, I guess that's why she didn't mention it. Anyways I have to steal her away from you pretty ladies. Bye" he said pulling me away. Leaving them gagging like fools.

.....

" What the fuck was that, do you know what you just did?" I asked realizing that I was pissed after a long time of driving. I was trying to process it all. " How many times will I have to ask you to stop cursing" he shouted. " Ohh, so you get to curse all you want and I don't. That's bullshit" I shouted back but the bastard just laughed. " I like you baby, to bring back the old extinguished flames" he said chuckling. " You are one twisted soul, may God help you" I said folding my arms around my chest and sulking but then I thought again, sulking in that situation was not going to help me. " Joaquin, do you realize that you just ruined my life. My social life is ruined. I was know as

this angelic girl around the neighborhood, I never drink, I don't change boys, let alone have one. I respect the elders. And you just took that all away in just one second. Now I will be seen as this girl from the neighborhood who dates old man, I hate you" I said calmly. " Yeah, if I could I'd hate myself too" he said giggling. " It's all games and sweets to you,huh?" I asked even more angry but I was more angry with myself for not trying to stop the nonsense he was saying. " You arrogantly son of a....of a mxm" I said. He giggled louder this time. " Il mio cuero batte, look at the bright side of the picture here, those women were trying to defame you. They were going to insult you, I saved your reputation" he explained. I just kept quiet" hey where are we going exactly" I asked after realizing we were long out of the neighborhood, he had joined the main road. " We're are going to my house" he said casually. " I don't want to go to your home, just take me back to the church if you are not going to take me to my apartment" I said and then my phone had to ring. It was the cheapest phone on earth, it only cost R 150, but I still functioned perfectly fine and I loved it. The

caller ID was written" mandycandy" . " Hey, Mandison" I said being forward. Mrs Mandison was was one of our school teachers, she was not so good looking, and her fashion sense was a Zero. So a lot of students teased Amanda by calling her Mandison. " I'm going to kill you before that masculine guy begins to kill you with his third(3) leg." She said, I swear my eyes popped out and my tongue almost fell off my mouth. " What are you saying, Amanda" I asked in a tiny little voice. " Yeah, I got you now, didn't I" she said giggling. " How do you know about the... You know who" I asked, trying not to give away the fact that we were talking about him. " My bitch, I have spies everywhere. I got my eyes on you" she said laughing out loud. " on a serious note though, where are you guys going " she asked serious. " I dunno" I said suddenly feeling hot. " Mxm, I knew you would not tell me. I guess I will just have to continue keeping tabs on you. Anyways be safe. You know I dig you right" she said. " Wait who told you about my where abouts. " I asked really, really curious. " We will talk tomorrow morning, be early, OK" she said. " Bye" I said then hung up. I

put my phone back in my bag and leaned back on the sit. " Can't you just take me back to my apartment. I am really tired and hungry and angry" I said emotionless. " I really don't want to go to your house" I added. " I don't need you to want to. I just have to take you there, it really doesn't concern me if you want to or not" he said it like it was nobody's business. " First you force me to get into your car and then you force yourself into my house and then the food and now this, what else are you going to force me to do, huh" I asked upset. " It's really hard to decide but don't worry it will depend on what will follow next" he said arrogantly.

..... We got into his home within an hour, it would have been half that if he was driving more faster. By the way he had changed the awful clothes he was in earlier, he was now in grey Nike tracksuits and retro Jordans sneakers. He looked all shades of gorgeous. The house was huge, he showed me around, I like the pool by the waterfall. " You seem to have everything you ever want in life" I finally said after a long time of touring the house. "

Almost everything but there are still a few things missing." He said thoughtful. " And what might that be, if I may ask." I asked anyways. " A beautiful wife and a lots of kids running around" he said looking straight in to my eyes. We were standing in the corridor. I found myself gulping on my saliva. " Ohh, yes a family. A wife, I wonder who the unlucky woman would be" I said trying so hard to make the fake laugh seem real and convincing. " I guess you will just have to hang around to find out" he said taking my hand and pulling my downstairs. Just the feel of his hand drove me insane. " I made some lunch, come. Let's eat. You said you were hungry." He said.....

[6/3, 14:32] Lynne: He let the towel loose and I left " what are you doing...stop it" I said trying to stop his hands from roaming my body. " Please... just one more time. Just this once" he begged. " But, but...it hurts a lot" I whispered. " I promise I'll be more gentle this time" he promised. And that's how I gave myself to Salvatore for the second time. The pain was non the less, but if I had to do it once again.

Then I would, without even thinking twice. We layed skin to skin that night, it felt so good to be held in his arms after love making. Our hearts were beating to the same rhythm.

..... just checking if, you can see the post. Page 14 is coming

[6/3, 14:32] Lynne: Page 14

Salvatore's POV

I opened my eyes and there she was, lying just a few inches from me. The breezing wind was blowing up the curtain slowly, the weather was gloomy and it seemed like it was going to hit us with a few drops of rain. The silk shirts covered her lower body and her upper body was bare. Her skin looked so soft and beautiful. I planted a few kisses on her back, she was sound asleep. I removed the strands of hair from her face, her cherry red lips were slightly opened. I wore my jogging pants and hit the gym in my house. I came back after 40 minutes and took a shower, my brain and heart were arguing whether I should or shouldn't wake her up for school. I decided

not to, she wouldn't have been able to walk properly either way. I wore my white formal trouser, white polo neck knitted sweater, black leather jacket and black formal shoes. I then went down stairs to prepare breakfast for myself and her. I didn't really know what she liked to have for breakfast so I prepared a portion of everything that I had for breakfast. I was done after 30 Minutes later, I put hers on a tray and carried it upstairs. When I got there she was still sleeping, I shook her body gentle but she didn't budge so I screamed " Cora wake up!" She sat on her butt like a mad woman. " Shit, school, school... why didn't you wake me up?" She said fast. " The principal is going to kill me... what time is it..." She asked. Mind you her upper body was still bare, her firm breasts on display. If she was a rich girl, she would have been accused of performing plastic surgery. She realized what I was drooling at " what the..." She half cursed. She covered up and rushed to the bathroom. To take a shower, I guessed. She was walking in a funny way though, she was officially an hour and a half late. Anyways I put the tray on the coffee table in the room and fixed the bed. I decided

to check out my emails and I didn't like what I found. I called miss Samuals, my PA immediately. " What nonsense is this, Sandra. Where is the driver, forget the driver. My truck, how damaged is it" I asked furiously angry. The email said that the truck driver had an accident yesterday and the fruit and vegetables for the restaurant were damaged, which meant that the restaurant had no fruit and vegetables. " The driver was badly injured, he is in the ICU, the truck is taken by the insurance company, apparently the driver was drunk, I don't think that the insurance company will do much about the truck." She explained. " Why haven't you ordered new vegetables then" I asked puzzled. " Sir the manager is off duty for three days and his

manager went home earlier yesterday, his child is sick. He tried to call you but you were reachable, so he called me instead. And I don't have access to the bank account" she explained. " I'll transfer the money to you, I want you to directly buy the vegetables and fruits yourself, I'll send a truck from the hotel Paradisé, I'll deal with you guys later. I don't have

time for these petty issues." I said and then hung up.

[6/3, 14:32] Lynne: Continuing...

Just after the call, Cora came out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around her petite body." Where are my clothes and bag" she asked busy drying her hair with the other smaller towel. " In the laundry room, downstairs" I said typing a message to one of my friends who who worked at a designer clothes store. She walked towards the door. " They are covered in vomited chicken, you know" I said and she closed the door that she had just opened. " But I thought you washed them" she said in a tiny little voice. " Do I look like a laundry man to you" I asked standing up from the couch and approaching her but she moved towards the bed and set down in defeat. Her elbows on her knees and face on her hands. " Could you drive me home then" she asked emotionless. " Do I look like a chauffeur to you... You haven't even said good morning yet" I said chuckling. " Is all this fuss about the fact that I have not greet you good morning" she asked looking up at me. I was standing over her, with hands in my pants

pocket. " Stand up and give me a kiss" I demanded. She gave me a dare stare, she finally stood up and kissed me on the cheek. I gave her a look of unsatisfactory. She finally gave me a kiss on the lips. I held her waist tightly and kissed her back, I still held her waist even after we were done kissing. " Good morning Joaquin" she said sighing softly. " Good morning my heart beat" I said smiling. " I made you breakfast" I added. " Thanks... but I should really get going. " She said blinking a couple of times. " Do you think it's a good idea to go to school today, I mean the way you are walking... not so good. I think you should use my phone, call the school principal and tell him that you are sick or injured or something. You can use my phone" I suggested but she just Huffed and got herself loose from my grip. " Do I look injured to you... You did this to me and now you are calling me sick and injured." She sulked. I just said nothing. " And I don't think calling the principal, using your cellphone number is such a good idea. It will raise a lot of questions. I'll rather use my phone" she kind of finally agreed. " I'm sorry, your phone is in the kitchen counter" I said. She did as I had

suggested. The Nike tracksuits that I asked my friend to buy for her arrived after an hour. We ended up having her breakfast together because it was somehow too much for her. She didn't want to accept the tracksuits at first but I convinced her otherwise. She wore them. " I will take you to the mall, to watch a movie and do some shopping or would you rather stay indoors and watch it here at home" I asked but I already knew what her answer would be anyway. " I'll stay indoors and I will be the one to choose the movie" she said unsurprisingly. And then my phone rang, " excuse me" I said leaving the bedroom. " Telescope" I said answering the phone. " Kong, what is it that i hear about you being seen in one of Don's clubs" he asked wasting no time. " Relax, I had the security on point." I explained. " I was going to call you, I have thought of something. I don't know if you are going to be able to pull it off..." I said on a serious note. " Spit it out" he said. " Well ... I want you to erase all the pictures and videos of Cora on Don's website, heck into their system. I've even got some research done on this, do you think you'd be able to get it done" I asked. " That could be

done but it will require a lot of time and we don't have that much time. Her stripping period will be over within a week. Which means that she will have to back to selling her body" he explained. " Shit... How much time do you need" I asked furiously angry. " It depends on how the security stands of the website is like. It could take a couple of weeks or a month or so... The period is not accurate. We'd have to think of a backup plan in the meantime" he suggested. " Man ... Look I called you about the tomorrow's mission. Do you still remember" he asked. " How can I forget that... Of course I remember. We will have to meet up tonight, at my place. We need to revise the plan one last time" I said firmly. " Sure bozza Yami." He said. " Let the rest of the gang know... I have to go" I said then hung up.

.....

I went back to the room on to find Maria cleaning up. " Where's Cora" I asked paging my phone. She just stared at me in confusion. I then remembered that they hadn't met yet probably. " I mean the lady who

was here" I said. " Ohh, she is on the roof top." She said. Maria came twice a week to clean up, she was probably on her late 40s. " Good morning to you too sir" she added as I was getting out. Yeah, she had an attitude too but ahead pretty good at what she did. I exited the glass door that leads to the pool on the roof. " Aren't you scared of heights, look how fast the water is flowing. There must be crocodiles down there" she said without even looking at me, I guessed she felt my presence. " Crocodiles don't live in flowing rivers sweetheart" I said standing beside her. " The river must be flowing to the sea, it's so enormous." She said looking all shades of fascinated. " Now I know what your favorite spot in the house is" I said folding my arms around my chest. " Or really?" she asked smiling at me. " This... You're fascinated by all this" i said signalling with my hands. " It's beautiful" she said. " I've met Maria, she says that you are the devil's advocate" she said trying to hold the smile on her face. " Devil's advocate, ain't we supposed to be watching a movie right now" she asked walking towards the door, it was more like running. " Hey, I'm 15 years older than

you, show some respect." I said warningly. " Yeah,yeah, you didn't see all that last night when you were busy crying for my pussy" she teased then got in. I just chuckled and let her go. She had no filter in her mouth. She always had something to say. Anyways, I stood right there for a while. Just thinking about what Kevin said earlier on. The thought of Cora with another man just made my blood boil with fury. She was only mine and I'd do anything to keep it like that

[6/3, 14:33] Lynne: Page 15

Salvatore's POV

.....

If I knew, I wouldn't have suggested that we watch a movie. It was a nightmare, I mean we were watching a chick flick. It was one of those college/ musical kind of movies. She was so entertained and enjoying it while I on the other side kept faking a smile and trying so hard to concentrate on it. But then I was saved by my ringing phone, she gave me the " I dare you to answer that" look. If I was an ordinary man I

would have switched it off at that very moment. " Escusa(I'm sorry) I said already on my way out. It was a call from my PA, I immediately had to drive to the market where they sell vegetables. I couldn't even go back to the cinema to let Cora know where I was going. I took my Audi RS 5 coupé. It was not the fastest car but it was still cool. I loved it for my own personal reasons. I drove off to the market, it took me 1hr30minutes to get there. " Sir, the owner of the shop says that we have to wait for next week's stock, the fruits and veggies that are left are not for sale, there were ordered by the her other customers. We tried our best to negotiate with her but she refused us bluntly. " I'll go inside and talk to her, you stay right here." I said going inside the market. I came back 15 minutes later, followed by a couple of man carrying baskets of fruits and vegetables. " I think my work here is done" I said opening the door of my car. " Sir, if I may ask how did you convince her" she asked anyways. " I doubled whatever they were going to pay her, most people understand the language of money more than the other languages." I said, closed the door and drove off. I looked on my

rearview mirror and the truck was being loaded with fruits and vegetables. I made a mental note to call a meeting on Wednesday so that I could address the petty issues my staff couldn't handle. Serious I had a lot on my plate, like the upcoming mission we had to execute. I checked the time and it was 2:30. Cora was not going to like it if I was late so I drove a little bit faster. I joined the main road and right in the middle of the city there was traffic. I smelt trouble from miles. There had been a rough road accident and then it had to start raining heavily. I was stuck in traffic for full two hours and a few minutes. And then I still had to drive slowly because the roads were slippery. My house was an hour away from the city. It was in the wilderness. That's why I had the waterfall and the dam. I got home at 5:30. I parked the car in the garage. Walking on the staircases from the garage I heard a lot of noise. And boom the whole gang members were there. In my sitting room having some drinks. " Hey... Look who decided to grace us with his presence." Kevin screamed coming my way. We fist bumped and I did the same with the others too. We were like a family. There was six of

us actually.

.....

Narrated

The five gang members greeted each other with great respect. They had their own differences but they were inseparable. They all needed each other in some way. Let me break them down into details

1. Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore- Kong-who was named after the greatest ape- he was fearless and most dangerous of them all.

2. Telescope- Kevin Sandile Cebisa- who had the sharpest brain when it came to computers- you wouldn't want to be fooled by his naïve looks- he was ruthless when provoked

3. Rajesh Kumar Singh -The machete- he was good with knives- could slaughter a full house within a few minutes.

4. Texiang li Chun -The serpent- the undercover agent who could change his looks for a good paycheque.

5. Mbuto cannon - Venom- his speciality was to lure rich woman.

6. Michael Sullivan- The Jaguar- he was a detective, he was pretty much a spy.

.....

" What are you guys doing here so early." He asked looking at his wrist watch. " He asked because they usually met at six o'clock. " It's quite cold man and we have women to get back to" Michael said. " Which one is it, tonight" they all asked in unision and then laughter filled up the room. Salvatore noticed that Cora wasn't around, " excuse me" he said walking out of the sitting room. " Hey Kong, she is in the kitchen" Kevin screamed behind him. Salvatore went to the kitchen and found Cora there preparing five glasses of coffee. " Hey, what are you doing?" He asked holding her from behind. He just yanked his hands from her waist and continued with what she was doing. " Just leave me alone" she B said in a husky voice." Hey, what happened" he asked turning around. " Have you been crying" he asked. She seemed s scared and sad at the same time. " Take

me home Salvatore" she said looking down. She lifted her face by lifting her chin. Her eyes weren't red which would have been the evidence of crying. " You are not going anywhere until you tell me what's going on" he said firmly. " Why didn't you tell me that your friends are coming, why are you late. They are scary too" she half shouted. " Cora it's not like they have scars on their faces or something. And sorry I'm late, I was stuck in traffic" he explained. " Whatever... just take me home, I don't want to be here. I don't belong here. I shouldn't have allowed you to bring me here in the first place. " She said in a husky sad voice. A thought crossed his mind. " Cora what did they say to you" he asked quickly with his grip on his arms. " Nothing" she said getting away from him and unplugging the kettle. She came back with it and poured on one of the cups. Salvatore took it away from her. " I know for a fact that they said something, I know them, they are my friends. And it also happens that I know you too, you are avoiding my eyes which means that you are lying to me." He said. " It doesn't matter anymore" she said taking the kettle. " Damn it Cora, look at me when I am talking

to you" he snapped. Making her put the kettle down swiftly. He held both sides of her head. " It was nothing personal, they said that you now deal with small fish, they exchanged words like" I wonder how long this one is going to last" . They said that you are using me, no one could fill up Kylie's place. But it was just one rude guy. The others stopped him." She explained, even though she was hurting. She didn't want to be the reason why he fought with his friends. But there was one word that kept on ringing in her brain "Kylie". " They said all that?, And then made you make coffee for them." He asked. " It's OK really. I'm going to just go away from here and then it will all be over, they will not have to see me again" she said getting back to what she was doing before he got in. " You are not going anywhere, I'm going to keep you. They might as well suck it up. Leave the stupid coffee. Come I want to introduce you to them." He said pulling her by her arm. " But Salvatore..." She tried to protest but it was a little bit too late because they were already in the sitting room. The guys were chatting loudly. "Hey guys I want to introduce you to someone" he said a little bit

louder. They all gave him their attention. " Cora, these are my friends. Kevin, Michael, mbutho, tiaxing and Rajesh. Guys this is Cora, my woman" he said, Cora was more like standing behind him than besides him. He was like a 3 years old girl on her first day of school and she would like cling on her mother's skirt or father's trousers for life. " Nice to meet you guys" she said and no one in the room missed the edge of fear in her voice. " Is she a woman yet, she looks 13. I thought you liked your women grown up and mature. Look at her shaking" Michael said then laughed, he realized later that he was the only one who was laughing. The anger in Salvatore's eyes couldn't be missed placed. His jaws were clenched, hands fisted, and knuckles turning pink. " Looks like someone wants to see his own blood sample" he said walking slowly towards Michael who suddenly stood up cause he knew what was coming next. He held him up by his collar. " What did you just say" he asked through gritted teeth. " Kong man, come on. You know how he can get" Kevin said but not daring to get anywhere near the two. " You're going to hit me, for her, this bitc..." he

didn't even let him finish, his unfinished sentence was followed up by a punch with broke his nose. He fell down, Kong was about to get to him again when... " Joaquin please" Cora screamed and rushed to him. " Just take me home, please" she said standing between Michael who was on the floor with the bleeding nose and Kong who was fuming. " Cora, get away from me. I want to deal with this dog" he said trying to move her away without hurting her but she stood her ground. " Please... for my sake" she pleaded with sadness and hurt mixed with anger. She held his arm and pulled him away. She got her stuff and he drove her home. The drive home was quiet. They both were in their own worlds. Cora's heart was bleeding, why would that guy call her a bitch. He didn't even know her. She thought to herself. They touched the apartment within an hour and Salvatore insisted on seeing her inside even though she protested. She realized that it was of no use, the word " no" didn't exist in his vocabulary. She unlock the door and realized how much she missed her own space, yes being with Joaquin was everything she has ever dreamed of well until the

Michael guy showed up. Until his whole shady friends showed up. They both entered, Cora light up the apartment and stood right there in the middle of it, her back on him. "Joaquin, I think it would be best if you get going your friends are waiting for you and I need to do my own thing." She said drawing in sharp breath. "I'm sorry you had to see that" he said turning her around so that she could face him. He locked his hands behind her waist, just above her huge butt. "It's ok" she said putting her hands on his masculine arms. They stayed like that for a moment. "I had the best weekend of my life with you, thanks. Even though we didn't get to finish the movie" she said smiling but it just didn't reach up to her eyes. "Even though my jerk of a friend ruined it" he added. "Yeah... It's good that you were there to defend me, you are a good guy devil's advocate. Well at least to me" she said giggling a little bit. "Respect Il mio cuero batte, I told you earlier" he said smiling. They smiled and then got back serious mode again. He kissed her forehead. "Good night my heart beat" he said slowly. He deprived himself to kiss her lips cause she knew that it would have led to something

else he had no control over. " Good night" she said back. She had his car drive off 3minutes later and she had to go to the club.

[6/3, 14:33] Lynne: Continuing...

It was around 12:00 in the morning when I got back home from the club, it wasn't that full since it was a Monday and I also got the bad news that it would be my last day at the club on the coming Saturday. Stripping was not a decent thing either but it was better than sleeping with men. I was so exhausted from the exotic dancing but I still made time to study. I woke up at 6:00 in the morning and took a 30 minutes jog and used the other 30 minutes to get ready for school. I got to school just when the bell was about to ring. The 3rd term examinations were going to start in two weeks time. I hadn't seen Amanda until lunch time, I was in a class room training for the upcoming exams. I was alone and she bugged in uninvited. " I need every single details" she said taking a sit next to me. " Good day to you too, Amanda" I said closing the text book. " Whatever ever, do you know how worried I was. You weren't

even answering my calls and texts. You went MIA on me. So selfish" she said fuming. That told me she cared, more than i had imagined. " I'm sorry, I saw your missed calls and texts but I was just so tired. I'm sorry, I just didn't think that you'd be this worried. Sorry" I said pulling my ears in apology. " Whatever bitch, give me a hug" she said already pulling me in for a hug. " Of course I'll be worried, I'm your friend you fool" she said smiling. " You are my favorite bitch in the whole wide world, I love you" she said. " Even though you fuck my crush" she said slightly poking my arm. " Who said we fucked" I asked in shock. "Ok... If you didn't fuck then tell me what made you tired to the point where you couldn't even call me back and lastly why do you walk like a chicken" she asked then laughed. " He must have it enormously huge" she added bursting into laughter. " Amanda, that's enough. That's so inappropriate for you to say" I said a little bit louder than I would normally would have. I don't know, something just made my temperature rise, I couldn't stand her talking about Joaquin's... you know what. " Ok, sorry. I was just making a joke" she said looking alert.

Making me realize that maybe I shouted for no reason, I mean why should I care. Ahha why cora, my inner self said. " I'm sorry too, I shouldn't have shouted, I don't know what's wrong with me. " I said then closed my eyes a little bit, I needed to think, I needed to focus more on my priorities. Joaquin just didn't fit in the picture, he was just going to drag my process down. " Do you love him" she asked serious. " No, no, no. Of course not, I'm way out of his league. And besides there is nothing going on between us, so why would I" I said with a lump in my throat. I was suddenly feeling sad because of my own words, the realization that we are two people from two different worlds. But if he did not like me why did he call me his woman the other day, my inner self asked. No, he must have been feeling guilty of sleeping with me. I answered quietly. " Cora, are you doing okay" she asked putting her arms over my shoulder. " Yes, I'm ok... About our studying plans. You'd have to drive with me to my apartment. That way we will have more time. I think it would be a waste of time for you to actually go to your home and then travel once again to mine. I don't know, I think you'd have to

bring your changing clothes to my apartment. You know that I would have come to your home for studying, but I've got work. My aunt doesn't send me enough money...I have to" she put her hand on my mouth. " Shh.. It's OK really. You've told me about your aunt and work. Coming to your house sounds perfect, I'd love to. A change of scenery is what I need at the moment. At last I'd finally ride with you" she said holding my hand. We will start next week then" I said smiling

.....

I unlocked the door to my apartment, entered and then closed it. " So you went to the club last night?" A voice asked. I looked around and there he was sitting on the bed. " Hey... You scared me. What are you doing here" I asked curiously. My heart threatening to come out of my chest. His eyes were red, he was a whole lot different man. He seemed sad and furious at the same time. " You must be

enjoying it, right. The attention they give you, the skimpy little skirts, or maybe the money. That could be the main reason, tell me do they turn you on... Do they make you scream and shout out their names like I do..." He kept on talking and walk towards me and I was moving backwards, really scared. I could feel my bladder getting full by seconds. I moved back until i ran out of space, I was leaning on the door and he had his hands roughly holding my shoulders. " Tell me damn it, do you enjoy it. Why would you go there... Why cora, why would you fucking go there. I thought you were going to study and go to sleep but no... you had to go there." He asked shaking me. I could feel burning tears forming. " Joaquin, what are you talking about... you are hurting me" I said trying to get his hands off my shoulders. " You call this pain... You clearly don't know the pain I felt upon hearing that you went to the club. That other man were gloating on your body. Why don't you understand that... Je te veux pour moi seul , et quetu n' apes pas d'autres Smanga(I want you only for me, that I don't want you to see other men)" he shouted. " You knew that I was a prostitute

the day you decided to search for me, you know that's what I do. What do you want from me, I have no choice. It's either this or I die... Anyways why does it matter to you, you don't care. You got what you wanted, what most mem wants. Why don't you just leave me alone. Why does it matter to you if other man looks at me like I'm some piece of meat. Why, why" I shouted back madly. He had the nerve to come into my house and insult me, like I loved what I was doing. I was not born with privileges like him. I had no choice, if I ran away, the Don was going to hunt me down and do the cruelest things he has done to other run away prostitute. There was no way out except for two hard one, and that why I was working so hard. " Because I love you damn it" he shouted back. It was like he could not believe it himself the way he reacted after saying that. My fury turned into fear . " Yes I love you Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo. I love you" he said holding my head from both sides. " I'm madly in love with you, after so many years im finally in love again" he said in realisation. " No, no, no... This can't be happening, you can't love me..." I said so fast like a mad woman.

I got out of his grip. I was walking around while talking to myself. " You, you can't love me... you are lying. I'm not to be loved. I'm a curse. You deserve a decent woman, you cannot love me. You must be confused, yes that must be it. You are confusing lust with love" I was busy walking around while talking to myself. " Cora, stop it" he shouted through gritted teeth. I froze right there. My eyes popped like a goat. He walked up to me and pulled me to sit down, he sat on the couch and sat me on his lap. My brain wasn't functioning properly that day. I sat quietly fidgeting with my hands. He pulled me closer to his body and snuggle me to his neck. Tears couldn't stop streaming down my face, I was silently crying. He put his hand on my back and kept on moving it there. After a long while, I stopped crying, I was crying for a lot of reasons. 1. He insulted me 2. I was helpless about the prostitution thing 3. He just said he loves me and I don't believe it 4. He confused the hell out of me. I didn't know if I hated him or loved him. I tried to get off his lap but he held me back to where I was, snuggle up to his neck. " I know that you don't think that a man like me could ever loved

you, let alone love. But believe it or not I truly love you and I am not scared to let the whole world know. I love you Cora" he said. Making my whole body shiver. " And I know this because when ever you are not around you are always on my mind, I loved you the first day I met saw you. I fell in love with your blondish hair, your soft skin. Your tiny voice. I know this because I get super furious when I see you with other man. I'm possessive about you, I even love your inappropriate manner of speaking." He added. I heard him but it just didn't do. And I don't want you to go back to the club ever again, I'll make a plan to get you out of that he'll, je the veux rien qu 'a moi(I want you only for myself). I'd do anything to get you out" he said. I was just quite. Inhaling the fine scent of his Cologne. " Say something" he requested. I drew in a sharp breath and sat straight. " I want to believe you, trust me I want to believe every word you just said but unfortunately I don't, I can't let myself get lured into your world only for me to be burned in the end. And it would be better for the both of us if you stayed away from The Don. He is a very evil men. You must have heard. I will get myself out

of this, the same way I got myself in. I have a great plan, it doesn't matter if it will take 10 or 20 years but I'd finally get out. and I hate how you make me feel like a little kid" I said then got back to the position I was in. there was silence for a while and then..." If I may ask, what's your plan" he asked. " The Don sells girls who had wronged him in some way or those he feels that he doesn't want anymore, the ones who doesn't bring enough money. They are sold to foreign buyers. My plan is to get enough money and pay some foreign to buy me." I explained not so proudly made " sweetheart, do you know what happens to those girls?" He asked with a smirk on his face, I could feel it without even looking at him." They are mostly sold to drug lords, gun sellers and buyers who use human organs for some twisted rituals, others are sold to rich people who are in need of vital human organs. So what if your plan goes kabish just like that, you'd be dead or worse arrested for selling illegal guns or cocaine. " He explained. " And how do you know all this" I asked looking him in the eyes. " You know who I am. I deal with people like The Don every single day. In fact I killed his

father when I was nineteen. Since then we have been enemies. I have a plan to get you out of this. It's a little bit inconvenient for you since you'd be writing your examinations soon so I'm going to think of something to buy us Time. I really abhor seeing you with other man, worse if you had to sleep with one I'd die. You're only mine" he said. " Stop saying that like I'm just some object, I have feelings too. I don't remember agreeing to be someone's" I said a little bit louder. He kept quiet for a few minutes "what should I do to make you mine" he asked sincerely. " You are the man, figure it out" I said calmly." Ok, I'll" he said. " But can I get a kiss before I go" he said. And I quickly sat straight up. " You are leaving already"I asked not liking the sound of it. " Yes, have an important mission to execute" he said. I was just looking at his moving pink lips, hearing him faintly. I then leaned in for a kiss, I took him by surprise because he was busy talking. He slipped his tongue into my mouth, I started the kiss but he had to be dominant, I didn't like that. But it's not like I knew what I was doing when I was around him but still. The kiss left my mind exploding, my spine Arched

towards him. My nipples were hard already just by being against his chest. He slipped his hand under my skirt and kept on massaging my thighs, I wanted more, since I knew the ecstasy he could give me. I wanted more, I wanted of him, my breathing rhythm got louder, I kissed him with hunger. I was in the process of unbuttoning his shirt when he pulled out. " Mhh, il mio cuero batte. I have to go, not today" he said making me standing up and he did the same. " Do you really have to go" I asked disappointed and frustrated at the same time. " Yes, it's important. We will do this some other time. We have the rest of our lives" he said then moved away, walking towards the door. I followed him behind, for why I still don't know. " You don't want me?, What is it really. Am I suddenly disgusting You. Wasn't my pussy tight enough. What is it" I asked tearing up. " that's not fair, you know that's not true. You saw the situation with your pussy, why would you ask that. I wouldn't have come here if I felt disgusted by your presence. You know that I love you..." He said then kissed my forehead. " Then why are you leaving. You lied when you said you love me, didn't you? . You know what I don't want to ever

see you again. Go to hell" I screamed pushing him outside and then closed the door. " Cora stop it, open up. Cora open this door.... You know what I'm leaving" he said. I then heard his fading foot steps. I broke down and cried." Why did you do that Cora, why are you so scared, why do you have to have insecurities and fears. Why, why,why" I asked myself screaming out louder.

.....

Salvatore's POV

I drove to the warehouse like a mad man, it was Two hours away from the city. I had a lot of things on my mind, Cora was giving me unwanted stress and worry. I had to get prepared for the mission. I didn't need stress. It mostly leads to insufficient focus. The cars and trucks for the mission were already in the warehouse, the gang members were waiting for me. Robbing a truck full of cash wasn't an easy mission. I checked my guns and ova in the trunk and were drove off in 3 different cars. We were coupled into two.

....3 hours later...

There was suddenly gun fires blazing at us. Yes, we had managed to get the money truck to get into an accident as planned. We were busy loading the cash when we had sirens and there was a shoot out. We took cover and shot back. But they were a lot of police officers and we were out numbered. We signalled each other for a run. Machete was busy loading the last bag of cash. The police were closing in on us. I shouted at him to leave the remaining money but he was a stubborn guy. Our cars were getting ruined by seconds. I signalled for venom to cover me while I tried to get machete to leave the cash. I managed to get to him but on our way back to the car, I felt the bullet penetrating my flesh and then lights out..

.....

20 comments will lead us to another page people.
Less than that

[6/3, 14:33] Lynne: Page 16

Cora's pov

I was studying almost Everytime I was free, I needed to my mind off things. Nothing seemed to be alright, things went west and south. I was a mess, but thanks God I was a study freak when I was stressed. The other day I had one of those nightmares. The picture of it was still vivid in my mind..... He had slapped me more than ten times and I was sick of it. My left eye was slowly but surely shutting off. I was scared to retrieve the knife I had kept under my pillow earlier on but he provoked me by taking off his trunk, that's when my hand slipped under my pillow and got hold of the kitchen knife. He was busy trying to separate my legs when I stabbed him on the neck. I kept on stabbing him on the same spot, I was just so fed up with him, the assaults, the insults, the abuse. He had turned me it to some hard to trust, broken, insecure, lowself esteemed monster. He finally fell on top of me, I was covered in blood. I pushed him off me and ran away from home. I had my backpack only and the red blood stained white dress I was wearing. I entered the nearby church

bathroom and changed. Tears couldn't stop flowing, I had a few R50 notes. My plan was to take a bus to Johannesburg and start over with my life. I left the only place I knew and called home, at least I tried to treat it like home. I left my siblings Connie and Charles. They were my half siblings in fact, they were born after my aunt married my father..... anyways it had been two days since I had seen Joaquin. It pained me a lot because he didn't leave in good terms the last time I saw him. I just didn't know what to do. I was in the computer laboratory, doing my life orientation assignment when Chris sat next to me. He was one of my classmates and he had asked me out at the beginning of the year but I said no. He was such a cool guy and clever too. He was white, " hi" he said. " Hi" I said continuing with what I was doing. " Are you doing OK, because I've been watching you for the past few hours and you seem...I don't know, distant maybe" he said not so sure. " I'm ok, I'm just stressed about the coming examinations and I haven't studied a lot so..." I lied. " How is Lydia?" I asked not really interested in knowing. " Cora Lydia and I broke up a month ago... I thought you have

heard" he said in astonishment. " Oh sorry, just that I don't really poke my nose into other people's business." I casually mentioned. " Yeah... I've noticed. Are you sure that you still don't want to go out with me" he asked looking all shades of hopeful. " Sorry to disappoint you but my answer is still no" I said getting back to what I was doing. " You can bruse a man's heart, you know" he said dramatically hurt. He was even holding his chest. I just giggled, he was such a great guy and good looking too." Ok, let me leave you alone... for now" he said then swaggered away. Leaving a smile on my face.

.....

A day later

I couldn't concentrate properly in class, I had seen the news on utube about the hijack of the money truck. I was the hottest news around the country and it had happened a few hours after Salvatore left me that day. He had said that he had an important mission to execute. And then he had just disappear on me. I just fed up of all the wondering and what ifs. The shooting part left my heart so cold and scared. I

was suddenly suffering from severe headache. I asked miss Knight for a pass out and she granted me the letter. I took a taxi home and got more money so that I could call a cab to drive me to his house. No taxis ever drove to the part of the city he lived in, people around there were driving their own cars. It was such a standardized place, that gave me no sense of belonging. Two hours later later I was on the gate. I got the cabdriver's card so that I could call him to pick me up when I was done. I was in my white long dress what which was short sleeved and Lacey on the upper body. My white bra was quite visible but thank God I was wearing a black small Jean jacket. I had my silver grey sandals. It was very windy. I pressed the house bell twice and waited but there was no answer from the other side. Ten minutes later there was still no answer. I pressed it thrice the second time and 2 bodyguards came rushing towards the gate. There was quite a long distance from the house to the gate. " Miss, we've already seen you on camera, sir does want you here, please leave" one of them said. They were wearing their usual black tuxedos and sunglasses carrying

walky-talkies . " I'm not going anywhere until I see Salvatore. God and tell him I said I'm not going" I said firmly and determined. I had to see if he was alright. The other one made a phone call, " sir, she refuses to leave until she sees you"...." Ok sir" he said. It was so frustrating not to Salvatore from the other end. " Ma'am if you don't leave in 2 minutes, you are going to be in a lot of trouble.... let's go, Mr Salvatore said we could leave her here" he said and then they left. " You can't leave me here... please open the gate. I just want to see if he's ok. Just for one minute. Please" I called out but they didn't budge. I kept on ringing the bell until I was tired, I sat down but I was not going to leave until I saw him, what if he was dying, what if his family was preparing for his funeral and they didn't want to let strangers inside. 3 hours later I was still sitting there, it was cold, my teeth were colliding with each other. My hands and feet stone cold. I was beginning to drizzle. In a few minutes it poured me with large drops of rain and I was soaking wet. I stood up and ringed the bell one more time. My spinal cord was stiff and sore. I rang the bell one more time and it actually open. I took a

few steps inside, and then walked up to the house. When I reached the house the door open from the inside. I entered and stood in the middle of the sitting room like a chicken. Joaquin ascended down the stairs slowly. He was leaning on the staircases raised bar. He looked a little bit lighter than the last time I saw him. I couldn't wait for him to get down, with the pace he was walking in, it could have took the whole year for him to finally get down. I threw down the bag I was carrying and ran into him and gave him a hug. He hugged me back but he was groaning in pain. I let go of him and held his had from both of the sides. " Are you ok, I thought you had left me... I thought you had died and left me alone. You are not going to die right. You are not dead. Yes, you, you wouldn't leave me just like that... and I am sorry for what I said that day..I was— " shut up Cora, you are drenched in rain, I told you to leave didn't I, you always have to defy my word. You never listen and now you are going to catch cold" he snapped. " I'm sorry... But I couldn't leave without seeing you, I couldn't. Why don't you understand, I thought you died Alonzo, I don't care if I drenched or

going to catch cold. I don't care if my spine is frozen and my feet are numb, even if there was lightning and thunder I would have still stood there until you opened up, why don't you understand, I'm not able to make it through if I lost you too. I wouldn't —"

Cora it's ok, I'm not going anywhere. I'm here now and I'll always be. I love you and you are stuck with me for life.... Now come and take a bath or else you will get sick" he said wiping off my tears. I shook my head in agreement. We walked up the stairs slowly. He seemed to be in pain. He ran the tub water for me and put in the bubble bathing foam. " Take off your clothes" he said. My hands were shaking and my feet were not so steady. I took off the jacket with great difficulty and he noticed that . He helped me to take off the dress and under covers. I got into the bathtub and soaked my body, the water was warm. He Left the room and came back with a blue gown, blue slippers and a white t-shirt. " Wear these when you are done and get under covers. I'm going to tell the chef to make you some hot chocolate with marshmallows and some food too. When was the last time you ate?" He asked. " I don't know, I think it

was on—" that's not good, you can't even remember the last time you had food... just take the bath" he huffed. He was pissed and walking in a funny way, he'd shut off his eyes sometimes, he seemed to be in a lot of pain and discomfort. I had to find out what was wrong with him. After the 30 minutes bath, I wore the clothes I was provided with and felt warm instantly. They smelled like him. I got out of the bathroom, I found him sitting on his bed, doing absolutely nothing except staring at the bathroom door way. " Are you ok" he asked concerned. " I should be the one asking you that" I said folding my arms around my chest. " What do you mean" he calm. " You seem to be weak, were you shot Joaquin, please just tell me the truth" I pleaded kneeling Infront of him. " I'm not catching up with you, what are you talking about. I'm pretty much fine and why would I be shot" he asked chuckling casually. But it was not normal, he could have fool anyone else but not me. I could see through him just like he could see through me. " You are lying to me Salvatore, please just tell me the truth. I can't take this anymore. Are you dying" I pleaded once again. " Cora I'm doing

this for your own good, the less you know the better." he said brushing my hair with his left hand which he wouldn't normally use. " If you think that I'd go to the cops, you clearly don't have a clue of who I am. Just tell me where you're hurt and stop trying to protect me. I am not a kid. I've survived a lot before you came just spit it out and I'll take it" I half snapped. He took off the Nike Jersey that he was wearing and the vest. He had a bandage across his chest and it was a little bit blood stained. " I got shot while I was trying to save one of my friends, the bullet missed my heart with just a few inches. It will heal. It's not the first time I've got shot. I'm fine" he said. " Is it supposed to bleed" I asked trying to stop the warm fears at the back of my eyes. " Not really, I guess it must have been caused by walking downstairs and upstairs upstairs recently. It will heal, don't worry" he assured me with a smile on his gorgeous face. " It's funny how You take care of me even when you are severely injured, you are insane Salvatore. Why are you too good to me. You are just making things hard for me" I said wiping the fallen tears. " There's no need for me to put it out there

when you already know the answer" he said seriously. " I stood up and took a deep breath. " Now that I see that you are doing well, I'll take my leave. " I said walking away. " Aren't you going to hug me" he asked holding my hand. I turned back in a hurry and gave him a tight hug. He was still sitting down. We stayed like that for a few minutes. " Try not to get shoot, it pains me to see you like this. I can't bare to see you in pain." I said looking down at him. He pulled me over so that I could kneel down and be on the same height as he was. " I'll, il mio cuero batte" he said before stealing a slow passionate kiss. I was in-between his thighs. " That's why I locked you outside, I didn't want you to see me like this" he said holding my neck after that kiss, that got my whole body warm and wanting more. " But you're more persistent than I thought" he added kissing my forehead. I was just tenderising by the hand at the back of my neck. It was working on my nerves and hormones. I leaned in for a hug, wrapped my hands around his waist. " Are you ok?" He asked and I could feel the smirk on his face because he knew exactly what he touch was doing to me. I nodded. He held

me back without any further questions. I wished I could let him know that just his hand alone was able to make my whole body vibrate in need, I wished I could scream out the whole world about how much insane he drove me, wished I could tell him that I missed him when he was not there, that I thought about him before falling asleep and after I woke up, that his embrace felt like home. That I loved it when he says he loves me even though he had only said it thrice. That I think what I feel for him might be close to love only if I knew what Love was

[6/3, 14:34] Lynne: Continuing

Narrated

They both got undercovers after finishing their dinner. Alonzo laying on Cora's chest, the silence filled the room. The only sound there was their racing hearts. Cora was deep in her thoughts, she felt like a whole new person who had just discovered immensely golden something, she couldn't pinpoint. She was scared yet she was happy. " Alonzo, how come you became a gangster" she asked brushing his hair. They were snuggled up to each other, it was

quite cold. " After losing something so valuable to me, my reason to live" he said shortly. " I don't want to talk about, at least not yet" he added with a sigh of dismissing the topic. " You're such a mysterious man, I feel like I know you more than i know myself but yet I know nothing about you" she said thoughtfully. " Maybe it's about time you met with my siblings and friends" he said positioning his body comfortably. " No" she said jumpy and fast. " I know you to be a woman of many characters but I never knew that you are a coward too, it's not like they are going to bite you" he said casually. " What am I to you, I mean how will you introduce me to them and please I don't want your friends to insult me again" she protested against the idea. " It's simple, I'll just introduce you as my personal person, my woman, my girlfriend, my so called" fiancé" to the church ladies" he said, she could not help but laugh. " You are insane" she said. " You're are the same" he said. " On a serious note, I'm not one of those things you just mentioned" she said getting back to the serious topic. " Ok, Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo what should a man do to make you his woman" he asked serious

about the issue. " It depends on who's asking" she said flattering. " Well, Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore is asking" he said. " Ohhk, I see but I thought he was a clever man, you know what he is a great thinker. He'll figure it out himself" she said smiling. " Ohh really" he asked with a smirk on his face. " Yeah, I mean the last time I checked he was such a sharp thinker. But who knows maybe the bullet that hit his chest turned him into a dumb, dumb" she said giggling. " Ouch, that's hurts" he said dramatically hurt. " How about Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore takes Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo on a proper date. In fact make that three date and then she will decide if she wants to be Alonzo's girlfriend or not" he suggested. " Is Alonzo asking or suggesting" she asked purposely dragging the question. " He is pleading on his knees" he said playing along. " Cora would like that, she is such a okind lady. So it's a yes" she said giggling. " Don't you think it's weird that were are referring to ourselves as 3rd persons" she asked laughing more. " Not at all, it's cool don't you think. This should be our signature" he said laughing along.

.....

Cora was tossing and turning in the middle of the night, then she suddenly screamed." No,no, don't leave me mommy" she cried out loud. Alonzo shook her to wake her up, she woke up sweaty and scared. " Are you ok, what's wrong." He asked worried. She just shook her head and went in for a hug. Hurting him in the process but he didn't complain, he just groaned and held her tightly. " It was just a nightmare, it's ok. Don't cry" he comforted her. She held on to him like her life was depending on it. She then went to the bathroom to wash her face. " Is it because you didn't take your pills, is that why you were having a nightmare" he asked as she came back. She got rid of the gown she was in and was left in the white t-shirt on. She got undercovers and layed down, facing his side. " Yes, they are my life, they are my anti-depressent capsules. They were recommended to me by a doctor/phycologist. When I used to have therapy sessions last year. But I left it unfinished, it was just too much for me. I now get them from the pharmacy. Although their a slightly

different from the ones I used to get from the clinic. These are more like sleeping pills and they are less expensive. I didn't think I'd sleep over, so I didn't bring them along." She explained. Alonzo layed on his side, so that they could look into each other's eyes. " Why did you stop attending the therapy sessions" he asked getting rid of the strands of hair on her face and tucking it behind her ear. " It was just too much for me, It brought back memories I wanted to bury. You wouldn't understand" she said wary. " I know how that feels like Cora, there are somethings we wish we never got to experience but yet they happened. We tried by all means to bury them in the deepest of pits but with just little incidents their manage to resurface and haunt us back. I know the hallow shallow feeling of emptiness. I might not know exactly how you feel and what you went through but tell you what. The past is also a part of us we must learn to live with it. Because it's never really buried, even if you attend therapy sessions and get it out of your chest, it doesn't go away. It just sinks under the water and let us float. You always know it's there, it heals the wounds but

never the scars." He explained thoughtful and brushing her hair. " Have you ever missed someone you never knew...I miss my mother Alonzo, only if I could see her face just once. I have a lot of questions that I want answers to. I just want to know what it's like to feel a mother's love, I also want to be showered with love—just one chance to be..." She couldn't find the words. The only difference that time was that no tears were streaming down her cheeks but her heart was bleeding. From the day she left home, she swore to herself to never ever cry, to never look back and feel sorry for herself but then again Salvatore came into her life, seemed like he was bringing her face to face with her past. " If I could, I'd bring her back to you. You know that I'd do anything to put a smile on your face. If I could I would take away the pain in side your heart, erase all your painful memories. Everything will be fine with time, I promise" he promised and then kissed her forehead. " How come you never asked anything about me, ain't you curious " she asked getting herself together. " I know everything I need to know and I think it's better if you tell me about yourself

when you feel like it, it's easier that way" he explained. " Which makes makes me suspicious of you, have you been checking on my background" I asked curious. " Not really" he answered" what ever that means, I am not liking the sound of it" she said. " You should try to get some sleep, it's really late" he said checking time on his cellphone. " I am not feeling so sleepy anymore, just want to talk till morning" she said snuggling up to Alonzo. " You have got school in a few hours, don't say I didn't warn you" he said warningly. " I want to know what's your favorite car, movie,series, TV show, island, colour, music, party theme, your kind of girl maybe" she said sounding so excited. " Cora, I'm too old for this, what kind of questions are these. Ain't you going to ask me. How much profit I make per year in each one of my businesses and which NGOs I've donated my money too or what are my near future goals" he asked. " Joaquin please, that's a professional level. I want to personally know you. You can spoil my mood sometimes" she said sulking. She'd sometimes feel like there were too different to be together. She'd sometimes feel that she was just

immature for him. " Ok, I'm sorry" he said giving her a slight lip kiss. " But I also think that you should find out these things as we go along in life, I'm not going to make it easy for you. Find out for yourself." He said Casually. " I remember the time you said you'd go out to have coffee with me if I got to pronounce your name properly but it never happened" he reminded her. " That's because you never mentioned it, you never took me out for coffee" she said calmly. " Tell you what I'll take you out for coffee until you pass out. I'll take you out twice a day" he promised. " Mmh" that's all she said. Salvatore was lying on his back and Cora on his arm. She lifted her upper body to look him in the eyes. She stared at them for a long time. " I like your eyes" she said smiling. " They are beautiful" he complimented him. " Are you trying to make me blush" he asked already blushing. She just smiled back at him without saying anything else. " Good night" she said suddenly feeling shy" she got back to her pillow and layed on her back too. " Good night my heart beat" he said smiling softly.

.....

Salvatore woke Cora up at 4:00 in the morning, his chauffeur drove her to her apartment, she took a short jog and then prepared herself to go to school. Salvatore was with his friend around 12:00 in the noon. " I have done my research, it's allowed for a client to hire a prostitute for the whole two months. You can even travel with her overseas but it's very expensive, somewhere close to half a million. If you do this, it will buy us Time. While we heck in to their systems." Telescope explained. " How much does it cost" he asked. " It's R200000 per month, so that makes it 400000 for two months" Kevin explained. " I'll transfer the money to your account and you can hire her for me for the whole two months and I think we should add something to the checking plan. Something like fake death. I'll see what possibilities of her death might be and contact you when the plan is fool proof. I'll get her to disappear from that neighborhood when she finishes her exams" he explained. " Should I use your really names for the hiring. " He asked. " No, that would be too risk this time. Find a rich old man's ID and use it. I don't want anything traced back to me. I want a clean job" he

explained serious and thoughtful. " Ok boss, how are your wounds holding up" he asked concerned. " I'm getting there, I have an appointment with our private doctor. I should be fine within a week's time" he said. " You should be wounded more often, you are nicer this way" he said giggling. " Fuck you dwag" he said chuckling casually..." Tell machete that I will murder him with my bare hands next time I see him. That son of a bitch almost got me six feet under ground and he has only come to see me once" Salvatore said clenching his jaws. " I'll pass on that message bro. My wife said get well soon by the way. We will all come to see you this coming weekend" he said gulping down his wine and leaving. " Tell her I said I miss her fine ass too" he teased purposefully just to provoke Kevin. " I'll kill you, you son of a gun... shit don't say that about my wife. Do you know how many people I've killed for that ass. Really you don't want to end up on the list" he said provoked, he was pissed off. " Not if I kill you first, you should really stop this obsession with your wife.its twisted. " He said laughing. " Dwag, you wouldn't understand, I love that women" he said seriously. " You will feel it

soon, with the speed you are going on, you're going to be worse than I am" he said before leaving.

.....

Cora came back from school around 3:00pm. She did her homework and laundry and then cleaned her apartment thoroughly. It was sparkling clean around 6:00 pm. She took a 30 minutes shower and wore her leggings, vest, long silky jacket and boots. She put her stripping club around 7:00. She got there and did her heavy night makeup and striped like it was her Last time, took off her bra and short skirt when it was time to. Leaving the customers wanting more and more. She was requested to give a private lap dance and she did it. Came back home around 1:00am with an ubber ride. She didn't even take a shower. She took her pills and then went to sleep immediately. Woke up at 5:00 and took a full hour jog, came back to iron her clothes and get ready for school. During lunch time she was called to the miss knight's office. She was asked to sit down when she got there. " Cora, I called you here because I am worried about you. I've got to notice that you are

slightly losing weight. Are you ok. I'd everything ok at home." Miss Knight asked really worried. " I'm fine thanks for asking. It's just that I haven't been getting much sleep lately. I'm putting more effort on my studies and I sometimes forget to eat plus I go to work every evening. It's tough" she explained. " Cora, I don't think it's good for you to be working during this time of the year. I know that you need the extra cash from the café but it's time consuming. You should be focusing on your examinations. Maybe I could borrow you cash for the coming months and You can pay me back next year" she suggested kindly." No, I don't need your handouts. I'm doing just fine..." She snapped. " I'm sorry, I shouldn't have shouted. It's just that my aunt told me to work hard and earn my money. I don't believe in handouts" she lied and miss Knight believed her without a doubt. " it's ok, I can imagine what you must be going through. It's a lot for a young girl like you. Speaking of your aunt. Is she coming home for holidays or you'd visit her overseas" she asked with a lot of sympathy. " I don't know yet, I'll let you know when I find out" she said . " Ok, that would be all, have a nice

weekend" she said and then Cora left. Miss Knight had wanted to ask her about her being seen with Salvatore because it was the fast traveling rumours around the school. She wanted to hear it from the horse's mouth but after the reaction she got from her earlier, she didn't want to add to her troubles. Cora went home after school. When she got there, there was a chauffeur on the parking. "What are you doing here" she asked approaching him. "Sir said I should come and pick you up, you have 30 minutes to get ready" he said glancing at his wrist watch. "What?, What if I say no" she asked ready to start a protest against the chauffeur. "If you dare to do so, there will be 5 body builders to drag you into the car back within 10 minutes or less" he said opening the door for her. She entered without any further questions. "Are you married" she asked trying to break the thick tension in the car. But the chauffeur didn't answer. "Let me guess, your boss ordered you not to exchange a word with me... You are more like a robot. I wonder you are like around your wife." She talked and talked but there was no answer. "Mxmmm, whatever Robinson." She kept quiet for a

while. " This is not fair, an hour's drive without saying anything. I can't take it, you see I like to talk, most people say i talk too much when they get to know me but those who know me better says I always have an answer to everything. I'm just like my aunt, she used to call me miss talkative. I annoyed a lot of teachers at primary school, they used to call me talkative little devil's rascal." She kept on talking, the chauffeur couldn't help but laugh. " Yes, that's it. I got you. I didn't know that i still had it in me" she said like she just won a lottery

[6/3, 14:34] Lynne: Page 17

Narrated

Cora entered into the house. There was no one downstairs so she went upstairs in Alonzo's room, he was not there either. She checked the bathroom and the other door which lead to a closet. And her eyes suddenly popped out, it was her first time opening that door. And wow, it was like a designer clothes store. The vests on one side, trousers in the

middle twirling circle hanger and shirts on the other twirling circle hanger. A wall of shoes and a wall of watches. Belts on half of the wall. Jackets, overcoat, jerseys on another Wall. And 4 mirrors on each and every corner. It was Whitely painted with dark spots on it. Some spaces were empty though. She got out after a while and find 4ladies in the room. " Hi" she said alert and confused. " Good afternoon ma'am. Sir has asked us to help you get ready." One of them said. " Ready for what, where's Salvatore?" She asked puzzled. " We don't know, he mentioned something about shopping, he gave us direct orders to get you ready for dinner within three hours." One of the girls said, in fact woman. Cora looked 10years younger than them plus she was still in her school uniform. " Ok, I'm Cora by the way." The 4women introduced themselves too. Cora took a soothing bath, one woman hairstyled her. The other one did her makeup, the other one did her manicure and pedicure. She went with the short transparent white manicure and pedicure. The 4th lady helped her choose a dress from the dresses Salvatore had shopped for earlier along with the shoes.

.....

Salvatore was sitting impatiently in his house bar, having some slight gin. Cora was late already, 30 minutes late. Salvatore kept on glancing on his wrist watch and the staircases. The suddenly he heard hills hitting the ground, he looked and there she was ascending slowly from upstairs. In a red ankle length dress with a thigh high slit. It had no arms but it cut on her neck. She wore it along with black diamond earrings and necklace. Black six inch high hills which were red underneath. Salvatore walked up to her " you look breath taking" he said, couldn't hide the excitement and love in his eyes. " Thank you" she said, her hand meeting his. " Well, shall we" he said and she took one more step down and nodded. The dark maroon Lexus LS 500 was waiting for them on the front door. Salvatore opened the door for Cora, she entered and he went over to the other side and got in. The driver took off. Salvatore pressed the blindfolded button and they got their privacy. He reached for Cora's hand and held it. " Where are you taking me" Cora asked crossing her legs and her

whole thigh was bare. " I made dinner reservation at the MOMENT restaurant for our first date" he said glancing at her smooth thigh. "When are we getting back" she asked turning Salvatore's hand over so that she could check out the time. " We should be back by 20:00" he said. Cora suddenly looked worried. " I sent Dolly a message via your cellphone, say that you have a stomach bug and she replied by saying get well soon. Don't ask me how I did that. Let's not go through, I just want to enjoy every minute with you" he said kissing her forehead slightly. She asked no further questions. An hour later they were at the restaurant. The driver parked at the underground parking lot and they took the elevator, it opened on the last floor of the building. They got off the elevator and there they were. All alone, Salvatore led her to the only table in the middle of the restaurant. The restaurant was classy and elegant. Salvatore pulled out a chair for Cora to sit down and he sat down too. " Welcome sir, my name is Conklin and I am going to be serving you tonight" a Chinese guy said approaching them, " good evening ma'am" he said directly to Cora. Who was

found by the environment she was in but she managed to say hello to the guy. " Should I bring your order,sir. Or you'd prefer refreshments for now" he asked. " Bring dinner and drinks altogether" he said, fixing his napkin. " Ok, sir" he said before walking away. " Where are other people?" She asked, more like whispered. " I wouldn't know, probably sleeping on their beds" he said chuckling casually. " Joaquin, don't tell you booked the whole restaurant" she said eyes daring. " I wanted privacy" he said like it's no big deal. Cora was not pleased at all, she kept quiet. " Are you upset" he asked with a smirk. She just kept quiet. The Conklin guy came back with a sea food platter recommended for two and put it on the table, he later came back with a bottle of wine in iced metallic silver bucket. Put it on side table and poured up two glasses. " Excuse me, could i have orange juice" Cora asked the waiter. " Of course ma'am" the waiter said and then got her an umbrella and lemon decorated glass of orange juice. He then went away. " Are you not going to answer me" he asked calmly. " I just think that it was unnecessary for you to book the whole restaurant, it's a waste of

money" she said and then took a deep breath. " Money is not a problem, I wanted to do some special for you. What's wrong with trying to impress my date" he said sighing softly. " Look even if you took me to the township of slumped eatery, I'd still feel special and impressed as long as you are there." She explained. " All this must have cost a lot of money. Don't ever try to impress me with these kind of things. I'm just a simple girl and yes, I don't want to be considered a gold-digger" she said taking a big sip of juice. " Cora stop it, not today. Please, let's not think about the outside world. Let it just be you and I. " He said reaching out for her hands across the table. Cora nodded with a slight smile. " Let's have dinner" he said. " By the way these look a little bit unappetizing. You should have ordered me burger instead, I don't even know how to eat these. " He said picking up one of the prawns and examining it. " I'll teach you" he said chuckling unbelievably. And yes indeed he did. " I think I like the mussels and calamari more" she said in pure bliss. " The Kong clip is my first favorite" Salvatore said. " Joaquin" she called out. " Thank you" she added. " You will thank

me later, properly in the bedroom" he said with a dangerous smile. " You know what I mean" he added. " No, I don't" she said innocently but suddenly feeling hot and shy. " I think you know exactly what I mean, il mio cuero batte" he said seductively. " No, I don't" she protested shy and gulped down her juice. She was suddenly feeling full but then dessert came. It was semifreddo. She was begged to have it. She liked it in the end. " I thought you were going to have wine with me" Salvatore said giggling. " What's so funny" she asked puzzled by the sudden laughter. " I'm just thinking maybe, just maybe you are afraid it'd make you beg me to take you...or maybe It's because you'd start flying to new York. Or you'd start saying' don't cry Salvatore, it's ok' you are one interested lady Cora" he said giggling. " I did all that" she asked feeling embarrassed. " But I still disagree on the begging part, I'd never" she added defense. " It's ok, you could drink the wine and I'll set up a camera so that we could have proof" he suggested. " No ways " she refused straight up. " You are such a spoil sports, but one day is one day" he said sounding all types of disappointed. He stood up and

pulled Cora by her hands so that she could stand up. " Where are we going" he asked felling lazy. " To get a better view of the city" he said. They took staircases to the roof top of the building. And there it was, the best of the city, of the light and mostly of the stars. Cora walked around all four sides of the building. " Wow" she exclaimed smiling. " Beautiful isn't it" Salvatore said putting his hands on his pants pocket. He was wearing a black blur scotched suit with black shoes and crispy white shirt, the two top bottons were unbuttoned. Showing his masculine hairy chest. Cora stood on his side and they looked at the city of Johannesburg together. And suddenly there was music playing, it was Luther vandross ft Beyonce, the closer I get to you. Salvatore had played it on his iPhone. " Can I have this dance" he asked already holding Cora's hand and waist. " I don't know how to dance" she murmured softly and scared of disappointing him. " Let me reach you then" he offered feeling the tension, she nodded"yes". And they danced slowly.. The closer I get to you.the more you make me see.by giving me all you've got, your love has captured me....over, and

over again. I tried to tell myself that we could never be more than friends. When all the while inside I knew. It was really, the way you make me feel.... Lying here next to you. Time just seems to fly. Need you more and more. Let's give love a try... he reached her how to dance, in his arms she felt warm, loved and home. She felt the sense of belonging whenever he was around and she wondered why. Her head leaning towards his chest and listening to the heart that beat for her. They went back home around 9:30 and went to bed

[6/3, 14:34] Lynne: Continuing....

Cora's pov

I woke up early in the morning, Salvatore was lying next to me. So peaceful. It was 5:00am. I went and took a shower, wore one of the dresses he had bought me yesterday while calling a cab. He was still asleep, I kissed him goodbye and left. I decided to drop by at Amanda's place, it was a Saturday by the way. She lived in an estate. I walked up from the main gate to her parent's house. I rang the doorbell and the door opened up a few minutes later, she

was standing there, rubbing her eyes. Seemed like i just woke her up from the deepest of sleep. " Hey, what a pleasant surprise. What are you doing here" she said hugging me. " I came to see you. Good morning" I said with a wide smile. " Morning bff, are you ok now... Wow look at yourself. The dress, it's beautiful. When did you buy it" she asked letting me in. " Thank you, I got it yesterday" I said, walking towards the kitchen. " I'm starving" I said opening the refrigerator. " Cora, is there something that I must know... what's going on with you. We've not been talking lately and yesterday you were emotional drained and I know that you lied, saying that you are sick. So that you could get a pass out" she asked concerned. " And today you come here wearing this seemingly expensive dress. What's going on" she added. " Ok, i'll explain everything but first you need to get a good shower my friend." I said taking out milk and bananas from the refrigerator. " I'm not going to do that, know what. I'm going to wash my face and brush my teeth. I won't let you Dodge my questions this time around" she said hurrying upstairs. I made myself cornflakes with slices of

bananas and crunches. I was sitting on the high kitchen island counter chair. She came back, still in her PJs but her face looked fresh and her hair was combed. " So?..." She said sitting down on the opposite side of the counter. " So, yesterday I wasn't really sick. I agree that I lied but it was for a good course. I just wanted to see Joaquin. I hadn't seen him in days and I was worried." I explained while eating. " First of all I don't know who this ' Joaquin' guy is, secondly since when did you start worrying about guys?" She asked puzzled. " Ohh right, Salvatore is Joaquin, Joaquin is Salvatore" I explained. " Wow, so you guys have been seeing each other. So the dress..." She said eyebrows raised. " He bought me a couple of dresses yesterday and we went out on a dinner date" I said slowly. " You guys are dating now and Cora when were you planning to tell me if I didn't ask you probably wouldn't have told me." She asked upset. " And then you call me your friend. I tell you everything but you keep on hiding things from me, why" she asked. " I'm sorry" I said really sorry. I was afraid she'd judge me if I told her the whole truth about myself. She was

my only friend and I did not want to lose her. " For me to accept your apology, you gotta help me clean up my room" she said with a smirk. " I don't understand, isn't it the cleaner's duty to do so" I asked confused. " My parents gave her direct orders to never clean my bedroom, said things like, they didn't want to get me spoiled and stuff." She explained rolling her eyes. " Ok, but after that. We will go swimming. The main reason I'm here" I said seriously. " What ever... but you will tell me more about Mr Salvatore junior" she said putting both my bowl in the washing basin.

.....

We spent almost 4hours in the swimming pool, we had drinks under umbrella. " He is such a gentleman, booking the whole restaurant, wow" she said sounding impressed. " I still think he did it to show off" I said really thinking about what he did. " What do you mean... anyways what's wrong if a guy shows off on his new girlfriend." She said casually. "So romantic" she added." I'm not his girlfriend" I said slowly and sternly. " What?, What do you mean. You

mean to say that you guys did the deed without being girlfriend and boyfriend" she asked astonished. " Kind of.. you wouldn't understand. I was not myself that day Amanda. He did things to me tha... it's complicated" I finally huffed." You mean to say you let him have your cookie, worse make you walk like a chicken but you don't love each other" she asked. " Like I said it's complicated...I had no control over the situation. I, I..." I couldn't find the words. When ever he touched me, my whole body felt warm he was like a drug and I was addicted to his touch. " Mmh, tough. So now what is going on between the two of you?" She asked lost of words. " Two more dates and I'll decide if I want to be his girlfriend or not" I explained. " Isn't a little bit too late for that, I mean you guys, literally behavior like boyfriend and girlfriend or even worse. Why keep on stalling when you already know that you want him and he wants you too. Why do-" then my phone rang. I got out of the pool and wrapped a towel around my body. Answered the phone while sitting on the camp chair. " Hello" said. It was an an unknown number. " Il mio cuero batte, where are you at" he asked without

wasting time. " Good afternoon to you too Joaquin" I said seriously. He had no manners or whatsoever. " Ohhk, where are you?" He asked once again. He'd never repent. " I am at my friend's house" I said sighing softly. " I need you here , a driver will come and pick you. And for your friends sake, I hope your friend is not a male" he said then hung up on me. How was he going to get my location, I wondered but then again 30 minutes later, he called saying I should go to the main gate because the driver was not on the visitors estate list. So he was forbidden to enter. I was still wearing the same dress I was wearing earlier. It was a silky shiny baby pink dress, which had tiny straples on shoulders like a vest. It reached below my knees. It was a little bit tight, I wore it with 3 inch hills which were like sandals but had diamonds on the lines. The only difference was that I wore it without a bra because I used it to swim. Amanda had small boobs, so he bras couldn't fit me. She borrowed me one of her largest shorts and I wore it along with the bra I came wearing. We reached Salvatore's house around 1:00 pm. He was sitting on the sitting room when I walked in, the

house smelt of freshly prepared food. It smelt so divinely. " Come and sit here" he ordered patting his lap. I walked up to him. He seemed a little bit pissed. For what? My inner self asked confused. I went and sat next to him, on the couch. " Cora, I said sit here" he said glancing at me with the evilest look, I've never seen. He was calm and collected but pissed. I sat on his lap, uncomfortably. He pulled me closer to his body and put his hand on my waist. " Where were you?" He asked jaws clenched. " Like I said before I was with a friend of mine" i said rolling my eyes. " Don't you dare roll your eyes when I'm talking to you. And who gave you the right to correct the way I speak. Worse, Infront of your friend." He said boiling. " I was just saying... it's not a big deal." I said unshaken. " Who said you can talk, I'm still talking here" he roared. " Ok, you know what. I'm sorry. Sorry for everything. I don't have energy for this" I said then waltzed upstairs. He was busy calling out my name but I just ignored him. I got into some guest room and locked up. I don't know when I fell asleep but I was woken up by a couple of knocks on the door two hours later. I opened up and it was Joaquin.

I stepped away and decided to go wash my face in the bathroom, I was wiping my face while standing in front of the mirror and he stood behind me, so closely. " We have guests" he said. " You mean to say that you have guests" I said taking a deep breath. " I am leaving" I said trying to move but he put his arms around me and held on to the washing basin under the mirror. " I am sorry for what I did earlier" he said brushing his forehead on my left shoulder like a mad man. " I just didn't like it when I woke up and you weren't there and I got mad when I heard you saying that you were with a friend whom I don't even know" he said brushing his forehead slightly on my hair. " Whatever Alonzo, I'm tired of all this drama. I want to leave, by the way Amanda is a female friend" I said turning around to look him in the eyes. " And you can't keep on keeping tabs on my every day move. I don't even know how you got to know my location. Stop treating me like a 5 years old kid." I snapped. " I'm sorry, it will never happen again" he promised. His forehead on mine. He was giving me that look I couldn't resist when he was asking for something. And his closeness was overheating my

body. " Not now Salvatore, just let me go. I need to cool down. You hurt my feelings." I pleaded. " Ok, you can go later but I've invited guests over and I told them about you, they are so eager to meet you at least meet them. Please stay for an hour and then you can leave" he pleaded. " Ok , for one hour" I said. " Thank you" he said putting his hands on my waist instead. He then kissed my forehead. " I love you" he said.i just nodded not knowing what to say to that. " Who are your guests by the way" I asked curiously. " My younger sister and brother and my friends with their girlfriends and wives." He said giving me a slump in my throat, I was suddenly feeling hot and cold. My head was pounding. " I told you, I am not ready to meet up with your family members, and your friends are just rude. What nonsense is this, shit, shit, shit.....ohh god. What did you do Joaquin. Ohh god please save me. What did you tell them about me—" I was in a panicking state. " Calm down, they are harmless people plus Michael is not here. Just relax, they are nice people.i should have told you earlier and sorry for the inconvenience" he said removing the strands of hair from my face. " You

always do this, I am not going to forgive you for this, Joaquin. Let's go" I said taking a deep breath, trying to get my bravery act on point. " You fuck me over and over again just because you know that you could apologies and I'd accept it. Well not this time around" I said exiting the room. I found a lot of people in the kitchen, some were laughing, some having some, some sitting on others laps. I stood dumb found on the door way." Hi, you must be Cora, right?" One girl said approaching me. I nodded, heart racing. " Well, I'm Esihle Dlamini, Alonzo's younger sister, and this is my brother Siboniso Dlamini" she said and the Siboniso guy stepped forward, gave me an unexpected hug. "It's so nice to meet you, future sister inlaw" he said, scaring me even more. "I'm liking you already" he said smiling but the smile was directed behind me and I felt Salvatore's presence there without even looking. He held my waist. " Back off sbo" he said warningly. Siboniso just laughed. " Hey guys, this is Cora" he introduced me and introduced them to me too. There was Kevin and his gorgeous pregnant wife, and the other guy who's name I forgot eventually, he was with his chubby

cute wife too. The other friends brought along their slay Queens girlfriends and Siboniso was with his wife too. Esihle was the only one alone, she was 5years older than me. The other girls seemed More older than me and mature too. They had class, which made me wonder why Salvatore chose to waste his time with me when he could have a woman just like his friends had. We were on the roof top, by the pool, braaing meat... The other ladies were swimming in the swimming pool while I was sitting on one of the knitted couches with Esihle and Kevin's wife.

Salvatore was sitting on the across dining table with his brother and three other guys. The other two were braaing meat. He would stare at me constantly with his affectionate eyes but I wasn't falling for it, I was still angry at him. In fact I was furious. " So how did you two meet" I asked Kevin's wife. She was a nice lady. "It was not a normal thing,we had an arranged marriage. I abhorred him at first. I continued to date with my boyfriend, he also had a girlfriend.he hated me too. One day he caught me with my boyfriend and yeah things became hectic. How did you two meet" he asked me while I was sipping on my juice

and I suddenly choked. I kept on coughing" are you OK" Salvatore asked coming to my aid. " Come and have some water" he said pulling me inside the house. We went to the kitchen and I had a glass of water. I I learned on the kitchen counter. " I told you I was not ready for all this but you never listen. Maybe I should have told her that we met through prostitution." I said softly. " I don't belong here, I just feel out of place. They are so classy and elegant and I'm nothing like that, I'll never reach their level. They probably all have jobs and PhDs and I don't even have matriculation certificate yet. I wonder what you are doing with a girl like me. You should just get yourself a woman like them. " But I want you" he said approaching me. He picked me up and put me on top of the counter. He got in-between my thighs. " I want you only. And stop during yourself, you're the most beautiful woman I've ever seen. Trust me you are way better than the most of them, you are real. Smart, intelligent, kind and loving , ravishingly gorgeous" he said making me smile a bit. His eyes on mine. " You are crazy and you don't listen sometimes but I still adore" he said. " Hey, I'm not

crazy" I said slightly pushing him away. He came bouncing back with a smirk on his face and kissed me. He moved his hands under my dress. I held them to stop him" there are people around" I said not feeling comfortable. What if someone walked in. " Let me go and lock the door" he said. " Salvatore.." I protested against the idea but he locked it anyways. " What are you doing..." I asked. He shushed me by kissing my lips. He continued running his hands under my dress, he moved it up until I was sitting with my panties on the counter top. My nipples were hard. He removed my dress strapped strands off my shoulders and kissed the slightly. He then moved my dress down from my chest to my waist. My breasts were bare. He kissed my nipples slowly sulked on them. Making my breath rise, my eyes shut. He kissed my neck, making sure to leave love bites. He kissed the gape between my breasts. My chest was rising and falling. He went down on me and kissed the top of my valley of fire. He was removing my panties when I tried to stop him but he ignored my resistance. My panties were removed slowly, leaving me impatiently and anticipating his next move. He

kissed my valley top slowly while spreading my legs apart. I was now lying on my back. He finally got his tongue into the delicate skin of my valley. Making my back arch in ecstasy. I was slowly calling his name, "ohh, yes, yes mmh Joaquin" I screamed in suppression because I also was afraid that they'd hear me upstairs. He was driving me crazy, he knew what he was doing, he knew his way around my body. It was like the god gave him all the access codes to my body. Knew my password, he Ste me like crazy down there. I could feel the hit building up and I couldn't hold it any more. I had an orgasm. My whole body was shaking and I was soaking wet down there, when there was suddenly a knock at the door. I set up straight fastly, my eyes popped out, he shushed me and told me to relax. He picked up my panties and wiped me dry. I wore my dress, and pretended to be drinking water while he opened up the door, I could have sworn I saw him put my underwear in his pocket. " Why have you guys locked up the door?" I heard Esihle's voice. " What is it Esihle" he asked annoyed. " I heard some noise, I just wanted to check if everything is fine. By the way I'm

here to get the food. It's drizzling outside. So we are coming inside" Esihle explained with curious eyes. " The weather was perfect 30 minutes ago" Salvatore said. " You know how Johannesburg's weather can be... Anyways Cora, could you help me set up the table, the other ladies are taking a shower" she said picking up one of the dishes. " Salvatore" I said softly, it seemed like i was about to cry. " Yes love" he said . " Could you come here please" she said gentle but shaking. " I can't move my feet" I said pulling him down so that I could whisper in to his ears. "What" he asked laughing out loud. " Don't laugh, it's not funny OK." She said tears threatening to come out. " What are you guys whispering about" Esihle asked, coming from the dining room. " Cora, aren't you going to help me?" She asked picking up another bowl. " Ummh, I, I, " I didn't know what to say. " My girlfriend is not waitresses Esihle" Salvatore came to my rescue but he was ruining my relationship with Esihle. " Esihle, how about you set up the table I'll clear up and wash the dishes later on... My chest is not feeling so good" I lied bluntly and she agreed. " You are such a bad person, that was so rude" I said

scornfully. " Sorry, I was just trying to help" he said unapologetic." I told you that we should not do this, look at how my knees are shaking, how am I going to get there now" I complained. " Come on, you were busy screaming out my name, you loved every minute of it, you love it when I go down on you, so don't make it seem like I forced you." He said. " Hey, I knew that you guys were having some fun. Damn you are so naughty" Esihle's voice said immediately and to say I was shocked would be an understatement. I was beyond shocked. " Ohh god" I screamed putting both my hands on my face. " Sorry" Salvatore said removing my hands from my face. The devil's advocate was mocking me. " You should have seen the look on your face" he said laughing. Esihle was no longer there. Salvatore helped me to the dinning table and we all had supper together. Jokes and memories were shared around the table, it was after all great. Esihle kept on giving me knowing looks and I'd look away, I was feeling so shy. I Washed the dishes later on as I had promised. I excused myself to go and was shower. I was feeling so sticky and walking around without

wearing an underwear was not comfortable at all. Salvatore came in while I was dressing up in the same dress. " If I remember correctly, I had bought you more than two dresses, so why are you repeating the same dress" he asked closing the door behind him. " Not now Salvatore, I don't need all those clothes... By the way. I'm late, I have to ummh I have to, have to" I didn't know if I should say it or not. " Go to the club" he asked so unshaken. I nodded"yes" . I'll ask my chauffeur to drive you home. I said goodbye to the guys and girls. And I was dropped at home. I wore my tracksuits and packed my stripping necessities and hit the club. Did my last dance.

.....

It was a Sunday, I went to church. The summon was about adultery. It hit home. Anyways I attended the meeting The Don had called later on, Sunday was supposed to be our day off but we had no choice." As you all know, last night was your last day at the club. The profit is not bad, regarding the fact that you are rank five" the Don said referring to my rank.

We were sitting according to our ranks. "As usually, some of you have been hired. If I call out your name please step in to room 1" he said retrieving the tablet on the table.

" Moon077, storm056, zee086,....".he kept on calling out girls names and they stepped in to room 1. My mind was like, why am I even still here, only girls from room one got hired. The reason us just had to keep on exchanging man while they'd probably get a break sometimes and then something magical happen." Starlight 0106" he called out. I couldn't believe it, I bet not a single girl in the room did. Anyways we were called in and advised to satisfy each and every need of our clients. I was starting to have cold feet about the whole thing, what if the client was a serial killer or a random psychotic man. The Don assured us that the men were harmless. And we also got doubled cheque. I was given the address to the location where we'd meet up. Wait a second, what was going to happen with my studies. What if the client wanted to take me out of the country. I hadn't thought things through. Yes it was a

big break but unlike the other girls. I had school. I felt like crying, the exams were around the corner.

.....

It was a Monday. I had just finished studying with Amanda and left her sleeping there. I felt like crying, what was I going to do, my life was finished. " You're done for Cora" my inner self said in tears. But another thought crossed my mind. Maybe if I explained myself to the client, he was going to spare me a few hours of studying. The worse thing was that there was no wearing a mask when you got hired. My identity would be exposed, I thought to myself. I got out of the car and entered the pretty motel, it was nothing fence. I asked the receptionist for the room number of Mr Abdul Rahman. Luckily he had checked me in on the list, I was escorted by the escorting lady, he stopped at the door and I knocked. A voice from the inside said that I must come in. I entered my heart beating out of my chest. The man had his back on me. He stood up and faced me. he had a glass of wine in his hand. " Welcome" he said with a smirk." You?" I said eyes popped out

in disbelief.

[6/3, 14:35] Lynne: Page 18

" What are you doing here" I asked really surprised, he was the last person I expect there. " Let's go home, Il mio cuero batte" he said as if things were normal, as if he was not my owner now. " You are the client, what's going on here. Why would you hire me" I asked curiously and confused. My head pounding. " Let's go home and I'll explain everything" he said pulling me towards the door.... he was driving to his house and I was sitting on the passenger seat. " So now that you own me, what's going to happen. Should I be starlight or core. I am so confused and before this goes down, can I ask you for a favor. Please spare me a few hours for school. The examinations are near by. I promise I'd make it up to you....— " Cora stop it, what do you take me for. Yes, i admit that I've killed a lot of people but I'd never hurt you.i didn't know that you think so low of me. I might be a monster in other people's eyes but I didn't think that you also see me as one. I thought you saw more than that" he snapped and then halted the car on the

side of the road. I almost hit the dashboard but thanks God I was wearing a sit belt. He got out and went to the back of the car, it was so dark out there, the only lights I could see we're those of the car and the ones that were passing by. I got of the car and went to him, I could tell from the way he was breathing in that he was pissed off. " I'm sorry" I said wrapping my arms around his chest, I came from behind. Leaned my head on his back. " I'm sorry, Joaquin. I'm so sorry for not trusting you. I'm just scared, why would you waste your money if you are not going to take control over me, a voice keeps playing in my head. " It's no excuse for what I just said but I'm just confused. You didn't even tell me about this. I'm so sorry" I apologized sincerely. What did he expect me to do, I was clueless. That's why I asked those questions. " Let's just go, I have a lot of work to do and I am really tired. I had a busy day" he said, removing my hands from his body, he then walked away. I felt like punching myself in the face. He entered the car, living me standing there, I went over to the passenger side and entered. On normal circumstances he would have open the door for me,

he started the ignition and drove off at full speed, the tension was so thick that I could cut it with a knife. I buckled up, I was scared for my life. We reached his house within no time the gate open and he drove in, he parked the car Infront of the house and got off, opened up the door for me. Everything was happening so fast that I became confused. " There's food in the refrigerator, eat up. Don't wait up for me" he said and walked back to his driver's side. " Wait, where are you going" I asked but he just drove off. I entered into the house and went up to the guest room, I forgot to take my suitcase in his car and now I had no clothes to wear. I took a shower and dried up using the bathroom towel, I then wrapped another dry one around my body. I went to the kitchen, and opened up the refrigerator, there were a lot of different dishes, I didn't know what to have. I also had no appetite to eat, I just wanted Salvatore back, I wanted him to forgive me. I choose to have the chakalaka and wors with steamed bread and orange juice, I ate a few tea spoons and put it back in the refrigerator. I felt like puking, my head was pounding heavily. I went into the guest room and layed down,

still wrapped in a towel. I got undercovers, but I could not fall asleep. I kept on checking the time. It was 00:13am and he wasn't back yet. I don't know when I fell asleep but when I woke up, I was not in the guest room anymore, there was a hand on my waist, in fact it was just below my breasts. I was fully naked and he was behind me, in his PJs. I removed the covers and tried to get off bed but he held me back. I turned around to look at him. His eyes were closed. " Don't go" he said, reminding me of the night he asked me to take off my mask. " I'm sorry, Joaquin" I apologized once again, " it's OK" he said, eyes still closed. " You forgive me?" I asked. " I forgive you" he said. " Thank you" I said giving him a slight peck on the lips. He pulled me closer, hand on my back. " Are you trying to give me blue balls" he asked. " What do you mean?" I asked confused. " He took my hand and directed it to his giant rod, which had a bulge. " Why did you sleep naked" he asked opening his eyes. " It was too hot, but you are a very perverted men, Mr Salvatore" I said smiling. " I didn't even touch you" I said smiling. " My heart beat, just one glance at you is enough to turn me on for the

whole week" he said. " You are such a bad liar" I said laughing. " I need to go to school." I said seriously. " Ain't you going to relieve me" he asked. " Come on, you know I won't be able to walk properly after... you know what" I said sighing. " Ok, ... I'll drop you at school, there's no discussion" he said, and yeah by the look on her face I could tell that even if i wanted to argue, I wouldn't have won. " I retrieve the blankets and covered myself to go to the bathroom. " Really now?, Come on" he screamed through gritted teeth. " Serves you right for taking away my towel" I said laughing. I took a quick shower, brushing my teeth and fixed my curly hair. I wrapped a towel around my body and got out of the bathroom. Salvatore was on his laptop. " Could you borrow me your car keys, I need to get bags. " I'll go and get it" he said shutting down his laptop. " Thank you " I said. " No problem, you will thank me properly tonight" he shouted on his way out. I just smiled and threw myself on the bed. hands up, he came back with my suitcase. I dressed up for school, thanks God my uniform was not creased

.....

" Joaquin... How much did you pay for me" I asked on our way to school. I couldn't hold it any longer. " Not now Cora, it doesn't matter anymore" he said showing no interest in the topic." Ok" I said then kept quiet. " Joaquin Will I have to live with you now" I asked, after all it was a question of my life. " We will talk later, when you come back from school. I don't want you to stress. " He said putting his hand on my shoulder. " Ok" I said. He parked in the school's parking lot. " Bye, I'll see you later" I said as soon as the car stopped. Don't worry, I won't get out of the car, afraid I'd embarrass you" he asked holding my arm. " No, I, I, it's just that...—" I understand but you can not leave without giving me a kiss" he said. " But Salvatore..." I said with puppy eyes. " Not going to work..." He said firmly. I leaned in for a kiss, I was meaning for it to take a short time but he held me in place. I was moaning for him to stop but it was useless. I ended up enjoying the hitted kiss. " You are... Mhh, you are. Good bye" I was so embarrassed. Other schools students were passing by, some

admiring the car. I got out of the car and rushed into the first class of the day... Later on I was called to the staffroom and asked about my relationship with Salvatore. I was like " I've got nothing to say about that. How about you ask him because I'm really confused. ". I knew they were not going to ask him because he was the son of the owner of the school. I was just an easy target in all of that, I was more like a victim. And Salvatore had to make matters worse by kissing me Infront of the other students and they reported me. Even that was questioned. I had become the talk of the school, I was the first one to get out when the last bell rang. I chose to wait for Salvatore at the taxi/bus stop, I I didn't want to give him the reason to argue by leaving. I decided to not talk about the issue anymore.....

.....

He came 15 minutes later, he got out of the car to open the door for me, I got in and he also got in. " How was your day?" He asked. " It was fine" I said. " Just fine?" He asked. I shrugged my shoulders. " Ok" he said and drove off. John legend's songs were playing until we got to his

house. I opened the door for myself and got out as he parked the car inside the garage. I took the steps swiftly. I went to the kitchen to have a glass of water. " Are you okay" he asked looking concerned. " Yes, I'm fine. Why do you ask" I asked smiling a bit. " I don't know, you usually talk, a lot and today you seem quite, I mean you were fine when I took you to school, your mood seems to have changed. " He said uncertain. " I'm fine, I'm just tired, that's all" I lied, he seemed unconvinced. " OK, if you say so" he said dropping the car keys in the kitchen counter and taking the others. " I'm going to leave for work, maybe you also need to study. I'll leave, don't forget to eat something" he said and walked away. I remembered that I had promised Amanda that we'd study together. " Salvatore?" I called out. He turned on his heels and faced me" I had promised Amanda that we'd study together after school for the examinations, could your driver drive me to my apartment, oh maybe I should just take a taxi. Yes, I'd do that if you'd allow me" I asked, deep in my thoughts, I didn't know how to ask. " No, Robinson Will drive you there, he'll come to pick you up later,

we will talk later. " He said then continued on his hills.
" Thanks once again" I called out behind him.

Robinson drove me to my apartment and we studied until 22:00pm and Robinson came to fetch me.

Amanda's driver fetched her too. I got into

Salvatore's room around 23:00 he was in his Pyjama shorts only. doing I don't know what in his laptop. "

Hi" I said in a husky voice" hey you are back. He said looking at me. " How was your studying and your

friend?" He asked. " Studying went well, she is good even though she blabbers a lot." I said smiling. " You

know what they say' birds of the same featherses flock together' , something you have in common" he

said chuckling. " Ouch, that stings a bit" I said dramatically hurt. " Have a bath, I'll make you

something to eat...I don't want you suffering from anorexia nervosa" he said getting out of bed. " Come

on, I'm not that skinny, plus. I had some sandwich before I went to my apartment" I said going to the

bathroom. " With rabbit's food, I'm sure you are going to become a rabbit in your next life" he said

then closed the door. I took a shower instead of a bath. I was fast and easy, I wore my nightdress and

gown. He came back with a tray of full lunch time meal. " You realize that I am going to sleep right, how do you expect me to have fried rice and these. " It is not my fault that you don't eat during the right time" he said putting the tray on the table and sitting on one of the couches I also sat on one. Put the tray on my thighs and started to dig in he was busy on his laptop and he shut it off when I was done eating. " We need to talk" he said putting it on the table, I also put the tray on the table. " Ohhk" I said alarmed by the seriousness on his face." You know that I love you right" he said . I nodded" the reason why I hired you is because I want you to be mine only. I don't want you seeing other man. A friend of mine is working on a plan to erase all your files within the Don's website system and your death will be staged, so the Don never bothers you again." He explained. " But Salvatore, you don't understand. It's not easy just like that. He will find me, he has a tracking devices inserted in the back of my head. He knows my exact location as we speak" I explained panicking. " A tracking device, of course he does. Or else how would he keep tabs on you. You should have told me

about this earlier" he said, it was more like he was talking to himself more than just talking to me. Then there was silence a while. " And yes, I know about what went down at school" he said sighing." I don't want to talk about it" I said going to bed. " We should talk about, we will talk about it. Why didn't you tell me. How are we going to resolve it if we do not talk about it" he asked removing the lots of pillows on bed which I didn't bother to remove, he put them on the couch. And said " off" for the main lights to switch off, only the side lamps were on. I was sleeping on my back. " Look, I don't want to talk about it because I don't want to argue" I said closing my eyes. " Why would we argue" he asked. " Because you drove me to school and worse, kiss me Infront of the other kids. Then they reported me and I was questioned" I explained calmly. " You should have seen the disappointment on miss knight's face. I was questioned but not you, but I am going to be OK. I am fine" I said turning on my side so that I could look at him. " Sorry. I got carried away with the kiss" he said. " I'm over it" I said then kissed his forehead. " Good night" I said. " We always argue, if it's not that

. We have issues. We argue and make up within no time. I need you to promise me one thing" he said. " Promise what" I asked curiously." Promise me that for the whole month we won't argue, we'd do nothing but love each other" he said. " I can't really promise you that but I'll try not to argue. I'll try... but I like it when you apologise. I can tell that you are not used to it but you say it either way" I said smiling. " It's easier to apologize to You. I don't know why and how but it just feels so right" he explained from the depths of his heart. " That's deep and new, coming from you" I said chuckling. " I have to sleep, good night" I said. " Good night my love" he said making my heart pounding. It was the first time I heard him call me that, I was used to my " heart beat" . I wanted to call him by sweet names too but I could not find it in me.

.....

A month later....

[6/3, 14:35] Lynne: Page 19

Cora's pov

It has been a long month and my whole body and soul was wary. Salvatore literally forced me to stay with him and Amanda would come to his house to study, she would sometimes. He was fed up because I'd sometimes come back around 01:00 in the morning. We nailed the examinations and schools just got closed for the holidays. I was in the cinema room watching a reality show: Real housewives of Atlanta. I had a bowl of popcorn, a glass of juice, a dish of different kinds of fruits and a plate of doughnuts. I was very indecisive of what to eat, so don't blame me. I was happy. I looked at the time one more time, it was around 20:00 and Joaquin was not back yet. We haven't been seeing each other that much lately but whenever we got a chance we made the best of it. A week earlier he had taken me to the last date and I agreed to be his woman officially. Although I still had my doubts and fears and anxieties and worries. I indulged on my food like it was nobody's business, my tummy was getting fuller and fuller. "Wow this is a very pleasant, I mean pretty site that I'm seeing" he said coming from behind the couch and he just on to sit. "What do we

have here, doughnuts, fruits, popcorn, juice. Mmh, are you sure we're not pregnant" he asked mocking me. " Whatever dude, I'm on an injection. I'm sure your little lazy seeds won't be able to touch the shell" I said getting back at him. " Ouch, that kinda hurts... We should hit the club tonight" he said. Getting his one leg over my thighs and the other one folded. He was looking at me and I was watching the television. " No, thanks. I think I've seen enough of the club to last me for a lifetime." I said with a mouth full of popcorn. " I know but not with me, come on it will be fun" he said. " My friends are already there" he added. " Yeah, your friends not mine. You can go I'll just get myself tucked in bed and dream of you. But know that spiritual I'll be there" I said sadly serious. He laughed non stop, yeah that was my intention. I couldn't help but laugh along. " You're insanely crazy" he said. " You're the same babe" I said laughing. " Could you say that again. " Say what... you're the same'? " I asked alarm. " No, the other part" he said seriously. " babe?" I said swallowing my saliva, the next thing I knew I was being kissed with so much love and affection. " It's the first time you've called

me that, I'm always ready for you call me Joaquin when you are happy, Alonzo when you are upset or sad. Salvatore when you are really pissed off, i mean really furiously angry." He said, I was just looking at his eyes the whole time. He knew me more than i knew myself. I repeat he was my drug and I was addicted to him. I smiled at him and that time the smile reflected in my eyes. " So are we still going" he asked as if I had agreed earlier on that we'd go, he was a very cunning and tricky man. " I have nothing to wear to the club. Unless you want me to go in my pyjama shorts and gown." I said blinking a couple of times. " Salvatore thinks that, that's not such a bad idea" he said in our signature. " Cora thinks that Joaquin has gone bananas, what will people think. Cora says no" I said on a serious note. I'd be dammed if I went out on PJs. " Salvatore disagrees with Cora. Know what, he is going to take, come back and drag Cora the club" he said already leaving. He didn't even Wait for me to answer. I continued with my food and 15 minutes later, he came back, in his black PJs with a silver lining on the edges. They seemed knew. Or could be that he didn't use them

too often and he had black leather sneakers and a black gown that matched the pjs . His hair was neatly combed plus he had recently got a hair cut. " Let's go" he said standing Infront of the biggest screen television. " What?, Are you serious" I asked unbelievably, like for real who does that plus he was a well known renowned business man. What would people think. " Want me to drag you to the car so that you could feel the level of my seriousness." He asked warningly. " Give me 5" I said going upstairs to get my teeth brushed. I also tied my hair into a neat pony tail, applied enough make up for the night, applied the purple lipstick. I also wore my new glittering six inch pencil hills. I changed pink Pyjama shorts into the all white ones. So I was in my silky shiny ankle length baby pink long gown, mid-thigh long shorts with Lacey designed edges along with the tiny strapped vest. I had no bra on, my boobs were the best after all. I applied the channel Cologne he bought me on our last date and went down stairs. " Do I look ok" I asked smiling. He was standing down the stairs. " You look like the Queen of the night" he said. " Is that a good thing, I could have

many different possible meaning, It could be that I look good enough to mesmerize a lot of men, it could also possibly mean that I...—" and then you go ahead and say that Amanda talks a lot" he cut me off, opening the car door for me. " What does that mean" I asked intending to annoy him. " It means that you take the crown, babe. You can talk shame" he said fastening my seatbelt and his too. And then the driver drove off. " Thanks babe" I said smiling like a kid who just got a chance to play with his favourite toy. He looked at me thoughtfully. " I think you were technical designed to drive me crazy" he said huffing. I just giggled kiddishly. " 5 minutes turned into 15, you should have said " kindly multiply that by 3" on your way upstairs" he said shaking his head. " Sorry, my mathematics is so poor" I said fidgeting with my hands. He just laughed a bit. " So...where are we going exactly. " I asked as we were joining the main road. " The best club in the city, 'club Paradisé' " he said. " You do not get to compliment your own club" I said. " Why not, when the whole Johannesburg is praising it. Why shouldn't I?" he asked. " Just doesn't seem right" I said. " How much is the entrance ticket

there" I asked him. " 250" he said shortly. " Wow, i could get myself a couple of t-shirts with that kind of money. " I said amazed. " Plus the booze money, what a waste" I added thoughtfully. " I couldn't even get 1 t-shirts with that amount of money and here you are talking of a couple of" he said casually. " I really should show you around the city but we gotta start somewhere else first" he said. " Where?" I asked. " It's going to be a surprise" he said. " Tell me first" I asked eager to know. " Let the surprise be a surprise" he said firmly. " I see" I said disappointed. I unfasten my seatbelt, like a usually did and as usually he gave me a sharp glance, there was something about this and the seabelt that I couldn't figure out. At first he shouted at me for unfasten my seatbelt. I layed my head on his thighs and layed on my back. Feet's on the limousine leather seats, knees up, " how did you know that you wanted to be a chef" I asked curiously. He sighed softly, he seemed distant. It must have been the seatbelt issue. " Since I was a kid, I used to hell my dad prepared breakfast before going to school until he sent me to Italy when I was ten, my love for the kitchen kind of

died when I was there, but one day my grandfather prepared brucheta and it was the most scrumptious meal I've ever tested, I begged her to teach me, she became my guru. I'd always practice but it never reached the standard that I wanted. Until one day I cooked it without aim and interest and I still remember the look in my grandfather's eyes, that's when I knew I wanted to make people happy with just pure simple food" he explained. " Wow, the way you are telling your story, I could almost see you and your grandparents.... So what made you stop, you are more like a business man now... Juggling between the restaurants, club and the hotel and the lodge. That's sounds like a lot of work for one man" I said, my whole body was soothed by the slightly brushing of my hair with his hand. " Twice or thrice in a month I get to cook for my customers, the menu becomes slightly different and the food expensive and besides I cook for you at home, I cook for myself and Papa once in a while" he said kissing my forehead. " You've only cooked for me thrice, and you weren't even that much dedicated the last time. But don't worry, one day when I have my own money

I'd walk in at resistant Paradisé, wearing my short little black dress, long heels and a Gucci handbag. Occupy my reserved table and order myself brucheta that you'd prepared" I said looking forward to that day. " Ohh really, kindly invite me too. Or maybe I'd just be standing in the far corner watching these lovely legs as you enter." He said running his hand on one of my legs. And then the car suddenly stopped. Infront of the club Paradisé, it was just near the street, there were a lot of people cueing up to enter, some were smoking outside. I could hear music blasting up as a was standing outside. " Are you ok" he asked." You seem scared" he said with a smirk. " Of course I am shit scared, I've never been to a club before I mean not under these circumstances. I'm wearing a gown and PJs for crying out loud. " I said a little bit louder than I normally would have. " Just close your eyes and take a deep breath, be cora, the one who is brave and doesn't give a damn about what people think" he said standing behind me. " Ok, let's do this" I said taking a deep breath. " That's my girl" he said making me blush. " Jason, Mike" he said, giving the bouncers a hand shake. " King Kong" They

said in unision. " Not Infront of my woman" he said pushing me inside. I could feel all eyes on us. " Why did they call you King Kong" I asked curiously. " Let's go inside" he said pushing me in as we were in the corridor. There were a lot of bodies moving around, a lot of different colours of flashlights. A lot of white people. Alan Walker song was on the remix, people dancing on the dancefloor. More like jumping, you know how white people are.

.....

Narrated

Salvatore pushed Cora to the VIP section where they found Siboniso, Esihle, Sandile, Kevin, Tiatiang with his current girlfriend Blu, Mbutho with his wife Chantel Khuran. " Guys" he said giving them a handshake and then he reached Sandile. " Is it safe" he asked giving out his hand for a handshake. Sandile reluctantly shook his hand, you could feel the dark Aura around him. Cora was still standing there watching the action. " Guys" he imitated Salvatore's bassy voice. And shook their hands one by one. They all just laughed. " I didn't know that we

were coming to a dress up party or else I would have worn my LJ last year Halloween costume" Esihle said laughing out even more. They all joined in. " Hey, don't even try to open up that filthy little mouth of your, who invited you to the club. You are too young to be here" Salvatore said jokingly. " ohh really, I'm older than her but you came with her here and I can't be here" Esihle asked pointing out at Cora who was sitting on Salvatore's lap. " She's my baby, I'll take care of her, who will take care of you" he asked pulling Cora even more closer to him. "Oohhh" the guys said in unision. " When I have three brothers why should I fear" she asked bragging. " And one is free" she said directly her eyes to Sandile who was sipping on his wine. They all looked at him. " Don't look at me, maybe she is taking about Kevin... sweetheart if you are referring to me sorry. Tonight it's just me and my glass of wine." Sandile said and then poured himself another glass of wine. " Mxm, bengcaba ukuthi nginobuti omdala. Ngzakukudivoca ngokusa" she said sulking. Making the guys to laugh. " Somebody please translate" Cora screamed and they laughed even louder. " Alonzo, you understood

what she had just said." She asked casually. " Yeah, a bit. I've lived with them for years now. I know 60%of isizulu " He said. " I see" she said. " Can I get a glass of wine, please" she said and Siboniso poured her one. " Stop it right there brother. You don't really want to see her drunk" Salvatore said. " How can I refuse sister inlaw" Siboniso asked teasingly. " Please, just one glass" she pleaded given him her best of puppy eyes. " Okay, just one" he gave in. " Finally, you find a woman that you can't say no too. What a wow. You deserve a trophy sister inlaw" Siboniso said. " Shut up you motherfudge" he said. " hilarious" Sandile said. They all laughed except for Cora. " I must say, I'm quite surprised too" Tiaxiang said raising a glass of wine" cheers to Mr whipped Salvatore junior" he said and they all raised glasses. "Cheers" they said in unision. Cora was busy trying to drink up the left small amount of wine in her glass. " I must say that I am really hurt, I never expected mbutho to convince with my enemies, even you chubby cheeks" he said referring to mbutho and his wife. "I killed a lot of man to get to my wife, I must say if I ever hear a man call her chubby cheeks,

blood will spill" he said imitated Kevin who slightly pushed him with his shoulder. " That's my dialogue" he said . " Guys is it raining in here" Cora asked suddenly. " My hair feels so wet" she added. " Ohh, shit. Fuck" Salvatore exclaimed. The others were just confused. " What's the percentage in that bottle of wine" he asked." 12%, why do you ask" Sandile said in a drunken state. " Damn, because no normal person would ask if it's raining inside the house or not, that aside. Cora just said her hair is wet" he said a little bit pissed. " Calm down babe, it's just that my hair is was but I promise my clothes are dry. You can feel them" he said taking Salvatore's hand and making him feel her clothes. Esihle was busting out of laughter, the others were laughing but not like she was. " It's not funny, especially to you Siboniso. I told you not to pour her wine" Salvatore said seriously while trying to stop Cora from messing with his hair. And then Wale ft Rihanna -bad girls song played. " Joaquin please come and dance with me. I love that song. Please, please, please" she said already standing up and pulling him up. " Cora, come and sit down here" he said firmly. " Brother, I don't

think she'd listen to you. Just go on stage and dance with her. The song will be over soon. Everybody is watching you" Esihle said. " Ok, just for two minutes" he said standing up. Leaving the guys and girls in laughter. He raised his middle finger and went on stage. Cora was Infront of him, her back on him, her hands raise to hold on to his neck/back of the head. His hands on her tiny waist. She was swaying her waist and hips side to side, he was pretty much encourage her movements. The song kept on playing....[intro :Wale]

I heard about you

You heard about me?

Haha, yeah, Wal, haha

Cause I had some issues

Wal, haha, back at you, bad girl.

[Hook:Rihanna]

Is it bad that I never made love, no I never did

But I sure know how to fuck

I'll be your bad girl, I'll prove it to you

I can't promise that I'll be good to you

Cause I had some issues, I won't commit

No, not having it

But at least I can admit that I'll be bad book to you(to
you)

Yeah I'll be good in bed, but I'll be bad to you

Bad that I never made love, no I never did it

But I sure know how to fuck

.....

Hold up

Bad girls ain't no good, an the good girls ain't no fun

Look(and a bad girl need a real nigga)yeah, cause
real nigga just want(haaaa)

So it seems like we're caught up in the wrong thing

Got a thing for a queen who don't wanna leave

You got a thing for a king but you ain't a king

Seems like the ones who roam never got a ring

And I can see that you're bad(no to you)
In the literal sense, I mean the physical sense
I mean the, oops, wait, let me give me a second.
I need a minute to vent, I'm only telling you that
I heard you(bad girl)
And I'm telling you I could believe that
Not the type of fella to yell or be gettin' jealous
But we talking about game, wale got the league pass
We at the bed, floor, couch, holp up.
(Loud pack boy, roll up)
You know what's up(wassup)
Forget it, cause all the bad girls always
unapologetic..... She hurt feelings, she ain't wrong
She work hard, she play harder
Got a smart mouth, like a speed fly
She don't catch feelings she too busy catching G5
She no saint,'cept saint Laurent

Gone blaze up... The song kept playing until the end and there were now a few people on the stage to. She turned around and got her hands on his shoulders. " I love you Joaquin" she said loudly enough for him to hear. " You're just drunk, I am taking you home" she pulled her towards the VIP section. They sat down and " let's stay a little bit" she said holding his arm. She was sitting beside him. "behave your self then" he said calmly. " You guys look cute together, ncooh " the drunken Esihle said. " You are also coming with me, you are drunk too" he said. " but brother" she complained sulking. " No buts Esihle, who knows what could happen to you, Sandile is wasted, Siboniso looks tipsy and where is Kevin" he asked and then glanced at his wrist watch." His wife called up, he left" Tiaxiang said. " Baby, we should probably get going" he said to his girlfriend. " Good bye guys" the girl said before they left. " Let's go" he said to both Esihle and Cora. They both stood up and Esihle fell on her butt. " Mhmm, mommy" she cried. " God knows what would have happened to you if I didn't come around.... Jason, take care of my brothers." He said getting outside.

And then they got in the car, the driver drove off.

..... Salvatore carried his sister out of the car to the guest room, he tucked her in bed. He also carried the sleeping Cora to their room, got her in bed to remove her clothes and got her under the cold running water shower. " Jesus" she cried out loud standing up as she was sitting down. She quickly turned off the taps. " Are you trying to murder me, she asked the naked Salvatore who was applying soap on his body, he turned on both cold and hot water. " What if I am" he said busy taking a shower" just shut up and shower, would you?" He said. She did just that. Wiped her body after that and wore her panties and vest, got undercovers. Salvatore wore his blue trunk only. " Good night" she said closing her eyes to sleep, Salvatore got undercovers too, she had her back on him. He got closer to her and cuddled up, he could not ignore the warm body next to his, her feminine Cologne drove her inside nuts, making his testosterone levels to rise up and his male rod giant cucumber(as Cora would normally call it) to become hard, and his

breath hiked up from walking to racing. He right hand found itself under her panties, searching for the gap of the valley, Cora jumpy a little bit but he brought her back in place with his masculine arms, he kept on rubbing the wet, throbbing pink bud on the valley, Cora kept on biting her upper lip and moaning, worse she was moving her big butts in circles, her eyes were closed. She kept on making the (mmh ohh) sounds. He flipped her over, got in-between her thigh removed her panties and did what he did the best, he was sucking on her soft, wet pink throbbing bud, making her screamed. She was busy search for his giant cucumber, he finally found it and keep running her tiny hands on it, it was already on hard and ready for her. he took of his trunk and it sprouted freely. He ran it head on the edges of her valley, " Alonzo, please" she pleaded. " What do you want, il mio cuero batte" he asked with a smirk of knowing the effect he had on her body. Seeing her begging for it, satisfied her male ego. " I want you Joaquin, I want you inside, please. Please babe-ahh" she pleaded, he was still running it on the edges. He tried to penetrate into the valley, it was a tough

mission but he finally succeeded with much difficulty, once again tearing Cora's walls. He started to move slowly and steadily increased the pace, he thrust and thrust until Cora came and he followed." I love you" she said with a tear escaping her left eyes. He collided on top of her, " I love you" he said kissing the tear away.

.....

Cora's pov

I opened up my eyes, sunlight rays hitting my eyes so brightly, I was naked, I turned around only to find out that I was alone in bed, Joaquin was not in bed, I sat up, tried to stand up but stumbled and fell back in bed, my valley of fire was really burning up, I checked and found blood spots between my thighs. I had a pounding headache like never before. I tried to remember the yesterday's incidents and they led me straight to the time I said" I love you to Salvatore" I bed, crying. I suddenly panicked. It was like someone was pressing a replay button on my memory, the bed scene kept on playing. I finally managed to get out of bed and get to the shower, I took a quick shower

because my feet couldn't carry me for long, I was so fatigue. I brushed my teeth and brushed my long hair backwards. I went into the closet and wore my undergarments whiteleggings and my white vest and pink sleepers. I went back to the bedroom and found Joaquin cursing on his phone. " Look, I have to go. Just keep the damage under control" he said then hung up. " Great you're dressed up, have the glass of crushed veg and egg downstairs and there's breakfast there too, we are leaving in an hour. " He said so fast that I was left confused. " What are you talking about, anyways I wanted to ask you about last night. What exactly happened cause my memory is blocked" I asked fixing the bed. " Cora, I have no fucking time to jog your memory, just go and have the fucking breakfast... Shit, I swear you'd be the death of me" he cursed so angry that I almost cried. " What's wrong Joaquin" I asked, tears threatening to come out. " Look sweetheart, just go and have breakfast, our plane is leaving in three hours. Just go and have breakfast. I'll pack our bags" he said gentle retrieving the bedcover in my hands and kissing my forehead, I was suddenly scared of him. I nodded

and went downstairs, had the bitter juice and breakfast. I was so shocked and upset and scared at the same time. What did I do wrong now, did something happen last night, or maybe Salvatore's true colors were unveiling, questions kept running in my head

.....

Comment, share and like

[6/3, 14:36] Lynne: Chapter 20

Narrated

They got into the car after Salvatore had packed their luggage inside the boot of the AMG black car they were in. Salvatore was wearing white huge shirt and white trousers along with white sandals and his Gucci watch. Cora was still in her white leggings and vest along with pink sleepers. Salvatore has given her his black jacket to put on. Cora's luggage had just a few things. " What's going on Salvatore?, Where are we going?" She finally mastered the courage to ask. " It's nothing sweetheart, we are just visiting my grandparents in Rome-italy " he said

raising her palm and kissing it. " So why are there bodyguards Infront and behind our car" she asked in fear. " For protection of course . Don't worry, I'm here" he assured her and noted that she hasn't fastened her seat belt, he buckled it up for her.. the reached the Johannesburg international airport within an hour. The other bodyguards got their luggage and then the others tried to get them through the paparazzi mess. Salvatore held Cora so tightly. " What's going on here, Joaquin. I'm scared" she said as they were pushing through the crowd.

" Sir, how do you know Nina?, Sir were you having an affair with Nina khumalo while you were married, sir is Cora your current play girl...." The questions kept on passing by, until they got inside the airport, Cora didn't even know that she had a visa until Salvatore retrieved one from his trouser pockets. The boarded in first class, off the Italy. Hours later, Cora woke up in a new country, Salvatore held her hand as they were getting their bags. They went to the main entrance and found a chauffeur with a board written Salvatore on it, they got into the car after greeting

the chauffeur.

.....

The car drove in to the grandparents mansion, which was just a few minutes away from the beach. It was in mist of the city, Rome. It was painted in White, a Few miles from the city of Rome. The driver got their luggage while they got off the car, Cora was abnormally quite, her heart was thundering, mind confused. Everything was just happening so fast. Her life felt so messed up at the moment. It was just too many pieces of different puzzles. She could be with a strange at the moment, sexually pleasing it, after that she'd go to her apartment and scrub her body in hatred, she'd study until it was too much to handle, then she'd take her pills and fall asleep but there she was with a man she was not so sure if she knew, about to meet another one of his family m without her consent. They walked into the parlor of the house, she held Salvatore's hand, he held her's back in a squeeze of assurance. before he could ring the doorbell, the door opened up and he was welcome by his grandma's hugs and kisses. "

Grandma, please stop it" he said smiling at her. " Why should I, are you suddenly feeling shy. You used to love me and now that you are all grown up, you don't even visit me" she complained sulking like a kid. Cora was just standing on the side with a smile on her face. " And, who's this pretty lady we have here" the grandmother asked, hands on Cora's cheeks. " This, grandma is my first lady, Cora" he said getting his arm around Cora's shoulders. " I thought I was your first lady?" she said folding her arms. ": You are still my first lady, let's just keep it a secret. She'd be very hurt if she found out that I had just lied" he whispered a little bit louder into his grandma's ears, that they all just laughed. " You are still corn... It's nice to meet you Cora. I'm Mrs Salvatore by the way" she said." Nice to meet you too, Mrs S" she said , they hugged. " Mmh, I like the sound of that, Mrs S. Thanks for bringing me back my grandson home. It's been two years since he visited. " She said. " where's grandfather" Salvatore asked as they were all walking inside the sitting room. " Upstairs taking a shower, growing old is really taking a toll on him. He suddenly has developed a memory leak problem."

The grandmother said. " Is it really that severe"
Salvatore asked concerned. " I mean, you don't normally complain but you just did" he added. " He is just trying to drive me crazy, and I won't give in so easily. He even forgets if he has taken a bath or not. So pathetic" she exclaimed.

.....

Salvatore's POV

" Let me go and check up on the poor child, before you strangle him to death" i said getting up from the couch and going upstairs, leaving the two ladies chatting. On my way upstairs I received a call from my lawyer. " George" I said . " Things are not looking good in here man, your alleged baby mama just got on the TV show with Hakeem. And the vivid pictures that were taken from the airport Today are online." He explained. " Tell me something I don't know... I want you to sue the daily news pape, for defaming of character. God knows I was not dating Nina while married, we weren't even dating. Well at least I thought so... And calling Cora a home wrecker. Wow, that was just... How could she insult my Cora just

like that. Just fix it, bribe her if you have to. And I want a DNA test done on her little embryo." I said through gritted teeth. " I'll see, what I can do. Just make sure that Cora doesn't get to see the news, no woman deserves to be insulted like this" he said and then we hung up. I continued on my way up, found grandpa moisturizing his body. " Eauw man, what kind of bad luck is this. Should have told me you were naked" I said getting in and closing the door. " You son of a bitch, come here" he said but he was the one coming to me. He hugged me nakedly. "Ohh Holly shit" I exclaimed hugging him back making sure to leave a gap between us. " I missed you my boy" he said wearing his PJs. " I kinda missed you too, how have you been holding up" I asked sitting on the bed. " I've been holding up but what are you doing here, trouble in paradise?". He asked giggling. " Grandpa, I told you about my divorce four months ago, Isabella and I got divorced, remember?" I explained gentle. " You lie!" He said in disbelief. " Yeah, can't believe it too. When I was nothing but good to her" I shrugged my shoulders. " Holly matrimony, so you are now a widower, just like me"

he said eyes popped out hands on his mouth. " Now I see the reason for grandma's complaint... Grandpa I'm here with my girlfriend, please behave yourself" I said standing up to leave. It was 22:30 and I was so tired. I needed to lie down and rest. We both walked downstairs to the dinning room, where we found the ladies giggling about what, I don't know. They were busy setting up the table. " What are you guys laughing about" I asked very interested. " It's woman's business": grandma said " help us setting the table. " Moments later, we were eating, " Mrs s, I thought Alonzo was lying when he said you make the best brucheta dish in town. It's taste so scrumptious" Cora said. She didn't seem like herself, she hadn't said a thing to me since we landed. But she was trying, she smiled right there and then. Try to get engaged in a conversation laughed when everyone else was laughing. She looked so fatigue but she hadn't complained yet. We said goodnight and went to our bedrooms. Cora was taking a shower while I was taking a bath. She got out and wrapped up a towel around her body. Then went out off the bathroom. I stayed in the bathtub a little bit

more, until I felt slightly sleepy. I got out of the bathtub, clean it, wiped my body and went to the room to get dressed. My suitcase was in bed, I opened it up and got my trunk . The balcony sliding door was opened, the curtains were being blown away by the breezing sea wind. I went out to the balcony and found Cora were my white t-shirt, her hands raise to the sides, like a plain, eyes closed. It looked like she was loving the breezing wind. The city lights were bringing it to life. " Are you ok" I asked, standing behind her. She nodded fastly. " Talk to me Il mio cuero batte, I can see that you are not ok" I said holding her waist from a distance. " Alonzo, I'm perfectly fine, isn't the city just beautiful, and your grandmother is great, funny and kind. Your grandmother, well I don't know yet." She said drawing in the breezing wind. " You know, you can talk to me. I'll be waiting... let's go to bed. Grandma has this habit of waking up the whole house early in the morning" I said. " Give me 5" she said shortly. I then went to bed, she came in 10 minutes later. " Salvatore, I can't find my pills, did you pack them." She asked shaking my body. " Aren't they there in

your suitcase" I asked. " No, they are not there, not even my PJs are there for that matter" she said. " I must have forgotten to pack them. I'm sorry, please try to take the sleeping pills in the cabinet behind the mirror." I said sitting on my butt, she went away without saying a thing. She came back later on and got undercovers. " I'll take you to the mall tomorrow, for shopping" I said then kissed her goodnight.

[6/3, 14:36] Lynne: Page 21

Cora's pov

I was woken up by the banging sounds on the door, I ignored it groaning in annoyance the next thing I knew, shirts were being pulled off me . " Shit,shit, shit... what's going on...grandma what are you doi—" cursing is not pleasant within these courtyards. A young girl like you should know that cursing is just a lack of manners" she said crossed. " I'm so sorry grandma. I.." I didn't have an excuse. " Breakfast is ready, get ready in 10 minutes" she said then got out of the room. " I'm so dead, shit, fuck" I cursed trying

to fix the bed in a jiffy. I heard someone bursting with laughter, I looked where the sound came from. And there he was, laughing his ass out. " What are you laughing at?" I asked charging for him with a pillow in my hands. I gave him a few pillow beatings, which i realize were not good enough because he was laughing even more harder. I threw the pillow away and hit him with my small fists. He held them, I tried to fight him but I was no match for his masculine arms. " You're such a jerk, why didn't you wake me up and then you had to watch your grandmother peeling off my skin" I said a little bit louder. " I warned you last night, should've set up an alarm or something...you should have seen your face" he said giggling. " Whatever man, your grandmother is pissed off. ... I'm so dead" I said thoughtfully. He put my arms around his neck and his hands below my butt, scooped me up. " What are you doing" I asked heart skipping. " Aint I going to get a good morning kiss" he asked so seductively. " Do you think that your grandmother is going to forgive me anytime soon. Maybe I should just go, maybe cook some lunch, only if I could. Perhaps i

should—". He kissed my lips. he smelt like freshly picked lemons, his her a little bit wet. He had a towel wrapped around his body. He tried to get his tongue in but I protested shyly. " Mmh...I haven't brushed my teeth yet" I said snuggled up on his neck. " So what... You're such a party pooper" he said putting me down. " I believe you have 8 minutes left" he said after glancing at the watch on the bedroom wall. " Fuck" I cursed while taking off my clothes. " I guess you haven't learned your lesson for cursing" he said closing the bathroom door. I took a 4 minutes shower, broke the record, didn't I?. I wiped my body, wore my undergarments and my white little summer dress along with flowered wedge heels. Tied my hair into a messy bun. Applied lipgloss and went downstairs. I found everybody around the dining table, including Salvatore. Who was wearing a black long sleeve shirt, which had buttons on the chest and blue faded jeans with black timberlands boots. He was on fire. " Good morning Mrs s, good morning Mr Salvatore" I said standing up behind the seat. " Good morning child, how did you sleep" grandma asked. " I slept like a small child" I said pulling the

chair to sit down. " I could tell" she said sarcastically. Joaquin giggled. " Norah, stop troubling the pretty lady. Who is this pretty damsel, if I must know" grandpa said, looking at me so seductively. " Hey , grandpa. Stop that. She is my girlfriend. I introduced her to you last night remember" Joaquin said kiddingly but warningly at the same time. " I'm Cora, I must say that you look quite handsome" I said directly to grandpa. Who blushed, " thank you pretty lady" he said. " If you're done, could we dig in" Joaquin said suddenly. We ate, Italian breakfast. Some dish didn't sit well with my tongue that I almost felt like puking but other than that the food was delicious. I offered to wash the dishes, jeez. Somebody should have warned me. There were a lot of dishes there. I finished up, wiped them and finally packed them into their rightful cabinets. It was such a task, or could be the fact that i didn't see myself as the kind of kitchen woman. When I got back to the sitting room, I found the three of them having a conversation which seemed very interested but they were speaking in Italian. " Ohh,you are done. Let's go.the mall should be opened by now" Joaquin said

standing up. " Grandma, should we get you something. We're are going to the mall" he said. " You are going out, but you just got home. No, non voglio you che vada" she said it in a protesting manner. Which made me guess she was refusing us to go. Joaquin went to her, held her shoulders. " We will get back soon, I promise" he said then kissed her cheek. " Ok, cora make sure to come back soon" she said. " Yes, Mrs s" I said. I went upstairs to get my phone" let's go" I said to Salvatore as I got downstairs.....

..... He led the way to the garages. There were three cars in there. A res SUV Bentley and then white Audi RS. And then the one he was getting in, Jeep grand Cherokee, which was a convertible, dusty grey in colour. Two passengers sit. It was just so wild. " Woohoo, I like this car" I said excited. " Ohh yeah, it was my 17nth year birthday gift from my papa" he said with his Italian ascent. He opened the garage using the remote controller in his hand. He did the same with the gate. Let's see, what you've got here. I said opening his dashboard cabinet. " Luther vandross, kenny lattimorre, Celine Dion, Anthony,

Another Luther vandross" checking out the CD tapes. I then threw them off the car. " Hey, what are you doing" he snapped. " You saw it all, we will buy something fresh and new... You can't expect me to listen to 1980s CDs " I said folding my arms around me. " But I loved those CDs" he said sulking. " But I don't" I protested. " But I do" he insisted. " But I don't" I said. We went on and on until he quit. It was a child's play and he was no child. We got to the mall, so huge. Mall of Africa had nothing on it. " Should we start with breakfast cause I saw how you didn't enjoy the one you were forcing down your throat earlier" he said eyebrows raised. " You noticed?, I hope your grandmother didn't. It was not all bad, i had trouble with just one this" I justified myself. " Yeah, yeah... let see where we can get English breakfast" he said thoughtfully. Then led the way. " That was so tasty" I said moaning, after taking my last bite on toasted sandwich. " Now, let's go shopping . I don't want your grandmother to bite my head off for " bringing you" back home late." I said quoting with my fingers. " Hey, She's still my grandmother. She is such a good lady, she's just growing old. I guess" he said

defensive. " And what was that shade with my grandfather. Throwing compliments around the table, that to on my face,." He said seriously. " He complimented me and I kindly did the same. " I said as we were walking around the mall. " Ohh yeah?.. how come you never give me compliments. And all of a sudden you feel gracious enough to give him a compliment" he said sounding like a jealous man. " Are you jealous of your grandfather?" I asked. " No, no, that's ridiculous. I'm just saying that I didn't like it" he said alarmed by the " jealous" word. " You can say it, you are jealous... But there's no need to. He is old wrinkled but still handsome...he is so cute. Don't you think" I said purposefully. " That's just it" he said walking a little bit faster. I watched up with him. " Hey, let me finish" I said holding his arm. We walked on his fast pace. " What I'm trying to say is that, you are more handsome than him, in fact the first time I saw you, the first thought that ran into my head was- gorgeous. You're such an egotistical man that it makes it hard for me to compliment you. You can be such an ass sometimes" I said firmly. " Can we get in now... Compliment turned into an insult" he said

getting into the ladies shop we were Infront. I just giggled and followed him. Joaquin almost got me the whole mall. We passed by the pharmacy to get my pills. I also bought grandma her favourite bottle of wine, Joaquin's advice. " This is not the route to the house" I said to Joaquin. " Yeah and that's because, I'm taking you to the beach" he said. " The beach will be crowded. Besides that grandma said that I must bring you back home early" I said seriously. " Relax, it's just for 30 minutes. I know just a perfect spot" he said. He parked the car about 40 foot from the beach, he got off the car and opened the door for me, I got out, he put me on top of the car bonnet and got on top too. We layed there on our backs. He held my hand. " Do you take all your woman to this spot" I finally asked. " Not all of them... Just one" he said casually. " Who" I asked trying by all means no to sound jealousy. " Zabenathi Maphumulo" he said in his funny accent. " I told you, not to call me that, it's weird" I said giggling. " Why... I love it and I love you" he said getting up , lying on his stomach and looking down at me, he was so serious. I held his cheek. " I love you too" I said

pulling him over for a kiss

[6/3, 14:36] Lynne: Continuing...

Cora pov

We went home around 3pm, the sun was setting. I had bought machine gun Kelly rihanna's CD earlier in the mall and I played Rihanna's on our way back home. He was busy complaining about how immature the music was. We argued until we got home. I gave grandma her favourite bottle of wine and apologized once again. She forgave me fully heartedly that time. I helped prepare dinner and we ate, I took a shower, the elders went to bed early that night, Salvatore was taking a bath when I decided to go and watch television. I opened SA news after a long time of searching for a movie, my eyes popped out at the news I was hearing, the things I was seeing, I couldn't remember when my tears decided to find their way down my face, my head pounding, I was huffing and puffing. I couldn't believe what I was seeing. How could Salvatore have done this to me, my inner self screamed saddened. How?how?... I suddenly felt hands on my shoulder. " Are you ok, I

can explain... let's talk about this" Joaquin said. I tried to stand up but fell back on the couch, he tried to help me but I moved him away. I took the staircases to the room, he was busy following me, saying things I couldn't hear, explaining something i couldn't fathom. I went over to the balcony, I needed fresh air. He came and stood there without saying a thing. " Cora it's not what you think, I'm trying to fix things. I didn't want you to see this, that's why we are here. You shouldn't have seen that" he said scratching his head. " Could you borrow me your cellphone" I said wiping off my tears like a mad woman. He gave me his phone so reluctantly. " Give me the damn password, how am I supposed to get access without a password word." I said shoving it to his chest. He entered the password. The first thing I did was to go on Instagram, then Twitter, Facebook, YouTube videos, they've even animated a video of me dancing with Salvatore on the club. There were comments like:" we know home wrackers like her" , " she's just a gold-digger, Salvatore must man up and take responsibilities of his child", " girls like her love easy money from

blessed"... There we a lot of rubbish comments ,
This Nina girl has even posted her baby bump. I
must give her a huge tick for her looks and another
one for officially ruining my life. I gave Salvatore his
phone, went inside. " Aren't you going to say
something " he asked holding me by my arm. I
turned around, my vision was blur because of the
tears, " what can I say, congratulations you are
officially going to be a father?" I said sarcastically. "
Aren't you going to ask me about all of this before
jumping in to conclusions?" He asked pissed, it was
more like a snap. " Don't you dare shout at me,
Salvatore. What's there to ask.everything is out there.
Or maybe just maybe I should ask you how I'm
supposed to go to school when my reputation is this
ruined. How am I going to face my teaches. I've
always thought that I had a thick skin and an elastic
heart until you came into my life. Now even
strangers call me a whore, I know I am not an angel.
I've done a lot of disgusting shit. But that's between
me and my God. Yes, I also wish that I had a normal
upbringing, maybe then I wouldn't have met you,
maybe then I wouldn't be in this foreign country and

so...So unhappy —" I couldn't find it in me to finish, I broke down and cried, he held me but I busy hitting his chest so hard either way he didn't let me go. I cried until I had no tears left to cry, I had headache, my chest physical hurt. I got out of his arms and went to the bathroom to wash my face. " how far is she?" I asked coming back from the bathroom. " She says she's two month's pregnant" he said sighing heavily. He was sitting on the bed. " So you were seeing her when you know... when we met" I asked pacing up and down. " Kind of, I broke up with her the time I found you, I was really not a serious relationship between us, at least I thought so. She begged me to sleep with her one last time. I didn't think it was a trap so I obliged." He explained scratching the back of his head. " This means that you didn't cheat on me...but still, fuck." I shouted on a low voice. " What's the plan?" I asked sighing. " I'll force her to have an abortion, anyways that child couldn't be mine. We used protection. I made sure of it" he snapped a bit. " Abortion?, Are you crazy. Killing an innocent soul will not resolve this issue... how evil of you to think like that" I said seriously

pissed. " Don't fucking judge me Cora. I can't lose over this, I can't lose you over a child I do not even know, I'm not even sure if it's mine or not" he snapped . " How could you be so selfish Salvatore... After all this you still think that were are going to be together. I've been called a gold-digger, a home wracker, a blessè. The only way to prove my innocence is to just break up with you once and for all. You should just go back to Nina khumalo and raise your baby

.....

" Are you breaking up with me, Cora?" He asked walking towards me. He was so furious, face red. With every step he took forward, I took one backwards. " Salvatore, what are You doing" I asked walking backwards. " You're breaking up with me?... fucking talk Cora... what happened, cat got your tongue?." I reached the wall, in the mist of my confusion and fear he reached me. Hands on both the sides of my head. " I said fucking day it. Cora" he snapped. " I, I,i " I was starting to think that cat really got my tongue. " Damn you Cora, say it" he said

hitting the wall behind me. I jumped a bit, my heart threatening to come out of my chest. " Yes, yes. Go to Nina khumalo" I said my eyes closed. The next thing I knew I was being lifted up by the collar of my pyjamas. " What did you just say?" He asked shaking his head like a mad man, tears running down his cheeks but he was laughing. His eyes had rage of fire. I knew better than to speak my mind. " Please don't kill me, I'm sorry Joaquin. I'd never think of leaving you. I, I love you" just with those magical three words I utter, I was put down gentle. " I'm sorry" I kept on saying with my eyes closed. Just then there was a knock on the door. " Alonzo, is everything OK in here, I heard noise" grandma said from the outside. " Everything is fine grandma, we were just playing. You can ask Cora" he said fixing my creased pyjama shirt. He signalled for me to speak up. " Everything is fine grandma" I said after clearing my voice. " Ok, goodnight" she said and then we heard footsteps walking away. " Did you mean it when you said you loved me?" He asked so serious. " Yes, I love you, a lot" I said with tears streaming down my face. What hurt me the most was the fact

that I was not lying, the fact that every single bit of it was the Truth, I loved the monster Infront of me. Even after the incident that occurred recently, every ounce of my cells longed for him. Why did I have to love him of all the people. " I'm so sorry, I shouldn't have manhandled you like that" he said wiping off my tears. A part of me hated him for what he did, the things he did to other people. The evil beast he was. " I'm going to sleep" I said then walked over to the bed and retrieved one of the shirts from the bed. " I'm going to sleep on the couch" I said walking over to the couch. " Please, don't do this" he begged, attacking me with a hug from behind. " I'm sorry. I'm so sorry. I just can't bare the thought of losing you. I love you so much, I can't lose you" he said. I didn't say anything, I just slept on the bed and my back was facing him. He got undercovers and cuddled up. " I'm so sorry Cora... I can see that ever since I got into your life, I've been slowly but surely breaking your spirit. The thing is I think that there's something broken within me too, I just don't know how to fix it because I don't know what it is. I do horrible things sometimes. I'm sorry" he said, and then liquid

dropped on the side of my face. I turned around and he had tears on his face. He was crying." Hey... please don't do this, don't cry. I'm fine now or at least I'll be fine...." I said holding him tightly on my chest. We stayed like that for almost a quarter of an hour. " I guess this is just a test on our relationship, the things is I tend to leave behind the things that hurt me. Just like I left Jabulani Maphumulo. Even though I didn't leave him to live, I killed him Alonzo. I killed my own father. He used to sneak up in my run with every chance he got and he, he,he'd rape me. He sexually abused me constantly and I kept quiet. Who would have believed me anyways. It would have been such an abomination. He used to call me a slut, he said things like" you look exactly like your mother, one day I'll marry you". He'd spit on me after he was done sexually pleasing himself. How could he do that time, his own daughter. I was just only 13 years old, he took my innocence just like that. You know I used to hate man. So much until you came along, it's so strange. After 3years of abuse, I finally decided to kill him and run away. I stabbed him a several times before leaving the bastard to die. And then I had to

come here, I lived under the bridge for a few days until sis Dolly found me and took me in, a week later she introduced me to the Don. I was so scared, another week later I was officially a prostitute. I had no choice but that's just how it is, some of us are not offered options to choose from in life. That's how life is, right?...I still can remember so clearly how my first day was, I was so scared, my knees were wobbly but in the end I still slept with him. It's funny how I never got used to it. You know, my aunt put me on the missing people's page, my face even appeared on television, she searched for me for a whole year until she gave up. My face is still there on the missing people's magazine. She was like a mother to me, she was nothing but good to me. She came to stay with me and my dad a few weeks after I was born. The two families felt that I needed a mother figure in my life, she ended up falling for the monster, they got married and she gave birth to my two half siblings, Connie and Charles. I miss them a lot but their no going back now...

.....

" I don't know why I am telling you this now but it feels like the right time and place" I said, I wasn't crying. I was smiling like crazy, fidgeting with my fingers. " Wow..." He said sighing. " I don't even know what to say" added. " You are such a strong woman Cora, to have gone through all that but still. You are here. " He said then hugged me. " It's just life and it's plans, there's nothing we can do about it" I said. " Why did your father do that to you, why would he. If I could just see him, I'd chop him piece by piece and make him eat his own flesh. Such a monster" he said with sonic hatred that I knew he meant every word he said. " he blamed me for my mother's death, she had pregnancy issues, the doctors suggested that she should just abort me but she chose to keep me. On the night of the delivery, she instructed the doctors to save me, even after my father begged her not to leave him, she still sacrificed herself so that I could live. As I was growing up so was the hatred in his heart." I explained. " He was such a twisted man, he'd beat my aunt to a pulp sometimes" I added

scornfully.

.....

" You guys look horrible" grandma said as we were having breakfast in the morning. " Hawu Mrs s, are you referring to me too, I thought we were buddies" I said dramatically pretending to be hurt. " True friends don't lie to each other so I'll just be honest, you look horrible. Are you sure you were not ran over by a truck in your sleep. " She said without any filters, we all laughed I liked her already. She called a spade a spade and a shovel a shovel. " That kinda hurts" I said holding my chest

[6/3, 14:37] Lynne: Page 22

The next day I decided to take a jog early in the morning, I left Salvatore sleeping. My mind was still frozen with a lot of things, I needed to go back to South Africa and fix my life. Joaquin needn't run from his issue with Nina. I still had no idea how the whole thing with Nina and the child was going to work, if it was Salvatore's. I passed by the kitchen as

I was coming from jogging, I found grandma and grandpa helping each with preparing breakfast. " Is it hot in here or is it just me, I envy you guys. You look so perfect together". I said making this signal ."

Good morning my forward daughter in-law" the grandfather said smiling. In fact they were both blushing. " Good morning grandma, let me go upstairs and take a quick shower and then I'll come back to help, I hope I'll not be ruining your romantic moment" I said then jogged upstairs. I found Salvatore still sleeping. I went over to the bathroom and took a white clean towel to dry out the sweat on my body. Joaquin was sleeping on his back, I got on top of him and he opened his eyes instantly. " Good morning mr Salvatore" I said smiling at him. He rubbed his eyes, so cute. " Morning" he said yawning. " Seems like somebody is in a good mood today, I see you've even worked out" he said lifting his upper body halfway by using his elbows. " Your grandmother is so unfair, why hasn't she woke you up yet" I asked huffing. " Maybe she's afraid that someone might just curse once again" he mocked me. I pushed him back down, he just giggled. " Why

are you fighting me... Maybe you should just go and ask her" he said smiling. " Argh, forget it... So how did you sleep" I asked. " Not so good, I have a lot in my mind. I think I also need that jog" he said putting his hands on my waist. More like above my butt but on the sides. " What changed your mood suddenly, If I remember correctly you barely talked to me yesterday. You were busy laughing with my grandparents and I was watching on the side lines. So jealous. So what happened" he asked serious. " Nothing, I just thought...mhh there's no way that I'm going to let that bitch called Nina have what rightfully belongs to me. You know what i mean?" I said so cocky and confident. " No, I actually don't" he said purposely. " You know... My giant cucumber" I said biting my lower lip and literally holding his male rod giant cucumber. It was on already. " Mmh" he breathed out loudly. " I was thinking that we could have a quick hot steamy session before going downstairs but since I promised grandma that I was going to help out in the kitchen. I'm figuring mxmm like what the fuck, the session can wait" I said thoughtfully and then I quickly jumped off him. He

tried to catch me but he was too slow. " Il mio cuero batte, come back here" he said so sternly. " No" I said smiling so seductively. I then walked up to the bathroom, he stood up and wooh i could see the huge bulge. " Ohh no" I said in an awe. I entered into the bathroom so fast and locked him out. " Il mio cuero batte, you can't leave me like this" he said so sharply. " I've already done so, so I don't know what you mean" I said laughing. " Il mio cuero batte, please" he said knocking on the door so gentle. " I'm buys, I can't hear you. Jerk it off or something. Help yourself" I screamed out on him. He did reply but I couldn't hear what he was saying, the shower water was running so loudly M I took a quick shower and wrapped a towel around my body. When I got back to the room. He was not there . I went over to the closet and picked out a red little dress, I lubricated my body and wore my new undergarments and the dress. I had my sleeper on foot. I quickly went downstairs, grandma was almost finished, I helped set up the table. Grandpa had went away to take a quick shower since he hadn't showered yet. " Good morning grandma" that was Joaquin's voice. I didn't

realize that he was inside the kitchen. " Morning my son" grandma said smiling. " How did you sleep" she asked. " Like a baby" he lied. He went away, to have a bath. I guessed because it looked like he had just been jogging. 15 minutes later we were all around the dining table. There was no conversation between the four of us. " Grandma, why didn't you wake us up this morning" I decided to break the silence. " The last time I did, my ears almost got permanently deafened" she said mocking me. " Ouch, I thought we were passed that" I said dramatically. " Sorry dear, I just can't help it" she said giggling. Grandpa seemed to be miles away from planet earth and Joaquin seemed, don't know. Upset maybe. Either he looked handsome. He was sitting next to me, grandma and grandpa on the opposite side of the 12 sitting chairs fitted table. " Joaquin, are you OK" I asked on purpose. " Yes, I'm fine. Is there a reason why I shouldn't be?" He asked giving me a death stare. " No, I was just asking" I saw, then continued eating. I held the laughter I felt was about to burst. But there was an unmistakable smile on my face. " I'll wash the dishes" I said collecting them after we

were all done. " Alonzo, go and help her" grandpa said. " But grandpa—" .." there are no buts Alonzo, just go" he said. We washed the dishes in silence. When I packing them in to the cabinets, he was long gone. " Cora, we will be going out to the amazing grounds around half past 4. Be sure to get ready and let that boy know. I don't know what got to him today" grandma said as I was on my way upstairs. " Ok grandma, I'll let him know" I said then continued on my way. I didn't even know what kind of a place this" amazing grounds" was. But Joaquin must have known so I was sure to ask him. I opened the closed doors and entered. I closed it and walked up to him, he was sitting on one of the balcony knitted couches. Doing something on his laptop. I stood behind the couch and held his shoulders, my chin on top of his head. " Make sure to comb my hair after you are done with whatever you are doing" he said so cold and hostile. " Joaquin, why are you being like this, I was just teasing you. What's the need to act so childish" I said standing up straight. " Cora, I'm too busy for your insults. just go away from here" he said so calmly. " Ok, fine" I said then walked away.

.....

I was bored the whole day, I regretted not packing my own clothes on our way from SA. If I did, I would've packed up my books too. Grandma had one of her friend's visit, they were drinking tea and having biscuits in laughter. For a moment I wished Amanda was there. Around 4:00pm grandma and Joaquin were having a heated conversation. I walked up to the room "you can't force me to go when I simply didn't know about the whole thing." He said protesting. "What do you mean by that... Didn't Cora let you know?" She snapped. "Grandma, I'm sorry. I didn't, but how could I have told you when you have been acting so cold towards me" I said budging in. "How dare you" he snapped. "You know what, whatever issues you guys have, just fix them. I'm out of here, one last thing. Exactly at 4:30 we are all going out" grandma said and then got out. We were left alone, he didn't say a thing neither did I. I went to the bathroom and took a bath since he was taking a shower. I wiped my body and and tied my hair with a dry towel, I had just watched it. I borrowed a

hairdryer from Grandma and blow dried my hair, sprayed my new hairspray and combed them it to straight lines. The black necto Dyer was washing out. The shade of blonde mixed with brown hair was showing up. I applied lights makeup and wore my ambrella leather black short skirt and a white tiny vest. Which was written* not interested* I black bold letters. I also wore my white new Nike air Max sneakers. I looked fabulous. Salvatore was wearing his Nike tracksuits and Jordan retro white with a touch of red sneakers. " You look handsome" I said on my way out of the room. I didn't Wait for him to reply. I found grandma and grandpa wearing Jean pants and white shirts. " You guys are goals" I said admiring them. " Have you fixed your issues with Alonzo" grandma asked serious. I shook my head" no" . " You will not talk to me until you fix your differences. Alonzo knows his way to the grounds. You'll follow us" she said and then they left me standing there. I couldn't help but laugh the laughter of shame. " Where's everyone" he asked coming from upstairs. " They just left, grandma said we should follow up since you know your way there" I

said still laughing unbelievably. " Ok... what's funny" he asked eyebrows raised. " Nothing, let's go" I said putting my small phone in my small purse . We walked side by side to the garage. He opened the door for me and the he also got in, drove out. The way to the amazing ground was so bushy. " Are you sure that this is the right route?" I asked. " I lived here for 7 years, this is the way" he said casually. The atmosphere between us wasn't so good but at least he was talking to me. " Ohhk, it's just that the name of the place and the route we're taking doesn't go hand in hand." I said. " I know, I had the same thought on my first time... I had assumed that the route would have Street lights that would make the night feel like a day, everything would be amazing" he said smiling. " Exactly what I thought" I reckoned with him. " The grounds are indeed amazing, you will see". He said smiling. " Is it like, Gold reef city" I asked curious. " Yeah, it's a play station. It has swimming pools and the longest water sliding, sky jets. Space ships. Anaconda rides. Train rides, parachutes. The only difference is that it has elegant restaurants on the sides. " He explained. " Sounds

amazing, I've always wanted to go to gold reef city but I never did" I said deep in my feelings. "

Salvatore?... I'm sorry about what I did earlier. I didn't mean to offend you" I apologized. " We're cool, It was childish of me to act in that way" he said. " Did you jerk off?" I asked wanting to laugh. " I'm too old for that, I took a shower and cooled down" he said. Couldn't help but laugh. "It's not funny OK, you can't turn me on just like that and leave me hanging" he said half serious about it. " What about I make it up to you" I asked putting my hands on his thighs. "

What are you doing, I'm driving in here" he said removing my hand but I put it back there, and worse I got it under his tracksuit pants, under his underwear and I got hold of the giant cucumber. The car swayed side ways. Likely there were no cars around. " Cora, stopit" he said trying to remove my hand one more time. His whole body was heating up and heart racing. " Relax, okay" I said biting my lower lip. I gave him a full blow job, he was moaning and groaning like a man in pain. He pulled up on the road side, since his whole body was freezing , he held my head and pushed it far into my mouth, that it left me

gagging. I'm not going to go into much details but we fucked for a whole hour, I was riding him like crazy. He was screaming my name. We then drove to the amazing grounds, which didn't interest me anymore. It was amazing indeed but it didn't wipe away the memory of the dirty session we just had. I was so steady and wet, the first thing I did when I got there was to got to the ladies room and get cleaned up, I put my underwear inside my purse, I couldn't even walk properly. My valley of fire was really on fire. The four of us had dinner but all I could think about was his giant cucumber that I love. We had another two hot steamy session the time we got home.

.....

Comments please

[6/3, 14:37] Lynne: Page 23

Salvatore's POV.

" Hey Cora , wake up" I said gentle shaking her. She moan pulling the shirts even more over her head. " Hey Cora, grandma is here" I said, I didn't even finish

and she was up. " Where is she" she asked do jumpy. She was wearing my big white vest. " I was just kidding, I made you breakfast" I said smiling. " When did you wake up, you even took a bath" she said rubbing her eyes. Her hair was so messy. " Thanks for the breakfast, let me go and brush my teeth" she said getting out of the bed. " Do look at your self in the mirror" I said behind her. I was in my formal trousers and a white polo neck and black formal shoes. Along with my silver watch and I was going to wear sunglasses. " Eauw, I look horrible." She said sulking Like a kid. She came back after fixing her hair. The vest was midthigh in length, she looked so fatigue. " Are you going somewhere?" She asked sitting down on the carpet and folding her legs like a kid Infront of a television. " Yes, there's a business meeting I need to attend, I'll be back within 4 hours." I said putting the breakfast in front of her. " Can I also come with" she asked putting her elbows on her thighs and face on her hands. " No, it's not going to be safe for. I'll be back soon" I said squirting near her. " Are we not both human beings, if it's not going to be safe for me how is it going to be safe for you. " I

asked. " Lets not argue a bout this, you know what I mean". I said then kissed her forehead. " I'll see you later today, OK?" I said before leaving. " I'll be bored the whole day" she said, I ignored her and got out of the room. One thing I know for sure, woman would always be woman, so clingy and childish. I was going to meet with the potential cocaine buyers. If the deal went well, I was going to be rich. Including my friends.

On my way there I received a call from Nina, for the first time I decided to answer. She had been blowing up my phone, I had put it on silence because Cora would not have been happy and besides that I wanted nothing to do with Nina. " What do you want Nina" I asked casually. " Daddy S, we are starving in here. Your baby is craving for bananas and I'm also horny for you. You know how hormones can be" she said, I then hinged up. She was such a dirty slut. she called me again, " how dare you, Salvatore. How dare you hang up on me. I'm the mother of your unborn child for goodness sake." She screamed, I just put the phone on loud speaker and put it on the

passenger seat. " Are you done shouting" I asked calmly. " You have the nerve to—" .." you seem like a girl who loves to live, let me kindly give you the following advice if you don't want to die. You will not take them slightly. 1. Don't fucking swear at me 2 make sure to go to the press and apologies for insulting my girlfriend 3 this one regards your family members. Say Hi to your mother for me, she is at the mall, wearing pink shorts,right?. Now if you still want to see her alive. You will apologize for insulting Cora on social media, I mean everywhere that you insulted her. And yeah I know who your source was, she will surely regret it. " I said chuckling then hung up. You wouldn't want to mess with me, I had eyes and ears everywhere.

.....

Cora's pov

I entered the pool cold water. I was wearing my white bra and bikini I had a whole full container of ice-cream and a spoon on the side of the pool. It had

been 3 hours since Salvatore was gone. Like I said, I was bored. " Hi" a voice said from the far end of the pool. I looked up thinking that it might be Salvatore but it was not him. " Hi" said back. He walked up to the side I was in. " Hi, I'm Christopher Russell. I'm Alonzo's long long friend" he said squirting outside the pool and giving out his hand for a handshake. We shook hands and yoooh the guy was hot, he had masculine arms, I could tell from the long black tights poloneck he was wearing. He had cat like eyes. Dark tainted skin. Pink lips. He was midheight. " I'm Cora, Joaquin's girlfriend... Did you find grandma inside." I asked curiously. The pool was at the back of the house so to actually get to it, you'd have to pass through the house. Besides somebody had to open the gate for you. " No, I did meet her. In fact she was the one who opened the gate for me. I was upstairs in the guest room and i happened to spot you, I was just wondering who the beautiful lady who is sweating in such chilly weather might be. It doesn't hurt to find out right. I must say that I was really disappointed when you said" Joaquin's girlfriend" . I was hoping you'd say sister or friend

maybe." He said quoting with his fingers. He was so charming. " Sorry to disappoint but I'm already taken" I said swimming away. I knew that Salvatore wouldn't like it if he was to find me talking with his friends, worse, half naked. " Where are you going" he asked. " My boyfriend will not be pleased if he finds us together. You better get going" I said swimming more far away. " Come on, Salvatore is not like that. Besides I am his best friend. I wouldn't bite I promise" he said. I thought twice before swimming back to him. Besides he was standing near my ice cream container. I opened it up and scooped up to eat. " You behave a lot like Kylie Smith" he casually mentioned. " Who's that" I asked curiously enough to let it show. I've heard that name before and it had something to do with Salvatore. An ex or something. " Salvatore's ex girlfriend, she closed her eyes and moaned when she was enjoying something . She was wild just like you are. No surprise that you are Joaquin's girlfriend" he said. " What makes you think that I'm widely" I asked giggling. Try to ignore the things he had said, try to ignore the fact that me and this" Kylie Smith" girl had something in common.

Trying not to question Joaquin's love for me. " Look at you swimming in cold weather, she did crazy stuff like that" he said. " What happened to he?" I asked. "She—" " Chris?" Joaquin's voice said from behind. " Kong" he said turning around so he could face him. "What are you doing here?" He asked not sounding so happy. " I'm just visiting an old friend of mine. Didn't you miss me" he asked. There seemed to be an unsettled beef between the two of them. " Cora, I thought grandma was joking when she said that you are swimming, aren't you going to catch a flue" he said passing his friend by and walking towards me. " It gets better when you're under water. " I said swimming away from the two of them. They seemed to be arguing about something, I stayed as far as I could from them. " Chris, my child. Come and help me with lunch" grandma called out. " I'm coming grandma" he said then walked away. " Come and help me out" I said to Joaquin who seems angry and far away with thoughts. I lifted up my helps and he held it , but his mind was far away. Will just one pull, he found himself hitting the cold water so hard. He got under and swam up. " Shit, what are you doing

Cora" he cursed. I just laughed at him and he ended up laughing at himself. He got rid of his shoes, socks watch, poloneck, belt and wallet." What if I had my phone on me. " I asked after putting his things outside the pool. I just shrugged my shoulders. He swam up to me, " I don't think it's a good idea for you to show off my assets, especially Infront of Chris" he said holding my waist. " I knew you'd say that" I said then kissed him. " Do you want to get naughty underwater?" He asked biting my lower lip slightly. I put my hands around he neck" why not" I said kissing him back seductively. We both giggled at the same time. " You're insane" he said. " The same back at you baby" I said swimming towards my ice cream. " You should call me "baby" more often.it makes my heart skips a bit" he said following me. It retried the spoon from my grip and ate my ice-cream. " Let me listen to it" I said leaning towards his chest. Indeed it was racing. " You thought I was lying" he said chuckling. " No, no baby. I trust you" I said giggling. " How was your meeting" I asked. " Successful my love" he said shortly. " We're are going home tomorrow" he said casually. " I've already told the

grands" he said. " But, why so soon. I love it here" I said pulling my best of puppy eyes. " Don't do that, I'm not going to change my mind. I have issues I have to deal with, and you have school within a week... looking me like that is not going to change my mind" he said seriously. " Not even this" I said kissing him, he responded " not even that" he said after a kiss. " You're such a bore" I said walking away from him. He pulled me back to him so swiftly and tickled me. I laughed out loud. " We will visit very soon" he said putting me down. " Promise?" I asked putting my arms around his neck. He nodded. We were just looking at each other like that when." Hey, love birds, lunch is ready" Chris called out. " We're coming" I screamed because Salvatore seemed to be pissed off by the guy. His jaws were clenched.

[6/3, 14:37] Lynne: Continuing...

Salvatore's POV

The time my grandfather gave me a call about Christopher's visit I drove a little bit faster. I couldn't

let him get his hands and eyes on Cora. My grandparents didn't know the things he used to do, I hate the fact that I used to be part of it until one day. We've been friends since I was 10 years old. We used to share everything, we shared cars and all the boy's stuff you could think of, we were play boys back in highschool, when I'd break up with a girl he'd go after her, I had no problem with that. He was not a masculine person back then. That was the thing we were different about. He spent his days at my grandpa's home most of the time. His parents used to fight a lot. We shared a room. And then I went back to South Africa when I finished highschool, I fell in love with Kylie Smith, he followed me to SA, I let him in. A year passed by, Kylie and I were still together. He'd ask what was wrong with me all of a sudden, I never used to be with a girl for more than 6 months. One day I caught him trying to force himself on my girlfriend that's when we had a fight. I beat him up to the pulp and sent him packing. He kept on apologising and I forgave him over the years. What was the use, Kylie was dead anyways. But seeing him with Cora like that drove me crazy. And the shit

he was about to tell her, he had no right over. I forgave him but that didn't mean that I forgot what he did, I didn't even want him around for crying out loud. I kept my eyes on him as we were having lunch. Cora and I had towels wrapped around our bodies, we were still wet. We finished eating. " Grandma, I'll go up and get dressed and then I'll come back and wash the dishes" Cora said Collecting the plates." Ok my child but you'll also help me prepare for dinner tonight. Right now I am going to visit my friend, she has been admitted in hospital. I'll be back in 3 hours. Grandma said standing up " I'll help you" I said collecting the dishes too.leaving my grandfather and Chris chatting " Are you ok" Cora asked on our way upstairs. " I'm fine" I said shortly. " Ok, if you say so." She said as we entered the room, I locked the door. I took a shower and she took a bath. She wore my big white shirt and her leggings and sleeper. I wore a black short and vest and my white sandals. " Why do you like wearing my clothes when you have yours" I asked standing behind her as she was combing her hair. " Can't a girl wear her man's clothes without any interrogations" she said smiling. " But that's my

favorite shirt and you still haven't answered my questions" I said retrieving the comb from her hands. " Ok, they smell good, just like you. Are you satisfied now" she asked swiftly retrieving the comb from my hand. " But what's the need to do that when I am around. You can sniff me all you want" I said holding her around the tummy. She just shook her head and smiled . " That's weird, don't you think?" She asked. I shook my head" no" . " I'm going to the library" she said walking away. " Hey Cora, I love you. Ok. No matter what people can say. Know that I love you for you" I called out after her. She blew me a kiss and then walked out.

.....

Page 24 is coming up soon.

[6/3, 14:38] Lynne: Chapter 24

Cora's pov

I was reading a romantic novel in the library , it was titled " seduced into the Greeks world". It was very interesting and and a little bit fun . The time was

4pm, grandma was not back yet. Grandpa and Chris were watching sports and Salvatore well I had no idea what he was doing upstairs. " What are you reading?" Chris asked as her entered the library. " A romantic novel, what are you doing here" I asked putting the book down. " I just thought I'd join you since grandpa has gone to sleep" he said sitting down in one of the couches . " Ohh okay but let's not disturb each other because I am busy" I said picking up the book I was reading. " Owh , come on. Let's talk a bit" he said taking the book from my hands. I huffed and puffed up. " What are you doing..." I snapped. " Chill out, I just want to know how you and Kong met" he said. " Don't call him that, why does everyone call him that." I said scornfully. " That's another story, so tell me how did you two meet?" He insisted on the question. " Ohh yeah, you want me to tell you those typical boring stories like: it was a gloomy weather and I was walking on the beach. So yeah we met at the beach or how about this one; we met at the blind date or it was my cousin's wedding and he asked me to dance with him, he was such a charmer. ... Which one would You prefer Mr Russell?"

I asked sarcastically. " You are so sessy and sarcastic. I like you already " he said with a smirk. " Whatever dude... How did you and Salvatore meet again?" I asked curiously. " We meet at the amazing grounds on new year's Eve, he was new in town. His grandparents and my parents knew each other. And then we met again at school... How old are you Cora" he suddenly asked. " How old do you think I am" I asked sighing. " 18-20 I don't know?" He said. " I'm 21years old" I lied. I just didn't want to give him the satisfaction. We talked a lot, he was telling me about their naughtiness in school when they were Young. Them being playboys, Salvatore's father coming all the way from South Africa just to give him a nice beating because his teachers had complained a lot. " What are you guys laughing about" my baby asked coming in the library. " Chris was just telling me how you father whipped you like a child when you were 16" I said giggling." You've only met a few hours ago and then all of a sudden he is 'Chris' wow" he murmured softly. He sat down next to me, I mean so closely to me. " You didn't tell me that you were a playboy" I said on a serious note. " Can we talk...in

private" he said pulling me up and then out of the library to our bedroom. He then looked up. He was busy pacing up and down, " what's going on with you" I asked confused. " I don't like you to spend time with Chris or even look at him" he finally said. " Why?" I asked simply. " I just don't, isn't that enough " he said. " what nonsense is this, Alonzo I'm not a kid for you to be controlling the type of people I should not or should be talking to. If you are not going to give me a good reason why...then I'm sorry but I'm not going to stop. Whatever beef that you have between the two of you just keep it yourselves. Keep me out of it, OK. Chris has been nothing but good to me" I snapped a bit, I was about to get out when he held me roughly. " Salvatore, you are hurting me!" I snapped getting free from his grip. " Sorry, I didn't mean to" he said arguing with himself of wheather he should hold me on not. He ended up holding me on both sides of my face, gentle. " I just lose it when I see you with another man." He said with his forehead on mine. His eyes closed. " There's no need for you to feel like that, I am your only. I love you only. You are my baby" I said hugging him. " Chris is not

who you think he is, it's good that we are leaving tomorrow morning" he said while we were hugging. I sometimes hated the way he was possessive about me, he scared the crap out of me when he was losing it. He just became a beast. Grandma can back and he taught me how to cook a few Italian dishes, I tried but she was with me the whole time. So nothing went wrong. To be honest I didn't know how to cook, I was a terrible cook. That was why I preferred sandwiches over cooked food. My mind was still dwelling on what Salvatore had said earlier about Christopher. We played a game of chess, I was more of an audience than a player. After all my man took the trophy home for the both of us. We went to sleep around 22:00 pm, grandma was not happy AU's leaving neither was I .

.....

Narrated

It was 5:00 in the morning when grandma woke up Joaquin and Cora to get ready for breakfast which

was going to get served around 6:00 am.

" Salvatore..." Cora called out in frustration. " What, he asked packing his own clothes. " My clothes don't. Fit inside the suitcase" she said through gritted teeth. " How is that my problem. Go and search for black plastic bag or something" he said laughing.

" Are you for really, I told you several times that I didn't want these clothes. It's all your fault, you bought me a lot of clothes and shoes and now they don't fit in here" she said almost whipping like a kid. " This is all my fault, I am spoiling you a lot" he huffed getting out of the room. He came back with a black suitcase later. " Grandma borrow you this, I don't know how you are going to bring it back but she said she will need it within a month" he said dropping it Infront of her." Thanks" she said all jolly smiling face. They had breakfast together, Chris was still there. He dropped them off at the airport because the grandfather said he couldn't see them take off. She was too sad. Their flight took off at 10:30 am..

.....

Salvatore's POV

I drove to Kevin's house immediately when I landed in SA. The driver drove Cora back to the house while I took my yellow Ferrari which was brought by my other driver to the airport. Cora was upset about me leaving her alone just when we landed but I had no choice. Time was running out, I needed to know the plan immediately.

I checked in through the security guard on duty and I was immediately let in. The door was opened for me before I could even knock. " My man" I said as we shoulder hugged. " Kong... Come in" he said closing the door. "What brings you here so late at night" he asked as we were walking towards the sitting room. " I need an updated on the mission. " I said sitting down. " About the website issue, I've deleted most of the videos and photos, there's just a few things left. I thought it was going to be a hard mission but it seems like their I.T guy hasn't picked up the heck in

signal. It was an easy system to crack, I'll be done within a few days" he explained. " About faking Cora's death, since she has a tracking device in her head she needs to be there a few hours before the fire goes off. Cannon has already found the corpse I was looking for. The only thing that is a problem is how are we going to get Cora there. I want here to look like a mess when she walks back then. She must be crying or worse. And I can't find it in me to hurt her like that. I can't tell her about the plan either. So how are the corner of the building, the insurance policy?" I asked stressed out." That's all in order, the only escape plan is by the window. Starting fire should be easy, I noticed that there is a Gus cylinder there, but it is no longer used, I fill it up. All you need to is to get Cora there without her knowing your intentions. Trust me it would be easier that way, otherwise she'd refuse your help...I'd call Dr Davis to be there early to get the tracking device removed from her head. We will be all undercovers." He said. " Great, I'd get going then. I left my woman fuming. Say hi to your wife and junior for me" I said leaving.

I was very nervous about the whole thing, the thing is I had never went on a mission that got me emotionally attached with the subject. I go home around 10:00 pm, I found Cora under the covers, long sleeping. I took a shower,brushed my teeth, wore my boxers and sprayed my Versace Cologne. I got undercovers and cuddled up with her, " good night" I whispered in to her ear. " Good night" she surprisingly murmured softly. I thought she was sleeping. " Are you still angry with me?" I asked softly, she shook her head" no" . " I watched the news today, Nina apologized for insulting me on social media. She said it just you who made us enemies. I don't even know her, how can I be enemies with someone I don't even know?." She said in her sleepy voice. " Don't mind her, I'll deal with her" I said kissing her cheeks. " Go to sleep" I said. Turning off the my side lamp.

.....

I woke up early and went to check on the progress of the hotel since the Nina scandal my client had been threatening to pull out of business. I checked

the CCTV cameras for any suspicious activities and everything was fine except for the fact that the profits of the week was less than the usual. I was driving to the club at 3:00pm when I received a call from Nina. I picked it up" what do you want" I asked calmly. "Salvatore, please—i need a place to stay. My father has kicked me out of the house. I have no where else to go" she whipped. " How is that my problem, don't you have friends or something. You're a working women just figured something out and lose my number" I said and then hung up. And then a thought came into my mind. I called her back. " Where are you right now?" I asked scornfully. " I'm at the hospital, please help me out. I just need a place to stay for the week until I figure something out. " She said crying even more. " Ok, I'll be there by 6:00 pm sharp. Wait for me at the entrance." I said and then hung up. Where people saw a problem, I saw an opportunity. I reached the cub Paradisé 30 minutes later, I checked the CCTV cameras, the profit and the stock. Everything was in order. I made a metal note to go and check out the restaurants and the NGOs on the following day. I passed by my dad's house at

5:00pm... " You are dating high school girls now?. Worse, she is from my school. What rubbish is this Alonzo. You are ruining your image" he shouted furious. "Papa please, she's fully mature. And I love her. She makes me happy. Besides I didn't know she went to school when I met her, I can't control who my heart wants. Please don't judge me" I said calmly. " What about this " Nina" character then. She looks mature and sensible too. Why don't you just marry her plus she's carrying my granddaughter" he said. I couldn't believe that the same person who was not in a serious relationship because he was " hoping" that his soulmate. Who is indeed my mother would come back to him one day. Was talking like that. He was my father, he knew me better than anyone else in this world. " Really dad?, You of all people is saying that. Wow, since your source didn't break it down to you. I'll do you the honors. Nina was my fuck girl, my short term fix when I was searching for my really drug. I happened to find her, Cora. She means the world to me. Just like mother does to you. If you are worried about the fact that she is schooling in your school then I can remove her from

your school immediately." I snapped a bit, I was pissed off. " I'm sorry... It's just that I don't want you to get hurt. Now that I can see how much you love her I know there's no reasoning with you. I hope she feels the same with you because if not, I'll kill her with my own two hands. There's no need to remove her from the school, she was backed up by the teachers when I suggested that. They said she is a genius. What are you planning to do with this Nina character then?" He asked calmly and rational. " I suggested that we bribe her and get her to do abortion but Cora was against the abortion, so it's out of the options and killing her is not an option either since the whole world is watching us. I don't even know wheather the baby is mine or not, I'll just have to do DNA test and see what comes next. " I explained not so confident. " Since you say you used a condom how does she say she got pregnant again?" He asked chuckling. " She said there was a hole in it, I guess it was just her way of trapping me. I think she put a whole on it on purpose.... anyways I have a to get going" I said and then hugged him. He escorted me to the car. " Cora sounds like a good

girl" he said. " What makes you say that?" I asked eyebrows raised. " For her to stop you from making Nina to abort the baby. Nina is her rival, I think it's about time she and I met" he said. " I'll see what I can do, good bye pops" I said then drove off.

..... "You're 30 minutes late, " Nina said as soon as she got in to the car. " Shoot me then" I said and drove off. " I've checked various types of hotels, there's is this one in sandstone, it's much cheaper than the one in bryaniston." She said, " if you think that I'm going to pick you up from the streets and take you to heaven then you clearly don't know me yet" I said with my vivacious smile. " Where are you taking me then?" She asked disappointed. " To my crib" I said shortly. " Isn't that just an irony, you never took me to your place when we were dating and then when we are no longer dating you suddenly feel the urge to take me there" she said as sarcastically as she could be. " I wouldn't call what we had "dating" exactly. It was more of fucking than dating. you were just my fuck girl. Too bad your pussy wasn't that great" I said

chuckling. " How dare you?" She shouted trying to slap me but I held her hand just in time. " No woman hits Kong and get away with it. You really don't want to see that side of me" I said smiling like a psychopath I was. We arrived at the house within an hour. I took her back from the boot and opened up, I didn't see Cora around as we entered. " Cora, baby!..." I called out and she came rushing from the library, I guessed she must've been studying. " Alonzo, where have you-been..." She said freezing on her steps and eyeing Nina. " We have a guest, she'll be staying with us until she gets her own place to stay, Nina meet my girlfriend Cora" I said and then walked to the guest room, which was w upstairs. " Hello nana" I heard Nina saying to Cora like she was a little kid, it pissed me off but I continued on my way up, I couldn't look at Cora.

[6/3, 14:38] Lynne: Page 25

Cora's pov

I felt a little bit dizzy and out of place, so disoriented and confused. She was just standing there, her baby bump not so big, she had a smirk on her face. I felt

so small and stupid, " don't call me that" I huffed and left, she had a sarcastic smile on her face. Salvatore had a lot of shit to explain, I took the staircases. For the first time they felt so long and my legs were failing me. I finally made it to the room and found him taking a bath in the bathroom. " Why is she here?" I asked calmly but mad. " She'll be staying with us from now on, until she finds herself a place to stay. " He said casual like it was a cool think. Something was on about him, the vibe he was carrying. " What happened to where ever she was staying?" I asked arms folded around my chest. " Her father kicked her out, look, I'm tired . I don't have time for all these 21 questions. " He said getting out of the bathtub, I couldn't help but look down his torso and my whole body just heated up. But my mind wasn't there, or so I thought. " Fine then" I said and left him right there, I felt like screaming in pain. Anyways it was his house, I had no right to question the guests he bought home when I myself was a guest. You see I wasn't the kind of woman who felt entitled to their boyfriends properties and stuff. I decided to channel my anger into studying instead,

at least it would have been reproductive. The television was playing as I got downstairs, I guessed she must have been watching television, I went to the library and shut the door. I did some mathematics equations and geography later. I got out after 4hours. Went to the bedroom, Salvatore was not there. He must be watching television with her, I guessed. I got undercovers after taking my headphones and cellphone. My cellphone might have been small and cheap but it played music. I played Rihanna's song- as real as you and me. Keep it on repeat.

There could be a freak accident
There could be a fatal disease
I know we hate to think about it
But this is really as you and me x2
We could all fall down
Before our saviour could return
I know we hate to think about it
But this is really as you and me

If I should go hold my hand

If I should leave, darling company me please....

I played the song until I fell asleep.

..... when I woke up in the morning Salvatore was not in bed, I didn't hear him come to bed either the night before. but his side of the bed was creased which was enough evidence that he slept there, Right?. I took a long shower, I felt so tired and sore. Emotional and physical. I wore my White long lose dress and my sleeper. I decided to apply make up for change, I was not feeling so good in my own skin. I took my phone and went downstairs, I found Salvatore and Nina laughing about something, she was leaning on his chest and he seemed not to mind. They were watching videos on his phone, sitting on the couch. " Good morning" I said " good morning Nana" she said while Salvatore acted like I did not exist. " Good morning Salvatore" I said so mad at him. " Hi Cora" he said and then the bitch just laughed. He didn't seem to be bothered. I went to the kitchen and made myself instant noodles and juice with a heavy heart I

ate up. I Washed the bowl when I was done. " Joaquin, can we talk" I said as I got back to the sitting room. " Sure,speak up" he said casually. " In private" I said shortly. " Cora, Nina is not a stranger so you can comfortably speak in front of her. After all she's the mother of my child" he said, I felt my heart stinging and crushing. " What's going on with you, why are you acting like this. Did I do something wrong, what did I do. Please, whatever it is I'll fix it. " I said suddenly feeling like crying. " Ohh, I hate tears. Please stop it. Go and cry for someone else who actually gives a damn. Why are you acting like a kid, what have I done. " He asked so annoyed. I walked away, not knowing what to do, tears fell down my face as I was ascending slowly up the staircases. " Argh!" I screamed as I closed the bathroom door in our room, if I could even call it that. I called Amanda crying, I didn't know what to do, for the first time I needed someone to talk to, a shoulder to cry on. " Amanda!" I said in a husky voice. " Hey, what's wrong. Don't tell me you're coming down with flu. The school's are opening in a few days. " She said mocking me. I just cried out loud, It would have been

better if I was coming down with flu than what I was going through, I loved Salvatore. When I came to think about it, I love him more than i love myself. " What's wrong Co...are you ok. Why are you crying." She asked worried. " It's Salvatore, he has brought his, his bab-y mom i-n here" I said crying, sliding down the door. " What, but why... Look I'll be there in an hour. Just hang on OK." She said sounding pretty much pissed off. " Just do me a favour , stop crying for goodness sake. She will think you're weak. Wipe off those tears" she snapped. " I wiped them immediately. " Remember when the going gets tough, the tough gets going and you are the toughest. Clean up your face. Put on some make up, if you show your weaknesses you're only giving the bitch a chance to strike. Be strong I'll be there in a few... Ok" she said with furious anger. " Ok... But please don't cause any drama" I begged. " Ok...sharp" he said and then hung up. I decided to take a whole body shower. Blow dried up my hair and straightened them up. They were full blonde and dark brown. I applied make up and pink lipstick. I wore my Nike tracksuits and sneakers. Packed my small stuff and phone in a

my black simple leather purse. Exactly an hour later the doorbell rang, I quickly ran downstairs. " I'll get that" I said running towards the door. I opened up and Amanda got in, she was wearing her Adidas tracksuits and Jordan sneakers. It was a little bit cold, she look pissed. " No drama" I whispered into her ear. " Salvatore" she said in a manner of greetings. " Hi Amanda, how are you doing?" He asked, ok . That was it, he seemed to be all fine with my friend but not me. " Can I borrow Coh go a few hours" she said so girly. I knew from then that she was pretend, she was burning up inside. Amanda was not the kind of daddy's little girl soft type of girl. " Ok, cool" he said politely. " Let me just go and get my bag" I said hurrying upstairs, I came back down with my purse. The Nina bitch had her feets on Salvatore's feets. " You have the house all to yourselves, love birds. See you later" I said before leaving with Amanda.

.....

Salvatore's POV

" Get your dirty little feet off me" I said angrily

pushing her feet down." Babe, what's wrong with you all of a sudden. I thought we had something going down. How about we go to the bathroom and see if you can still get it up." She said getting her hands on me. " Babe? You have no right to call me that, don't get me wrong. You have no idea what I'm playing at. Don't get your little stupid mind twisted" I said leaving her there. She was smiling, like a slut she was. " This is not working, it's hard. Cora has just gone out with her friend. For a minute there i thought she was getting affected, I was getting there. I can't keep up with Nina, she makes me want to vomit, I could just tell Cora everything and got over with." I snapped on a phone call with Kevin. " What's wrong with you, since when are you so weak. If you are going to tell her everything then you might as well tell her that The Don call you, that he knows that you have his girl and he is going to get her within a week's time. Do you think that Cora is going to give you the green light after knowing all that. Don't be stupid boss. She knows exactly what goes down if you betray The Don, you know what will happen if you tell her everything. She is just going to go back

to the prostitution thing and trust me you will never see her again. The Don is going to make sure of that. Worse he could just auction her, this is necessary just channel The Kong." He said scornfully. " I can't do that with Cora!" I exclaimed. " It's either the high way or The Don's way. Your choice" he said. " Ok, fine" I said hanging up. I kept on walking up and down in my office. Last night when I came to bed I found my Cora was playing sad music on her phone. She had tears on her face, I hated what I was doing but then I realized that I had no choice but to do the things I was doing. The Don had shockingly called me, he had seen the news about Cora, Nina and I. The devil was laughing at me, he had the upper card. But not for so long, I thought to myself. " Follow her" I said calling my bodyguards. " Make sure she comes home safe" I added. " Yes sir" he said. I decided to go to work.

[6/3, 14:39] Lynne: Page 26

Narrated

Cora and Amanda stayed in the mall until it was later, Amanda's driver drove her to Salvatore's house around 7:00pm. She rang the gate bell a couple of times before the security opened up for her, Amanda dropped her at the gate, they said good bye and she walked up to the house. There was a loud music playing. She found Nina and Salvatore dancing, she was more of twerking than dancing. She passed them by and went to the bathroom to take a shower. She showered, dried up and wore her white lacy edges Pyjama shorts and a gown. She went back downstairs and filled up a bowl with snacks, went to the library to study. She really tried but the music was too loud. " Can you turn down the volume a bit, some of us are trying to study" she screamed so that they could study. " Babe, Nana is talking" she screamed in to Salvatore's ear. " Babe?, Really. What the fuck" she shouted unplugging the radio cables from the socket. " What do you think you are doing, plug in those cables you Little cunt " she said. " Are you going to let her insult me like this, Salvatore, are you just going to watch" Cora asked unbelievably. Salvatore raised his hands up in a manner that said"

nop, I'm not getting involved" . " Hey little bitch, didn't you hear me. I said plug in those cables. What do you expect him to say, I'm carrying his first son after all" Nina said spiteful. The next thing she knew, Cora was on top of her, giving her a few slaps. And then Salvatore removed her and threw her on the couch. " What do you think you are doing, she is pregnant for goodness sake" he shouted at the crying Cora. She couldn't believe what was going on, she blinked away the tears a couple of times.

Thinking that I might have been her imagination or a dream of some sort. But no, it wasn't. Reality hit her when he carried Nina into the guest room, while he was busy asking her if she was alright . She was left on the couch, tears streaming down. Her world shuttered just like that, with just a blink of an eye everything was ruined. She knew she had lost and there was nothing she could do about it. She carried her defeated body upstairs. Took an extra shirt and found herself sleeping on the couch. Emotionally she was drained, physically she was tired, mentally she was confused and spiritually she was bleeding. She woke up once again after remembering that she

hadn't taken her pills. She took them and went back to the couch, the pills took their toll on her and she drifted off to sleep.

.....

She woke up early in the morning, saw Salvatore still sleeping. She decided to take an hour of jogging. She came back and found him taking a bath, she took a shower without even greeting him. " What you did last night was cruel, how could you be so heartless. You know that she is pregnant. What's wrong with you all of a sudden" Salvatore finally said while he was moisturizing his body and Cora was wrapping a towel around her body. " So now I'm suddenly cruel, huh. It's fun how I'm the one who's hurting but you are the who's complaining. You didn't even want this baby to begin with and then suddenly you feel like a daddy, wow" she said and then left the bathroom went to the walk in closet. She choose her pink long pencil skirt and black vest and wore her stylish sandals. " What does that even mean, don't you regret what you did. Not even a little bit?. Why are you acting like this?" He attacked her with

questions, for a moment there she started to think that maybe she was the crazy one. Maybe she was really acting bitterly cold and strange, maybe she was childish and immature. " Please, just leave me alone." She begged calmly. She wore her clothes along with white undergarments. " You are really twisted, what was the need to unplug the cable. You could have asked so nicely. We were just innocently dancing, there was no need for you to be so dragon Ball on us. You really act strange sometimes, for a moment there I thought you have gone crazy." He said like it was no body's business. Cora couldn't believe her ears. " Wow, just wow. You know what I'm not going to give you the satisfaction. I am not going to try and prove my mental stability to you. Cause you'll think I am absolutely crazy." She said leaving him in the closet. She applied powder coating where Nina had scratched her face when they were fighting. She collected her dirty clothes and went to the laundry room to wash them up. She spotted aunt Mary cleaning up the house zone she remembered that it was a Wednesday. She packaged her clothes after she washed and dried

them up. Went back to fold them and pack them up. She made a metal note to iron them up in the afternoon, Salvatore had aunt Mary to do his laundry so she didn't even bother looking for it. She decided to go to the kitchen to make herself breakfast and boom she found Salvatore and Nina kissing, she didn't know wheather she should scream or just turn back on her hills and pretend as if he didn't see what was going on. But then again her heart reacted first not giving her mind a chance to think. "Joaquin, what are you doing... what rubbish is this. What are you doing. What is this... why?" She asked almost in tears, heart aching. Head aching. " Ohh, Nana. What does it look like to you" Nina answered first. She wiped the red lipstick from Salvatore's lips. " I'm not talking to you bitch... I'll fucking kill you" she said charging for Nina but Salvatore held her just in time. " Cora, behave Yourself. Have you been taking your pills lately?" he snapped. " Let me down, Salvatore. Fucking let go of me" she cursed trying to get out of his grip. But she was no match for his masculine arms. He let her down after what felt like the whole year to Cora. He made sure to stand between them. "

Salvatore, you are cheating on me, with, with her. Her of all people, why are you doing this to me" she asked crying. She was about to slide down to her feet when she noticed something. " Is that my dress?, she is fucking wearing my dress" she cursed getting up on her two feet. " Her clothes are dirty so I borrowed her that one. " He said sighing. " My dress?, You had no right!" She cried out. " Come on, it's not like she ruined it or something. It's just a dress" he said annoyed. " My first date dress, that was my special dress... I hate you Salvatore. I hate to, I wish I had never met you. Fuck you, you Little piece of shit. I hate you with my whole fucking frozen heart" she cursed hitting his chest, she kept on hitting him until she got tired. She slide down on her knees. " So much drama... Babe, let's go out shall we" Nina said. " Let's go" Salvatore said taking Nina's hand. Cora heard the sound of the car fading away from the house. She picked herself up and went to their bedroom, looked herself in the mirror. " You are beautiful, ok. You look perfect. You are going to get through this...."..." who are you kidding...you are just a prostitute, the one who was raped by her own

father at the age of 13 , you are just a loose whore who have slept with a hundreds of men. You are just a slut of an orphan, what do you think he sees in you. You are nothing, there's nothing interesting about you, nothing good. You are a walking.." the evil voice inside of her kept on saying. She shook her head like crazy, she held it both sides. "Shut up.No, no, no, no. You are not crazy, You are not crazy. No, no. You are beautiful. You are great. just shut up!" She screamed and then hit the mirrors, leaving her hands with a couple of injuries, some tiny mirror glasses inside her flesh. Something told her to go and take her pills. She took them with shaking hands, one hand was bleeding uncontrollable. Fortunately she took the recommended amount of pills. She kept on walking up and down until she fell down, lights out.

.....

Cora's pov

I opened up my eyes, It was a little bit dark. My spinal cord was in pain, I could feel the cold hard

tiles I was lying on. My left hand was numb, I looked up to it and I saw a pool of blood around it. I sat up with a lot of difficulty, I later on stood up, feeling a little bit dizzy. Memories came rushing into my head as I said the word " lights on" . The lights were now on. I remembered everything, I went to the bathroom and ran cold water on my hand, it was like pouring gasoline on the already blazing fire. I yanked it off," ouch" I cried out. I wrapped it up in a towel, searched for my phone and called a cab, I searched for my purse and found a couple of 50 rands note. 30 minutes later I went to the gate and the security opened the gate for me. I had my books, phone and purse with me only. I couldn't carry my clothes since my whole body was in pain. Plus I had brought a couple of clothes there, most of them were bought by Salvatore and I didn't want them anymore, I wanted nothing to do with him. The cab dropped me off at the gate, I paid the driver who seemed to be more interested in my injuries than his 50 rand note. " Hey, Cora . Is that you" Smanga asked as I was trying to open up the gate to the building. " Hey , it's me" I said so ashamed, try to hide my hand from him,

but it was too late. " What happened to your hand, you're bleeding. Let me have a look" he said looking so worried. " Ouch, I'm fine. Could you please open up the gate for me" I said yanking it from his grip. He opened up the gate, looking at me the whole time. " Are you sure, you're ok. Even your face has a scratch. I'm coming up with you" he said concerned. " You don't have to act like you give a shit, I said I'm fine. Just leave me alone" I said entering into the yards. . I left him standing there in shock. I regretted it a bit but I hated males to the point where I took out my frustrations to the wrong one. I wished I could hate Salvatore just as much. I finally opened up the door, it was so dark. I missed my apartment and it reciprocated the same feeling. I closed the door and switched on the light. " Jesus Christ, help!" I screamed , there were Three men in my room and one corpse on the floor. one of

them just to my side and put a white cloth on my nose. I felt dizzy and nauseous and then lights out

[6/3, 14:39] Lynne: Continuing

Narrated

Roses are red violets are blue and the world those not always favour us in the best way. Sometimes you gotta step into thorns and rough rocks to get to Your final destination. For most of us the world is not so forgiving. You can't have your cake and eat it, some of use have to strive to get happiness in the end, we sometimes end up not finding it but with hope and faith we keep on searching. From my perspective someone of us were just not meant to be happy or else how would we know the difference between happiness and sadness if we're all happy. Just like Cora, happiness never found her, it's like she was cursed with pain and suffering from the day she was created. But she never gave up on life, she had several reasons to live, like being successful, finally letting go of the past, like meeting her young siblings, getting out of the life she was leaving. Have you ever wondered why she decided to call herself starlight on that line of business, well take a star and night and then glance back at her and the life she was living. Stars never shine in light places that why we only see them in the night, she was like a shining star in the cave of darkness. No matter how hard life

became, she kept on shining. She wore a smile with pride and prejudice against the cruel world.... She was lying on Salvatore's bed, her pulse beating so faintly. It had been 48 hours since she was knocked out. She had a drip inserted into her pale tiny arm. The heart beat monitor kept on beating up steadily. Salvatore was sitting beside her on the bed, tears streaming down his face. He was holding her hand, like he has been doing for the past 48 hours. " I'm sorry, I'm so sorry my love" he cried out in a husky voice. " I'm so sorry, please find it in your heart to forgive me. Just one more time. I know I've been giving you nothing but pain. Please wake up. If not for me then please do it for yourself, so that you could finish your matric examinations, go to university. Wear that white coat that you've always dreamed of. Do it for Connie and Charles, I'm sure that one day they'll be happy to see you. Please wake up Cora" he begged crying. " I promise, I'm never going to bother you again. I'll let you be, just wake up. You can't leave me too. You can't, please don't leave me" he cried out loud, his lungs hurt, he hadn't eaten something ever since they completed

their mission, the job was clean and done. They had also managed to keep the media out of it, the fire fighters were called in time. So only Cora's apartment was burned and a body was found, the body was still unidentified but Salvatore made sure that doctor Davis planted the tracking device in the corpse's head. So that The Don could buy that Cora was dead

.....

Cora's pov

My eyes felt so heavy, my body so fatigue and sore. My throat was dry and painful, I tried to open up my eyes once again, blinked a couple of times. I finally opened them up. The lights making my vision so blur, I looked around and figured that I was back at Salvatore's house, the last place I wanted to be. I felt a hand holding mine, it was his. He was sleeping on my side me I tried to sit up but ended up hurting myself in the process, ended up waking him up. " Hey, you're awake. Thank God you are awake. I thought I had lost you" he said tears streaming down his face. His eyes were red and swollen. He looked

like a hot mess. I was still confused as to how I got there, my throat was still dry. " Water" that was the first word that came out of my mouth. " You want to have water... I'll go I get You water" he said looking so happy. I had a lot of questions that I needed answers to. I suddenly panicked when I remembered the things I had endured. He came back with a tray with a jug a glass of water on it. He put it on the headboard stand and poured me a glass of water. " The doctor will be here in a few minutes, are you ok?" He asked. He had the nerve to ask me that shit after all he had put me through. I stared at him for a few seconds, my emotions were mixed. I hated him and loved him. I wanted him out of my life and site, but something inside me drew me in. I saw anger, hurt and guilt in his eyes but I also saw; love,affection and care. Worry and stress not forgetting panic. I gave him the empty glass and he put it on the tray. " I'm sorry, so sorry for the pain I've caused you. It wasn't my intention, I went overboard . I'm sorry please forgive me" he said kissing me hand a couple of times. My other left hand was bandaged, I remembered exactly what happened to it. I had

elastic band somewhere on my forehead and that wasn't his fault either but the bruises in my heart, that was all him. The glimpse of hatred in my heart well he created that. The painful memory in my mind well that was all him. I could still remember Nina's laughter echoing in my head, the kiss they shared had left it stains on my mind. The fear he instigated in my soul when he covered my mouth with that white cloth, well I was so sure it was him because if it wasn't I wouldn't have ended up on his bed. " What have you done to me, which day is it" I asked in a husky voice, my oesophagus was in pain. He explained everything, I mean everything. The plan to rescue me without my knowledge. The pretense with Nina so that I could go to my apartment all wracked up hopefully that someone would notice me so that when the room gets burned. so It may seem like suicide. Yes if he had told me about this plan earlier I wouldn't have agreed, cause now I had to live in fear that The Don might find me. I had to live in dark shadows in day light. I had to always glance at my back whenever I was out there. " For how long have I been unconscious?" I asked once again. "It's been

48hours" he said, just then the doctor arrived. He made a check up on me, removed the drip and heart monitor, changed my bandage and removed the elastic band on my forehead, because the scare had healed plus it was just a minor scar. He gave me capsules for the pain and recommend that I see a therapist after discovering how I hurt my hand. He left after an hour later, said I should be fine within a few hours. I sat up straight and tried to stand up to go to the bathroom, I fell back on bed. Salvatore rushed to my side, trying to help me. " Don't, don't please" I said signalling with my hand that he should just stay away from me. I managed to get to the bathroom, showered and came out wrapped in a towel. I went to the closet and searched for my long warm Pyjamas and sleepers. My skin felt so dry and I didn't feel like moisturizing it. I found Salvatore still sitting on the same position I left him in. " Where are my books or did you burn them up too." I asked so calmly. " They are in the library, your album is there too. " He said. I had forgotten about the album. " I'm going to watch television" I said walking out. " Cora the doctor said that you should rest. Please just get

back to bed, I'll get out of the room if that's what you want" he pleaded. " Ohh yeah?, Could you also do me a favour. Get out of my life too... You can't do that now, can you?" I asked after seeing the look in his eyes. " I'll help you get down the staircases" he said taking it like a man. I didn't argue that because I really needed help, or else I could have fallen down the stairs. He helped me sit down, put the pillow on my back. " Is there anything else I can help you with" he asked. I shook my head " no". He gave me the remote controller. I watched my favorite shows, the housewives of Atlanta. After that there was nothing else to watch, I was suddenly feeling sleepy. I dozed off on the couch and woke up in bed the following morning. Salvatore was sleeping on the couch, he must have figured that I hated his presence.

.....

Narrated

Cora took a bath, her body felt great again, she felt

fully recovered. She washed the bathtub after she was done, wore her boyfriend's jeans and a white t-shirt with "not pain no gain" in bold text. She wore her pink 2-inch heels. Tried to fix her hair but failed miserably because she officially had one hand on duty. She left her hair all messy. Packed all of her clothes, including the ones that Salvatore bought for her in his grandmother's suitcase. She went to put the suitcase downstairs and searched for her backpack in the library, there were extra books out of it. She packaged them in and zipped up. Found her purse, phone and photo album there. She packaged the photo album in the suitcase. Went to the kitchen and made herself cornflakes with bananas and crunches, Salvatore came in while she was eating. "Good morning" he said with a tender heart. "I'm leaving" she said, said standing up before she could even finish eating. "What do you mean by that, what do you mean you're leaving. Where are you going?, Are you breaking up with me" He asked so fast, he was suddenly feeling sick, heart beating so fast, waiting impatiently for the answer but at the same time wishing it would just delay. "I'm going to Amanda's, I

can't continue to stay here with you. I don't think I'll be able to forgive you for what you've done. I know that you had good intentions Bt I can't find it in my heart to forgive you." She said so bravely. " You're leaving me, you're breaking up with me. After all we been through, I've done so much for you, Cora I'm sorry. I'm truly sorry, I wish that I could turn back the sands of time. So that I could try to find another way to handle the situation but I can't. Cora please don't leave me, I love you" he said holding her hand and trying by all means to be strong and courageous enough to handle the reality that was staring him on the face. " I know that you love me, I do too. God knows how much I love you. But I can't look you in the face and pretend like everything is going to be ok, when I know it's not. I can't stand the site of you, moving in here with you was just too fast, yes I know the circumstances under which I moved in here but still. Everything just happened so fast that I couldn't wrap my finger around them, me meeting your family members was just too much, we rush things. It's only been three months but a lot has happened. Yes I had an amazing time with you, you're my home

Salvatore but sometimes we just have to leave home in order to discover our true selves. I had an amazing time with your family members, but I gotta go. Live for myself, find myself. Heal, how can we heal together when we're both broken, how can we fix each other. You gotta let me go, we will see what happens next. With time, if we were meant for each other then we will always find a way to each other. You have to let me go, please" she said tears streaming down her cheeks, he hugged her so tightly. They were both in tears, he might have been a ruthless and cruel man in the eyes of the world but to her he was just another broken soul that needed saving, he was just an ordinary man and he behaved like one when he was with her. To her he was her hero, with him she felt the sense of belonging, she might have never known what a home felt like but to her, he felt like home. They held each other for a long time before he let go " you can't leave on your own, it's risky. If you are going to leave me the least I could do is make sure that you are ok. I'll appoint two of my best bodyguards to protect you all the time. There's no arguing about it. I'm not going to lead you to

danger and then abandon you there." He said wiping away his tears and making a phone call. She didn't oppose him in anyway, she was scared for her life too. " A car will be here in a few minutes, the bodyguards will protect you 24hours without you knowing, they will always be close enough to know your every move. It's the best way, if they are seen with you it will draw you unwanted attention and we don't want that. " He explained after the phone call. She nodded, heart sinking... The black SUV car arrived 30 minutes later. There was a driver only there, Salvatore packed Cora's bags in the back, he opened the door for her and she entered. " Non voglio che mi Veda...Quoi? Souviens-toi juste que he t' aime. Quoi qu'il se passe, je t' aime. " (I don't want you to go... just remember that I love you. What ever happens, I love you). He said in Italian, forgetting the fact that Cora didn't speak nor did she understand Italian. But she read the sadness and love in his eyes that all that was important. He closed the door and the driver drove off.

.....

Cora's pov.

It has been two months and a month of not seeing Salvatore. The final examinations were over, it was nearly Christmas and Amanda's parents were to come home. Salvatore kept on coming to see me on the first month that I had left and then he finally gave up. Yes, I had told the security to not let him in but he had his shady ways, he was Salvatore after all. Nothing much has happened, except that I attended every Sunday service. Prayed every morning and evening. Amanda would sometimes accompany me to church but she was not so keen on getting saved by our Lord Jesus Christ.

Here I'm, down on my knees again.

Surrendering it all, surrendering it all.

And find me here lord as you draw me near.
desperate for you, I'm desperate for you.

I surrender.

Drench my soul as mercy and grace unfold.

I hunger and thirst x2

With arms stretched wide

I know you hear my cry

Speak to me now x2

I surrender

I surrender

I wanna know you more x 2

I surrender

I surrender

I wanna know you more x2

Like a rushing wind

Jesus breath within

Lord have your wayx2 in me.... We sang in the
church of God.

Yes I was in the church of God spiritual but
something was missing. I had come to surrender all
my sins to my creator but I couldn't give the whole of
me as I was supposed to, something was missing. I
knew I wouldn't find it there but still I searched for it.

At least I felt peace whenever I was in church, my demons got chained. I was asking for a heart to forgive.

[6/3, 14:41] Lynne: Page 27

Narrated.

" Auntie, please. This is so skimpy" she said laughing. It was the 31st of December in the evening and Amanda's mom was making Cora to wear one of Amanda's short bum shorts. " Come on Cora, It's not that short, plus you've got a great body. Why do you always hide it under those long dresses or pants." She asked already drained. " My clothes are not that long." She said, not so convinced herself. " Who are you trying to convince , me or you?" She asked eyebrows raised. " Ok fine, they're not that long, I'll have to go with the jumpsuit" she said. " Finally!" She exclaimed sighing softly. " Ok, girls get ready. We're leaving in a an hour's time." She said leaving Amanda's room. " Finally, i got you to myself" Amanda said in relief. " Your mother is such a

control freak, I s always like that" Cora asked throwing herself in bed. " At least I'm off the hook, she has got herself a new puppet... She still thinks that we're are kids who needs to be nursed. If I had a chance I'd be heating up the club right now. "

Amanda said dramatically annoyed. " Come on, she's not that bad. Besides you're hardly 18 to be heating the club" Cora said giggling. Then the room was filled with silence. Amanda's parents treated Cora like she was one of their own kid. After hearing the story of her apartment, which was not wholly told by the way. They let her in, she told them that she had an auntie who lived overseas and her parents were no more. Just like she had told Amanda, even though she was tired of telling lies. She had no other option. " I must say that I kinda feel bad, You got both my parents attention and I am just watching on the side lines." Amanda said dramatically jealousy and hurt. " Come on, jealousy doesn't surprise suit you" Cora said giggling. " Whatever man, I'll just have to divorce you" she said thoughtfully. " Hello, we're not married" Cora said giggling even more. " I'll just have to disown you then" she said. " I'm not your kid

either" Cora said laughing out loud. " I'm just have to kill you then" she said." Not if I kill you first" Cora giggling and Amanda ended up giggling along but the stop upon realising something. She gave Cora a weird look. " What" Cora asked, eyebrows. " That line, those exact words you just said. They are not yours, they belong to Salvatore" she said step by step. " Whatever man" Cora said giggling a bit and rolling her eyes. Like she didn't budge, but her whole body had froze upon hearing his name." You miss him don't you" Amanda said. " How does it matter now, I don't even want to talk about him" she said fidgeting with her fingers. " It matters, you might be laughing but your smile doesn't reach your eyes. You are not fully happy, you don't talk too much these days. I'm sorry to say but going to church is not going to solve your problems. All I want is to see you happy, I want my Cora back, your happiness lies within him. I think it's about time that you two got back together again" she said. " Amanda, I know you mean well but I don't need a man to be happy. I am happy, I'm fine really" she said faking a smile. " We both know that that's bullshit. The ' oh I don't need a

man to be happy' line. That's rubbish, we all need someone, we all need love. We all want to be loved. Worse for you, cause you've already felt how it's feels and trust me my sister once you go black you never turn back. I'm not forcing you to do anything but please just think about it" Amanda said solemnly. " Since when are you Dr Phil" Cora asked. " Did I sound that genius" she asked blushing. " Kinda" Cora said smiling. " Let's go get ready before auntie whips us" she said. " I'm taking the shower" Cora said fastly. " Argh!, Mom. She's at it again... But Coh. You're not being fair, believe me you, I'm really considering killing you" Amanda exclaimed sulking.

.....

Cora's pov

It was first semester in the university of Johannesburg, I had registered and yes I got the harmonic Paradise bursary. I lived a few Streets away from the university, the harmonic Paradise foundation had a building there. I had moved in

yesterday. I was supposed to have a room mate but she hadn't moved in yet. The apartment we were sharing had two small bedrooms and one bathroom, a sitting room which was combined with the kitchen. I was fully furnished, it was nothing fancy but it was better than living in campus. The building had 30 floors. Each floor had 3 apartments, I was finally a gynaecologist student. Amanda, well Amanda was going to be doing a degree in physiotherapy clinic. It was her 4th choice but she was still happy. It was February the 5th, I didn't get the chance to unpack my clothes yesterday so I was doing just that after my classes were finished, there was a small Waldrop in my room. I unpacked, just when I was finishing up the doorbell rang. I went to open up and there was a girl... I was not so sure if it was a girl or a boy. She had piercings on her lips and nose. Tattoos all over her arms. " She was black but beautiful, I mean really beautiful. " You must be Cora" she said letting herself in, she had two sport bags with her. " And you must be..." I said waiting for her to introduce herself. " Ohh where are my manners, I'm Lethukuthula Mwali but you can just call me Thula...

I must say, I wasn't really expecting this hotness in here. Damn you've got a bright future behind you" she said holding my hand and kissing it, I smiled weirdly. " I'm Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo but I guess you already know that... So you are my roommate" I said closing the door behind me. " I can be more than that if you want" she said with a smile, she had dimples I noticed. " I'm just gonna go finish unpacking, I'm pleased to know you...leatu" I said in my weird accent. I couldn't pronounce the name properly. she just laughed at me flatly. I finished unpacking, searched for the list of books I needed to buy and my HP students shopping card. I decided to go shop for the books, I needed to get started on studying early.

.....

It was a friday and I was like huh, finally. University played with no child, " you're coming all right" Lethu asked, yeah I finally learned to pronounce her name properly, she was a second year student, doing the same course as I was. " Where?" I asked indulging in my junk food. " Don't tell me you forget the fresher's

welcome party." She said tapping his foot down, yeah she usually did that when she was upset about something. By the way she was a 22 year old lesbian. " Ohh that, I thought about that and I don't think I'm going to be coming. I'm tired, I've been having back to back classes. " I said ignoring her tapping foot, she was wearing black male jeans, white sneakers and the t-shirt. Along with a cap. " You are not going to do this with me, Lethu doesn't get turned down. I've already told my friends about, just get your ass ready" she said already pushing me towards the bathroom. " But Lethu, why don't you ask one of your girlfriends" I said trying to protesting but she was persistent, she was like a pain on my ass. I ended up getting dressed in my black simple jeans, high hills boots. A vest and my brown thigh length overcoat. Tied my hair in to a neat straight up pony tail. I got out of the room. " Ohh baby.... You look hot on another level. Let's go, I'm so eager to show you off" she said spanking my ass, " hey, don't do. I'm not yours to show me off neither am I your girlfriend" I said seriously. " Only time will tell" she said as we got out of the apartment.

.....

To be continued...

[6/3, 14:41] Lynne: Continuing...

Salvatore's pov

" She is at the party" Simian said on the mobile. " Alone?" I asked running my hands on her big framed picture. " With the same girl she stays with. " He said. " Ok, follow her every move, make sure she is safe. And yeah call me if you notice something that wouldn't please me" I said then hung up. It has been almost three months since Cora left, two months since I last saw her except for seeing here in the pictures that Simian and Dumisani keep on sending me. I've not gotten used to the cold shirts and lonely nights. The first month I thought I'd die, if not for Kevin I maybe I would have lost my mind. I used to drink till morning and I would sometimes drive to where Cora lived just to apologize but she would chase me away. Saying things like I'm drunk or what not. I've been living with her memory since then, I've

been a workerholic lately. What pained me the most was that she looked happier without me, one of the reasons I was not so keen on approaching her or maybe I was just afraid that I might hurt her. I've come to the conclusion that I break everything I touched. Just like the day Kylie died, I begged to take her out, it was her birthday after all. Our parents had warned us not to go out. There was a war between the west and the East gang members. Anyways I looked at her photos from the beginning one more time, I had photo albums of her pictures. I swear didn't know obsession until I met her. My phone rang, it was Nina. " What do you want, this late in the night" I asked annoyed. I had cut all the acting bullshit with Nina the day our mission was complete. She stayed in a flat somewhere in the city since her parents wanted nothing to do with her. " Is that the way to talk to your baby mama" she asked so bitchy. " Until the DNA tests are done and it is proven that the baby is mine please don't give yourself the baby mama title. What do you want" i asked one more time. " I'm craving for ice cream, can you buy me one on your way here" she said. " on my way there?, I

wonder what you see when you look at the mirror.
Please if you have nothing else to say, don't call this
number. " I said hanging up.

.....

Cora's pov

" Come on, just one glass" she said, her whole lot of friends were now looking at me. Like I was some cheesy good, daddy's little girl. " Ok, just. One" I said taking the little glass of shot which burned my chest by the way. There were hundreds of students there, it was like an open ground, people came with their braaing stands and meat along with booze. There was a Dj, music was blasting. Most of the students were wearing t-shirt of the student's president of the university. I didn't know most of the songs that were playing, all I knew was that the music was loud. Some people were kissing, I felt out of place. Lethu has introduced me to her interracial friends. They were mixed genders, I could not remember most of them but there was Samantha— the slay Queen and

her cute boyfriend who wore glasses. There was Ayah and Luvuyo the lesbitch couple. Amanda and Andile the singles. The rest I couldn't remember. I can't remember when I had another glass of shot but the next thing I knew I was drunk and sitting on Lethu's lap who didn't seem to mind. She was sitting on a camp chair with a bottle of brutal 8 as they called it. " You guys look good together, but yoooh Sam you must loosen up on the make-up. From where I'm standing you look like a monkey" I said then held my mouth, but I later on giggled. I was really drunk.they all laughed " Thula, hold your bitch please" Sam said angry . " Come on Sam, monkeys are cute... yeah, I'll call you monkey face from now on. Monkey face" I said teasing her, then laughed again. " Shut up bitch" she screamed charging for me. But Lethu stood up just in time, held her, making me fall on my butt in the process. " Come on man, don't you see that she's wasted" he said calming her down. She went back and sat on her boyfriend lap. I was buy checking my overcoat which now had dust, dirt and grass. " Ahhah!, My jacket, look what you've done to my jacket." I said

whipping while I was still sitting down on the grass. " It's ok, it's just a jacket" Lethu said picking me up. " My jacket, no It's not ok. My Kong bought me this jacket... it's a, it's a Louis Vuitton jacket. My jacket, ahhh, mhh." I said crying, so upset. " If she has a Louis Vuitton jacket then I have a Versace handbag and channel perfume and saint Laurent watch" Sam said bursting with laughter, they all laughed at me. " I'll show you" I said standing up, trying to take it off but I was stumbling around. " It's ok, you don't have to prove anything to anyone Cora" Lethu said trying to pull me back to her lap. " No, leave me. I'll show you" I said then finally managed to take it off. I threw it at sam, who read the label and gagged. " Let me see" Ayah said and it was passed around. " So what do you say now. Mo- monkey face" I said stuttering. " It could be all fake for all I know" she said egotistically. " Whatever monkey face, that's really" I said giggling. I was suddenly attacked by a hiccup. Lethu made me drink brutal 8 even though I was asking for water. I drank up and the hiccup was driven away.

.....

Everybody was dancing, some were kissing. Right Infront of me. I found myself grabbing Lethu and kissing her. she was a good kisser, I must give it to her. I had thought that kissing a girl was way different than kissing a boy, but to my disappointment. Lips are just lips. Moments later we were dancing, her hands on my waist and my hands around her neck. And then somebody grabbed me by my arm. " What are you doing" I said stumbling. " Taking you home" a voice said. Ohh shit that voice, The voice, my whole body just froze. Butterflies on my tummy, adrenaline rush. Heart thundering. " Come on man, can't you see that we're dancing" Lethu said pushing him. In my head I was like;" wrong move my girlfriend" . " You! Wha-whatudoinghere" I said in a drunken state. He still had his hand on my arm. He had his other hand on Lethu's throat. " I'll will spare you because you are a woman" he said. In my head I was like; " come on my man, you call that sparing. She can't even breath" . Lethu's feet were not touching the ground. " Come

on man" one of the guys said approaching Salvatore. Then next I knew a gun was retrieved and pointed at the guy. Lethu was dropped down, she was busy nursing her throat. " You saying something?" He asked, so scary. In my head I was like. " You should've asked Smanga for tips before getting involved" . " Sorry my man" he said taking steps backwards and hands up. " Let's go" he said dragging me but I was stumbling. He carried me on his shoulder. " Joaquin wait" i said hitting his back. " My Louis Vuitton jacket" I screamed. " Where is it" he asked turning around to face the guys. Sam brought it to me without saying word. " monkey face trying to steal my jacket" I said giggling.

.....

He got me into the passenger side of his silver latest Austin Martin. He buckled me up and got in too buckled up. " You're kissing girls now, huh" he asked driving off in full speed. " She's such a good kisser" I said giggling. " Joaquin, I have something that I want to confess." I said almost in tears. " What is it" he asked jaws clenched, fists fixed so roughly on the

steering wheel. " Promise me that you won't get mad at me" I said so childish. " Spit it out Cora" he snapped. " I got the jacket dirty, I am sorry" I apologized. " You're clearly high, you deserve a cold shower. You smell like brewery" he said angry. " The least your girlfriend could have done is buy expensive liquor if she was planning on getting you drunk" he said. " Yeah, the booze was so bitter. It made me horny too" I said. He just giggled

..... unedited, I'm feeling sleepy

[6/3, 14:41] Lynne: Page 28

Narrated

Cora opened up her eyes slightly, her head pounding. She finally managed to open them fully. She realized that she was in Salvatore's room. With panic she jumped out of bed. Her head hurt even more, she suddenly felt like puking, rushed to the bathroom and puked into the toilet seat. It was like her intestines wanted to come out too. She suddenly felt

sick. She was kneeling Infront of the toilet seat, she puked once again. Went over to the basin and washed her mouth and face.s he realized that she was in his huge t-shirt. She came out of the bathroom, leaning on the walls. " Yeah, that's what happens when you decided to have just one glass of shot and then another and then the whole bottle." Salvatore said sarcastically. He was steering some green liquid in a glass. Cora was leaning on the wall of the bathroom. " I didn't know that you also played for the other team" he said chuckling unbelievably. " You're kissing woman now Cora,huh?" He asked. " It's non of your business" she murmured softly, eyes closed. " What did you just say" he asked charging for her in anger. By looking at his face she knew better than to repeat her words. " Why do you have to speak so loudly, my head is spinning already" she said, hands on her forehead. " Have this" he said forcing something in to her hands. " Im not having this, it stinks" she said after sniffing it. " My love, you will have it or would you prefer it if it forced it down your throat" he said with a fake smile. " No, I'll have it myself" she said fastly. She shut her nostrils with her

thumbs and drank up. It was so bitter that after she was done she wiped out her tongue with the back of her hand. " That's my girl" he said with a little smirk and went to the bathroom. He had just came from jogging. Cora threw herself in bed and fell asleep. She was woken up later with a bucket of cold water. " Shit, what the fuck. What are you doing" she cursed jumping out of bed, " university is waiting for you" he said standing far from her. " Argh, I hate you Salvatore" she said marching in to the bathroom." At least you feel something for me" he called out after her. She came back again. " Where are my clothes, and who gave you the right to change my clothes" she asked fuming. " Do I look like a laundry man to you" he asked. " How am I supposed to get to varsity then. Am I supposed to go there naked" she asked. " I have no idea" he said hands raised up. Cora was defeated and just tired of the silly argument that lead to nowhere. She walked over to the wet bed and set down." What's your problem Salvatore?" She asked taking a deep breath, looking him straight in the eyes. " Ohh, I have plenty of those lately, it's not just one but many. But I'll start with the latest. I have

a problem with you kissing other women, why did you do it. was it some kind of revenge. i have a problem with you getting drunk in an unsafe place. Do you know how many girls get sexually abused in those kind of parties. " He snapped. " Can you please drive me to my apartment" she said calmly and looking down on the floor. " Aren't you going to say something" he asked unbelievably. " What do you want me to say, I kissed her. I was drunk. Do I have to kneel down and apologies. I don't owe nobody an apology. Why am I even explaining myself to you, we are no longer together" she shouted. " Ohh wow, that's more like you. The last time I checked we never broke up. You decided you needed a break from my toxic life. You know you were right about one thing. You always tend to run away from the things that hurt you. But for how long will you keep on running. " He snapped. " You have no right Salvatore, you have no right to judge me. Where were you for the past two months, where were you when I needed you. You abandoned me and now that I'm starting to see the bright side of the Moon you decided to show up. Do you know how much I've

missed you. All I had of you was just a memory and useless dreams. Why didn't you come and find me like you always did" she shouted crying. Salvatore was just standing there dumbfounded, he seemed to be battling with his own demons. Tears were forming in his eyes but he wouldn't let them fall, he stayed strong like a man should. Cora kept on crying, he walked up and sat on the wet bed, beside her. " I couldn't find it in me to come and get you, you looked happier without me. You were doing just fine. I couldn't be the reason for your tears anymore, look at you. You're crying even now. It's all my fault I shouldn't have come there but my jealous took the best of me. " He said running hands through his hair, " what do you mean I look happier, have you been spying on me" she asked wiping away her tears. " Something like that, remember i assigned two of my bodyguards to protect you, I kind of asked them to click a few pictures of you" he said sighing. " They're right there" he said pointing the headboard stand shelves. Cora opened up and found two photo albums. She retrieved them and went through them.

.....

" This is like my whole life for the past two months, so many pictures. But couldn't you have come around just to say hi and pass by. You call these smiles and laughter happiness?, How would you know that I was happy without looking into my eyes. There were many times that I thought of blowing up your phone or showing up uninvited but I was afraid that maybe you'd moved one. I was afraid I'd get my heart broken once again." she said tears forming in her eyes once again. " I just want to know one thing...what would have happened in a few years to come, would you have moved on. Got married and have children. Leaving me behind, would you have kept on seeing me in pictures and thinking that I am happy and finally let go" she asked tears streaming down her face with just a thought of it. She couldn't see herself without her Joaquin, the thought of him getting married and having kids with another woman made her heart sting. It's funny how when she thought of another woman, Nina's face flashed in her head. " Yes what else would I have done. Or

maybe I'd have ended up just like my father, you—. She slapped him before he could finish what he was saying. She was right Infront of him, tears blurring her vision. Any woman would have thought twice before hitting a man who hated being sworn at. And any woman would have probably got a slap back. Surprisingly he embraced her tightly. She held him tightly, she was standing Infront of him while he was sitting on the bed. " Don't say that, don't ever think of leaving me" she said, wiping her tears with her free hand but they kept on streaming down her face. " I'm sorry" he said holding his tears back, his eyes red. " But let's promise each other one thing" he said looking her straight in the eyes. She nodded fastly, holding both sides of his head, she was wearing a smile and tears at the same time. " Promise me that we'd never leave each other's side, no matter what" he said, she nodded reciprocating. " Promised" she said wiping away her tears with a smile. She took in a few deep breaths and removed Salvatore's arms from around her. " Ok, I hate this emotional shit." She said then walked away. " You are still insane" he said chuckling and shaking his head unbelievably. " I

hope you are still the same because Cora doesn't roll with no boring nigga, never" she said then winked, before getting into the bathroom. He couldn't help but laugh.

.....

" Ok, I'll see you tonight" he said parking in the HP student's building. " By the way if I may ask, who's toothbrush did you use and what about the towel" he asked. " My boyfriend's of course, hat's off to the one who came up with the ' sharing is caring' lines." She said opening getting out of the car and closing the door. " Cora, you are so dead" he threatened him. " Kill me if you can" she said running away. He just shook his head and drove off.

.....

Cora's pov

I rang the doorbell and Lethu opened up instantly. " Thank God you are OK, do you know how worried I was" she said attacking me with a hug. " You're holding on too tight" I said trying to get out of her arms. She was squashing me, " who's clothes are

these" she asked, looking at the tracksuits I was wearing, Salvatore borrowed me his tracksuit, it was the only thing that fitted apparently because it had a waist lace . " Ohh now I see, here I've been worried sick. Kanti wena you're busy sleeping around. You sleep with him didn't you. Damn you Cora, answer me when I'm fucking talking to you" she snapped, so scary. " What's up with you, Salvatore just borrowed me these clothes, and for your information he and I didn't bang. Why are you so angry by the way" I asked confused . "You know the nigga" she asked. " Yes, he is my boyfriend. Why are you behaving like a jealous boyfriend all of a sudden" I asked looking her straight in the eyes. " Your boyfriend?, I thought you and I had something going on. Didn't that kiss mean anything to you" she asked holding one of my cheeks. " I was drunk Lethu, let's just put this behind us and move on. Let this not ruin our friendship. I love you like a friend nothing more besides that I am not lesbian" I said holding both her hands. But she just stormed out of the apartment so angry. Leaving me gagging unbelievably. Anyways I changed for my upcoming classes. I found my purse and phone in

her room. I had a lots of missed calls from Amanda. I called her up and she wanted us to meet in some near by café after classes which would be around 4:00pm. I attended classes but my mind was not fully there, I was worried about Lethu. Seriously it was not my intention to lead her on, if I even did. My last class was out so I walked to the café with my bag of books and purse.

.....

" My bitch" she said standing up and hugging me. Drawing in a lot of people's attention in the process. " My little sister" I said smiling. " Mxm, you just had to ruin my mood didn't you" she said sitting down. " What?, You're younger than me. So what does that makes you?" I asked smiling and sitting down. " If you decide to call me sister again please call me twin sister at least." She said rolling her eyes. " I try to remember, so what up?" I asked curious. " Can't sisters meet without any reason, you're such a bore yazi namuhla" she said making me laugh." I see, your Zulu boyfriend is doing a great job" I said punching her slightly on the shoulder. " Where is he by the

way" I asked on a serious note. " Let's not talk about that manwhore" she said seriously. " What happened?" I asked. " That's a story for another day. Anyways the parents sent you this" she said giving me an envelope. I opened it up and I couldn't believe what I was seeing. " I told them you'd refuse to take it just like the last time you did. But please this time if you decide to refuse just give it to me. I'll let them know that you accepted it with the biggest of smiles" she said so cunning. " Tell them I said thanks. I'll repay them with an interest. " I said with a smile. " Eauw!" She said unbelievably. " Ohh and then what's with Mr muscle pointing guns at people. " She asked so excited. " Don't tell me you heard that too." I said rolling my eyes. The story of a mysterious man pointing a gun at some students and carrying a girl on his shoulder was breezing around the university like wind. " I might not have been there but I have eyes and ears everywhere, and you didn't tell me you were going to the party. You're such a hypocrite." She said scornfully, arms around her chest. " I wasn't but Lethu dragged me there" I said in defense of myself. " Salvatore should have strangled him to

death." She said with hatred." It's a she Amanda" I corrected her. " How could I not be confused about her gender when she is confused herself" she said rolling her eyes. " Argh, it's no point talking to you. You're such a homophobic" I said sighing. " No, I'm not. Do you expect me to like someone who snatched away my best friend from me. Never. I hate that girl, worse she had to kiss you. I hate that piss of little shit's gut. But wait and watch, Salvatore will sledgehammer her for me. " She said solemnly. Sounding like some villain in a movie. " You're twisted" I said chuckling. We ordered drinks while we were chatting. " Tell me" she nagged. "No...—. my phone rang. " Hello" I said answering it. " I'm in the parking lot" Salvatore said. " Holly shit, I'm... I'm coming" I said stuttering. " Don't tell me you're not ready yet" he said. I could hear him sighing heavily on the other side of the line. " Sorry, I got caught up with Amanda. I lost track of time but I'll be there in a few Minutes." I said then hung up. " Shit, I gotta go" I said standing up. " Trouble in your little hell" she said laughing out loud. Crazy fool.

.....

I saw his car in the parking lot but passed by. I had a short time shower. Wiped my body did my hair and a little bit of makeup. Wore one of the dresses he bought me. It was black, shoulders off, knee length, flare from mid thigh to the knee. I wore my black block high heels and put some of my stuff in my black simple leather Gucci bag. In case I didn't make it back to the apartment. A girl gotta have a back up plan, you know. I gotta out of my room and found Lethu watching a movie and having popcorn on the couch. " You're going to him, ain't you. He is an evil men, you know that right?" She said. " I'll see you later, I'm already late." I said fixing my wrist watch and leaving. Salvatore got out and opened up the door for me as he saw me approaching the car. " You look exquisite. I could snack on you right now" he said flatteringly as he got inside the car. I brushed plus it had been a long time since I got a compliment. From my lover to be specific. " Where are we going to tonight" I asked excited as the car left the premises of the building. " To my house of course"

he said. " What a waste of my outfit. If only I knew" I said drained. He just giggled, " you thought we were going to some fancy place, didn't you" he said laughing. " It's not funny " I said sulking. " I'm sorry to disappoint you sweetheart" he said. " Whatever man" I said then kept quiet. He chose to insert a CD and played music. It was Eminem on the CD, I must say I was not listening until the song where he was featuring Rihanna played. I love Rihanna to bits . She can be cocky like me, sessy, skanky when needed be. But she had this lady thing that said I also want to be loved. (Rihanna) Just gonna stand there and watch me burn.

That's alright cause I like the way it hurts.

Just gonna stand there and hear me cry

That's alright because I love you lie.

I love the way you lie.

(Eminem)

I can't tell you what it really is but I can tell you what it feels like

And right now it's a steel night

In my wind pipe

I can't breath but I can still fight

As long as the road feels right.... You ever loved somebody somuch that you can barely breath when you are with them....

I later on realized that we were not heading to the house, I looked at him . He just ignored me. We were driving out of the city. He finally stopped the car in the middle of nowhere. " What exactly are we doing here" I asked puzzled. He got out of the car and opened the door for me. I got out, he lead the way, I followed. The lights of the car were still on and were were walking far from it. I finally saw a set up table. There was a huge red square carpet down and a table in the middle. Another one with Champaign on the side. White roses petal on the carpet. Paraffin lamps on the four corners of the carpet. There was covered up dinner plates on the table. He pulled out a chair for me to sit down and he sat down too. " Wow, all this for me" I exclaimed smiling with too

much emotions. " I loved the view, so I thought you should see this, maybe you'd like it. I looked at where he was signalling. There it was, the perfect city view, the lights. It was so beautiful. " I love it and I love you" I said emotional. He just gave me one of those smiles that made me weak on my knees, one of those smiles I missed. He unveiled the dish we were going to have. " I made this , specially for you... Spaghetti pie ." He said, I never heard of it before but it looked delicious enough to leave my mouth watering. " It looks yummy" I said, picking up the fork and knife. I ate it, I heard him giggling. " What?" I asked . " You still do that, you know- the moaning and closing your eyes thing" he said smiling. " Ain't you going to eat, you're gonna be watching me the whole time" i asked eating up. " Watching you eat is way better than eating myself. It's been a long time, il mio cuero batte" he said setting butterflies free in my tummy. I looked at him for a while and then continued eating, he was eating to. " What are we celebrating exactly" I asked curiously. " We've got a lot of things to celebrate actually... we're celebrating being back together, been alive and our future. The

many years to come, we're celebrating the chance of starting a family together. " He said, making my eyes pop. " Family?" I asked not so keen on hearing the answer. " The many kids You are going to give me, I want them to have your light brown eyes and blonde-brown hair" he said. " You're kidding right, kids?. No ways. You want to ruin my perfect figure" I exclaimed. " Don't you want to have little yous running around the house" he asked smiling. " Kids are a lot to handle, no thanks. But if possible I'd like to have little yous running around the house, they must have your eyes and your gorgeous smile. " I said. He laughed at me. " Are you trying to make me blush, I never knew you liked my smile" he said looking me straight in the eyes making me blush instead. h e stood up and poured two glasses of champagne after making it pop. " Are you trying to get me drunk" I asked as he gave me a glass. " Don't worry, it's non alcoholic" he said sitting down. " I want us to talk about the future" he said seriously. "Don't get offended by this, I just want us to start on a clean and clear slate . About Nina" he said then sipped on his Champaign. " What about her?" I asked

uneasy about the whole Nina topic. " What happens if the child turns out to be mine, won't you throw a feet" He asked one eyebrow raised. " We will cross that bridge when we get there" I said calmly. " I promise you to try and love the kid if it's your, as for Nina I can not promise you anything" I added seriously. I wasn't about to befriend a woman who tried to snatch away what rightfully belong to me, never. But if circumstances didn't really favour me, I'd try to be civil with her for the sake of the child. Then it had to start raining, we rushed to the car, I sat in the back seats. We were giggling." There's something missing he said then changed the CDs. That song was playing, the one he taught me how to dance with. He decrease the volume, it was playing on a low profile. The closer I get to you.

The more you make me see

By giving me all you've got.(tell me more)

Your love has captured me.

.

.

Over and over again, I tried to tell myself that we
could never be more than friends

When all the while inside I knew it was really.

The way you make me feel....

.

.

Lying here next to you.

Time just seems to fly

Need you more and more

Let's give love a try

Sweeter and sweeter love grows

And heaven is there for those

Who fully takes some time.

With hearts of love will find, true love

.

.

The closer I get to you, you, you baby.

.....my baby my baby my baby, my love my love
Come closer love, come a little closer so Thea we
can see into the eyes of love.

The music played while we were talking, the song was on repeat. He then decided to kiss me, I felt my spinal cord getting shivers, my tummy feeling so good. My whole body getting warm. I might have said that Lethu was a good kisser but hat's off to Salvatore. He made my whole body sing to his tune. I loved it when his hand was on my waist, moving in circles there. My one leg was on the sit while the other was down. He was in between my thighs, my heart racing, breath eccelarating to another level. The next thing I knew we were both naked and he was thrusting inside me, slowly. Who ever said that man with big rods don't know how to use them was definitely lying. Cause I found myself crying and screaming, scratching on his back. He was pounding in my valley of fire so fast that it Catch fire. His giant cucumber filled me up expanding my walls. His eyes were slightly opened and red, I was biting on my low lip. An hour later. We came. " Let's take the party

home" he said. That night we made sweet love, four rounds. It was hunger games.

[6/3, 14:42] Lynne: Page 28

Cora's pov

Cora's pov

I woke up early in the morning and called a cab before taking a shower. I taking a shower when the shower door suddenly opened. " Were you planning on leaving without saying good bye" he said standing behind me. " Yes, no well something like that" I stuttered " you're such a bad girl" he said spanking my ass . " Good girls ain't no fun" I said turning around to face him. We took a shower together and dressed up. " But I've already called a cab" I said protesting. " You should have talked to me first, I'll pay the cab driver" he said taking his car keys on the door hangers. " I'm not going anywhere with you. Don't you have any other things to do" I asked arms folded around my chest. " I'll just have to drag you

down to the car then" he said Carrying me on his shoulders. " Joaquin, put me down, put me down" I screamed laughing. He put me down after the last staircase. " We should do that again" I said giggling. " Alonzo thinks that you are crazy" he said opening the door for me. " Cora thinks that, that's why he loves her" I said buckling up. We were in his. BMW x6.

The cab driver was on the gate, he payed him and drove off. We had breakfast together at some downtown hotel, apparently they made the best pancakes and coffee. He then drove me to the HP student's building. I packed my bags and attended my first class. Lethu was not there when I got to the apartment, anyways my classes ended around 3 pm . It was a friday time to go home and just chill with Amanda. Mr and Mrs timber took me as their own so I got used to it . Amanda was to fetch me with her car and we'd go home together. I packed up clothes for the weekend and took a shower, I was having a sandwich when Lethu walked in. " Hi" I said before she could go to her room. " Hi" she said and threw

her back pack on the couch. " Can we talk" I said standing up from the kitchen's high chair. " Yeah, sure" she said sitting down, I sat down too. " About what happened that night, I'm sorry. I was drunk and I guess I must have been feeling lonely inside. I'm sorry if I somehow lead you on. It was not my intention. I hate this vibe between us. It's like you are avoiding me these days and I miss you, I miss my friend. Would you please forgive me" I said genuinely. " You are right I've been avoiding your ass just a little bit" she said smiling. " I must say that I am very disappointed and that you do not see me as more than just a friend but I'll be fine. You're such a great girl, it was really impossible for me not to fall for you, you're smart, funny, pretty, cute, lovely, ambitious and crazy sometimes. What I'm trying to day is we can still remain friends if you want. " She said emotional. " Thanks for understanding" I said hugging her. " Tell your man that he better not make you cry cause I'll kill him myself" she said seriously. " I'm glad you are looking out for me but we both know that, that's literally impossible" I said giggling. " Fuck you, just because he strangled me once

doesn't mean that I can't kill him" she said smiling, " try to tell that to yourself because I know that you don't believe it more than I" I said getting back to my sandwich. " Just because we're friends doesn't mean that I can't kick your ass" she said following me. She was chasing me around and I was giggling until we heard a knock on the door. "Expecting anyone" she asked. " That should be my twin sister, we're going home" I said giggling and opening the door. " Amanda... Come on in. " I said smiling. " You're are late" I said hugging her. " I'm sorry but can we get going" she said eyeing Lethu up and down. There was no need for me to introduce them to each other because they already knew each other. It's just that they had this vibe I couldn't fathom. " Amanda" Lethu said in her man like voice. " Lethu" Amanda said back. Let me go and get my bag, I said after looking between the two of them. Amanda looked tired by the way, her eyes were kind of red I noticed. I got my bags from the bedroom and came back, Lethu had her hands in his jeans pocket and she was starring at Amanda who was busy with her phone. " Let's go... See you on Monday morning Lethu" I said

and then we left. " What was that?" I asked when we were in the elevator to the underground parking lot. " What?" She asked shrugging her shoulder. " The intense look between the two of you, and then when I came back I from the room I found her staring at you" I asked eyebrows raised. " That sounds weird, you should ask her maybe" she said. " Ohh ok" I said. We got into the car and the driver drove us home.

.....,.....

We got home around 19:00, we both took a shower and wore our PJs. " Aren't we going to FaceTime with the parents" I asked as we were sitting on the couch watching television, at like was watching television because she was busy with her phone. " I'm going to have to take a raincheck" she said. " Ok I'm so fed up with your attitude. What's wrong with you?" I snapped. " It's nothing" she said in a tiny voice. " You can not fool me, spit it out. What's wrong" I asked concerned. " Jack broke up with me" she said then broke down and cried. I embraced her, not knowing what to say. " What do you... what

happened. I thought you guys were happy" I asked almost in tears myself. I wasn't good in comforting people. " We were happy, at least I thought so. Three days before we met at the café I was called up by some girl saying that I must leave her man alone. I asked him about the girl, asked him if he was cheating on me and he denied it Coh. He denied it to the point where I felt like I was the crazy one. Like I was insecure or s something. But then yesterday the same girl called me, I ignored her calls. And the she sent me the pictures of both of them naked in bed. I confronted him and he, he broke up with me. Said that I was not good in bed, said he loves her . I begged him not to leave me, not to give up on us. I even promised to learn more about shagging. He was my first, he took my virginity and now he does this to me. I love him Cora, I love...—" stop it, stop doing that to yourself. There's no use in crying over spilt milk. What's done is done. The Amanda I know cries for no man. When you didn't cry when your parents decided to travel around the world helping people why should you cry over some black nigga, when you failed your your grade 11 you didn't cry

why should you cry over some manwhore. Why should you cry, he is probably gonna catch STDs and die." I said wiping off her tears. She smiled and cried at the same time. " You are beautiful, smart and funny. You're a kick-ass girl. Forget about him. It's his loss. He was one hell of a lucky guy for dating a girl like you" I said. She giggled smiling, " you're crying too" she said wiping off my tears. " I'm just helping you out, we're twins after all" I said taking a deep breath. " Let's watch a movie on my laptop" I suggested. " Maybe that will lift up my spirit, I'll order pizza" she said making a phone call. " Let me go and get my laptop" I said walking away when I got in to the room I found my cellphone blowing up. " Hello Mr Salvatore" I said flirting with him. " I've been calling you for almost an hour, where are you" he asked, as if he didn't know. " I'm at Amanda's" I said disappointed. " I thought I'd be seeing you tonight" he said. " We didn't discuss that, besides that I am busy. I have to study and I'm going to church on Sunday morning." I said sighing softly. " Ok, I'll see you on Sunday evening then" he said without checking with me. " Joaquin, I'm kind of busy for the

weekend. I'm with Amanda, she needs me. It's kind of our routine to be home for the weekend. " I said sighing heavily. " I'm seeing you on Sunday evening and it's final. Amanda can also come along. No worries" he said then hung up before I could finish.

.....,

Salvatore's POV

" The passports are ready, the positions are set. The minister won't see this one coming. Let's drink to more muller." I said and we all raised our glasses.

" To more muller" ..." Cheers" others said. We were looking at the architecture of the minister's home. And the map. We were planning to rob him, apparently he doesn't bank his money and we happened to have an Intel. We happened to have a spy on the inside, Texiang li Chun- The serpent. This time he was passing as the minister's bodyguard. We had been planning the robbery for the past three months and we were going to execute the mission on Monday evening. When the minister would be

having a lots of people. It would be his birthday party after all. All we needed to do was to kidnap the extra security guards that were going to be sent by the Flixer security company and pose as them." So where are we meeting up this Sunday" mbutho asked sipping on his Champagne. " Your place of course" I said winking at him. " You guys are always here, it's about time we changed the venue". I added. " Why my place?" He asked. " Because you're the second oldest from me" I said. " God Let us not get food poisoning, he can't cook. His wife is worse" Michael said and we all laughed. " Shut up you motherficker" mbutho cursed . " Now I know why you guys are always in here. So now I've become your chef unknowingly" I said thoughtfully. " This should be easy, I'll just hire you for Sunday" mbutho said laughing. " It will cost you an arm and a leg" I said seriously. " How much" Kevin asked as if he would be paying. " Half a million I guess" Rajesh-the machete said. As if he was going to be cooking. We all laughed because he was not a guy who talked a lot. " I was just kidding, I'll be getting my woman around 1:00. But I have a lot of chefs in my

restaurants, who could devourer this opportunity" I said sipping on my champagne. " Ohh, ohh." They said in unision. " What" I asked knowingly." You just had to rub it on our faces, didn't you. Now I know the reason for the sudden gain of weight. She is back" Michael said punching my shoulder. " No wonder you look so whipped" mbutho said. " It's late, we should get going." I said looking at the time. We were in the warehouse and it was a little bit out of the city. Plus I had a 22:00 meeting with one of my clients regarding the cocaine business. " You're so whipped" Rajesh said. " Shut up man" I said smiling.

[6/3, 14:42] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's pov

I was in my white long tight blue dress and pink block high heels and I put my Bible and few other girls things in my baby pink fur bag. I checked myself one more time on the mirror. Amanda was sleeping and I was going to church. It was within the

estate. The service started at 9:00 and ended at 12:00, I came back and found Amanda still in bed, I opened up the curtains and pulled off the shirts from her body. " I thought we talked about this, wake up. Go and take a bath. Jezz" i snapped. " Leave me alone Cora." She said pulling the shirts back over her head but I pulled them down the floor this time. " Get out of bed Amanda before I pour cold water on you" I said pulling her by her leg. " Leave me alone Cora. You don't know what it's like. You don't, my mother is not even here when I need her the most. Leave me the fuck alone. Just go away" she cursed. " At least you have a family, at least you have a mother. She comes over every holiday and calls you up almost everyday. FaceTime with you on weekends. You have everything a girl could dream of, some of us were just never so fortunate enough to even get a chance to —" I said sitting down on the bed. " I'm so sorry" she said sounding guilty. " I didn't mean to hurt you" she added. " It's okay, now get your ass ready we're going to Salvatore's house." I said sighing heavily. " He can be so pushy sometimes." I added. She got out of bed I took a shower while I

fixed her bed. There were two beds in the room and it was news decorated. I prepared instant noodles with chopped viennas and mixed vegetables. She came downstairs just when I was dishing up into two bowls. "That's my girl friend" I said smiling. She was wearing black two inch high heels boots, leggings and a huge girly knitted one shoulder white sweater. "You look cute" I said. "Thanks, you look older in that dress" she said. "In a bad or good way?" I asked putting the bowl in front of her. "You look great" she said shrugging her shoulders. "Thanks, I guess" I said sitting down on the high chair to eat but then I remembered something. I took my laptop from the couch and put it in front of us in the kitchen counter island. We FaceTime with Mr and Mrs timber. Just then Salvatore called me, I had to get my phone on the couch. "Hi" I said getting away from the camera of the laptop. "What nonsense, is that how you greet your man?" He asked serious. "Baby wami" I whispered. "What's wrong with you. Anyways I'm in the gate" he said. "We're coming" I said and then hung up, wrong move. Anyways I signalled for Amanda to say goodbye to the parents.

" Cora, who was that on the phone" Mrs timber asked. " No one mom, it was just one of my classmates asking for Friday's notes" I lied. " I see, that's why you were whispering god knows what" she said, make me shy. " Anyways, take care of Amanda. She looks skinny. Make sure she eats ok" she said seriously. " How do you expect her to do so when she doesn't eat herself" Amanda said giggling. " Mom we have to go, I'll take care of Mandy" I said then pressed the hang up button. " Let's go" I said. We walked to the gate. It was a few houses away. We got in and he drove off. " It's been a long time Amanda" he said looking at her through the rearview mirror. " My brother in law" Amanda said smiling. Ok he was kinda upset with me. " How was your weekend...—" he said, I was about to answer when he said." Amanda" . " Not so good, but I'll get there. How was yours" she asked casually. " It was cool, until somebody decided to hang up on me like she called" he said eyeing me. I felt like laughing but just kept quiet. I was leaning on the window. " Where are we going" I asked as we were talking a different route. " A friend's house" he said shortly. " Why didn't

you let me know I could have brought a jacket. " I said but he didn't answer me. Anyways we reached the house, check in through security. I guessed they all had securities and undercover bodyguards just like he did. I guessed they all had some shadey shits covered up, I guessed they all had enormous houses like he did. Beautiful gardens. We got out of the car after he parked in some kind of parking lot just by the gate. We walked to the house and entered. There was music blasting up, we followed Salvatore's lead to the backyard . There was a huge pool, umbrellas and pool/beach camping beds. I spotted Kevin's wife sitting on one. On the other side of the pool. The guys were braaing meat on the side we were in while having some beers. " Let's go over there" I said to Amanda. We hadn't even greeted the guys . There was Micheal, my mood wasn't so good recently. " Siwe" I said as we were sitting down around her with Amanda." Hi, Zee" she said. " This is my friend Amanda, Mandy this is siwe. And that's her husband" I pointed out at Kevin. " Hi, I must say you look gorgeous. We should be friends" Amanda said bubbly. Siwe must have been around 25years old.

But Amanda knew no age. Unlike me who was shaking the first day I met with the whole group. " Thanks you, you don't look bad yourself" siwe said smiling. The other ladies were in the swimming pool swimming. " Hi guys" I screamed at them. " Hi Zee" they said in unision. There was rajesh's wife Divyanka, Diva for short and then Mbutho's chubby cute with Priyanka, Priya for short. They were both beautiful Indian women. Amanda seemed to be doing just fine, she was getting along with everyone else. We were having the food outdoors. " I don't know why you guys had to hire a chef and then go ahead and braii your own meat" Priya said as we were eating. " Who would have cooked if we didn't" mbutho said laughing. " I would have, it's my home after all" she said. " Who are you trying to convince. Me or yourself?" Mbutho asked. " Mxm, whatever" Priya said looking half upset. I couldn't help but laugh. " I thought I was the one who couldn't cook" I said laughing out loud. " Ohh oh, Salvatore my man. You didn't tell us about this" Michael said. " I guess only my baby can cook" Kevin said, making siwe blush. " I can cook too" Diva said. " Yeah, yeah. Spicy

food. You almost killed me" Salvatore said emotionless. " Kong, she is still my wife" Rajesh said warningly that we all laughed. It was great to be there. Amanda was quite but amused.

.....

Amanda's POV

" Could you direct me towards the bathroom" I asked siwe. I wasn't lying earlier when I said she was gorgeous and her husband was a handsome nerd. Priyanka was pretty, the first India I saw with a big butt her husband was kinda intimidating . Divyanka was beautiful and slender, he husband was scary and handsome too, it's no secret that Indian man are hot. Well the single Kevin guy kinda talked a lot, he was not so bad himself. I could give him a 60% out of hundred. Siwe directed me to the bathroom upstairs, I did my business and when I got out , I was almost given a heart attack by the Michael guy standing Infront of the door. " Hi" he said smiling arrogantly. " Hi, excuse me" I said walking away but

he held my arm. " How are you?" He said smiling. " I'm still alive, if you could just get your foot of my arm." I said looking him in the eyes. " My name is Michael Sullivan, if it's not too much could I get your name. I didn't quite catch it " he said ignoring what I had just said flatly. " That's probably because I was not throwing it" I said with so much attitude but he just didn't budge. " You look gorgeous, you have a gorgeous smile too " he said flirting with me. " Leave my arm before I scream" I said trying to get lose from his grip. " Why would you do that when were having such a great conversation" he said smiling. " Help!, help!" I screamed before he knew it. " Shit you're one crazy lady" he said letting me go. I just laughed and walked away. I met up with Salvatore on his way up. " Are you ok, I thought I heard someone scream" he said. " There was a crock in the bathroom" I said . " Woman" he said shaking his Head.

.....

Cora's POV.

We finished washing the dishes around 5:00 pm and they said I was Tim for games. " are you guys serious about this" I asked. They were going to be playing monopoly game but the only difference was that they were going to replace the fake money with really one. I didn't even know how the game worked, it was my first time seeing it. " Im going to be teaming up with Cora and you with yours wives and I guess the single are going to be doing the same." Salvatore said as we were sitting around the dinning table. . " No ways guys, why don't you two team up with each other. And let me team up with my friend" Amanda said protesting. " I don't see how it's such a bad idea" Michael said holding Amanda's waist, Amanda jumped away quickly. " What the hell" she exclaimed" making the whole room laugh. " I agree with Salvatore, besides we both are immatures in this game. As for me, I have no money" I said seriously. " Ok, fine" she said sitting down and Michael set down next to her. " Let the games begin" Mbutho said. St the end of the day we all know who won, right? . Mr Salvatore and I took the money home baby, it was R25 thousand in total. " I knew I'd

lose, you have the "loser" thing written all over you. " Amanda said sulking dramatically. " Sorry my lady. Maybe the Gods will favour us next time." Michael said kissing her cheek. " Fuck you" she said wiping her cheek. I was busy laughing my ass out, I even had tears. Amanda borrowed the car keys, we were about to leave anyways. She couldn't stand Micheal's taunts anymore. I was not find of the guy but he was funny that night. " Good bye guys" I said as Salvatore and I were leaving the house. We were the first ones to leave. " Are you still upset with me" I asked as we were walking towards the car. " You know that I can't stay mad at you for too long" he said. " Ok, could you borrow me your jacket then" I said. " You're so cunning" he said taking it off. " We're about to get in the car" he added. " I know, I just want to keep your scent around me" I said holding his hand. " Can I ask you somethings" I said. " Go ahead although you've already done so" he said, getting smart with me. " Why don't you say you love me anymore, ever since we got back together you've never did" I said. " Feeling expressed too frequently tends to be false, would you rather I say the words or

express the feelings" he asked, making sense. " I want both" I said. "Mmh, we'll see" he said. Opening the door for me. Drove off. " Hey Mandy, isn't Michael just hilarious" I said purposely. " Salvatore please talk to your person" she said seriously pissed. " The way he held your waist, so romantic. Don't you think." I asked . " I'll kick your ass Cora" she threatened me. Salvatore just chuckled softly. " Ok, sorry" I said. The security guards opened the gate and the car drove in. Amanda got out and got inside the house as he parked in front of the house. " Can I have my share of money" I said jokingly. " Which money are you talking about, you're not getting a penny" he said. "You being unfair" I said " I was playing too" I added. " Yeah, yeah" he said and then held my hand. " There's some mission we are executing tomorrow evening" he said seriously all of a sudden. " Why are you talking me this, you never did" I asked. " I don't know, I just feel like it. Anyways I love you" he said squeezing my hand. " Stop talking like you are going to die. Just make it back home tomorrow night and you'll find me in bed waiting for you" I said smiling. " Mhh, that sounds like a good

reason to make it back home, alive" he said with a naughty smirk on his face. " All this shit shit you're doing, you're going to leave behind once we get married, it's not safe. What would I do if anything happened to you. " I said hand on his face. " Nothing is going to happen to me, if anything happens to me then my name would not be King Kong" he said with somuch pride. We shared a passionate kiss. " Goodnight" I said opening the door and getting out. " Hey, il mio cuero batte" he called out as I was opening the door. " Yes" I said turning around. " I love you" he said smiling. I smiled back to him and he drove off.

.....

2 months later

[6/3, 14:43] Lynne: Page 29

Cora's pov

Two months later

I had not seen Salvatore for two weeks, he was in a business trip in Canada. We FaceTimed with each other most of the time, I missed him a lot., Anyways I had just came back from school it was 2:30pm in the afternoon. I was so tired. I took a shower and ate, wore my short jumpsuit and had some good sleep.

I woke around 5pm and order pizza, went to the sitting room and found Lethu studying. " Hey" I said sitting down. " Hi, I thought you weren't around, I thought you were at the lab or something" she said looking at me. " I just took a nap, I see somebody has been studying lately" I said. " Yeah, I need to focus or else my bursary will be cut off" she said. " Let me not disturb you then" I said walking back to the room and wearing my jogging track suit. I haven't been exercising more often lately. " Hey I ordered pizza, do pay for me when the delivery guy gets here. I'll pay you later. " I said on my way out. " Ok, but I want my money back ASAP" she said solemnly. " Sure thing" I said then went out. I got out of the premises and jogged on the side walk, the street lights were on, I was playing music on my iPod while

jogging. On my way back I felt a hand poking me on my arm. I took off one of my ear phones after seeing a guy jogging next to me. " Hi, I've been calling after you" he said. " Excuse me, how can I help you?" I asked still jogging. " My name is Kellen , I've seen you around varsity and jogging but I never got a chance to actually speak with you" he said. " So. " I asked. " I was wondering if I could take you out, on a date maybe?" He said. " I'm not interested " I said irritated. " Ouch, can we be friends at least" he said. " I have a dozen of those. Good bye" I said then plugged in my earphones. He was busy talking but I couldn't hear what he was saying. I reached the building and he turned on his feet. I took the staircases to the apartment, it was not locked so I walked in without ringing the doorbell. I found Lethu still on her books, " where's my pizza" I asked . " It's right there in the microwave" she said. " Cool, Let me go and have a shower" I said on my way to the bathroom, I took a quick shower and wore my PJs and sleepers. " You were serious about eating my pizza" he asked sighing heavily. " Since you are half of my pizza then I'll pay you half of the price." I said

seriously. " I thought we were friends. " We're friends, but then again everything is fair in love and war" I said smiling. " Fake friends!" She said sulking dramatically. I just giggled and ate my pizza. After eating up I studied for 4hours and the went to bed around 00:00am.

.....

Around 3:00 am the doorbell rang, I woke up reluctantly, switched on the lights in the sitting room and opened up to check who it was, I was attacked by a kiss. " Mmh, Joaquin" I moaned in between the kiss. " Let's go to your room" he said Carrying me into his arms. His arms under my ass. He was kissing me so hungrily will waltzing to my bedroom. I was unbuttoning his shirt, took off his white vest. He threw me in bed, took of his shoes and jeans. I was just staring at his every move and smiling. He looked more masculine then the last time I saw him. He got on top of me took off my vest and my breasts were bare. we kissed to tenderly and passionately, he got in between my thighs, took off my short along with my underwear. He came over and gave me a

taunting kiss while he was brushing my breasts, my whole tummy and chest, he was kissing my neck. I was so sure that he was leaving love bites. He kissed the gap in between my breasts and went down with the kisses. Kissing my inner thigh, good thing was that I had recently waxed my valley of fire. He kept on placing the kisses on it but not on the spot i wanted him to, but when he finally did my back arched in ecstasy. I was biting my upper lip, hand on his head. He was nibbling, kissing, sucking on it like it was the last time he was going to hit it. I felt the blood rush all over my body, my brain not so functional. He inserted one of his manly fingers in and the two, finger fucked me until I was dripping wet and moaning. He came back up and made me lick his fingers. Damn it was some crazy fucking. His giant cucumber was already up and ready but I gave him a blow job. Until his veins popped. He was pushing it deep in my mouth until I was gagging. I then layed down on my back and he got his giant cucumber inside my valley of fire. Started to pound slowly and steadily increasing the pace. He was thrusting like a mad man and I was busy screaming

his name. " Ohh yes yes yes baby. Oh fuck" I was screaming. We flipped over and I was on top. Riding him. The position was driving us crazy because his giant cucumber was fully inside me only his balls were left behind. I couldn't hold it any more I came and he followed after me, the second round was in the shower. We came back after a shower and cuddled up. " When did you land in" I asked feeling sleepy. " I have just landed, I missed you. I missed this" he said brushing my ass which was in an underwear, I was wearing a vest and a panty. He was lying on his back and I was lying on his chest, he one arm around me. The bed was pretty small for the two of us. " Not again, I want to sleep." I said removing his hand from my ass. " But baby, I'm starving. Just one more round" he asked . " Maybe in the morning, good night" I said closing my arm and switching off the side lamp. " It's morning already" he said but I ignored him and went to sleep. I was woken up by something poking by ass, I tried to feel it with my hands and found his giant cucumber there. I ignored it and tried to get some more sleep, the sun was out. I could tell through the window but the

weather was perfect for being in bed. The next thing I knew my breasts were being massaged. I ignored him but the sensation rushed to my waist and my soft but in the valley of fire was throbbing in need. He had been from behind after lowering my panties . If felt so heavenly that I moaned and groaned uncontrollable. He cam inside me. " Good morning my love" he said biting my earlobe slightly. Making my heart skip. " Morning love wami" I said smiling. " How about we go and take a shower together" he suggested but the we heard the shower water running. I just giggled a bit. " Seems like we have to wait a bit" I said. " I have an idea, how about we spent the whole day in bed with you in my arms, we can order everything we want in" he suggested. " I have classes remember" I said turning around to look at him. " Classes can wait.. please" he said. " But Joaquin" I said trying to find my back bone to say no. " I'll have some one get the notes for you" he suggested removing the strands of hair from my face. " Ohkay..." I agreed reluctantly. I was going to be my first day of missing classes. I was not feeling good about it but it was going to be great spending

the whole day with Joaquin after such a long time
[6/3, 14:43] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's pov

" That was my piece" I exclaimed slightly punching his leg .he was sitting on couch and I was sitting down on the carpet in between his legs. " I thought you were on some type of diet or something" he said mocking me. " Hahaha, very funny" I said sarcastically. " Come on, you had like 3 pieces already" he said messing up my hair. " But you had 4, this is not fair" I said, lying with my head on his thigh. " Let's get another box the" he said brushing my hair. " I want that piece you just had, I don't want another box" I said sulking. " Do you want me to vomit it out" he asked. " Euw, that's gross, disgusting" I said standing up and waking away but he pulled me on top of his thighs. " Where do you think you are going" he asked serious. " To get dressed up" I said rolling my eyes. " Don't do that, jeez... I like what you are wearing" he said sighing. " I'm Wearing absolutely

nothing" I said huffing. Mind you I was wearing my white underwear and vest. " Can we not argue abouts this" he said seriously. " Mmh" I said sighing softly. And then his phone had to ring, I still wanted my piece of pizza. " Hello" he said sounding all shades of irritated by the caller. " What, where?. Ok, I'm coming" he said not so irritated anymore but rather worried. He then hung up the phone" I have to go" he said going to the bedroom, to get his upper clothes i guessed because he was half naked. " But, I bunked my classes for us to spend the day together... and now?. Where are you going?" I asked following him like a lost puppy. " Nina has been admitted to hospital, she fainted... I'm sorry but I promise to make it up to you" he said getting his shirt on. " Nina is...I'm coming with you" I said opening my wardrobe and taking out my jeans and huge maroon sweeter. " Cora please, what would you be doing there" he said putting his shoes on. " To support you of course , I'm not taking a no for an answer" I insisted on going. " Ok, fine" he said sighing heavily. " I wore my white Nike air Max sneakers. And a white scarf. " let's go" I said.

.....

30 minutes later we were in the waiting room of the hospital, Joaquin seemed nervous about the whole thing. I was a little bit jealous and insecure on the other side. I mean he had no evidence that the child was his but still he cared so much. A picture of them becoming a happy family after the child was born kept disturbing my mind. It didn't feel right to be there, I felt like an intruder but no matter what I was not going to let Joaquin go." Mr Aj Salvatore" the doctor is ready for you. What...I had thought that we'd see the patient first, my inner self said confused. The hospital was fancy. He held my hand and we walked in to the doctor's office. " Dr Davis" Salvatore said and the doctor stood up and they shook hands. Oh yeah, it was the doctor who once came to the house to do some check ups on me. " Mrs Salvatore, I hope your head and hand are healed up now" he said looking at me, I was just puzzled, still taking everything he had said in. " Ohh yeah, I'm good now" I said almost stuttering. I made a mental note to ask Joaquin about the change in my status

all of a sudden. We sat down after he offered us chairs. " So, is the baby ok" he asked as the doctor was still paging the file. " Well, he should be fine, but we can not tell at the moment. We've put the mother on oxygen supply. His heart was beating up faintly" the doctor said. so it's a he, my inner self said . " What exactly is the cause of the complications" I asked curiously. " The smoking, well if the mother smoke more frequently during the pregnancy it may lead to hardships in breathing as we all know that the child gets the oxygenated blood from the mother.in this case the blood was deoxygenated. That what lead the the faint heart beat. Mr Salvatore I have dvised Nina khumalo to stop smoking because even her lungs are not in good health as we speak. She may or will suffer from lung cancer in the near future. And smoking is not good for the baby's health. And we also found alcohol in her blood system which is not good for the baby's brain. I also hope you can talk some sense into her, she's a very stubborn lady" The doctor explained, Salvatore's jaws were clenched zero fist knuckles red. " okay, thank you doctor but could we possibly see the

patient now" I said putting my hand on Salvatore's . " No problem, she's in ward 1

53." He said with a polite social smile. " Love wami, let's go" I said holding Salvatore's hand, he seemed to be miles away from planet earth. " Alonzo" I exclaimed, shaking his body. " Mhh. Oh yeah let's go" he said standing up. " Would you please calm down before you burst into pieces" I said tightening my grip on his hand. We got to room 53 and entered without knocking.

.....

" You?, What are you doing here" she asked after removing the oxygen supplier. " Good afternoon Nina" I said politely. "You should have listened to me when I asked you to get rid of this baby, look at you trying to kill it after carrying it for so long" Alonzo said pissed. " What are you saying Salvatore" she asked sounding hurt, I couldn't tell if ahead really hurt or she was just pretending to be. " Just shut up" he snapped angrily. " I got you a roof over your head, I pay for your groceries and necessities. Not to mention the hospital bills but still you are just some

piece of shit who doesn't give a damn about anyone else but you." He shouted. " What do you want from me, you left me. You broke my heart, you made me fall in love with you only for you to find some else better than me. Another bitch, who probably is after you money. What do you—...the next thing I heard was a loud thunder slap. He had just slapped her, tears were forming in her eyes but she was not crying. " Go ahead and kill me, you murderer. I wonder what kind of a father you'd turn out to be. Go ahead and kill me" she screamed, " i know you don't give a damn about anyone else except yourself but please just try to give a fuck about the one you're carrying, he is your child too for goodness sake" he cursed. " Fuck you, who are you to judge me" she cursed and a strange followed up next. " Shit Salvatore what are you doing" I screamed trying to separate them. He was stronger than me, I pushed the emergency red button. While trying to separate them " Joaquin please let her go... you can't strangle a woman like that" I pleaded crying. He seemed to have heard my cry and pleads because he stop. He turned around to look at me, I saw a beast in his

eyes, I saw guilt and sorrow. He tried to hold me but I stepped away. " Don't, don't touch me" I screamed. just then the nurses came rushing along with the security. Nina had a hand on her neck, she wasn't as much scared as I was. " Sir ma'am you have to get out" one nurse said. I was the first one to step out of the room. I Waltzed to the elevator, he was following around without saying a word. I wanted nothing but to get out of there. The elevator opened on the ground floor and I was the first one to get out of there too. I opened my own door that evening, it was around 4:30pm. I buckled up after closing the door. My heart was thundering, I was shocked and scared. One part of me kept saying that all men are animals but the other one said not my Joaquin, he'd never harm me in any way but then the day he threw me on the couch flashed back. I was fighting an internal battle. It was either love was going to lose and fear was going to win or visa versa.

[6/3, 14:44] Lynne: Page 30

Cora's pov

There was silence in the car, it was so thick that you could cut it with a knife. He was driving to the where I lived, which was a good thing. He was more lost than I was. He drove in to the premises after checking in with the security. They called him sir, because he was the owner of the building's son. I guessed. He parked underground and I got off the car as soon as it stop. I wanted to get away from him ASAP. He seemed to get the memo because he didn't even get out of the car, he just drove off and I took the staircases after a long while of waiting for the elevator. I was suddenly feeling sick, I was coming down with a tummy ache. I rushed into the bathroom after unlocking the door, relieved myself. I got into the shower and let the water fall down my head. I had seen things like that before, my father used to physically assault my aunt with every chance he got. It all started when I was five years old, and my half siblings were just two years old. I couldn't understand things back then, every damn time it happened I'd find myself in the corner of my room. My aunt would come and Check up on me after a few hours, and she'd find me sleeping in a corner.

And what Salvatore did triggered the memories of it all. What was more twisted was the fact that he'd nurse her to health after every single beating and for what exactly?. For him to only beat her up again?. After showering I tried to get my hair dry using my big towel. I ended up tying up my hair with it, got into my PJs and sleepers and gown. It was quite cold in that evening. It was a Thursday, good thing I'd be going home the next day. It was such a lovely day but it turned out to be the worst day ever. I went to the sitting room to check who it was that was knocking on the door. " Good evening miss" a gentleman said. " Hi" I said in a tiny little voice. " I'm here to deliver this to miss CZ Maphumulo" he said. " I am CZ Maphumulo." I said taking what he was carrying and he turned back on his way. I thought I'd be required to sign up something, isn't that how delivery guys roll. I went back in and closed the door. I opened up the plastic, it was an exercise with the days notes. I decided to go get my school bag and copy them into their rightful place, including the laptop.

.....

" Are you ok?" Lethu asked sitting down next to me. She had come back an hour ago. Took a shower, " yeah, I'm fine" I said continuing with copying the notes. " Hello, you have tears down your cheeks if you haven't realized." She said. And I wiped them off quickly. I didn't even realize that I was crying. " Talk to me, what's wrong" she asked looking concerned. " It's nothing serious, I will be fine." I said faking a smile. " It's him isn't it. What has he done this time" she asked. I just went in to her arms for an embrace. I stayed like that for a while, I needed it. I needed my best friend Amanda. Whom I could tell everything without worrying about something like judgment or gossip. " I don't want to talk it, I am just not ready" I said getting a grip on myself. I wasn't so sure if getting near Lethu was such a good idea. " Okay but if you need a shoulder to cry on or if you feel like talking about it, my door is always open." She said sincerely. I nodded feeling awkward. " You guys are so confusing, one minute you're fucking and screaming for the whole world to hear and then the

next minute you're crying" she said . I was so embarrassed by the ' screaming for the whole world to hear' part. " You could hear us" I asked so shy. " Geez, like I said before' the whole world to hear'. You're like' ohh yes, yes baby. Ahh Joaquin fuck yes and he is like mhh yes ahh fuck . So weird—" shut up already" I said covering my ears. I was so embarrassed and she was laughing.

.....

On Friday

I woke up and took a 40 minutes jog, I saw the guy who had stopped me the other day and increased my pace. I took a bath when I got inside the house,my first class was around 9:00 and it was 07:00 in the morning. Lethu was long gone when I got back from jogging. Anyways I took a bath, wore my pink knee length jumpsuit and designer strapped on black Sapphire sandals. Applied full make up and combed my hair, they were so curly. I tied them in to a straight up pony tail. I checked myself once again

in the mirror, I looked great. I packed up my books in to my black leather bag and took my laptop along, just when I got into the sitting room I found Salvatore there. My heart skipped a bit, I thought of returning back into the bedroom but it was a little bit too late for that. He had already seen me, he was wearing a black tight short sleeve t-shirts and camouflage many pocketed trousers along with brown timberland boots and sunglasses, he looked good until he took the sunglasses off. Ok to rephrase my statement he looked super hot, the muscles were out there except for the red eyes. Has he been crying? My inner self asked. " Hey" he said walking towards me after he saw me. " Hi, what are you doing here" I asked a little bit shocked to see him there. " Can we talk" he asked stopping on his steps. " I looked at my wrist watch. It was 8:08am. " I have a class in 48 minutes, I'd be late. Maybe we can talk later when I return" I said seriously. " I'll barely take 10 minutes" he said. I nodded. " About what I did yesterday, I'm sorry. I am sorry for scaring you. I did not mean to strangle her, she just got under my skin and I lost it" he said." Scaring me is not the main thing here, the

point is if you could strangle another woman like that what would stop you from doing the same to me. You should have seen yourself, you were like a beast. You really scared the crap out of me. What would happen if I somehow one day get under your skin, will I suffer the same fate. Imagine what would have happened if I was not around, you would have killed that women. I don't think I feel safe around you anymore" I said then sighed. It felt so good to have finally got it out of my chest. " You know I'd never hurt you, right?" He said approaching me until he was standing six inches away from me. I was looking up at him without blinking. " I'd never hurt you Cora, I love you too much to hurt you. I just got pissed after hearing her call you a bitch and what not. " He said holding my shoulders, I was just frozen there. " I am not judging you or anything, I also have my own twisted issues that I can't get rid of but I really think that you need help. I know that you would not dream of hurting me, I knew that from the day I slapped you. But still you need help." I said, hand on his face. He was looking down at me while I was looking up. I was just wondering what must have

been going on in his mind. His face didn't show any emotions, he nodded. Then let go of my shoulders. " I'll think about it" he said looking away. " I forgave you last night around 00:00am after I had a good chat with God, I love you" I said hugging him and he hugged me back. " Now I have to go" I said looking at my wrist watch. " Let me give you a lift to UJ" he asked . " Ok" I said plus the sun felt hot from the inside. He dropped me off to school. " Will I see you tonight" he asked as I got off. " I am going home, remember? But we can go to see Nina around 2:30." I suggested. " You're just too good" with just those words he left. I was puzzled, wondering what he meant but I shrugged the confusion off my mind.

.....

Exactly at 2:00 I was done, I decided to go and have lunch in the nearby eatery. It was such a sunny day. I ordered a coconut and milk huge muffin and iced orange juice. " Can I join you, the other tables are full" a voice said. I looked up and it was the jogging guy. I nodded and he sat down and then the

waitresses came to take his order. " You look extremely beautiful today" he said. " What's your name again?" I asked sarcastically. " Kellen Winston " he answered politely. " Yeah Kellen whatsoever, just because I am sharing a table with you that doesn't mean that you and I are chatty buddies. Mind your own shit while I mind mine." I said solemnly . He looked like one of those rich spoilt rich kids. Who had a dozen of maids and chauffeurs kissing his ass. " I'm sorry if I somehow offended you. It was not my intention" he said politely. " Having to look at you long white nose is offensive enough" I murmured softly. I was busy chewing on my muffin when I saw a smirk on his face. " I love the way you close your eyes when you chew" he said before I could ask. " Every one does" I said sighing heavily. " It's kind of cute and sexy" he said. " Ok enough with all of this chitchat. What do you want" I asked wiping my lips. " I noticed that you have not been eating up and yeah I pretty much think that you're stalking me" I said seriously pissed off. " Just one date, that's all I am asking for" he said seriously. " You know what I am thinking right now?" I asked eyebrows raised. "

What?" He said looking forward to the answer. " I'm thinking ' wow what a crazy white trash you are" . Asking me on a date?. That's a death wish" I said firmly looking him in the eyes. " What do you mean" he asked. " What I mean is good bye" I said leaving the payment on the table and leaving. I got in the apartment around 3:00pm. Just when I got in Salvatore's followed. " Hey, you scared me. When did you get here" I said jumpy. " I thought you suggested that we go and see Nina around 2:30 " he asked looking at his wrist watch. " Yeah that, let me just put my bags in the room" I said faking a smile. It was such an awkward moment. I went into the bathroom and fixed my makeup a bit. I changed the sandal and wore sleepers. And packed my girl stuff in my small purse. I called up Amanda to wait for me if she came a little bit early, She hesitantly agreed." let's go" I said. I locked up on our way out, Lethu had her own keys. " Who is he" he asked after a long while of driving. I could tell that he wanted to say something but he couldn't find it in his gut, he finally got the courage to. " Who's who?" I asked confused." The guy you were with in that eatery?" He asked. "

Ohh that, he was just a customer. The tables were full so he asked for a place to sit." I said casually. " Don't lie to me Cora" he said taking a few deep breaths. " My guys have seen you and him for the third time, what's going on between the two of you" he asked solemnly. I could see that he didn't want to raise his voice, he didn't want to show that he was pissed off. " Ohh really now. His name is Kellen, his surname i forget. He asked me out on a date but I said no. And I think it's about time you told your guys to stop reporting my every move to you. I need to have my privacy, it's really starting to get into my nerves" I said scornfully. " Next time you see him please let him know that he doesn't want to meet up with The king Kong" he said warningly. I got the memo thoroughly. " Can we talk about something else, and yeah I've been meaning to ask you. When were you going to tell me that you've suddenly become the minister of finance to Nina, you buy her groceries, pay the rent, medical aid?" I asked seriously. " It's not a big deal, It's just a small amount of money" he said casually. " You don't get it do you, it's not about the money Kong, it's about you letting

me know as your girlfriend if you're going to be financially responsible for Nina. It's about respect" I said. " Don't call me that" he said out of nowhere. " Call you what" I asked confused. " Kong" he said shortly. "All your friends call you that, why can't I? And stop trying to change the topic" I said . " I am not, it just doesn't feel right when you call me that. You're the only one who can tame Kong.... I'm just simply asking you nicely not to call me that" he said seriously. " Look I didn't really think it would be much of a big deal if I took care of Nina's needs. I should have let you know and for that I apologise" he said. " But she has a job" I said. " I know, she says she has to financially support her family even though they kicked her out. I don't want to even go there. If the kid turns out to be mine. It would be a good thing that I took care of her so that she doesn't instigate him to abhor me." He explained.

.....

I had asked Salvatore to pass by the shop to buy her an apology gift, I could tell that she was the kind of girl who wanted flowers and chocolate before they

forgave you. Anyways Salvatore bought her white lilies after a lot of convincing. " Hi, look I'm sorry about yesterday. I should not have hit you. I bought you flowers" Salvatore said as soon as we walked in, the apology was not so heart felt. It was like he wanted to get it done with ASAP. " They are beautiful" she said sniffing them. I was the kind of girl who'd rather have the money that you used to buy the flowers. I just didn't get the whole concept about the flowers, the smell?. It was just a thing for snobs, no offense. " The doctor said I could go home, the baby is fine. He kicked this morning. I'm just waiting for a friend of mine" she said excitedly. I was just standing far away from them. I didn't even say hi. It was like I didn't even exist. I was so jealous, starting to regret the idea of coming there. " Cora thought that we should come and see if you are doing well, come il mio cuero batte" he said, I walked towards them. He put his hand around my waist. " What is she doing here... please get her out, out" she snapped, looking all shades of mad. " Can we all try and be civilised with each other, Nina there is no need for you to shout because she's not going

anywhere. Just get used to it, she is a part of me now" he said calmly. She was breathing fire, her heart beat monitor kept on increasing the numbers. And the beeping sound was so annoying. She finally took a deep breath and relaxed. " Ok fine" she said huffing, in my mind I was like'geez pregnant women with their drama'. " now, I think that you should apologize to Cora for calling her name's yesterday" he said emotionless." What?.. no, no . I'm not going to apologize. Why should I?" She protested. " Nina just do as I said, for the baby's sake" he kinda shouted. " Ok fine, I'm so—rry" she said looking anywhere but me. " Apology accepted" I said faking a smile, I wanted to laugh, laugh hysterically. She was just being childish. How about we give you a lift home" he suggested looking at his wrist watch. " I'd like that" she said excitedly. " Mmh baby wami. You know that I'm going home today, Amanda should be waiting for me as we speak. Now if we're going to be driving her to her apartment. It will delay me. Nina if you don't mind me asking for a favor. Would you please wait for your friend, I'm already late. " I said holding his arm and looking at Nina while faking a

smile. Something was wrong with me, I wasn't the kind of girl to do so. " Yeah, I almost forgot about that." He said with a knowingly smirk on his face. " It's fine, I'll wait" she said upset. " Ohh, the baby just kicked, you should feel this" she said swiftly pulling Salvatore's hand to her huge baby bump. " Wooh!" He exclaimed smiling after feeling the kick i guessed. A few minutes later we said our goodbyes and left. " Someone seems jealous" he said chuckling casually. I just ignored him, he did get it I was more pissed off than jealous. He tried to start a conversation there and then but I'd just give him a one word answer. We reached the building and he parked the car" good night" I said getting out and walking away. I didn't hear him getting out of the car or following me but I felt him holding my waist from behind, I was just near the elevator. I froze right there, there were a lot of people passing by. It was a friday after all. " What's wrong?" He asked pulling me closer to his body. I could feel his male rod giant thing even though it was not on. His chin on my right shoulder. " It's nothing" I said sighing softly. " Talk to me Il mio cuero batte, I can tell that there's something that's

haunting you" he said. " I don't know, something doesn't feel right. I lied when I said I was getting late. Amanda probably got here 5 minutes ago. I hated seeing your hand on her tummy. You all seemed like a happy family and—... I felt a lump in my throat. " You know that I love you , right?. I'd never let you go" that's all he said. My insecurities and fears were growing every single day. I nodded feeling better. " Ain't you going to give me a kiss" he turning me around. " People are watching" I said feeling shy. " Let them watch" he said then attacked me with the most affectionate kiss ever. I tried to pull out but failed, he was drawing me in. The kiss got me weak in my knees. "I'll call you later" he said after staring into my eyes, I was just blushing. I nodded and then quickly walked away. He was still standing there when I got in the elevator. I opened up the door and I couldn't believe what I saw. " Mandy!" I exclaimed unbelievably. She and Lethu were kissing on the couch. She quickly got off Lethu and stood as far away as possible from her. " It's not what you think...I, I, I—" ahh ash, no need to explain. Let me go and get my stuff" I said hands raised up. I couldn't

help but laugh out loud when I got into the room. I never would have guessed, but Amanda was surely not lesbian. I thought to myself. " Let's go" I said to Amanda after getting into the sitting room. She was awkwardly standing next to the door. Lethu was not around, she must have been into the room. " See you on Monday morning Lethu" I called out before we left," ain't you going to say goodbye to your lover" I said her before we got into the elevator. " Shut up Cora" she said looking embarrassed. I just giggled, all the hate she seemed to have against Lethu was just an act?.

.....

" I'm going to sleep" Amanda said after we FaceTimed with the parents. " Ain't we going to watch a tonight" I asked. " No, I am not feeling well. I'm just going to lay down. " She said already walking upstairs. " I should have known. " I said disappointed. It was around 21:00 I was watching a boring 1990s movie or rather it was watching me. My phone rang, I checked the call ID. It was Joaquin. " Baby wami" I answered excited and happy. " Mmh somebody

seems to be in a good mood" he said. " Why wouldn't I be when I caught my homophobic twin sister kissing a girl" I said giggling. Shame Amanda was swimming on hot water, I was going to laugh at her until she cried out loud. I just couldn't believe it. " Let me guess it must be the same girl you kissed. What is it, is she running a kissing booth of some sort for charity?" He asked sarcastically. " Mxm you're such a party pooper" i said huffing. " Anyways what did you want to talk about" I asked. " About what you said earlier. I have been thinking about it and yes I'll go for therapy sessions but there is a condition" he said seriously. " What's the condition" I asked curiously. " I'll go only if you'd go too" he said. " I think we both need to clear up our pasts for our relationship to work or else we'd keep on stumbling and falling on the same spot." He said reasonable. " Since you'll be there to hold my hand it's not a problem, I'll attend the therapy sessions. We will heal together." I said sighing. We talked about stuff until I fell asleep.

[6/3, 14:44] Lynne: Second chapter

Cora's pov

It was the third week of seeing the psychologist. His name was Dr TR Sokhuluma. He was brilliant at what he was doing, got me cry in every session but Salvatore was there. We attended every Monday to Friday evening, around 5:00 pm. We spent two hours, one hour each. I did not see any change because it was still early, all it did was to just relieve the sinking pains and sufferings from the past. It was yet another Saturday and I was at home reading the Italian dictionary which was translated into English. I was so tired of listen to Joaquin speaking the foreign language and I had to watch like a fool. I was also taking online classes for 30 minutes. And yes I took Amanda's advice and bought myself a new phone. It was worth R500, it was nothing much but at least it had a camera. Amanda had gone out with her girlfriend Lethu, whom she kept undercovers. I was all alone in the house, it was around 12:00pm. I was in my long black simple skirt and a blouse along with sleepers. I was sitting on the pool side, it was a

sunny day. I've been busy lately to the point where I knew no rest. So I decided to take the Sunday off and be by myself. Then my phone rang. " Mr Salvatore" I answer. " I am at the gate, check me in" he said shortly. " What are you doing here" I asked. " I miss you" he said shortly. " But we were together just yesterday" I said walking into the house so that I could make a call to the security in charge through the landline number. " Can't a guy just visit his girlfriend without any court trials" he said sounding pretty much annoyed. He has been moody lately. " Geez" I said then hung up and the made a call to the security. "I walked back to where i had left the dictionary and hid it away. 2 minutes later the doorbell rang, I opened up and walked in to the kitchen to make myself a cold drink. " He entered and followed me into the kitchen without saying a word. I was fed up with his tantrums, he had been giving me a cold shoulder lately. I poured lime juice, pieces of lemon and ice in to long two glasses. I put one on the side plate and offered It to him. I then took mine and walked out to the pool side. I said on the couch which was under the umbrella shades. I

saw him following me with the glass of lime juice and putting it on the side table as I had put mine. I was reading the fashion magazine which was always there or at least I was pretending to be reading. " Are you going to give me the silence treatment for the whole day." He asked sighing. " If need be, then yes" I said shortly. " I paid my father a visit today he wants to meet up with you. I think it would be a good idea if you both meet up at my birthday party this coming weekend." He said solemnly. " Did you tell him everything about us, about me. What i used to do. " I asked putting down the magazine. " Yes, he knows everything about you." He said leaning backwards on the couch. " I don't think I am ready to meet him" I said thoughtfully." Why" he asked shifting his whole attention to me. " What if he judges me, it was easier to meet your other siblings because they don't know the unholy trinity I used to get up to. I don't think I can" I said. " Cora, we have been together for 8 months now, I think it's time we took things seriously. My father has been looking forward to meeting you and I finally agreed and now you are telling me this"

he said a little bit upset. " What kind of a party do you normally host" I asked straying away from what he had just said. " It's high social standard, there's a new theme every year. Let me show you" he said paging his phone and giving it to me. I went through the pictures, beach theme, Paris theme, Pyjamas theme...etcetra

" I thought think I belong there" I said giving him the phone. I was just too standardized and perfect. " Please don't do this...stop looking down on yourself. You're perfect just the way you are, you've got an hour glass figure that I am crazy about, the perfect huge ass that I love. The perfect face and mature brains that I admire" he said making me blush, I could not look at him. " You'll come to the party and I'll introduce you to my social friends. It's not a request but a command" he added. I didn't say anything. " I'll be bored, I've seen some scenarios of this in movies. The guy keep on talking to there high profile friends forgetting about the girl and then she starts to drink a lot of wine. Embarrassments begins. I don't want that for myself" I said seriously. " That

will not happen in our case, I'll keep you by my side the whole time besides I wouldn't dream of let you out of my site with the kind of dress I've chosen for you" he said with a naughty smirk. " What dress, where is it." I asked curiously enough to get excited. " Relax, it will land in this Tuesday" he said. " You ordered a dress from overseas?" I asked. " Something like that" he said shortly. " How much is it" I asked concerned. I didn't want him to spend unnecessary money on me. " Expensive enough to make you the Queen of the night" he said holding my hand. " Mmh ok" I said lost in my thoughts. " Do you think your father will like me" I asked thinking about the whole thing. " He likes you already, he just wants to see you" He said. " Salvatore, I've been meaning to ask' what's going on with you these days'. You've been acting strange, you get upset for no apparent reason." I asked anyways. " The whole psychology situation doesn't feel right. He had no right to remind me about my so called mother. I hate that women" he said through gritted teeth. " Do you really hate her or you'd like to hate her. Maybe you are just mad at her, hate is such a strong word. Maybe it's about

time you two met and talked about things. Don't you have questions you want to ask her. I've been talking to Esihle lately and she says that no day pass by without your mother mentioning your name.

Forgiving her will set you free. " I said holding his hand tightly. " I don't want to talk about her il mio cuero batte, you wouldn't understand. She didn't think twice before leaving me on the front door of my father's house, I slept on the cold for the whole night and then I suffered from pneumonia. I was just a day old, let's forget about it, I'm doing just fine without her. She means nothing to me, I don't care wheather she's alive or dead." She half snapped. I got closer to him and put my head on his chest. " It's ok, I was just saying" I said. We stayed in that position for a long while, his heart beat had decreased to its normal rate. " Let's go to my house" he suggested. " I can't" I said. " Can't or won't" he asked." What will we be doing there besides I am on my menstrual period" I said. "Do I love sex that much, that you can't visit my house when it's a red flag down there" he asked chuckling unbelievably. " Love is an understatement. You adore sex, in fact you're

addicted" I said kidding. " Ohh yeah?" He asked giggling. " It's funny how you are the one who begs me to hit it while we're at it but now I'm the one who's addicted" he said mocking me. " That's it, you should get going" I said hitting his chest. " Ouch, what was that for" he asked. " For speaking the truth" I said laughing. " Mmh, so are we going?" He asked on a serious note. " I'll have to check with Amanda first and then we can take it from there." I said.

.....

Amanda's pov

I was in the mall of Africa with Lethu, my girlfriends. As Cora would like to say. I wasn't sure of how to describe our relationship. She was more of a friend with benefits than a girlfriend. She was beautifully made, so manly and attractive. Of course I was drawn to her the first day we met, I just didn't want to admit it that why I acted so hateful towards her. I was just so afraid I might end up loving her if I didn't

hate her. To be honest I was not a lesbian, I was just a woman who had been hurt and lied to by a couple of guys who didn't treat me right. I was so fed up with men, so I opted for women instead. The sex was great and flames, I liked her tattoos and piercings. My clothing style hasn't changed much since I was with her. She made me feel like a queen. I was happy but something was tempering with my happiness and it was called Michael Sullivan. I was wearing a pink little dress And laced high thigh boots. My blonde hair combed back. I was Wearing sunglasses and shiny lipgloss. I was looking fabulous. Lethu was wearing. Black leathers jacket and black jeans along with boots for man and sunglasses. We were having lunch at McDonald's . " So you mean to say that you won't be able to come with me" she asked. " Something like that, look I just think that it's too early for me to be meeting up with your friends. It's hardly been a month since you and I have been together" I said after dissipation on my bar one milkshake." That's what you said last week and on the first week. I'm tired of hearing the same thing over and over again" she snapped a bit pissed.

" Don't you dare shout at me, our relationship doesn't even have a description yet. What do you expect from me?" I said firmly. " I'll help you out on that part, I'm your damn girlfriend and you're mine. So now that we have a description of what has been confusing you can we get a serious talk about you meetings with my squad" she said so rude. One thing I learned about her was that she was short tempered and controlling other than that she was great. " I'm out of here" I said standing up only for her to pull me back down. We were sitting on a round circle. " I'm sorry" she said running her hands on her hair. " What's wrong with you" I asked so annoyed and angry. " I've failed one of my modules, my dad is not going to spare me this time. I'm just so stressed out. I don't know how to tell him this, plus I'm going home during the June holidays. I'm sorry for venting my frustrations at yah" she said. " Why didn't you tell me, I'm so sorry to hear that." I said hugging her. I let go of her after a while. " Everything will be okay, I'm here" I said. " Thank you for understanding" she said sighing heavily. We ordered the main course and ate. My twin sister

called me just when we were about to go out. " Coh" I answered. " Hey I've been wondering if I could leave you alone for this house" she asked. " Mmh, Mr muscles must be there" I said giggling. " Kinda" she said dragging the word. " It's fine, I'll be with Leah for the whole day anyways" I said putting my arm around Lethu's shoulders as we got out. " Ok, see you when I see then" she said then hung up. " Where to from here" she asked, hand on my waist. " Let's do some shopping and then You can drop me home" I said putting my phone in my purse. " You did shopping just last week." She complained. " There's something called window shopping plus it's my parent's money" I bragged. We walked around the shops, I picked what my eyes liked. High waist jeans, crop tops.panties, sunglasses and a few pair of shoes. I was carrying three shopping bags later on. Around 4:00 pm we were walking towards the car when suddenly car tires scratched besides us, then the black van doors opened. With just a blink of an eye i was dragged inside. I was screaming for help and Lethu tried to hold my hand but it was too late. My new clothes scattered all over the ground.the

door closed and the van drove off fastly. " Hello my lady" a voice said.

.....

Salvatore's pov

" I'll just go and pack a few of my stuff" she said going inside the house

I haven't been myself lately probably because my birthday was just around the corner. . Years ago I promised myself that I'd never look back into the past and feel sorry for myself but when my birthday is around the corner, it always hits me. That I was the unwanted child, that I never knew a mother's love or touch. I never knew how it felt like to be whipped and pampered a few minutes later. The therapy sessions were messing with my head too. I made sure to find a phycologist whom I could trust and who didn't put things down on recording device because that had a good chance of getting me behind the bars for a hundreds of years. I had put Telescope on the search for Cora's home. I wanted her to go back to her aunt and half siblings because

she mentioned them in every session, the process of healing seemed to be faster than mine. I was still on my high school many girlfriends while she was on the living on the streets part. She came back downstairs with her bags, trust a woman to say 'few' and then pack the whole wardrobe. " Let's go" she said. " Let me see, a laptop, sleepover bag, back packs and a purse. I am just wondering what does the word ' few' mean?" I asked chuckling. " Don't you dare insult my feminine side" she said smiling. " I was just wondering" I said smiling back. I put the bag on the back seat, closed the door and opened one for her. She got in and I closed it. On our way to my house, she received a phone call. " Hi Lethu" she answered. " What do you mean she has been kidnapped?... Ok . Calm down. Calm down. Tell me exactly what happened. Ohh. Have you tried the police station.... Ok i'll be there in a second" she said then hung up. " Amanda has been kidnapped, you gotta help me find my friend. What will I tell her parents. I'm so dead" she said in tear. I packed the car on the side of the road and got out. " Calm down , crying isn't going to help you in this situation." I said

opening her side of the door and getting her out. " Who was on the phone" I asked. She was in my embrace. " Lethu, her girlfriend" she said hysterically whipping. " Let me call her and find out what exactly happened." I said taking her phone from her hands. " This is Salvatore. I need the exact location where you were at when the incident happened. I need the time and the description of the vehicle" I said as soon as she answered. " We were in the parking lot, just Infront of the mall of Africa's entrance. It was around 4o'clock. I couldn't catch the number plate of the vehicle but it was a black polo Van" she explained fastly". I hung up and called Telescope immediately.

.....,.....

Narrated

" I need you to find me the location of this vehicle, a black polo vivo van. The owner just kidnapped Amanda an hour ago in the entrance of mall of Africa." He said fast. Kevin was typing down the

details on the other side. Cora couldn't stop crying. She had even got his shirt wet, her nose was runny and pink. " I'm working on it" Kevin said. Getting his laptop out of it bag he was on his way home from his company, hacking into the malls cameras. Saw the number plates, that made his job easier. Within just a few minutes he located the vehicles, he just laughed after reading the location. He called king Kong. " She is more than just safe" he said laughing. " What do you mean" Kong asked puzzled. " She is with Mr detective himself" he said. " Nxa, that twisted barstard. He'll pay for making my heart beat cry somuch" Salvatore said laughing. Cora just looked at him, confused. " Okay I have to go" Kevin said hanging up. " Il mio cuero batte, you can stop crying now your friend is with Michael" he said kissing her forehead. She sighed in relief. " But are you sure he's not going to hurt her" she asked suddenly worried. " He might be a jerk but he'd never harm a woman. Well at least not Amanda" he said eyebrows raised.

.....

Cora's pov

It was around 20:00pm, we were at the house, I had tried to call Mandy but her phone was not reachable. On the other side I didn't know what to tell Lethu, so I just told her we were still searching for Amanda. I had just took a shower and I was sitting on bed waiting for Salvatore to finish up bathing so that we could go and Catch a movie in the home cinema. Just then his phone rang, " your phone is ringing" I said taking it to him. He was sitting so relaxed on the bathingtub. " Could you please put it on loud speaker, my hands are wet" he said. I answered and put it on loud speaker. " Salvatore, my water just broke" Nina said on the other side of the line. My eyes popped up. " What do you mean" Salvatore asked looking confused and irritated all at once. " The baby is coming!" She screamed, Salvatore swiftly got out of the bathtub and wrapped a towel around his waist. " We're coming, call the ambulance" he said taking the phone into his hands.

[6/3, 14:44] Lynne: Second chapter

Page 32

Amanda's pov

" What nonsense is this, let me out" I shouted furiously angry. " Ma'am please, we're only doing our job. Please let us do what we've been hired to do" one lady said nicely but I could see that she was fed up. It's been two 4long hours since I've been there. Michael put me into some huge room with two bodyguards on the door and two ladies who were supposed to help me get dressed up. " Call Michael up, I want to have a word with him." I said and one of the ladies got a phone call. " Yes sir" she said. " It's for you" she said handing the phone over to me. I took it eyebrows raised, there he was on the screen, facetimeing me. " Michael you're so dead, it's been 4 hours let me go. I will not spare you" I shout over the phone. " Calm down my lady, but I must admit. You're pretty gorgeous when you're breathing fire" he said so calmly as if I hadn't shouldn't at him. I took a deep breath and relax, " please, I want to go home, get me out of here" I pleaded, God knows I hate

begging . " Ohh, now you're spoiling the fun" he said sarcastically. " I thought you were going to be breathing fire the entire night because believe me you, I'm not letting you go without seeing you in the sulking sophisticated gown I bought for you." He said solemnly all over sudden. " Ok, look. I will go out on a date with you... Lord give me strength to not poison this jerk" I murmured the last part to myself. " Just promise to let me go after this" I said faking a smile. " I don't make promises I can't keep. You have just one hour to get ready" he said with somuch attitude. " Argh!...ok fine." I said then hung up. " Let's do this" I said putting on my brave face.

.....

Cora's pov

It has been 4hours since we've been there, we were In the waiting room. I was feeling sleepy and Salvatore was restless. He kept on moving up and down, I was sitting on the couch. In a slump position. I kept on yawning," could you please sit down" i said sighing. " Tell you what I'll go and get us some coffee. Stop moving up and down already you're

making me feel dizzy" I said then I walked to the cafeteria, I made two cups of coffee and came back. I found him sitting down but still restless, he was tapping his foot down. " Here, drink this" I said. I was in my PJs and sleepers and gown, he was wearing jeans and a t-shirt along with sleepers and a jersey." Thanks" he said taking the coffee. "Have you thought about the baby names?" I asked trying to divert his mind." Baby names?" He asked looking puzzled. " Yeah for the baby" I said sitting down and crossing my leg over the other. " No, I haven't, a huge part of me still hope that it isn't my baby. I still doubt that it's my baby. I—" hey, there's no point in looking back now, let's just focus on the present and future. Let's just see what the DNA tests results will say after the baby is born. You should think about baby names just in case." I said. " You're just too perfect" he said so emotional. he was looking me in the eyes. " Aren't you scared of what the results might be. That's there's always going to be a link between Nina and I if the baby turns out to be mine. You should not even—" look, I don't want to talk about it. Let's not make this about me. Let's focus on the baby" I said

stopping the tears that were forming. I didn't want to look too much into things, " I love you, ok?" He said kissing me on the cheek. " Enough of this emotional shit, baby names?" I said smiling, at least I was try to. " I don't know, I haven't thought of any" he said running his hands on his hair. He then sipped his coffee, I had mine too. " How about Samuel" I suggested . " That's, no it's rusty. Too old" he dismissed my suggestion. " How about Paul?" I asked giggling. " As in, the biblical Paul?" He asked eyebrows raised.i nodded with my eyes closed, I wanted to burst into laughter. " No ways"he dismissed. " How about Michael" I suggest. " That's my friends name, who is by the way a jerk and a thug. Bad choice" he dismissed. " How about Alexander" he suggested. " Alexander the greatest?, He was gay if I am not wrong but since I am not homophobic. That could do" I said sarcastically. " How about Alonzo junior" I suggest, signalling the name in the air. " Forget it baby, there could only be one AJ" he said with so much elegance and pride. I just giggled in admiration, he looked so good. The way he said it was so charming. " Could you say that again" I asked

pulling the best puppy eyes out there. " Forget it baby, there could only be one AJ" he repeated it exactly the way I wanted it. I giggled one more time. " You're insane" I said laughing, " and you're the same"he said.

.....

" Argh forget it, you seem to dismiss every name I come up with. We've been doing the same thing for almost an hour now. I'm tired." I said irritated. " Come on, you've been doing the same thing to the names I suggested too" he said chuckling casually. " Whatever Nina decided will be fine, as long as you are happy with it I'll be happy too. But please tell your ex girlfriend not to come up with those typical ancient Zulu names. Some of us will have a problem in pronouncing that" I said provoking him on purpose. " Come on, ex girlfriend, really?" He said kinda provoked but then something crossed my mind. " Wait a minute... I'm sure you're going to like this one." I said with a smile. " I'm listening" he said not so listening like he said he was. " How about Lorenzo" I suggested. " Lorenzo, as in happiness.

Wow, it's brilliant" he said thinking out loud. " I stumbled upon it while doing some research online" I said before he could ask. " I must say it's a beautiful name but this doesn't define our situation at hand. I mean under which he was conceived" he said. " Like I have said before, Let's forget about the past and focus on the present and future. A baby brings happiness in parent's lives, I'm sure he is going to be a bundle of joy too" I said but not so convinced with my own words. But he was. " Mr Salvatore congratulations, you're now a father to a handsome, healthy baby boy" the doctor said as he got into the waiting room. " Wow, he's here" Salvatore exclaimed unbelievably, he was not as excited as a father should be. " Doctor can we see him" I asked standing up. " Of course, I guess my job here is done" he said then left. Salvatore started on with the walking up and down. " Let's go and see the baby" I said, he just looked at me eyes popped out. " No!, I can't" he said shortly. " Hey, what's wrong" I asked. Holding his face from the sides. " If I see that baby, I'm going to get emotionally attached to it, it's for the best that I wait for the results. Yeah, I'll wait. Let's go home" he

said getting out of the Waiting room. " Hey what are you saying, we've been sitting here for the whole night and now you're telling me that you can't see the baby?" I asked holding his arm. " Let's not do this, there's no harm in waiting. I'll just have to call Dr Davis so that he could do the tests. It's better to be safe than sorry. Now can we get going" he said seriously. " Okay" I said and then he drove home. It was around 03:00 am when we got there.

.....

Amanda's pov

I was wearing a pink long suede dress. Which had tiny laces strapped on shoulders, it was bare from the upper back to above my butt. I was wearing it along with silver 3inch heels which had diamonds on. My makeup was perfect but the only thing that was missing was a smile on my face. I looked like Miss universe. The bodyguards opened the door for me, I realized that I was in a hotel as soon as I got out. They walked with me in the lobby, we entered an elevator. I just wanted to get it over and done with, I missed my phone which was taken from me without

my concern. Then we reached the reception of the hotel. There was a party going on there, it was classic and old-fashioned. There were all sitting down and having dinner if I could even call it that. Most of the people there were wrinkled and aged between 40-60. " This way miss" the bodyguard said walking me towards the end of the tables. The reception was separated into two parts or so I noticed. The part where they were leading me was dimmer in light than the other one. As soon as I entered I spotted the jerk, he was sitting on a small round table. He stood up like a gentleman would, I increased my pace, raised my hand to slap him but he caught my hand just in time. " Behave Yourself, my lady" he said with a smirk on his face. " Care to sit down?" He said offering me a chair. He did it so perfectly like we were in some 1080s movies or something. He was in a black tuxedo with black bow tie. It was so skin tight that I could actually see his abbs. I sat down with so much fury. Lethu must be worried sick, what lie would I have to tell. A thought crossed my mind. " What would you like to have tonight" he asked offering me the menu. I took it

with a fake smile, to get out of there ASAP I had to play along. " How about we share the meal, let's say sushi platter for two?" I suggested putting down the menu. " Good" he said then clicked his fingers to get the waitresses's attention, he then placed the order. Garlic bread and butter was brought to the table for starters. " Let me ask you a question, what do you plan on achieving with all this unnecessary drama. I mean kidnapping me, really?" I asked, spreading the butter on the garlic bread. The waitress came back with a bottle of white wine." Leave it, I'll pour it up myself. " He dismissed the waitress with a hand gesture. His eyes on me. " Let's see, achievement? Non but i can see the end game here. You will end up with me Amanda. I can bet my life on that" he said with so much confidence that I felt like slapping him. " Stop deceiving yourself, which world do you live in. Get off your high horse, know what I wouldn't dare look at you even if you were the last men on earth" I said so pissed. " That's so ironic, there are a thousand men in the world but still you're here, looking at me." He said chuckling. " I didn't mean it literally you fool" I said rolling my eyes. " Have you

wondered why you behave so hateful towards me. I mean if you didn't feel a thing for me then You wouldn't be this fuming" he said, he had a smart mouth. " Whatever theory that's streaming down your foolish brains forget it. For your information I don't behave hateful, I hate you period. You're such a jerk, so arrogant and rude, so foolish and stupid. you kidnapped me for goodness sake if that isn't an enough reason to hate you then I don't know what would be" I snapped through gritted teeth. I didn't want to attract unwanted attention to myself. " You're right, what would be" he agreed sarcastically. He poured two glasses of wine. " I don't drink" I said after he was done. " Ohh, more wine for me then" he said seriously. " Does that girl know that you don't feel a thing for her, you're just using her to feel better. To feel secure and fearless. To not worry about being hurt" he said so solemnly. " I don't know what you are talking about,excuse me can I get a glass of still water" I asked the waiter who was passing by. " Yes ma'am" he said then left. " Anyways our relationship is not about the stupid thing called love. " I added defensive. " Ohh really, what is it about

then" he asked inquisitive. " Well... ummh, its basically about respect, caring for each other and other stuff I don't want to mention" I said, there was a lump in my throat. I was suddenly feeling hot. The waiter came back with my water just in time. I retrieved the bottle from his hand while he was getting it opened. " Thanks, you can leave" I said pouring it into the glass he had brought. " You can go ahead and say sex, is the dildo that good that you'd actually leave the really dick for it" he asked. " That's just it, didn't your mother teach you to have good manners. Disgusting marn." I exclaimed pissed. " She did a good Job on that department but then again my father taught me to call a spade a spade and a shovel a shovel" he said with no regrets. The sushi came around, we dugged in. I was starving to death. " You might want to slow down before you chock" he said but I pretended as if I didn't hear him. I wiped my lips after I felt full and drank up the glass of water. " Now that I am done eating can I go home" I said leaning backwards. " Not so fast....that dress looks perfect on you, just like i had imagined. " He complicated me with a lots of stinking attitude

though. " Whatever man" I said rolling my eyes. He paid the bill after we sat there for another hour, talking useless things. We got into this limousine back and it drove off. " I must say, you are such a fast quieter" he said. " What do you mean" I asked. " One day you'll know, when we're older and looking back to this moment together. After our five kids have given us 10 grandchildren" he said staring at me. I could feel his looks piercing through my skin. " Dream on grandpa" I said. From the view outside the window I could tell that he was taking me home. An hour later we reached there, the window rolled down and i check in with the security in charge. The car stopped Infront of my house. He opened the door for me and got out in the process. " I hope I never see you again" I said walking away from him. " Hey stop!" He said, kind of screamed. Scared me in the process. " What now" I asked turning around. " What is this on your head, don't move. I think it's a spider" he said. My whole body just froze, I had phobia of spiders. I felt my adrenaline rush, my heart thundering. . He moved closer and closer until he was 4inchs from me. " Please get it off, please" I pleaded with my

eyes closed. And then I felt his lips on mine. I was so shocked, I quickly opened up my eyes. I was dumbfounded but then I came back to me, I pushed him away with so much fury. " What do you think you are doing?" I asked so angry. " Giving you a good night kiss... good night my lady." He said blowing me a kiss. I just showed him my middle finger. " Don't you think it's too early for fucking, have some decency it's our first date after all. " He said with a smirk. " Fuck you, you perverted son of a bitch" I cursed. " Like I said before, it's too early for that. Maybe we can fuck on our third date" he said sarcastically. I felt like strangling him. " Ohh you forget this" said throwing me my purse, which I didn't forget because I didn't have it. Which he recently got from the driver. I opened the door and got inside the house so frustrated.

.....

Narrated

Salvatore, Cora and Nina were sitting in Dr Davis's office 3days later. Cora's heart was pounding heavily, Salvatore impatiently waiting, Nina so relaxed and

breastfeeding her new born baby. " So what does it say" Salvatore asked as the doctor had opened the DNA results envelope. " Congratulations Mr Salvatore, the results state that 99,99% you're the father." Dr Davis said. Cora was drumstick, the words kept playing over and over again in her head, her palms sweaty. Heart thundering, even though she had acted brave and supportive of the whole baby thing. Some part of her still wished and hoped that the baby wouldn't be Salvatore's. " Let me see" Salvatore half snapped not believing what the doctor had said. He snatched the paper from the doctor and saw the results for himself. " I am the father?" He said eyes shrieked. " Now that we all know the truth can my baby get named" Nina said out of nowhere. " Shut up nina" Salvatore said reading the results one more time. " Excuse me" Cora said getting up and getting out of the office. She ran into the elevator as soon as she got out. " Cora wait" Salvatore called out but Cora was long gone by then. She took a taxi to the HP student's building and got under a shower when she got there. Meanwhile while, " cayou take us home now." Nina said. Salvatore didn't have the

energy to deal with her. He drove them to her apartment and drove straight home. It was no point following cora, he decided to let her calm down and take it all in. " Where is she" he asked one of the bodyguards. " She just got into the building sir" he said. " Keep a close eye on her, make she doesn't do anything stupid" he ordered. " Yes sir" he said. Salvatore then hung up.

[6/3, 14:45] Lynne: Page 33

Salvatore's POV Like I
said the baby is mine" I said running my hand on my hair. " How is Nina coping with all of this" grandma asked concerned about Cora. My grandparents had come a two days ago. But grandpa chose to go and live with his son who happens to be my father. " I don't know grandma, she took off before we could talk" I said sighing heavily and leaning back on the couch. " I don't know how she's going to see me after all this, she is just too young to be a stepmother. She's a kid herself, she is just too good for me. You should have seen how we were arguing about the baby names that night. It was as if the

baby is hers. What if she doesn't want anything to do with me anymore. I've broke her heart a couple of times now. You know, she tends to let go of the things that hurt her. I cannot lose her, Lei é l'unica regione per cup il core batte ancora Nel Patti(she is the only reason my heart beats within my chest)." I said, the thought that she might want to take a break from us or even worse breakup with me kept running in my mind. " From what I've seen, she will not be able to live without you. I could tell from the way she was looking at you back in Rome. She is your soulmate. She might run and hide but she will always come back to you. And I think she has cooled down enough you must go and talk to her" she said looking at her wrist watch. It was 17:28pm. " How do you know all that stuff" I asked curiously. " Well, I was once young too. I too happened to fall in love a couple of times. And the love you have for each other is a blessing. It's so rare in these days." She explained " go already" she said slapping me slightly on the cheek. " I'll see you ton... soon" I said thoughtfully. She just giggled and I took my car keys and left.

.....
Cora's pov

I don't know when I had fallen asleep but I was woken up by someone shaking my body. I opened up my eyes, rubbed them and set up straight. I had a nose block, " hey" he said looking at me. I could see pity in his eyes. I stood up and walked to the bathroom, peed, washed my face and brushed my teeth. I came back to the bedroom and sat down on bed. " What are you doing here?" I asked sighing. He didn't answer my question. We set like that, in silence. He took off his white sneakers and got closer to me. I was leaning on the wall. He set closer and leaned back on the wall like I was. He held my hand but didn't say anything. " You've been crying ll mio cuero batte" he said. I didn't say anything. " Your pillow case is wet. " He added. I just sighed without saying anything. I didn't know what to say or how to react towards him. But my tears said a lot, I held his hand back and tightened the grip. " I'm sorry" he said after a while. " So what now?, Are you going to leave

me. I know it's too much to take, I wouldn't blame you" he said sounding so said. He leaned his head on top of mine. " Even if i wanted to, I wouldn't be able to. My life feels miserable without you in it. I can't remember what it was like before you came. It feels like I've known you for years. Qui. He t'aime total enemy, trendrement tragiquement. Famille parfaits oupas, je t'ime , quoi quéil arrive L'Amour n'est pus péché, et jevous some pair l'eternite. (I love you totally, tenderly, tragedicaly. I love you no matter what and I love you for eternity" I said tears streaming down my face. He titled my head so that I looked at him. He kissed me through my tears. " Te amo Il mio cuero batte" he said with so much love and affection. Right there I knew that he was my lifeline, my ride or die. He hold me tight against his chest. I got out of his embrace and looked him in the eyes. He wiped away my tears. " I don't like to see you cry" he said seriously. I sighed softly and" how is grandma?" I asked trying to divert the intense feelings and emotions. " She's fine, the baptism ceremony is tomorrow morning, would you please come with me" he asked. I nodded emotionless, it

was a Wednesday. " I'm hungry" I said standing up and he stood up too. " I'll order pizza, can we talk a bit" he said standing Infront of me. " Talk?, About" I asked confused. " Yeah, sit down" he asked, made a phone call to order pizza.he then set down after that. " We haven't talked about how you really feel about this whole thing. We must figure a way forward, discuss how the whole baby thing is going to work" he said as we were sitting on the edge of the bed. " Aren't you supposed to be discussing that with the mother of the child" I asked eyebrows raised. " I don't know how I feel about all of this, I'll know as the time goes by. I must say that I was hurt when the results were read. I felt so betrayed and cheated even though it's not like that. I guess I just have bad fate." I added. " Mmh, I want to discuss the visiting arrangements. Will it be okay with you if I go to Nina's to see the baby. "He asked. " I don't know Alonzo!" I said a little bit louder than I intended. " Sorry" I said sighing softly. " That was unnecessary, I'm just asking because I don't want to encounter any problems with you in the future. You know what I am leaving. " he said standing up. " I know and I am

sorry for raising my voice" I said standing up and hugging him from behind. My hands on his chest, "and no I don't want to see you with that women, I don't. She's just so cunning. You could go and get the baby on the days you'd agree on, come back to your house and I'd come to assist you" I said leaning my head on his back. " This means that you don't trust me" he said pissed off. " No, I do. It's her that I don't trust" I said holding him tightly. " I just don't want to lose you, you're my home Joaquin" I said, acting so vulnerable and desperate. I hated it, I hated the feeling. I hated life it'self. He turned around and held me tight. " It's okay, it's okay" he said. " We'll find a way to settle things right, I'd never dream of cheating on you let alone leave you for another woman. You're my heart beat" he said squeezing me. I wondered what life would have been like if I didn't meet him that fateful night, maybe I'd still have had my sanity and control over myself. Maybe I'd still have been so clueless about unconditional love, maybe I'd still be clueless about the hollow bitter scary feeling of losing him. I wouldn't have cried somuch just in few months. We stayed like that for

what felt like eternity. He kissed me all over my face, planting a smile on my face. " How about we forget about that pizza and I take you out" he said holding my tiny waist. " I'd like that" I said smiling. " Let's go then" he said. " With these clothes I'm wear" I asked eyebrows raised. " What are people going to think" I added" you know, you gotta stop thinking about what people think rather focus on what you think of yourself. Put your sleepers on and let's go.

[6/3, 14:45] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's pov

He took me to some fancy restaurant. We were the only one wearing out of place clothes but he didn't give a damn. He was wearing white Jordan retro sneakers and puma tracksuits. I was wearing my white lose sweater and leggings, my hair was kind of messy. After we were finished having dinner he suggested that we drive around the city without any destination, the radio was playing on the low profile. It's was the East coast radio and they were playing the 80–90s songs. It was like a dream, I had forgotten about all my worries, it was just him and I.

" What does Alonzo mean?" I asked out of nowhere. I was just curious and I loved the name. " Why do you ask?" he asked glancing at me. " I'm just asking, answer me already." I said impatiently. " Okay!...it means noble and ready" he said chuckling casually. " Wow..." That's all I could say. " It's quite me, isn't" he said so arrogantly. " Don't flirtter yourself Mr Salvatore" I said rolling my eyes. " You're jealous, I have such a cool name" he said with somuch attitude. " I shouldn't have asked, get over it" I dramatically said, annoyed. " What does your name mean?" He asked. " You're my boyfriend you should know" I said. " Awwh, is that so?. If so then how come you didn't know my name" he asked making sense. " Okay, I guess we're even" I said hands raised up. " It's from a Spanish name, Corazon. Which means heart, Cora means heart, maiden" I explained. " Mmh, I should have known. This proves it, you really are my heart beat. My Cora beat" he said making me laugh. " My Cora beat? what the. I like " il mio cuero batte" really. The way you pronounce it with you Italian accent sets butterfly in my tummy" I said giggling. " Ohh wow, finally she admits. I never

thought I'd hear this" he said hitting the steering wheel with so much joy and madness. " What the... I also did not know that I was in love with a mad man" I said giggling, eyes popped out. " Like really Cora, you never praise me. Let alone compliment me. Seriously though I am the only one who does that in this relationship" he said not so laughing. " That's a lie, I do praise you, remember the time when I complimented your eyes and the time when I, when I, when— OK you're right. But I do it internally." I finally admitted after failing to remember the times when I complimented him. " I also want to hear it, like I always compliment your hour glass figure and your pretty face." He said. " But Alonzo" I said sulking dramatically. " Besides you already know that you have a body to die for, the beautiful eyes the smile that turns me on." I said seductively. I swear I saw him blush, I guessed man also likes to be praised. " Go on, I'm listening" he said smiling. " The magical voice and Italian accent that sends electric shocks to my spine. The giant cucumber that I love" I said the giggled in the end. " Giant cucumber?" He asked eyebrows raised. " Yeah, the third leg that makes me

lose all my senses" I said and he bursted into laughter. " I didn't know that junior here, already has a name" he said giggling. " We should name our first daughter Corazon" he said out of nowhere. " What daughter, I ain't giving you any babies mister, you want to ruin my perfect figure" I said so sessy. " We shall see about that" he dared me. " Know what, make that 2girls and 4boys" he said making my Ed eyes to pop. " You want to get my valley of fire wrinkled dead flesh. How selfish of you and then you'd start saying things like it's not hot anymore. You'd start looking at other women" I said eyes popped out. " Ohh poor valley of fire" he said giggling, I could not help but laugh. We drove in silence for a while. " I'm happy, in fact you make me happy" I said thinking out loud. " I do?" He said it more like a statement. I nodded eyes sparkling with Joy. " Ohh, I totally forgot about the therapy sessions" I exclaimed remembering. " Don't worry I called the doctor earlier and told him we wouldn't be able to make it tonight" hr said and I sighed in relief. "Let's go to my apartment now, it's quite late" I said looking at the time. " But I am still enjoying this lovely drive,

being with you. This carefree and happy. Let's take another one hour and then we can drive to your place. Have a hot steamy session before we go to bed" he said so naughty. " Ahh, ain't we meeting up with the pastor tomorrow. The babies baptism ceremony?" I asked. " Yes, we're, what does that have to do with our private bedroom session?" He asked. " I have to be clean Infront of the Lord, it doesn't feel right to get engaged in such activities and then go to church in the following morning" I explained. " You're kidding right?" He asked unbelievably glancing at me. " No, I'm serious" I said . " Fine but after the ceremony, I'm taking you to my penthouses" he said a little bit upset. " Tomorrow I have back to back classes I need to attend. I'll finish around 16:00pm and the I'd have to study for the test which I'll be writing on Thursday." I explained, " that's fully two weeks of not having sex, you're starving me Cora" he said upset. " I'm sorry baby wami." I said putting my arm around his shoulder. " Maybe we will see each other after the party" I said, playing with his ear. " There's an after party after the party" he said sighing. " We'd have the weekend to

ourselves then. I'll not go home. We will make love until we lose consciousness. I promise" I said. " That's a lot to promise, it's a death sentence" he said kiddingly.

.....,

We were at the Catholic Church early in the morning before I could go to school around 10;00am. Nina had the baby in her arms, shushing him. I haven't gotten a chance to see the baby. She was wearing a black knee-length simple dress. I was wearing an ankle length White flare dress with red bottoms. I was sitting down next to grandma, grandpa and Mr Salvatore senior were sitting next to each other. Salvatore and Nina were standing Infront of the Catholic priest, who was sprinkling the baby with holy water. He drew a cross on the baby's forehead using the holy oil. He then put a hand on the babies forehead and blessed him. " Full names of the baby please" the priest asked standing Infront of the podium and writing on something. The baptism certificate, I guessed. " Lorenzo Mongezi Salvatore" Alonzo said. I was quite surprised by that, I must say.

" The god father and mother may come forward"the priest said but no one stood up. " Father and Cora would you please come forward" Joaquin said without even looking at us. " What do you think are you doing?" Nina asked pissed off. My Salvatore and I stood up and went to stand in line along with them. " Nina please" Salvatore said through gritted teeth. " Here's the god mother and father priest" Salvatore said. The priest put his hands on top of our heads and blessed us. The ceremony was finished around 8:00 and we walked outside the church. " Father, meet my girlfriend Cora" Salvatore introduced me to his father who took my hand and kissed it. " It's nice to finally get to meet the famous Cora" he said, so charming. " It's nice to meet you too sir, Joaquin has told me a lot about you" I said with a smile. I guessed no one could cheat fate. We were supposed to meet up on Friday but we ended up meeting up sooner than that. " You must really be a queen of hearts to have managed to melt his frozen heart" he said hitting Joaquin's chest. " Papa, my heart was not frozen. It was just secured and waiting for her to enter the correct password" he said. Now I knew

where he got the charming character. " Whatever you say son. " He said smiling. They had the same eyes. " I'll see you on Friday my beautiful daughter in-law" he said leaving. " She's mine pal, hold your horses" Salvatore said warningly. " Radja that Sir" Mr Salvatore said saluting like a soldier. Nina was waiting near the car while the grandparents were inside with the priest. " Let's go already" she said irritated. We both giggled and went over to the car. The grandparents had one of Salvatore's drivers driving them in a limo." Get into the limousine Nina, I'm going to drop Cora at school" he said holding my hand as we walked towards the car. " But I came in this car" she huffed angrily. The three of us had come in the same care. " You know what, fine get in" Salvatore said irritated. " Hold the baby" she said giving the baby to Salvatore. He took the baby, she opened up the door and got in. That's when I got the chance to look at the baby properly, he was beautiful. " My baby please" she said spiteful because I was looking at the baby. Salvatore gave him the baby, opened the door for me and I got in. He got in and drove off.

[6/3, 14:45] Lynne: Page 34

Salvatore's POV

I parked outside the university of Johannesburg, I got out and opened the door for Il mio cuero batte. " You look extra hot today" I said as she got out. She took her bag and closed the door. " You don't look bad yourself" she said smiling." Are you sure we can't get a private room" I asked pinning her against the car. " Babe! I have a class in 30 minutes" she said looking at her wrist watch. My giant cucumber was hardening. She put her bag down and put her hands around my neck, her fingers massaging the back of my head. " We will get a private room on Friday night, I promise but for now I have to go to class." She said giving me a peck on the lips. I got even more closer to her so that she'd feel me. " Feel what you've done to me" I said looking down at her, " this is not fair" she complained, her breathing hitched. " Can I go now?" She asked looking away. " Can I get a goodbye kiss?" I asked. She looked at me with helplessness. I took her soft lips into mine, invaded her mouth with my tongue, we were French

kissing. She tried to resist but she ended up giving in. My hands moved from her waist to her huge butt. I was squeezing it, she was moaning. Making my junior to bulge out even more. " Mmh... Joaquin. Stop!" She said trying to get out of my grip. I could tell by the look of her body language that she was as much as turned on as I was. " Stop it... I'll call you later." She said in her tiny little voice. " I love you" I called out as she was walking away. " I love you" she said after looking back at me. I got inside the car and started the engine. I drove away. " What do you see in her?" Nina asked after a long time of silence, I was caught up in my dreamland. " Excuse me!" I said looking at her through the rearview mirror. " She can't even handle you, look at the way she ran away. So childish, how old is she, 16?" she asked do seriously. " I could do better than her, I love you Salvatore. Just come back to me and we can be a family. Just you,me and Lorenzo" she said solemnly that I almost thought she was mad. She looked like she was about to cry. " Nina, you tried to trap me with the baby. You did this to yourself when you chose to make a hole in that condom. I can never

love you, I never did. I'm only tolerating you because of my son. I love Cora, just get over it" I managed to say without shouting. " She makes me feel alive, she makes me want to be a better person." I added. " Ohh please that's just pathetic" she said so skankly rolling her eyes. " We must talk about how we are going to spend time with the Lorenzo" I said changing the subject, it was no use trying to reason with her. " finally, I can't even sleep at night when he cries" she said sounding so irritated. " I'll come back with my lawyer to your place around 15:00. We will sign an agreement form" I added ignoring what she just said. " I think I'll need a nanny for the Lorenzo, he drives me nuts sometimes" she said seriously. " Nina, you're on maternity leave, what do you need a nanny for when you're always home. You're not getting any nanny, it's hardly been a week since the baby has been born and you're already throwing tantrums." I snapped a bit. I was so angry but I didn't channel all my anger because there was a baby on board. " I also need a break, besides I am going back to work in two months time. I will need a nanny. I might as well start getting one now" she said, she

knew better than to shout at me. " We will cross that bridge when we get there" I said parking in the parking lot of the building she lived in. I got out of the car and opened the door for them. I took the baby from her arms, she got out with the two bags. One for hers and one for the baby. She closed the door and I locked the car with the remote controller key. I walked towards the elevator and pressed the button for it to open up. We waited for a while and then the elevator opened. I was busy looking at my handsome son, who was sleeping. His lips pouted, right there I fell in love with him. I knew I'd do absolutely anything to keep him safe and happy. She pressed the button of her floor and the elevator closed, went up. We walked to her apartment, which had a sitting room, kitchen, dining room, 2 bedrooms and 1 bathroom. " Hey boy, papa is here" I said looking at the baby who had suddenly opened his eyes. He had black colored eyes, from her mother I guessed. " Would you like some tea" Nina asked. " No thanks" I said playing with Lorenzo. He was so cute and too quiet, he looked too serious for a 4 days old baby. I played with him for a while, I wasn't even

sitting down. She was watching having tea with biscuits. I waited until she finished. " Take care of him, I have to go" I said giving her the baby. " You're leaving already" she asked sounding hurt. " I have got businesses to run" I said as she took the baby. " You're going back to her ain't you" she shouted, the baby cried upon hearing noises. " What the?... Are you crazy. There's a baby in here for fuckers sake" I said through gritted teeth. " Take care of the baby, I have a meeting in an hour" I said leaving. I really had an agent meeting with one of my underground clients. He was from Dubai and then after that I had to meet up with George, my lawyer.

.....

" And you attended?" Amanda asked as we were sitting in the sitting room with the girls. "Yeah, I love him. Besides It's not like he cheated on me" I said shrugging my shoulders. " I bet you would've forgiven him even if he did. Looking at you leaving all this hotness for that ugly nigga" Lethu said referring to herself. " With all due respect baby, I think Mr

Muscles is way more hotter than you" Amanda said clearing her throat. I just laughed out loud. " Shut up you traitor" Lethu shouted. Making the both of us laugh even more louder. It was around 16:15 pm, I had just came from class 15 minutes ago. I had freshened up a little bit and joined them lovers in the sitting room of our small apartment. Amanda had lied to Lethu about the kidnapped and worse she made me a part of that lie. She convinced Lethu that is was just a prank, Salvatore and I kidnapped her just to scare her. And when she called I pretended to be worried. Yeah it would've been a good prank only if it was not a lie. And why Amanda would like for that jerk called Michael, I didn't know. Anyways, there was a knock on the door around 16:20 and I opened up, it was Joaquin who i had been waiting for. " sorry I am late" he said before he even entered. " Let me go and get my handbag" I said as he got in. " You must be the girl who tried to snatch my wife from me" he said pointing at Lethu. " Indeed, it's me in flash" Lethu said so boyish. I went and came back with my bag. " I think you and Michael should meet, what do you think Amanda" Salvatore said looking at

Amanda who was dumbfounded. " Alonzo, let's go" I said pulling his arm. " See you soon Mandy" he said laughing. We left, " what was that about" I asked sighing as we entered into the elevator. " Relax, i was just kidding" he said casually. " That was not cool, anyways tried to call you but your phone was not going through. What happened" I asked arms folded around my chest. " Ohh, I should have told you earlier in the morning. I had a meeting with my client around 11:00 and from 13:00 I had to meet up with my lawyer and Nina" he explained. " Nina?" I asked. I was about the division of Lorenzo's time monthly" he explained. " How did that work out" I asked. Ignoring the fact that he didn't even let me know earlier. " Perfectly fine actually, I didn't expect that but there was no drama considering the fact that it concerned Nina. I was quite surprised. We've got 15 days each" he said. "Ohh, so how are you going to manage with the baby. Are you going to hire a nanny" I asked curiously. " The process will start in two months time, when Nina will be going back to work" he said. " Ohh, OK" I said asking no further questions, I was so mad at constantly hearing the name 'nina'. " How

was school" he asked as we got into the car. " School was school, nothing special except the we we have lots of work since the test and assignments are here" I said sighing heavily, I was just so tired. I needed a break from everything, " you look like you could use a break" he said reading my mind. I nodded my eyes closed. He buckled me up and drove to the psychologist's office. The sessions went out perfectly fine except for the fact that for the first time I heard the Kylie Smith story. I had to deal with the alive Nina and then it was the dead Kylie. How much can one person take, he mentioned that the day I chased him away he went to her grave and cried over there. I was just so puzzled by the whole story, I was reminded of what his friend from Italy had said. " Are you ok" he asked putting his hand on my thigh as he was driving me back to my apartment. " Yeah, yeah. I'm fine" I said getting back to planet earth. " Have you had something to eat, he asked looking concerned. " Yeah, I have a sandwich during brunch time. " I said, looking at the beautiful lights of the city. " He didn't say anything but drove to a restaurant and we have a full meal and then he

dropped me off at my apartment, drove to his house. I took a quick shower and got started on my books. I slept around 01:00am.

.....

The test was an easy A for me. I got back to the apartment after it besides. I had no classes after it. " It was around 13:00 I was trying to take a nap when Amanda walked in to my bedroom making noise. " What the fuck..." I cursed sitting upright. " Girl get your handbag, I'm taking you out" she said so bubbly. " Amanda, I was to sleep please" I said sulking. " What's up with you, you've been so busy lately that you forgot about your little twin sister" she said looking upset. " Ok, just one hour. I have a therapy sessions I need to attend" I said going to the bathroom. " Rich people, you guys have money to waste. You look just fine to me. You don't need a psychologist telling you shit" she said, " we talked about this, please" I said. Putting a little bit of makeup and fixing my curly hair. " Sorry" she said. I changed into skinny jeans and boots along with the sweater I was wearing the other day. We went to

Mug and Bean, we had their scrumptious huge muffin and cappuccino. I swear no muffin tastes like theirs. " She asked you about Michael" I asked giggling. " Yeah, I was so shaking. I almost peed on myself. She can be very intimidating" she said giggling. " What did you say" I asked curiously. " Something like Michael was a gay guy. Can't remember exactly" she said thoughtfully. " Michael should hear this" I said with a naughty smile. " No, no. You wouldn't dare. Don't even think about it, you want that crazy lunatic to kill me" she said shaking her head....." The guy said you look similar to his dead ex" she asked. " Not exactly, he said I did crazy stuff and moaned like her when I eat" I said, confused myself. " Have you talked to him about it, I mean have you asked him" she asked so serious. " No, I'm afraid of what his answer might be" I said softly. " I think you should" she said.

[6/3, 14:46] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's POV

It was around 20:30, we were coming from the session, it was so quiet in the car. " Why...—" we said at the same time. " You go first" I said clearing my throat. " No, ladies first" he said. " Why do you love me Joaquin, I mean the main reason." I asked seriously. " Where is this coming from" he asked giving me a weird side glance. " Please just answer me" I said not wanting to divert from the question. " No, really I want to know why you are suddenly asking me this. We've been through this Cora" he said with a high pitched voice. " Do you love me because I remind you of Kylie Smith. Is that why you've been so generous and kind to me. Have you been pretending to love me this whole time. Cause really I can not seem to find a reason why a man like you could possibly fall for a girl like me. Considering the fact that I was a prostitute, I highly doubt it. " I said a little bit louder than I intended. " Tell, I want the whole truth, I'll take it like a strong woman that I am" I said but there was a lump in my throat, I was just putting on a brave acting, there was no way that I

could handle the truth. " You want the truth?" He said pissed. " Yes" I said in a husky voice. " Yes, there are things that reminded me of Kylie when we first met. But you also had your special unique qualities that I love. You acted so mature and brave but yet so childish. I love you for you, I've told you this before" he said parking the car on the side of the road. " If I didn't love you, if I wanted to replace Kylie trust me dear you wouldn't even be here with me. I wouldn't even have agreed upon seeing a psychologist. I would have bought you from the auction, clearly you don't know me. And please stop telling me about the prostitution thing, I already knew that when I was busy searching for you. What do you really want from me so that you could see that I love you, do you want me to get water from the moon?" He asked huffing. I was just looking at him, blinking a couple of times. " I agreed to attend this therapy treatment because I wanted to get over her, her memories. The guilt" he said said miles away from planet earth. " Do you still love her" I asked in a tiny voice. He looked at me for a while before answering my question. " I don't know, maybe I do. She's a part of me, she was

the first girl I've loved but I love you more" he said. My heart just sank and I nodded. Not knowing what to do with the information I had just got. " You know that her death wasn't your fault, right?" I said holding his hand. " I'm trying to convince myself that it wasn't, that it isn't. Believe me I am" he said so emotionally exhausted and wracked up. actually the whole story was finished on that day, he had taken Kylie Smith out. It was her birthday but she was not allowed to go out. Even he was not allowed to go out but being young and stupid they sneaked out and went to a club.they were coming back at night, they were drunk, they got into a car accident, they later on found out that their car was tempered with but by then it was too late she was already dead. It hit Salvatore so hard that he indulged himself in drugs, went to a rehab. Came back and avenged her death. That was how he started to be a gangster. He killed a lot of men including The Don's father, who was involved in Kylie's death. Mr Salvatore senior and Mr Smith were gangsters and friends back then but Mr Smith died a few years after his daughter was murdered. Salvatore's father sent him to training

after he killed three man in a bar. They covered it all up that was why he never got arrested. He came back after 3years of training and finished what he had started. Became a bitter beast he was. " You have to forgive yourself in order to heal" I said tightening the grip on his hand. " I am trying" he said

.....

Amanda's pov

It was a friday morning, I was sleeping naked, snuggled up against the naked Lethu. I opened up my eyes and found her staring at me. " Morning Munchie" she said smiling happily. " Mmh... That's creepy, staring at me while I'm asleep" I said eyebrows raised. " Awu ngempela?" She asked " What time is it" I asked. She took her phone under the pillow. " It's five minutes past eight" she said, it took the phone from her hands just to check for myself. " Ohh shoot, why didn't you wake me up. I've got a class in 8:30." I exclaimed quickly getting out of bed and going into the bathroom. " I didn't know

that" she said. I did my hygiene process and wore the clothes I was wearing the last day. My laptop and school backpack was there so she just drove me to UJ in her black bike. I attended all my classes and when I was get out in the main gate. Michael was parked there. He was sitting on the bonnet of his car, doing God knows what on his cellphone. " Don't even think about it, my lady" he said as I was passing by. I ignored him and walked on but he just charged for me and grabbed me by my arm. " Let go of me" I whispered. " Get into the car or else..." He threatened me. " Or else what, huh. You will kidnapped me again?" I asked staring into his eyes. " Or else she will get to have a look at these" he said showing me pictures in his cellphone. " You-you son of a bitch, you wouldn't dare" I cursed." Okay, try me" he said getting inside the car, living me drumstricken, I felt like crying. He had the pictures of us kissing that night. " Are you coming or what" he said rolling down his the passengers window after a while. Lethu was so going to kill me if she saw those pics, besides that I wouldn't want to hurt her like that. I cared a lot about her, she was my baby. She had

been through a lot in life and I didn't want to add up to her misery. I got inside the car and closed the door. "What do you want from me" I asked after I had calm down. "I want your heart" he said, "no infact I want you, the whole of you. You belong to me, I knew this from the day that I met you. You will be mine whether you like it or not" he said so psychotic. "Ohh god save me, you are definitely crazy, infact you're a psycho" I exclaimed my hands on my face. "Yeah, I'm crazy about you" he said. "Where are you taking me" I asked. "You're accompanying me to my friend's birthday party tonight, I taking you to a salon shopping for your dress" he said, "Mr Muscles' party?, And what if I refuse to go" I asked tasting the deepness of the water. "You saw what I'm capable of, worse your little girlfriend might visiting her ancestors" he said so intimidating, I guessed I had that thing of attracting intimidating people. Then my phone rang, "Munchie, where are you." Lethu asked making my heart to thunder. "Some of my friends says that they saw you getting into a black 911Rare Targa 4s Porsche." She said it more like a question. "Yeah

that's correct, actually, Michael the gay guy Mr Muscles was talking about the other day. He came to pick me up, he wants me to accompany him to Mr Muscles party since he is boyfriendless lately. I hope you don't mind baby" I lied bluntly and I hated it. " Ohhk, I thought we'd spend the tonight together but it's cool, I guess I'll see you when you come back" she said sounding so hurt and disappointed. " Ok baby.see you later" I said then hung up. " So now I'm the gay guy. You will definitely take a yellow card for this" he said so serious. " What's wrong with what I just said, besides that your gender really confuses me. You are such a pussy, the stinking one" I said so angrily. "You must really be missing a dick lately. Why don't you just say so, stop giving me endless clues. You're confusing me. If you want we could start fucking right now" he said with a dirty smirk on his face. " Fuck you, you asshole" I cursed. " You also like it in the asshole" he said solemnly that I was literally red on the face. I was so fuming.

.....

Cora's POV

Salvatore took me to a salon after I was done with my classes, I chose to curl up my hair and Dy it red. I looked fabulous and lovely. I also did some simple pedicure and manicure. After the we both went to a spar and had some couples massage. We got done around 17;00,we had cancelled the appointment with the psychologist since it was his birthday party. I had bought him a small gift too, which I wasn't so sure about because he had everything. The party was going to be held at the events reception in his grand hotel Paradisé. He did so, so that the couple's who wanted to sleep or/who were too tired to drive home could book some rooms. He said the them was a surprise, so I asked no further questions. After the spar we went to his penthouse which was in the hotel. " I want to see my dress" I said throwing myself on bed as we had just entered the penthouse. " That's not a nice way to ask for something. Say please" he said taking off his clothes, he was standing Infront of the mirror, his back on me. " Please, please please" I said standing up and hugging him from behind. " I can't hear you" he said with a smile on his handsome face. " Please, please

birthday boy" I said planting kissing on his bare back, he was officially wearing trousers only. " Mmh, that's more like it" he said with a happy smile on his face. I was looking at him on the mirror. " Have I told you to have a happy birthday?" I asked playfully. " Not really, yeah I'm sure you haven't" he said. " Well happy birthday my love and happy many more to come. I love you so much" I said looking at him on the mirror. I was so emotional upon realising how much I love him. He reached for me from his back and turned me to be Infront of him. I had no heels on so I was quite shorter. He scooped me up, hands under my shirt and I wrapped up my legs around his torso. My hands around his neck. I was wearing my boyfriends jeans and a small t-shirt along with pumps. " I love you too, I love you more than you love me" he said gazing at me. " That's not true" I protested. " I think we should get a lie detector because you surely don't trust me" he suggested kidding. " Hdll no, that's extremely risky. I wouldn't –and then the door bell rang. " That must be your dress" he said walking out of the room with me in his arms. " put me down" I said trying to get off. He didn't answer me but rather

held be even more tightly. He opened door a after pinning me against the wall near it. " Sir, the suit and the dress" I heard a voice say. " Come on in and put it right there on the couch" he said, the guy got in and walked towards the couch. I was still pinned against the wall,"Salvatore put me down" I said snuggled up to his neck, I was feeling so shy. The guy came back. " Have a good night Sir" he said before leaving. " Good night Ryan" Salvatore said. " I didn't know that you can also feel shy" he said giggling. " You're crazy, you got me so embarrassed" I said sulking. " your cheeks are pink" he noted. I was flushed. " Put me down please" I pleaded and he complied with me. The first thing I did was unzip the covered up dress which was in a hanger, " holy matrimony" i exclaimed unbelievably. " Whoow, you gotta be kidding me, you expect me to wear this" I asked eyes popped out. " Yes, what's wrong with it. I thought you'd like it" he said sounding a bit disappointed. " I love it but it's kinda not appropriate considering the fact that there'd your elders there. " I said looking at it carefully. I checked out the shoes which were in a Calvin Klein gift bag. " They are such

cool people, you're so wearing that dress end of story. Let's go and get ready. He said pulling my hand.

.....

" So how do I look" I asked him taking off the white gown I was covering up with. He was getting dressed in the sitting room and i in the bedroom. " Shit I am so going to fuck you tonight" he said walking towards me so fast. " Wooh, hold your horses. You haven't answered me yet" I said putting my hand on his chest. He was wearing a Versace shirt which was not buttoned up yet and the black tight trousers along with his Italian made grasshoppers. Which looked More expensive, he looked all shades of yummy and bad. " You look so sexy, infact you're more than just sexy. You look so scrumptious. The ass, I could fuck you right now" he said checking me out. " Thank you for your honesty, you look so fuckable too" I said buttonning his shirt. I had to constantly yank his hand off my butt. 30 minutes later we walked in to the reception, the theme was Egypt detailed. The golden pyramids and

that statues of Goddesses and Gods. It was so anciently amazingly beautiful. We had a grand entrance because we had all eyes on us" wow" I exclaimed jaws dropped. " It's giving you the wow factor isn't it" he said holding my hand. " It's beautiful" I said looking around. There were even golden angels, it was like heaven on earth.

[6/3, 14:46] Lynne: Page 35

Cora's POV

" It's amazing in here" I said as we walked inside. He was holding my hand. The waitress came and offered us glasses of champagne. We took them, " I need a glass of orange juice" I whispered into his eyes. " I know" he murmured softly and smiling, there were photographers who were busy taking photos. Everybody in the room was matured and looking lovely. Grandma, Salvatore's father, grandpa, Esihle, Siboniso and all his friends were present along with their girlfriends and wives. Michael was talking to some girl who had her back on me, so I

couldn't see her properly. There were a lot of people who seemed to be high profiled. Salvatore pulled me towards the stage, I was resisting but he pulled me even harder. I didn't want attention to myself, plus the dress I was wearing was a little bit too much. He stood in front of a podium. He beat his glass with a spoon which he got from the waitress. " Can I get everyone's attention please" . He said on a microphone. " I'd like to welcome you all to my 34th birthday party and I'd like to introduce someone very close to my heart, il mio cuore batte. Family and friends this here is my future wife Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo" he said making me twirl around, like we were dancing. People were clapping their hands with smiles. While I felt like burying myself in to the deepest of pits. " I'd like to ask her something before the party begins and the program director takes over. " He said taking something from his pocket and then he kneeled down.i was just so confused. " What are you doing, get up" I murmured softly, eyes popped out. " Il mio cuore batte would you come and share my house,my home and all I own I'd like to give to you" he said pulling out the house keys from a small

box. I was just dumbfounded. I couldn't find the right words to express my sincere happiness. " I'd be honored to, yes. I'd love to" I said helping him up and we hug. Everybody was clapping and cheering. I was so scared and happy and the same time. " I love you" he whispered into my ear as we were hugging. " I love you more" I said pulling out. " Let the party begin" he said before we went down the stage. " Mrs S" I said hugging grandma. " Son you could have done better than that, I thought you were going to propose." Mr Salvatore senior said punching him on the chest. " Come on old man, that was way more better than proposing for marriage" he said holding his chest and giggling. " Keep telling that to yourself maybe you might start to believe it" Mr SS said. " You guys should really get married, you look so good together, two pees in the same pod" grandma said seriously. " Come on guys, we're taking this step by step. We have a millions of years ahead of us. " Salvatore said holding my hand, melting my heart. " Happy birthday son" grandpa said putting his arm around Salvatore's shoulders. " Not so soon pal, I'm still expecting a gift from you" Salvatore said

removing his hand from his shoulders. We all just bursted into laughter. " You son of a gun" grandpa said slightly hitting Salvatore's cheeks." Let me go to my friends I'll see you guys around" he said giggling. We walked to his friends. " My boys" he said getting in-between some of the two and putting his arms around their shoulders. " Congratulations Zee" Priya and Diva said in unision. " Thanks guys" I said smiling and showing them the keys. And then I saw something amusing. " Mandy, you're here?" I said walking towards her and hugging her, the boys were having their own conversation. " The jerk forced me here,can you believe it" she said so angrily. " I think you too have something deep going on, I too kinda of didn't want Salvatore but look at us now" I said glancing at him. " Dude you were like wood and fire from the first page, you caught flames. These situations are no where near similar. I hate him, we're like fire and ice" he said fuming. " Yeah I can tell, anyways now that you're here aren't you going to congratulate your twin sister" I said smiling. " Congratulations, I'm so happy for you guys. You're my couple goals" she said pulling me in for a hug. "

Tell you what, I'll be back" I said leaving her and walking towards Esihle and Siboniso who seemed to be having the best time of their lives. Siboniso was with his fiancée Siwe . " Guys" I said joining the three of them. " I'm so sorry Cora" Esihle said dramatically. " Mhh, why. What happened" I asked puzzled. " My brother is really slow, I thought he was going to propose but Keh" she said rolling her eyes. " Mxm, stop being too forward you moron." I said slowly spanking her ass. " Since I got the keys to the kingdom now, I thought I'd ask you to come and visit each and every weekend but you know what I reconsider my thoughts" I said throwing shades at her. " You can't do this to me, come on sister inlaw I was just kidding" she said holding me in a begging manner. " Hey stick sweet, can I also get a chance with my brother's wife" Siboniso asked making Siwe and I to burst into laughter. " If you dare call me stick sweet one more time I swear on my mother's head, I will kill you" she said warningly. I couldn't help but laugh even more. I guessed they called her stick sweet because she was tall and skinny. " What ever small, sister inlaw congratulations on your new

home" Siboniso said making me giggle because the house was not new. It had a few months of functioning. " Where is Sandile, I thought I'd see you guys together" I asked seriously. " He had to stay back and take care of their small baby, his wife gave birth a few months back" I thought Salvatore told you." He said. " We took a short break maybe it was during that time, anyways tell him I said congratulations and he is always welcome to visit in my new home" I said playing with the keys and we all giggled. " What are you guys giggling about" somebody asked coming from behind me and holding my waist. The fabric of the dress was pretty small so every one of his touch had an effect on my body. " We were just talking about how you didn't tell me about Sandile's new born baby just like you didn't tell me about Kevin's" I said putting my hands on his. " No cases tonight, it's my birthday" he said slowly. " I'll deal with you later" i said warningly but smiling. " Ladies and gentleman can I have your attention please" Michael said on stage, we all have it to him. " Good evening, I must say you look so beautiful tonight, especially the party boy but he ain't got

nothing on me" he said making the whole room to giggled. " How much was your swag boy, you must have got it from China mall" Salvatore called out, making the whole room to laugh. " I'll not argue with that, let's just occupy the tables with the table numbers we were given. Because if I start to state the price and the designer the birthday boy might start to cry and we don't want that now, do we" he said while people were settling down. " Where do I sit" I asked Salvatore. " This way" he said guiding me towards the table on the front lines. Each table was meant to occupy 16 people. So it was; Salvatore, I, Amanda, Rajesh, Priya, Kevin and his wife, diva, mbutho, Tiaxiang and his girlfriend, Esihle,siwe,siboniso and one chair reserved for Michael. I was sitting between Amanda and Salvatore. " Okay, now that we're all settled down Let the bidding games begin. And the the waitress revealed some covered up things on stage. " I'll start here, I have a beautiful painting painted by Picasso himself. It was worth half a million when my friend bought it, we all know that the legendary never dies. I'm going to start from half a million" Michael said

auctioning the beautiful class painting of old Paris —france. " Yes gentle over there" he said pointing at a gentleman who had raised his round board.and the I suddenly noticed that most of the people in the room had bidding boards including Salvatore.

Everything was happening so fast. I guessed it was not just an ordinary birthday party but it was business too. The high rollers were there"you seem so lost" Salvatore whispered into my ear. " What's going on in here, you do this every year, what's all this about" I asked softly. " Isn't obvious, I'm auctioning off some of my expensive antiques." He said into my ear. " I can see that but why" I asked confused" for charity, for the orphanage and NGO that I have" he said, I was quite surprised and shock to hear that. " You have an orphanage and NGO?" I asked, I could also feel the edge of surprise in my voice. " You seem suprised" he whispered. " Of course I am surprised, who would have thought that I shroud man like you could give back to the community. " Well that's a very mean word to use but thank you for the compliment. I'm honored" he said, " my pleasure" I said almost giggling.

" And... Sold to the gentleman in blue suit" Michael said hammering the podium with a hammer like he was some sort of judgment. The auctioning went on and on. " Well this brings us to the end of our game. Thank you ladies and gentlemen for your participation. Let's take a short break, have some refreshments and then we can come back for the next round. Thank you for your participation" he said bowing and getting off stage with hands of applause.

.....

Amanda's pov.

" I was good wasn't I" he asked me as he was sitting down next to. Everybody was moving around. Caught up in some conversations. Even Cora, she was so good at socialising but that night she took the crown. I watched as Salvatore was introducing her to his business partners. Everything was going perfectly well. " What are you talking about" I asked throwing him a death stare. " Hello, earth to Amanda, the MC thing. Don't tell me you miss her already. It's hardly been 2hours" he said sarcastically. Looking at his wrist watch. " Stop it ok, I'm tired of all this your

nonsense. Just go up there, finished the program and take me home" I kind snapped. Thanks God there was a piano playing or else people would've turn their eyes on me. " What have I done now" he asked acting so innocent except that there was a smirk on his face. I found myself drinking the glass of champagne I had in my hands. I didn't intend to, I've never touched alcohol before. My eyes popped out when I realized what I had just done. The whole glass of champagne was down my throat." Oh oh!, Behave my lady" he exclaimed smiling. I almost slapped him. He walked back on stage just in time. " Ladies and gentleman may you please sit down we have two more games to indulge in" Michael said.

.....

Narrated

" Now, this one is very interested, it's a bidding game but more fun then the previous one." He explained with a little bit smile on his face. " The spot light is going to choose the best dressed lady and she is going to be coming on stage and the bidding wars will beginning. The gentleman will bid for a dance

with her tonight. He will get to choose the song they'd dance to. Now don't be shy ladies and gentlemen if I were you I'd hide my wife. There seems to be a lot of hungry scavengers here tonight" he said making the whole room to laugh. " Let the games begin" he said and then the lights were dimmed, spot light on. It went around the room fastly but slowly decreased the pace with every second passing by and the boom. It stopped in-between Salvatore and Amanda, Cora's eyes popped out. " Miss, come on stage please" Michael said. " Why me, this is not fair" Cora said holding on to Salvatore's arm. " Birthday boy would you do me a favour and carry her on stage for me" Michael said making the whole room to except for Salvatore. " It's okay just go" he said to Cora who was snuggle up to him but giggling. " You will regret selling me out" she whispered in to Salvatore's ear before going on stage. She stood near Michael . " Ok gentleman, I'll start on a R1000" he said. One men raised his bidding board. " Make it R1200" said another one raising his board. " Make thatR5000" Mr SS said raising his board. " Come on gentleman, you can do

better" Michael said encouraging them. " Make that a double" the man in a blue suit raised his board. " R12000" Mr SS said raising his board. "R13000" other gentleman raised his board. " "R15000" the gentleman in blue said. " Come on gentleman... Okay this is it going Twice,going thrice and so—" make that a double" Salvatore said raising his board. " Anyone with a better price" Michael asked. "R 31000" the gentleman in blue said raising his board. " R40000" Salvatore said raising his board. " R45000" the gentleman in blue raised board. " Make that R50000" Salvatore said jaws clenched and fist turning pink. " Going twice going thrice and sold to the birthday boy" Michael said hammering the podium with a wooden hammer. " Birth boy you have earned this dance please come on stage and make a song requests" Michael said with a smirk on his face. Salvatore stood up and went on stage, made a song requests. The lighter were dimmed and the music played. He held Cora's waist and Cora put her hands on his shoulder. Their usual love song played.

The closer I get to you.

The more you make me see.

By giving me all you got. (Tell me more)

Your love has captured me.

Over and over again, I tried to tell myself that we...

Could never be More than friends.

When all the while inside I knew it was really, the way
you make me feel.—

They danced slowly, " you bid with so much money
just to dance with me. " Cora said leaning on his
chest. " I couldn't stand the of seeing you dance with
another man while I sit there and watch. Besides it
was not that much, I was willing to pay more" he
said seriously. " You're crazy" she said. " You drive
me crazy, I've seen the reaction you give whenever I
hold your waist tonight and I would have been a fool
to let another man touch you" he said jaws clenched.
" Is it that obvious, I mean the effect of your touch"
she asked feeling shy. " You should see yourself,
your breathing gets hitched a bit and then your heart
race" he said chuckling. " If it's of any consolation to

you, only your hands makes my adrenaline rush" she said, leaning even more closer to him. " Oh really" he asked seductively and she nodded. And then the song ended. " Okay love b birds, you can get off my stage right now" Michael said , Salvatore helped Cora down the three staircases. They went and set down. " It's time for the main course and then after that, the karaoke machine will roll.the spot light will choose for it. Let's have our dinner guys. I can't wait for this to get done with, after all I came for the after party. Where the elders will be long gone, right guys" he said making the room to giggled in amusement.

.....,.....

Cora's POV

The karaoke was more fun then any of the games, even Amanda got to sing. She was a horrible singer that one. " Okay, guys that's it. I must say you're all horrible singer. Especially you Amanda" he said and everybody laughed. " A moment of silence please. Right now we're going to start unwrapped the big gifts for the birthday boy. I'd like to call up Mr Salvatore senior to come on stage. He has

something to say. " He said with somuch respect. Mr SS stood up and went on stage. " Ladies and gents, family and friends I greet you all. I'm here as the birthday boys older brother. Our Father gave me this message to read before he passed on. I've been a father and a mother to Alonzo since he was born" he said solemnly. Leaving all of us in confusion only Salvatore was amused by what was being said. " Ohh, I'm just kidding. Please get your jaws in their rightful places people" he said so fast and chuckling. My heart was like " huh" so it was a joke. Everybody was laughing. " That was a good one wasn't it... I've got nothing much to say, I've been here for the past 33 times after all. This makes it my 34th, anyways I want to thank my son for being a good so, he is a way more better man than I would have dreamed of, thank you for sticking by my side, your family. And yeah not forgetting to thank you for the many many grandchildren you're going to give me." He said smiling, he was a funny old man. Anyways happy birthday my son and happy many more to come. I hope you will always make me proud, I've got a special gift for you. Here are the keys to your brand

new mustang GT Yarmouth" he said flashing the keys to us, they were tied with a gold ribbon. " Thank you" Mr Salvatore senior said before going to sit down. The waitress then came on stage with three baby cribbage/beds. Grandma and Grandpa went on stage. " As you can see, I'm the grandmother of the birthday boy and this is my husband" she said so bubbly. " Yeah, you can say that again, we are almost fossil fuels. On our last dying stage right" she said making us laugh. " We thought of doing something different this time around. We bought three baby cribbage beds. No, we're not expecting. I'm sure my eggs died about 20years ago" she said, so hilarious that we giggled. " These here are for that young lady sitting next to my grandson. Now son, it's your duty to give us a gift of 3great grandchildren. Thank you" she said and then went to sit down, Salvatore held my hand under the table. Michael took the microphone. " As Salvatore's friend we also came up with a special gift. Ladies and gentlemen a champagne worth half a million. I was just wondering when would this guy ever drink this much expensive champagne and now I've got the answer.

All thanks to my darling grandma. Man please pop up this champagne the day your future Mrs over day decides to have a bun baking on her oven" he said, I just smiled. It was such a happy occasion. The others also came with expensive gifts. And the party ended around 23:00 and the after party was going to be held on the roof of the hotel where there was a pool. Only young people were going to be there.

.....very
unedited . Comments are demanded

[6/3, 14:46] Lynne: Page 36

Cora's POV

Everybody had changed into their beautiful swimming suits. I was wearing a pink bikini And a white cover up sea through throw over shirt. Salvatore was wearing white summer shorts. We were on the roof top braaing meat, music blasting up to the sky. I was sitting on a table near the swimming pool with the girls, most of them i didn't know. " Your man looks hot tonight" I whispered into Amanda's ear, " ohh please" she said rolling her eyes.

" I'm serious take a look at him. " I said and she looked at him, for much longer time than I had expected her to. " He's OK," she said shrugging his shoulders. " So now you agree that he is your man?" I asked giggling. " No, no of course not. It must be the alcohol's effect on my brain" she said so defensive that I just laughed. " What are you guys whispering about" Esihle asked sitting next to us. " Isn't Michael just looking hot tonight" I asked on purpose. " Mhh, he is okay" she said shrugging. " I'm starting to get the feeling that you're a lesbian Esihle." When are you getting a boyfriend" I asked. " I'm hardly 23, relax...—" Amanda, can I have a word with you" Michael said, we didn't notice him getting there. " Save me lord" Amanda said annoyed but she stood up and they walked away. And they disappeared from our site. " What were you saying....

.....,.....,.....

Amanda's pov.

" What now" I asked. He had lead me behind some wall, we were alone there. " You look stunning in that bikini" he said seriously. I was wearing white

summer bikini, nothing more. " Thanks I guess" I said shrugging my shoulders. " Is that all" I asked. " No and I've been longing to do this" he said and then attacked me with a kiss. " Mhh, what are you doing" I said pushing him away. But he walked back towards me and I kept moving back until I reached the end point, which was the wall separating us from the others. " He put his hands on the sides of my head. " What does it look like I'm doing" he asked seductively and smiling. My heart was thundering, he leaned over for yet another kiss. I closed my eyes in disappointment. I thought he'd stop and laugh at me just like in the movies but he did absolutely the opposite. He took my lips into his. I was resisting, he invited his tongue into my mouth. I tried to stop him but my body became weak and submitted to his every move. His hands were still on the wall but his body leaned over to mine, his knee in-between mine. My hands found they way around his neck. I found myself moaning but then Lethu's image flashed by. I quickly pulled out of the kiss. " Stop, stop it" I snapped. " Let me go" I added. " I'm not holding you" he said so arrogantly, making me realize that I was

the one who was holding him. I quickly let him go, I was so embarrassed. I pushed him away and rushed to the others. But Cora was not where I left her, I spotted her in the swimming pool, so cozy with her man

..... Cora's POV

Salvatore and I were on in the far corner of the swimming pool. He had a glass of wine and I had a glass of champagne. He had me pinning against the pool wall. " You are drunk" I said giggling. " Come on, it will be more fun" he said. " You gotta be kidding me, sex in the pool. Let alone that what about the people" i said turning around to face him. " You are such a spoil sports" he said giving up and drinking his wine. " Let's go inside. I've got a surprise for you" I said putting my arms around his neck. " Ohh, yeah. What is it?" He asked excited. " It wouldn't really be a surprise if I had to tell you now, would it?" I said smiling. " You're acting smart with me" he said getting his hands on my butt and scooping me up to his torso. " Are you trying to get us both drowned." I asked heart racing." Let's go to our room" he said

before kissing me. I nodded after the kiss. He carried me out of the pool, my legs wrapped around his waist. The thrilling anticipation got my adrenaline pumping. We entered into the elevator and he pressed the button of the floor the penthouse was in. He put me down and we tried to let go and be patient but it was impossible. It was like there was some magnetic force that kept us drawn to each other. I was in his embrace and we were hungry kissing. The elevator opened up and he carried me into his arms. I couldn't help but giggle, It was so funny. He opened the door and we entered. Pinned me against the wall, my back on him. It was a little bit rough but exciting. He leaned on my back, I could feel his crotch on my butt. He was slowly tenderising me with wet kisses. He made me raise my arms up and pinned them on the wall. Took off my see through throw over, untied my bikini bra, my hands were still up. The slow moved his hands from my hands, slowly and slowly until he reached my boobs, he held them tightly and roughly making my breathing to escalate. He kept on massaging them until my nipples were hard and felt so good. He moved from

my boobs to my waist, keep it moving his hands there, I swear there was no other thing that turned me on then his hands on my waist. It set butter on my tummy, got me moaning. He slowly untied my panties from both sides, took off his summer shorts and underwear. He came back to me. I was still facing the wall, impatiently waiting for his next move. He puts his hands on my valley of fire, got me jumping with excitement and anticipation. He made me spread my legs using his knee. His giant cucumber was poking my butt, making it hard for me to breath. He then got his finger inside my valley of fire, got me moaning loudly. He massaged my valley of fire with his finger. I couldn't stand my hands being up I tried to get them down to hold my giant cucumber but he quick made me raise them up again, so roughly. I felt like crying, I obeyed a stood still, his finger went back to my soft bud. He was. My eyes were closed, I was biting my upper lip. Turned me around, hands up. He teased me with the head of my giant cucumber in the entrance of my valley of fire. I swear he got my brains non so functioning. He then kneeled down, Put my left leg on his shoulder.

He got my major and minor labia separate with his hand and started to eat me with his tongue, he licked and sucked me until I was screaming his name. He ate me until I was dripping wet, my juices were dripping on his finger. He finger fucked me until I cum. He then led me to the nearest couch, made me hold on to the arm and bent me over. He separated my legs. And started to tease my entrance on more time. "Joaquin, please" I begged for his mercy on me. "What do you want Il mio cuero batte" he asked, even though I couldn't see his face but I could tell that there was a smirk on his face. "I want you, please. I want my giant cucumber" I said or at least tried to because with each and every word I uttered he stroke in and pulled out. "I can't hear you" he said. "Fuck me please" I pleaded almost in tears. He got it in, I could feel that it was not full in but it was deeper already, he pushed it even harder, started to stroke slowly. But he steadily increased the fucking pace. It was rough given to me, I was screaming and screaming the couch's fabric. My valley of fire catches fire. It was such painful pleasure. My legs could not carry me

anymore, they were wobbly and weak, I had an orgasm twice but but he was still fucking me badly. He later on came and fell on my back. " Let's go and take a shower" he said after a while, my giant cucumber was still inside me, half alive." I can't walked" I said breathing heavily. He carried me into the shower, and we showered. I found myself grabbing his cucumber. " I want more of that" I said looking him in the eyes. He put his hands on top of my head and pushed me down, I knew exactly what that meant. I gave him a hand job, squirted down. He turned off the shower water, made me stand up and we got out of the shower. He led me to the high Royal blue couch. I sat down and he stood Infront of me. I started giving him a hand job on his circumcised giant cucumber. It didn't take that long for it to stand up and the i put it in my mouth, started licking it, he pushed it deeper into my mouth that I gagged. I kept my eyes on him, he had his hands on my hair. Grabbing it roughly. He started fucking my mouth, pulled out when his juices were oozing out. Got my upper body painted. He kneeled down and made me spread my legs, everything was out

there, facing him. He started to finger fuck me. Slowly. I was running my Bud slowly, he ate me one more time. We fucked three times that night, the last round was in bed. " I got you something" I said breathing heavily as I just fell on top of him. I opened the near by headboard shelf and took out a small black box, i gave it to him. " I didn't know what to get you, so I got you a wrist watch" I said lying on top of him. " Thanks baby" he said sounding happily. Trust me buying a gift for Aman who had absolutely everything was a mission impossible.

.....

Salvatore's POV

" Turn it over" she said sounding so sleepy. I turned it over it was written" let's make this our signature" . It had a personal touch, best gift ever. I kissed the top of he head. By the way she was breathing, I could tell she was long asleep and tired. That was the best night of my life.

[6/3, 14:46] Lynne: Continuing

Salvatore's POV

I opened up my eyes and found Cora laying next to me, she was laying on her her tummy. The silky shirt cored her ass only, her upper body, thighs and legs were on display. Her lips were pouted, hair messy in a cute way though. I planted wet kisses on her back, she moved in annoyance. I kissed her all over the face, she opened up her eyes. Looking so sleepy, "hey" I said removing the strands of hair from her face. She nodded and then closed her eyes once again. I planted wet kisses on her eyelids "mmh, please" she Moaned in annoyance. "Wake up, it's 09:00 already" I said. "Let me be, please" she said shaking her body in annoyance. I got on top of her, put my whole weight on her. "Get off me, I'm awake" she snapped so angry. I did just that and she walked into the bathroom. When I got in there I found her inside the shower. I also got in, she turned her back on me. I put my hands on her shoulders but she yanked them off. Anyways we took a shower, she got out first, wiped her body with the white big towel

and got out of the bathroom. I continued to shower, wrapped a towel around my body and then got out of the shower. I found her putting a lipstick on her lips, she was standing in front of the mirror. She was wearing black Adidas pants and a baby pink crop top along with her white sleepers. " You look so pretty" I said but she just walked out of the room. I ignored that, moisturised my body and then wore my camouflage pants, black tight t-shirt along with my sleepers. I ordered breakfast on the room service line and then joined her in the sitting room. She had her legs crossed over, she was sitting on the big couch. I layed down and put my head on her thighs. She didn't budge, " what are you watching" I asked looking over the television. It was some chickflick movie. I looked back at her, she looked so cute when she was upset. " Are you going to be giving me the silence treatment for the whole day" I asked but instead of answering me she took her phone and went over it. " What have I done now" I asked sighing softly. I sat upright and looked at her for a long time. I kissed her but she didn't respond, I kissed her again but she didn't budge. " Are you angry because I woke

you up early" I asked chuckling unbelievably. " Yes" she finally answered me. " Why did you do that, I slept around 4am today and you just had to wake me up" she snapped arms folded around her body. " I also slept around 4am, what's the big deal in that" I asked shrugging. " Huh!, What's the big deal?, The big deal is that I've been standing on the six inch high heels for hours and then the tiring pool water and the the fucking three rounds" she snapped angrily. " If I remember correctly you asked for the second round and then the third" I said smiling. " I, I, well that is not the point, the point is that I slept so late and you had to forcefully wake me up" she said after stuttering. " Mhh, I'm so sorry Mashiyahle" I said without any difficulties because I'd been practising for a while. I had Zulu friends and relatives, they had tips of how they bring down the blazing fire with their women so. She looked at me for a while and her mouth kept on moving but she just couldn't find the word. " What, what's that. Where did you get that" she finally found the words. " Am I forgiven yet" I asked putting my hand on her waist. " I don't know" she said, not so angrily. But I think she had made it

her point not to forgive me. " Come on, I'm sorry" I said brushing her waist up and down. She looked into my eyes for a while and nodded. " I'm forgiven?" I asked, she nodded once again" yeah" she said. " Thanks" I said and then the doorbell rang. " Let me go and get that" I said standing up. I found the waitress with a four wheels tray of full English breakfast. " Good morning sir" she said pushing it inside. " Morning" I said. "I'll take it from here" I said taking the trolley from her. " Have a good day ahead sir" she said before leaving me I pushed it in and put the different dishes on the coffee table. " I'm starving, let's eat shall we" I said sitting down on the carpet. She got down too. I noticed something that day, "for how long has this been going on" I asked looking at her. " What are you talking about exactly" she asked spreading butter on the freshly baked scorn. " Since when do you bless your food before eating. ?" I asked pouring two glasses of cranberry juice. " Oh that, I can't remember really. It has been a few months I think" she said casually. " You should join me to church one day" she added seriously. " I'll have to take a raincheck on that" I said. " We should go for

a test drive in my new car this evening" I added. " May the Lord deliver you from evil" she said shaking her head. " Excuse me?" I said seriously. " I'm talking about going to church and you're trying to divert the topic. Isn't that just..." She said. " I agreed to go to a psychologist and now it's church. Please spare me. If you love me, you'll just have to take me as I am. " I said. " At some point we all need saving in our lives, we need to prepare our souls for the near end" she said solemnly. " I've done a lot of bad things in my life but I also know that I've done a lot of good ones, what am I even saying. Can I spend the weekend with my girlfriend without the outer world's interference" I said sighing heavily. " Did you like the watch" she said before drinking her juice. " I loved it, but I am still wondering. Why those specific words ?" I asked looking into her eyes. " Mmh, I wanted to think of something that was closer to my heart, something personal, something that was fun but heartfelt at the same time. I jogged my memory and then it froze on that specific day. We were so happy and jolly. it's one of the most happiest days of my life so long" she said thoughtfully. " And here I

thought that your happiest day was when we met or on our first date, or the dinner date in the woods of Johannesburg. Or when I took you to Italy. You're such a strange woman" I said because I knew that any other women would have mentioned one of those days that included fancy stuff. " Trip to Italy?, That was the most horrible day ever" she exclaimed unbelievably. " You wouldn't even talk to me, it was like i had done something terribly wrong, I couldn't help but think that, that was my last day on planet earth. You were so harsh and terrifying. Gosh I hate that side of You" she said sighing heavily. " Come on, I've never been that horrible to you" he said chuckling casually. " That's true but when ever you're like that I end up suffering too" she said giggling but that got me thinking and taken aback. She was right about that, " don't be so serious I'm just kidding" she said slightly hitting my shoulder. I smiled at her and then my phone rang. It was in the bedroom, I stood up" I'll be right back" i said going into the bedroom. I found it on top of the unspread bed. " Telescope" I said answering the phone. " Kong, I've got all the information about the Maphumulos . We can meet

up tomorrow so that I could give you the files because I'm leaving for Nigeria on Monday morning" he explained without wasting any time. " Sure, I'll look at my schedule for tomorrow and text you the time of our meeting" I said fastly. " Say hi to sibusiswe and our little boy for me" I added. " Mxm, you child fucker. where did you disappear to last night" she asked chuckling. " Don't you think that it's strange, for the birthday boy to just disappear like that" he added laughing. " Fuck off man, You don't ask a guy questions like that" I said. " You're so whipped" he said laughing even more. " You're such an ass, good bye" I said before hanging up.

.....,..... Amanda's pov

I opened up my eyes, he was looking down at me. So weird, I just off the bed and checked if my body parts were still intact, especially my cauliflower. I noticed that the pillows that I had put in between us were no longer there. " Relax we didn't bang, you should know the difference from now on. Finger fucking and dick fuck are just too different things. If I had my dick in you, I bet you wouldn't have jumped

off like that. Since I was not planning on sleeping in a hotel room I didn't bring any PJs along. So I was wearing his shirt. " If you didn't know, there are sex objects like dildos. Pretty much better than your small crooked dick might be. We can fuck for a thousands of hours without it falling asleep, unlike your small crooked dick" I said before going into the bathroom and closing the door. I took off the shirt I was wearing and then got inside the shower, I took a quick shower and got out, he walked in just when I was wrapping the towel around my body. " What the fuck!" I exclaimed quickly wrapping the towel tightly around my body. " Oops" he said but didn't get out. Instead he took off his boxers. " What are you doing" I asked turning my back on him. " What does it look like I'm doing, I'm taking a shower" he said getting inside the shower. I rinsed my mouth, it was going to be a long day without my toothbrush. Thanks heavens i have mint in my handbag. I got out of the bathroom, making sure not to look at him. I heard him giggling, I opened the gift bag which was on the couch in the bedroom and took out the last undergarments I had there. I wore them and then

wore the clothes which I was wearing the last day in university. I brushed my hair using the brush that I always kept inside my hand bag. Applied a lipgloss and attended to my cellphone. 15 missed calls from Leah, 7 voice messages. *1. Hey, I'm missing you here, come back soon.2 and yeah buy some pizza on your way back I'm starving.3 I've been try to call you for the past 30 minutes. Please pick up the phone.4 where the fuck are you Amanda, come back already. 5 this is the last message, if you do not come back within the next 30 minutes then don't bother even coming back. 6. If I ever find out that you're cheating on me, I swear I am going to kill you along with your stupid boyfriend. 7. Look I'm sorry about my last message, it's just that I'm worried about you. Please call me back ASAP.*

I looked at the time, it was 8:00am. The last message was sent about 7hours ago. I must've been on the roof top by then. I tried to call her but her phone was not going through. Panicking hit me hard, I decided to send her a message. * Hey, I've just recently got your messages, I'm sorry I couldn't

make it back last night, the party was such a blast but I'll explain everything as soon as I get there. Love you, Bye* I wrote and then pressed send. I sighed and set down. He got out of the shower, with a towel wrapped around his torso. He had six pack and tattoos. He walked up to me, he was wiping his wet hair with another towel. " Calling your lover on my time is not acceptable. " He said and then threw the towel he was using on the bed. " Whatever you say sir" I said sarcastically, I was busy checking my WhatsApp messages when he did the most despicable thing ever. He unwrapped the towel around his body, " does this look crooked and small to you" he asked, I quickly closed my eyes and turned my head to the side. " Mandy?" He called my name, Only my Best friend called me Mandy. He had no right but he kind of said it good. My heart was beating up so fast that I found it hard to breath. " Don't be shy, I want your opinion on this" he said tilting my head so that I face his direction if not the dicks direction. " Please open up your eyes and tell me" he asked, I quickly stood up and walked away but he heldmy hand and brought me back to his

body, our bodies collided and then he made me sit down, I was looking into his eyes the whole time but. My eyes popped out in fear. " Just give me your opinion and then you can go" he said. I put on my brave face and took a glance at it, I then looked at it properly, I was big. Bigger than Jack's . It was semi-hard. I could see a veins. It was circumcised, it head was bigger. It was shaved. Not so small and crooked like I had said earlier on. " Well?" He asked. I couldn't find it in my gut to talk. I was dicktraumatised, I swallowed the hard lump in my throat. He pulled me up by my shoulders. I was looking at him by my brain was else where. "well I guess I got my answer" he said putting his hand on my back and swiftly pulling me to his naked self. I gaped helplessly, he then took my lips into his, his tongue into my mouth and I left him. He hands on my small butt, he was squeezing it. My whole body was melting under his touch. I found myself moaning and putting my hands around his neck. The kiss felt so good, because it had my whole body turned on but then I remembered how my heart by two guys in just a period of 4months. Males were not to be trusted, I didn't want to break my heart

once again. I remembered Lethu's messages and I pulled out, " what's wrong" he asked looking into my eyes. It felt so good to be held into his arms but I knew better than to be fooled by sexual needs. I didn't say anything so he kissed me once again and I kissed him back. My heart racing," stop, stop" I said with my eyes closed. " Why?" He asked. " I can't do this, it's not good. I am not a cheat, it's not fair to my girlfriend and certainly not good for me. Just take me to campus" I said removing his hands off my buttocks. I moved away from him, he was still semi-hard. I guessed jack was right when he said i was not good In bed. I couldn't even get a jerk like him to be turned on?.

.....

Salvatore's POV

It was a Sunday morning, I had just dropped Cora at church and drove to meet up with Kevin. I parked outside the coffee shop were we going to meet up in. Got off the car and walked in, the was sitting on the

small round table, doing something on his laptop. " Man" I said putting my hand on his shoulder and taking a sit opposite to him. " King Kong" he said taking off his glasses and closing the laptop. " So what do you have for me" I asked and the the waitress came by. " Good morning sir, would you like to order something, " a cup of americano would do" I said and then he walked away. " Kevin was b searching for something in his bag, he retrieved a flash DRIV and some documents from the bag. He insert into in and typed something. He took his chair and came to sit next to me. " I have a couple of family pictures, this one was take 4years ago. I noticed Cora in a blue long dress, she had one of her fake smiles on her face, he was standing in-between her father and her aunt and the two other kids were sitting down. " This is her stepmother Liliana Maphumulo, who turned out to be her aunt and this is her father Mzwandile Dutch Maphumulo. These are her half siblings Connie and Charles Maphumulo. The stepmother Isa nurse and has been for the past 23years, the siblings are doing grade 10 in a public school near by. And Mzwandile is a couch potato,he

got out of the hospital two years and six months ago after six months of being in a coma.—" are you telling me that this man is alive" I asked shocked. " Yes, he survived after being stabbed 5 times in the neck by some house robbers. After getting out of the coma he was labeled unstable. He is in a wheelchair as we speak." He explained. " Who told that there was a house robbery. " I asked curiously because I knew Cora's side of the story. " The wife reported to the neighboring police station after founding him bleeding to death in his sitting room. The knife was never discovered, I smell a rat about this whole thing." He said. " The barstard should have died" I said with my jaws clenched. " I will finish him off myself" I said angrily. " He has schizophrenia, which means the guy is has split personality when he wanted something he made sure to get it no matter what the cost" he explained. He showed me his pictures,he was looking skinny, his knee bones out there. His head was tilted to the right side of his shoulder,he looked like a zombie. He deserved everything he got and more. " Here are the papers for everything in detail" he said giving me a file. " I

should get going" he said on his feet. " Thanks man, i owe you one" I said. " You owe me a lot" he said before leaving. I went through the documents, he was aged 50, his wheelchair state permanent, the spinal cord and some nerves were damaged. He should have just died, there were some articles too,of Lillian reporting Cora missing, she had written to a lot of magazines and newspapers for the first year of her disappearance. But recently she had been writting to the missing people's magazine and website.

[6/3, 14:47] Lynne: Page 37

Cora's POV

"There's A Thug In My Life"

Gotta keep it on the down low

I'll never let my mama know

Only call him on my cell phone, only see him after dark

I met him on the 6 train, just the way he said my name

The brotha had a lot a game, had me open from the start

He scoops me up in his ride, Friday about a quarter to 9

So fly and so fine, and I'm so glad that he's all mine

[Hook] There's a thug in my life, how'ma gonna tell my mama

She gonna say it ain't right, but he's so good to me

There's a thug in my life, and its gonna cause crazy drama

I'm gonna see him tonight, I'm gonna give him everything

I know his crew is kinda shady

Sometimes it gets kinda crazy

But he treats me like a lady, gives me everything I need

I don't care who's hating on me, 'cause every night he's waiting on me

He's got mad personality, a side they never see

My friends tell me to slow down, but everytime that
he's around

My heart's on lock down, I feel love and I'm so proud

[Hook]

There's a thug in my life, how'ma gonna tell my
mama

She gonna say it ain't right, but he's so good to me

There's a thug in my life, and its gonna cause crazy
drama

I'm gonna see him tonight, I'm gonna give him
everything

[Rap]

T-H-U-G in ya life baby

One in a million thats what you are to me

And I know your friends say I'm rough

But I still got that tender touch just to make u giggle
and blush

But ya mom does not approve of us

She needs to be a lot more understanding

'Cause all I have for you is thug loving and loving
thats all I'm giving

[Bridge]

Mama, don't worry, I'm not in a hurry

I wont disappoint you, I wont make you sorry

He's the one for me (He's all I ever need)

We'll be together from now till forever

I know its the real thing, if you don't whatever

And I know its meant to be

[Hook]

There's a thug in my life, how'ma gonna tell my
mama

She gonna say it ain't right, but he's so good to me

There's a thug in my life, and its gonna cause crazy
drama

I'm gonna see him tonight, I'm gonna give him
everything

[Bridge]

Mama, don't worry, I'm not in a hurry

I wont disappoint you, I wont make you sorry I was playing Rihanna's song on repeat. It was June holidays, Amanda and I were doing spring cleaning in the house. The music was blasting up loud, Amanda and I were in a jolly good mood. we were singing along with the artist, I had been happy lately. The parents were not coming back home during the holidays, they had a lot of patients to take care of. Salvatore was out of the country, he was to come back the next day and baby Alonzo was going to be staying with us for the next 15days. My birthday was going to be on 19 June and it was 14 june, anyways there was nothing important or special about it, I vowed to never celebrate it when I left home. My aunt used to make me celebrate it, even though there was no smile on my face. Two hours later we finished the cleaning up and I took a shower while she took a bath. I put a shower cap on my head and took a long shower. I got out and moisturised my body after wiping it.

I wore my white jeggings and white vest along with my white Nike air Max sneakers, applied make up. Mandy was wearing black jeans and flat thigh high boots and a pink crop top. Her driver was going to drive us to the mall. " So you mean to say that you have missed your menstruation period for the past two months and you haven't had a pregnancy test yet" Amanda asked, eyes popped out. " It's not a big deal, it happens sometimes. My period haven't been consistently ever since I could remember." I said chuckling casually. " Cora you're taking this slightly, what if you're actually pregnant" she said without any amusement. " This could ruin your life" she added. " Amanda I am not pregnant, I'm on injections. It's not possible" I said sighing heavily and rolling my eyes. " With prevention injections there's always that 1% of getting pregnant" she said. " Ok, let's do this. I'll take a pregnancy test as soon as we get to the mall. Just chill" I said trying to change the subject. " My parents would kill me if I ever got pregnant, Heavens i forbids" she said shaking her head. " You're not even on contraceptives, what if you get pregnant" I said laughing. " It's not possible

with the finger and dildo" she said laughing out loud. We were in the car. " Don't underestimate the power of a dildo" I said and we laughed even more. " What's going on between you and Michael, if I may ask. You've been spending a lot of time together lately" I asked solemnly. " We've been spending a lot of time together 'forcefully' . But I must admit I kind of enjoy being around him. He is nothing like other guys, he doesn't beg" she said putting quotation marks on the word forcefully. " Ohh really' forcefully?". I don't mean to judge you or anything but have you thought about Lethu, how she's going to feel about all of this" I said seriously. " It's not a big deal, it's not like I'm sleeping with the guy or I have a choice either. He threatened to show the pictures of us kissing if I ever disobeys him. It's not like I'm sleeping with him either way" she said sounding unbothered. " Ok, if you say so" I said, I didn't want to be a pain in the neck.

.

" You see, I told you" I said after the pregnancy test showed only one line. " Huh, thanks heavens" he said

sighing, like she was the one doing the pregnancy test. " Can we go shopping now" I said smiling. I Washed my hands, dried them up under the blow drying machine. I then took out my hand lotion from my handbag and moisturised my hands. " But how is this even possible" she asked as we got outside the ladies room. " I happens most of the time, it's not a big deal. It started when I was 14years old. Forget about it. Let's start by shopping for breakfast cereals and then we can go and have something to eat. " I suggested. " I'm already starving" she said whining. " Ohh please" I said giggling. We shopped and had brunch at McDonalds. We then went home around 16:30 pm. I took an hour of jogging and came back at the home around 18:00pm. I found Amanda already in his PJs and watching television, " girlfriend" I said patting her head. " Twin... I should join you sometime soon" she said turning around. " Your lazy ass won't be able to make for 15 minutes, let alone an hour" I said on my way upstairs. " Don't underestimate my capabilities Cora" she said. " Nywe nywe nywe" I said . " Fuck you" she called out. I could not help but laugh. I took a shower and wore

my PJs, went down stairs and put some snacks in a bowl. I joined her in the couch and put the bowl on the space between us." What are you watching" I asked. " Supernatural movie, The Red coven" she said showing me the information.

" I'm leaving tomorrow morning" I said sighing softly. " You can't just leave me alone, I'll be bored. I can't even ask Lethu to come over. She's on a family vacation in Durban. Can I come with" she asked. " Please,please,please." She added holding my hand. " Okay, but I'll have to confirm with my man first" I said smiling. " Do your best to convince him, sex him if you have to" she said chuckling madly. " You're crazy" I said slightly hitting her shoulder. " What, it has been proven that man would absolutely agree to anything when you are grinding on them" she said so naughty. " Not Salvatore, trust me" I said giggling. " Mmh, let's watch the movie and leave the dirty stuff" I said smiling. " I should really come with you, I want to see baby Lorenzo with my own two eyes." She said. " Why" I asked eyebrows raised. " I want to see whether he is black like her mother, I mean too black.

Or whether he is white like her dad" she said. " Alonzo is not white, you know" I said casually. " His mother is coloured, it's his father that's white." I explained. " Keep telling that to yourself I know a white ass man when I see one" she said rolling her eyes. " I give up" I said hands raised up. " And yeah the kid is colored, he is beautiful" I added. " Mmh, look her you complimenting that harlot's kid" she said unbelievably. " That's proly because I see him as Joaquin's kid, and the child needn't be punished for his mother's miss dead" I said seriously. " You're way much a good person then I could ever be" she said. " I know,right" I said so sessy,we both laughed.

.

The next day.

Last night I had called Salvatore and told about Amanda's request. He unsurprisingly agreed, Amanda and him got along very well. The driver was going to fetch the baby at Nina's apartment, everything was drama free in that way. Amanda and I were already in the house and Alonzo was going to arrive in the night. I opened up the door as soon as I

heard the bell ring. A short black girl was standing on the door with the baby in her arms, she must've been the nanny. I guessed. The driver was standing next to her with a couple of luggage. "Come in" I said opening the door widely. She walked in, "ma'am, where should I put these" he said referring to the bags. "This way please" I said guiding him into the guest room. He put the bags down "thanks Robinson" I said. He nodded and left. I went to the sitting room where the girl and Lorenzo were sitting. I sat down next to her, "can I?" I said spreading out my arms so that she could give me the baby. She gave me the baby, "I didn't catch your name" I said unveiled Lorenzo. He was in a lot of blankets. "My name is simphiwe" she said smiling. "Nice to meet you simpwiwe" I said but my attention was not with her. The baby looks so cute, cappuccino. "You can go and rest in the room just beside the staircase. The first one on your left. I'll take care of baby Enzo" I said picking him up, and living the blankets on my thighs. The nanny left, "ncooh, you look like your daddy" I said playing with the baby. I stood up with him and went into the guest room, I found simpwiwe

lying on bed and doing God knows what. " Can I have his formula" I said . She stood up and went over to the bags that were still down. She retrieved it from the baby's bag and gave it to me. " Thanks" I said before leaving. I went to Amanda's room, found her talking on the phone. " Look, I have to go" she said before hanging up. " Look who's a new mommy now" she said getting up. " Whatever marn, isn't he just cute?" I asked sitting on the edge of the bed. " Let me see" she said kneeling behind me. " He's okay, considering the fact that his mother is Nina" she said, he chin on my shoulder. " He's beautiful, you just don't want to admit it" I said smiling at the blinking baby. " Don't you know that, a small baby like him should be covered with blanket. It's kinda chilly too, he came like this?" She asked serious. " Well, umh not exactly. Are you serious?" I asked slowly. " Yes cora, I'm serious. His body is not yet fully mature. He needs a warm blanket" she said so knowledgeable. " Well I didn't know, Let me go and get the blankets for him. Can you hold him for me" I asked standing up. " No ways, go with him. I'm not a nanny, certainly not a mother" she said hands raised

up. " you're such an ass" I said leaving with baby Enzo. I got his small blue and two inner small blankets. I ordered two boxes of double deck pizza and went back to Amanda's room. I had left his formula there. " Looks like somebody is having fun in the South Beach" she said showing pictures of Lethu in Durban beach with some couple of girls in bikinis. " Serves you right" I said crossing my leg over and feeding the baby. " Ouch, I thought we were friends" she exclaimed unbelievably. " We've friends but she's my friend too. It's not like she's doing something wrong. You don't look jealousy either. So what's the big deal?" I said. " Geez, I was just showing you the pictures, nothing more. " She said. " Do you love her?" I asked, mind you. I had my back on her. " Yeah, I think so. You know I'm not in it for love" she said hesitatingly. " Life is too short to live a lie, you gotta make up your mind Mandy" I said, but she didn't say a thing. ' excuse me" I said leaving the room with Enzo and his formula. I went downstairs and sat in the lounge. I put the sleeping baby on the couch, he was such an angel. I mean I haven't heard him cry ever since he got in. I took my phone on the

coffee table and went through my WhatsApp. I got a message from Alonzo, saying he had got into the plan to SA.

.

Salvatore's POV

I messaged Cora on my way back from Durban, actually I had lied to her about my whereabouts. He thought that I was in California regarding some business development. I had went to Durban in order to meet up with her aunt Liliana. Who i messaged Three days earlier. I drove there and we met up in a restaurant. She looked frail and old.

Flashback

She was sitting on the far left of the restaurant, fidgeting with her fingers. She looked so nervous, I walked up to her and. " Hi, you must be Lillian Maphumulo" I said sitting down. " Hi" she said jumpy. " I thought you were going to come with Cora" she said in a small voice. She looked like she was coming down with flue or something. . " I didn't say

that, I thought you were going to come with your disgusting husband" I said firmly. " I wanted to look into that bastards eyes and then send him to his grave" I said with a lot of anger. " Unfortunately I couldn't, he refused to come along, but you can tell me everything since I am here. I want to meet with my daughter, I promised her mother that I'd take care of her and I've failed miserably. I've failed my sister." She said whipping." Unfortunately I don't think she wants to ever lay her eyes on you. She doesn't even know that I am here... And where were you, when your crazy son of a bitch was busy satisfying himself on Cora" I asked so furious. " I had to work, I was never at home most of the time, they'd come home from school around 3:00pm and I had night shifts." She wiping her tears. " She's your niece for crying out loud, didn't you notice any changes or maybe you did but you chose to ignore them just so you could save you Little stupid marriage" I snapped, drawing a lot of attention to myself. " God knows I would not do such a despicable thing, I love Cora like she's my own. She's my niece after all. Like I had said, we didn't see each other that much. And who

would have suspected her own biological father, I only found out about the years of abuse by the time she left home. I found a letter in her wardrobe, three days after the incident occurred. " She said whipping once again. " I don't believe a word you say, I just wanted you to know that Cora is fine. She misses Connie and Charles, anyways she might come by when she's ready" I said standing up. " Wait, how can I contact her, how do I get hold of you" she asked quickly standing up." I'll call you" I said buttonning my jacket. " Can at least see her pictures" she asked genuinely interested. " I took out my phone and showed her one picture.

Flash ends

I was going to take me 5hours to get home from Durban.

.

Cora's POV

" Could you please show me how to bath the baby" I asked the nanny as I entered into the guest room. She was sitting on bed,wearing a gown. It was 17:30

in the afternoon. " Okay" she said standing up. "We will use the main bathroom" I said leading the way up to our room, she was carrying the baby's bag. The baby was lying on bed. " This house must've cost millions" she commented as we got inside the main bedroom. I paid no attention to that, picked up the baby. I undressed him carefully, his disposable diaper was just wet. I picked him up and disposed it in the bathroom's dustbin. She opened the water taps equally.i kneeled near the sink and put my hand inside the bathtub so that I could feel the temperature. She gave me a towel smeared with aqueous cream. I put Enzo inside and washed him. That was when I first heard him cry, " don't worry, he's like that with water." Simpiwe said after a glanced at her.i washed him through his tears. I took him up and simpiwe helped me to wrap him in a small cloth. He was hysterical crying. " It's ok, shh, shh" I said trying to calm him down. " How do I get him to stop crying" I asked almost in tears myself. " I haven't figured that out yet" she said shrugging her shoulder. I went in to the bedroom and took his formula, put it in his mouth. He pushed it out with

his tongue a couple of times before finally accepting it. He fell asleep after a long time, " you can leave, there's pizza in the kitchen counter if you're hungry" I said taking the bag from her hands." Sure" she said before leaving. I put the baby on bed and moisturised his body with Vaseline that I found inside the bag. I dressed him up and wrapped him up in his blankets. I put him in the middle of the bed and went inside the bathroom to clean up the bathtub. I then took a shower after that, wore my white long nightie and gown along with sleepers. The baby was sound asleep when I got back into the room from the closet, I decided to go into the kitchen to warm up a two pieces of pizza to eat. " Mandy..." I said as I found her sitting on the high chair with a bowl of noodles Infront of her. " Twin sister" she said smiling. " I opened up the pizza box and there were only 3 pieces there" I gave her the look. " It's definitely not me, I took only one piece earlier today" she said shrugging. " I'm not complaining" I said hands raised up. " You shouldn't, there's a whole unopened box inside the refrigerator" she said. " That's for my man, incase he comes back hungry" I explained. " Mmh,

anyways mom called and sent her greetings to you. " She said. " You could have given me the phone. We're in the same house" I exclaimed. " It's such a big house, there are about a hundred of foot steps from my room to the sitting room" she whined. I had two pieces of pizza." Let me go and get the baby's formulas so that I could fill them up for the night" I said and I did just that. " You're going to be sleeping with the baby?" She asked as I was shaking the second baby formula. " Yeah, I mean why not" I said casually. " Cora, you cannot afford to get emotionally attached to this baby. This is going to hurt you at the end of the day and I don't want to see you get hurt." she said. " At least I'd say I tried other than just giving up because the race even begun" I said positively. " Ok, but please guard your heart" she said hugging me. went back in to the bedroom and found put the two formulas on the side stand of the headboard. I decided to go online and read a little bit about how to take care of two months old babies. I really was clueless, I even watched a few videos.

.

Salvatore's POV

I walked into the room which was widely opened, Cora was sleeping while sitting on her butt. She was leaning on the headboard, I walked up to her and noticed Lorenzo laying next to her, she had a phone in her hands. I took it and paused and video that was playing. " Il mio cuero batte" I called out softly, she opened up her eyes, looking a little bit confused. " Love wami..." She said smiling. " When did you get here" she asked standing up and hugging me, so happily. " I missed you" she said giving me a peck on the lips. " It's only been three days" I said pulling her wais against my body" a week for me because I was not here when you left" she reminded me. " What have you been up to, the baby, in here?" I asked looking into her eyes. " Nothing..." She said smiling. " He will sleep here tonight" she said seriously. " But I thought we could get naughty tonight" I said seductively. " You must be very fatigued. Let me go and get you something to eat while you take a shower" she said removing my hands from her waist. " Are you running" I said chuckling casually before

going into the bathroom. I took quick shower wiped my body and wore my boxers. "What took you so long" I asked as she walked in. " Nothing" she said smiling. " Ohhk" I said suspiciously. He gave me a tray with Three pieces of pizza and pormagranate glass of juice along with a bowl of different fruits. "How was your trip" she asked sitting down on her side of the bed, the baby in between the two of us. " Not so good,i didn't get the deal. They refused to sell me their land" I lied avoiding the topic. If I really wanted something I made sure to get it. Kong never loose. " I'm sorry about that, but I am sure you'll figure out something. You're Salvatore after all" she said with a lot Faith in me. I hated lying to her, but I had no choice. I decided that I'd let her know during the December holidays because they were longer and she could take her time to digest everything. I didn't want her to stress, that could have a big impact on her studies. Finding out that the men who assaulted you and you thought you killed was alive, is major thing." The three of us will go shopping tomorrow, the baby needs a lot of staff." She said thoughtfully. " Mmh" moaned chewing. " But I had

given Nina a lot of money for the baby, she said she wanted to buy 'baby stuff'. what's not there now?" I asked curiously and confused. " A lot actually, you'll see tomorrow and yeah we need to turn one of the guests room into a nursery room for Lorenzo. I'll personally take care of that, all you need to do is give me the interior designer's contact number and I'll take it from there" she said so enthusiastic. " Stop bossing me around" I said kiddingly. " Good night" she said switch off her side lamp. I finished eating and went to sleep.

.....

The three of us went to the mall the following morning, she was carrying the baby and I was pushing the pushcart. All she did was just point out the things she wanted, we went into a lot of baby shops. She even bought a baby Walker, he was two months for goodness sake. She bought about 4 packs of disposable diapers. Five baby formulas, a lots of clothes, baby pram, a couple of blankets, baby bathing dish, lotions, aqueous cream, baby wipes, milk, 4baby Johnson's bathing set. A small

baby toilet sit. " I've got 10 missed calls from Esihle. She said retrieving her phone from her handbag as I was driving off the mall" where's your phone" she asked.. " Shit, I forgot my phone home" I exclaimed," let me call her back" she said. " Esihle" she said on the phone. " What, no, no...but how. When" she asked a little bit louder. " Where is she" she asked. " Ok, we will be there within an hour" she said then hung up. " What's wrong, what happened" I asked looking at her through the rearview mirror. " Esihle's father died last night" she said.

[6/3, 14:47] Lynne: Continuing...

simpilwe who was watching television. I put my bag down and went upstairs to Get changed. I wore my long white dress and sandals. " Let's go" Salvatore said as soon as I got downstairs. He wasn't going to change

.

We drove there in silence, there were a lot of cars parked on the road as soon as we got there. He parked a little bit far from the house, we walked up

into the house. There were a lot of people there too, some giving us strange looks. We got into the house," excuse me, where can I find Esihle?" I asked a lady who was busy serving people beverages and snacks. " She's in her room" she said impatiently. I looked at Salvatore" this way" he said leading the way to Esihle's room. " Hey" I said shaking her, she was sleeping. She woke up and sat upright. " Sister in-law" she said in a husky voice. " You're here, I've been trying to call you both but your phones were—"the she started crying out loud. I pulled her in for a hug, Salvatore was standing a little bit far for big brother. " He's gone, he's never coming back. He was my best friend, how am I supposed to live without him" she said crying. " Shhh... Everything is going to be fine, this too shall pass." I said trying to calm her down

.

Salvatore joined in on a hug, " I'm so sorry, little sister, I'm here now I'll fix everything, everything is going to be okay" he said so bravely but I could feel that there was this edge of sadness and pain in his

voice." Brother, my, my father. He's—" when ever she'd talk, she'd just breakdown and cry. I pulled out of the hug and went into the kitchen to get some water. I first drank some and then poured into the jug, took two glasses and a jug to them. I put the glass jug and glasses on the headboard stand and poured up two glasses of water. " I gave the glasses to them. " Where are your brothers" I asked curiously. " They are at the morgue to identify the corpse" she said. " Your mother?, She must be devastated. Where's she,?" I asked. " She's in her room the first one on your left" she explained in a husky tiny little voice. " I'll go and talk to her" I said. " Cora, you're not going anywhere" Salvatore said shifting from sadness to furiousness." Joaquin, not today" I said

.

We passed by the doctors office and had our session, it was intense and bitter cold. On our way home I kept on thinking about Mrs Dlamini and what she said, she seemed to care. She seemed kind and loving. I couldn't believe that she was the same person who abandoned a few hours old infant on the

doorstep, in the cold middle of the night. I believed that there are three sides of each and every story out there. The first one is of the accused, the other one is of the defendant and lastly the side of the truth. And I believe that every side deserves a chance before the actual verdict. We got into the house, it was so quiet. I guessed everybody had gone to sleep. " I'll go and prepare us some quick to eat. You can go and freshen up" Salvatore offered. " Okay, thanks" I said putting my handbag on the coffee table. I passed by the guest room to check on Lorenzo. He was sleeping so peaceful. I then went upstairs and took a bath. I wore my nightie and sleepers. I found Joaquin dishing up as I got into the kitchen. " It smells so Divine in here" I said opening the refrigerator and taking out the bottle of cranberry juice. I poured up into two glasses and put the on the kitchen island. He was quiet the entire time. He put the bowls of pasta,sauce and meatballs Infront of the two island high chairs. And retrieved two forks from the shelf and put them inside the two bowls. I sat down, said grace before we ate. At least I was eating. He kept on mixing the spaghetti and the

sauce. " Aren't you going to eat" I asked concerned about him. He has been quiet for a Long time." I'm not hungry" he said sighing. " Have a couple of spoons at least, you haven't eaten anything since morning" I said standing up, twirling his chair around. I took his bowl of pasta and rolled it around the fork. " I'll feed you, come on. Open up" I said. " Cora—" please, just a few forks. For my sake" I pleaded and he opened up. He put his hand on my waist. I fed him until the pasta was finished. I put the bowls on the kitchen counter. " You know you can tell me anything,right?. Whatever it is that's bothering you. You can share with me" I said kissing his forehead. " I know" he said faking a smile. " Go and freshen up,i'll wash the dishes" I offered. He sighed and stood up.

[6/3, 14:47] Lynne: Page 38

Salvatore's POV

I woke up, jumpy and fast. I was having a bad dream, it was more of a memory then a dream. Ever since I

saw that women's face everything has been just a messy in my mind. " Hey, are you okay." Cora asked putting her hand on my back, I must've woken her up. " Go back to sleep Cora" I said sighing heavily. " How can I go to sleep with you acting so strange. Out with it already, what's wrong" she asked getting off the bed and standing right Infront of me. I was sitting on the edge of the bed. I had my head bowed down, elbows on my thighs and face on the palm of my hands. " I'm fine Cora" I said irritated. She kneeled down, pushed her way in-between my thighs. She yanked my hands on the sides and I was forced to face him. " What do you want from me, didn't I tell you to go to sleep already" I snapped, she got scared a bit but recovered immediately. " I'm not going to sleep, I'm worried about you. What's wrong Joaquin. Please don't shut me out, I'm here for you. You can do anything but please don't shut me out" she said putting her hands on my face. " I want to be alone" I said impatiently. " I'm not going anywhere until you tell—" fuck it Cora, I said I want to be alone!" I shouted furiously angry. " Okay, if you say so" She said shaking and standing up. I held her hand just

when she was to take the third step away from me. I swiftly pulled her back to me. I held her close, got my arms wrapped around her petite body. She was standing in between my thighs. " I was six years old when it hit me, I was so tired of watching other kids playing with both their parents while I had only just one. One day I helped on to his shirt and kept on asking him and my mother...

.

Narrated

Flash back

" AJ, leave my shirt. I told you that your mother is in heaven" he said so impatiently. After all AJ had been nagging him for the past ten minutes. " Papa I want my mom, I want my mommy." He screamed crying out loud. " AJ leave let go of my shirt" he started to shout. " No no no, I want my mommy, I want my mommy, I want my mommy" he cried out loud. " She left you on my doorstep the same day you were born. She never wanted you, she wanted nothing to do with us." He shouted so angrily that he stopped

crying, he looked up into his father's. He could read the bitter truth. Tears never stopped streaming down his pink cheeks. " You're lying papa, no no, you're lying" he said unbelievably before running upstairs in to his room and locking it up. " AJ, I'm sorry. You shouldn't have to hear that. I'm sorry my boy" the father cried outside the locked door after realizing what he had just done, he was feeling guilty...flash ends

.

Salvatore's POV

" Ever since then, I've only brewed hatred in my heart and mind. I hated my mother and I still hate her but sometimes I feel it's not enough. I hated the man who took my mother away, I hated life itself. I became a problem child ever since then. I should be happy now that he's dead and done for. It's an irony how I feel sad and guilt, I used to pray to God every night before I went to sleep. I prayed that the men who took my mother from me must just die so that my mom and dad reunites. After years of prayer it never happened, God never answered my prayers. So

I stopped praying. Now that he finally did, I should be happy. Even though I hated him, he never reciprocated the same feeling. He welcomed me with a warm heart whenever I'd come there to see my siblings. He didn't deserve to die, she should have died instead of him. He was such a good man" I said, my voice had become husky and my throat felt so dry. " Shhh... it's okay" she said making me realize that I was actually crying. " It's not your fault that he died, it's not. God does not grant prayers like those. A hundreds of people would died daily if he did, there's a lot of gate in this world. It's not your fault, you were just young and ignorant, You were just desperate for a mother's love. He didn't die because of You, stop guilt tripping yourself over things you had no control over. You're a good man, and I love you. It's not your fault" she said holding me tightly. We stayed in the same position for a long time. My head resting just below his breasts. " what are you doing?" she asked in a tiny voice. " Please, I need this" I said getting rid of her panties. " But the death and—" please" I said cutting her off. Making love was the only remedy for my misery and worries.

It had this thing of wiping away your pain, not permanently but at least for a few hours. She nodded before kissing my lips. I noticed that she had lines of dry tears on her face. We kissed through which I was busy removing her silky nightie and the rest is history.

.

I woke up so fatigue, we were in a cuddling position. We were both naked, he was fast asleep, I could feel his breath on my neck. I removed his hand from my waist and went into the bathroom. I did my hygiene process, I was standing Infront of the mirror, wearing my jogging track suit. It was raining outside but I was going to jog anyway, I needed some breath of fresh air. " Can I join you" he said waking up. " Yeah sure" I said casually. He got off the bed and walked into the bathroom. I was looking at the giant cucumber the entire time. " You might want to take a pic, it last longer" he said picking through the bathroom door. " Or you could just keep walking around nakedly the whole day" I said smiling naughtily. " That could be arranged, as long as we're

both going to participate in it" he said from the bathroom. " Cora thinks that you are very cunning" I said laughing. " Alonzo thinks that you are such a perverted woman to even have such ideas in your head" he said walking into the closet. He came back wearing shorts, vest and sneakers for jogging. " Thank you" he said standing in front of me. " For what?" I asked puzzled. " For being there for me, those words. I feel better now" he said putting his hands on my butt. " Mmh, I was just doing my duty. As a South African citizen" I said smiling. " You do that with every citizen, I mean do you sex their pain away when they beg for it" he asked chuckling unbelievably. " No but I might as well do it since you suggested it, don't tempt me" I said dramatically serious. " Try doing that, you will get to see your blood sample" he said not so kidding. " Babe, I see my blood sample each and every month. It'd be nothing new to me" I said so chilled. " What, ohh. Disgusting" he said upon realising what I meant. I just giggled" let's go before I puke" he said jokingly. We went jogging.

.

We can back drenched, 1 hour and 30 minutes later. "Wow!" Amanda exclaimed shocked as soon as we got inside the house. "You guys are certainly insane. It's raining heavily, not to mention that it's cold but you were busy jogging" she said unbelievably. "Good morning to you too lesbian wanna be" Salvatore said making me laugh hysterically. "Mr Muscles don't start with me" Amanda said warningly. "Where's Lorenzo" I asked taking off my muddy sneakers.

"In the guest room with the nanny, how come she hardly comes out of that room. I bet I've only just saw her twice" Amanda asked seriously. "I bet she's even a professional nanny, have you seen her nails and hair. No ordinary nanny could afford those. Joaquin I think you should talk to her" I said solemnly. "Why am I being told this now?. Cora, you should have spoken to her. Woman to woman" he said pissed. "It was not my place, the mother of the child employed her. She must have seen her as a perfect fit for the job. Who am I to argue with that besides things have

been hectic lately. You haven't even spent proper time with your son" I said reasonably. " I'll go and have a word with her" he said going into the guest room. Leaving the mud tracks on the floor.

" You guys are always bickering about small issue" Amanda commented. " Shut up Mandy" I said scornfully before going upstairs to take a warm shower. I moisturised my body and wore my grey warm Nike tracksuits, socks, bobble hat and sleepers. On my way down stairs I came across Salvatore. " Hey, I'm...— " I don't want to hear it" I said cutting him off and signalling for him to stop with my hand. I was going to prepare breakfast when I realized that there was no bread the only thing I could work with. I went into the sitting room where I had left my handbag last night. Took out my purse and retrieved my last R100 note. I walked to the backyard guests house, where the chauffeur and securities resided. I asked Robinson to buy me three Brown breads. I then went back in to the main house. I noticed that the mud tracks were no longer there, it must have been Amanda who wiped them. " Thanks" I said, she

shrugged her shoulder. " I'm sorry for taking my frustrations on you. " I apologized sincerely. " We're cool" she said smiling. " If we're cool, could you help me with preparing for breakfast" I asked pulling my puppy eyes look. " You, you just impossible" she said shaking her head but standing up. We made breakfast and set up the table, Salvatore was busy with his laptop in the sitting room. " I'll go and get simpilwe, please let him know that breakfast is ready." I said. " No ways, I'm not going to be your fax mail" she said hands raised up. I started in the guest room. "Hi, Come join us, breakfast is ready" I said picking up the baby beside her. She was tapping into her cellphone. " Give me a sec, I'm coming" she said without even giving me a glance. She was wearing a bumshort, knee length socks, sandals and a jersey. " Okay" I said picking up the baby's formula. " Alonzo,Breakfast is served" I said before going to the dining room. I put the formula on the table and dished up for myself using my other free hand.it was nothing much, just toasted bread with cheese, fried eggs, back and sausages and then coffee and tea. " Let me help you" Amanda offered. " I'm almost done"

I said. Salvatore came in and sat down, dished up, Amanda was already digging in. Simpiwe came in and sat down, she was typing God knows what on her phone. I sat down with the baby in my arm. " Could you pass me the scrambled eggs" simpiwe asked Salvatore with a broad smile. He did just that, well there was no conversation on the table, there was silence except for the times when simpiwe would giggled while looking at her phone. I was kinda fed up, "excuse me " I said standing up with the baby and my plate. I went into the sitting room and sat there. I put the plate on the table when I was done. " Mandy, would you please make me a cup of tea" I called out. " Sure" she said. But 3 minutes later simpiwe came with that cup of tea on a side plate. " Here's your tea" she said smiling genuinely. " Thanks" I said returning the smile. " No problem" she said turning on her steps. " Simpiwe when was the last time he had a bath" I asked referring to the baby. " Last night, I could not wash him today because it's cold" she said thoughtfully. " But he has a bad odour" I said calmly and collected. " It was his mother's instructions that I do not wash him today, he might

cash cold. And who are we to argue with a woman who gave birth to him, right?" She said eyes raised. " But you could have wiped his body, right. You can go I'll do it myself" I said kind of pissed off.

.

I didn't even have that coffee, I went into the guest room and took the baby's bag and went into our room. I put the baby down and went into the room where Robinson had put the stuff I had bought. I took the baby's washing basin and the big plastic that had his clothes, went back into the room. I put warm water and dettol in the basin, I put the basin on the bed and undressed the baby. Took one of the towels from the plastic bag and wiped the baby, he was crying even when I was wiping him. I finished up, moisturised his tiny body and dressed him up. I then wrapped him up in the new blankets I had bought, the one he was initially in smelt of milk. I then took him into my arms, I noticed Salvatore standing on the door, leaning towards the doorframe. " I'm sorry about earlier" he said, hands on his pockets. I had no time for him, I was busy trying to

make the baby calm down. " I forgot his formula downstairs, I'll go and get it" I said walking towards the door. " No, I'll go and get it" he offered. 2minutes later he came back with it and I put it in Lorenzo's mouth, as usual he rejected it but finally accepted it. 15 minutes later he was falling asleep. I put him down on bed and cleaned the mess I had made. " What's wrong, you're doing everything with somuch anger" he asked. " It's nothing, have you talked to simpawe" I asked sitting down on the bed. " Yes I did, she said she'd get her nails removed because they might hurt the baby. She said she is from the Alcolar caretaking agency and I made sure to make a call there they said they know her" he said sitting down next to me. " Something about her just doesn't sit well with me, her smile is not good, maybe it's just a figment of my imagination" I said sighing softly. " Just take everything slow and steady, you don't have to work so hard with the baby. She's the nanny not you" he said putting her hand on top of mine. " I know, I just want Lorenzo to get close to me, we have to have that bond. I no it can never be anything close to what he and his mother share but I

gotta try" I said. " You're just... you're perfect." He said with somuch emotion." I could never be anywhere near perfect" I said standing up, he stood up too. " Believe me you're are and I love you for that" he said holding my hands. " I haven't forgiven you yet" I said ducking the kiss. " Aww, what can I do to earn your forgiveness" he asked chuckling casually. " A nice home made dinner and a visit to the Dlamini's could do the trick" I said seriously. " What?, It would take take me at least three hours get a full meal prepared and then the drive and then the appointment plus I have important documents I'm working on." He said whining. " You have brains, you'll figure it out" I said before leaving the room.

.

Salvatore's POV

" I'll see to later on tomorrow, just email it to me" I said to the club manager. " Ok sure" the phone was on loud speaker. I hung up and continued with my cooking. I was going to make lamb chops, creamy

mushrooms, smashed potatoes with cheese, fried rice with eggs, green salad, brucheta and for desert I was going to make panna cota with strawberries. " Can I assist you with something" I head a voice ask." No thanks, I like to have the whole kitchen to myself when I am cooking" I said after turning around. It was the nanny, " Cora's such a lucky woman. A guy who can cook. I hope she appreciates you because who knows some other women might just snatch you before she starts to realize your worth" she said smiling, I just gazed at her puzzled. " It's a joke, I'm just joking" she said chuckling. " That was a joke?, Ohh. I just didn't catch it" that's all I said before returning to what I was doing. " Are you sure that you don't need my help?" She asked nagging me. " You can get those boiled potatoes peeled off" I said trying to get her off my back. Cora was in the library studying, Amanda?. The last time I saw her she was going to her room upstairs. " It's a beautiful home you have here, how much did it cost?" She asked. I was mixing cornflour to prepare brucheta dish. " How much did it cost?" She asked sounding curious. " Not that much, I'd appreciate it if we just got a lot

done and less talking. " I said sighing. " Yes Mr Salvatore" she said giggling.

.

" Simpiwe, you're here?" Cora asked startling me. " Yeah, Mr Salvatore asked for my help" she said. Cora gazed at me. " Not exactly, she asked if she could help me. She was such a pain in the ass, I offered her something to do." I said defensively upon seeing Cora's look. " Mmh, congratulations on your new assistant chef. I'm just gonna go and check on Lore" she said. " You don't have to do that, she will go" I said looking at the nanny. " Of course, let me go and check out on him" she said wiping off her wet hands. " Can you smell that" I said sniffing around. " Smell what" she asked puzzled. " I smell jealousy, are you burning up with jealousy" I asked giggling. " Whatever, I'm out of here." She said rolling her eyes. " Don't worry she's not my type" I said laughing as she was leaving.

[6/3, 14:48] Lynne: Page 39

Narrated

Salvatore finished cooking and they went to see the Dlamini's, passed by the doctor and came straight home around 20pm. They found the nanny watching television and baby Alonzo laying besides her, Amanda was not around. " Where's Amanda" Cora asked as they entered into the house. " She was fetched by some white guy just a few minutes after you left" Simphiwe said . " Ohh, OK" she said. " Let me go and take a shower" Salvatore said looking so tired. " I need one too" Cora said yawning. They both went upstairs, Cora took a bath while Salvatore took a shower. She got done first, wore her warm PJs and went downstairs to warm up food for dinner.

.

Amanda's pov

Michael had fetched me from the house earlier that day after I told him I was bored. We talked a lot on the cellphone, we were more like good friends. Well at least I thought so, we catches a movie at his house, three movies infact, it raining heavily outside.

We were undercovers, more like under a shawl on the couch. I made sure that there was some distance between us. " I think I should go, I'm tired" I said having some popcorn. " It's still early" he said glancing at his wrist watch. " Two more hours" he said " but that's what you said two hours ago" I said whining. " Besides this movie is boring" I said hi yawning. My eyes kind of hurt, I'd been sitting Infront of the couch for hours!. " Let's do this, since I'm curious how about I ask you some questions and you ask me back" he suggested. " Mmh, sounds dangerous" I said so unsure about it. " Come on" he said. " Okay" I reluctantly agreed. " Ladies first" he said. " You go first, I have no idea what to ask" I said shrugging.. " ladies first" he said persistent. " Okay, don't lie. Infact I think we should into each others eyes" I said sitting up straight and he did the same. " What sort of work do you do?" I asked looking into his eyes. " I work for a police station as a detective. But I thought I already told you" he said, I could tell that there was no lie in that but just some held back information. " You can't possibly own those cars in the garage and this house and then tell me you're a

police officer. Come on" I said sighing softly." One question at a time, I answered your question now it's my turn." He said. " But—" no buts" he said putting his index finger on my lips. I nodded, my heart skipped a bit. " Who hurt you?" He asked. " What do you mean?" I asked, blinking a couple of times. " Who hurt you, Everytime I look into your eyes, there's always this kind of fear. I don't understand. " He said seriously. " I'm not sure if I follow, I didn't know that you also psychoanalyse people" I said chuckling nervously. " Let's pass on that question. Your turn" he said after gazing at me for a while. I was feeling uncomfortable. " OK, ummh. How old are you" I asked. " Why do I get the feeling that you're avoiding personal questions on purpose" he commented." no I'm not" I said defensively." Okay I'm 28 years old" he answered making me gagging unbelievably. " Really!" I asked eyes popped out. " What" he asked chuckling casually. I shrugged my shoulders and sighed. " My turn" he said taking my hands into his. " Why do you always run away whenever I kiss you" he asked solemnly. " That's too deep, I'm not going to answer that" I said clearing my throat. " There was

no rules made concerning the Deepness of a question if I remember correctly" he said still holding my hands. " I'm not going to answer that, we better turn back to the movie. This was such a bad idea from the beginning. I quit. " I said turning my head towards the television and yanking my hands. My heart was racing like a wild beast the next think I knew he was breathing on my neck. " Why, you can tell me. That I make you feel foreign things that you never felt before. The your heart races like never before, that my touch—. " I'd like to leave immediately" I said jumping off the couch and standing as far away from him as possible. He just gazed at me with a dirty smirk on his face. He stood up and walked towards me," don't come near me" I said warningly but he continued on his way. And I was moving backwards until the back of my legs hit the glass table, I almost fell but he caught my hand just in time. And I was swiftly pulling to his chest, my breath got hitched. " Are you OK?" He asked looking into my eyes, I nodded my heart racing. The fear of falling mixed with the fear of his closeness. " You don't have to be so scared of me I don't bite" he said

removing the strands of hair from my face. K don't know how his one hand got to my waist but it was there. I nodded once again, so naive. My eyes found their way to his pinkish lips. We kissed, no this time he didn't kiss me but we kissed. My insides were melting. I felt his hands get under my sweater, their coldness sent chills down my spine. My breathing escalated. I had my hands on his shoulders, my sweater was down the floor and I was left in a bodice. He led me towards the couch and made me lay down, he took off his clothes and I was watching him the entire time. I know I have seen his dick before but it looked a little bit longer that night. He took off my sneakers, sweatpants along with the panties I was wearing. I felt so exposed that I shut my thighs close. He kissed my knees and opened them gentle, I closed them one more time. He set them apart one more time and got in between them. He had his hands on the side of my head and was gazing into my eyes. I was feeling so shy, I closed my eyes. " My Lady, open your eyes" he said. No please included, like I had said he was no man to beg. I opened up my eyes and the rest is ancient

history.

.

Cora's POV

" Simpiwe, how old are you if I may ask" i asked anyways. " I'd be turning 26 on the following month" she said with one of her smiles I could not fathom. " Mmh, great. Was it your dream to become a nanny. I mean I wouldn't be surprised. What I mean is some people out there really love kids. It's a good thing that you take care of babies" I said smiling. Salvatore almost shocked on his food. " Excuse me" he said standing up and pouring himself a glass of water. " Thanks I guess" she said returning the fake smile. " What do you do" she asked. " Me?, Ohh. I'm a gynaecology student. This is my first year actually" I said faking a giggle. " Wow" that's all she said. " Mr Salvatore, your cooking skills are immaculate I must say" she said gazing at Salvatore who was sitting down. That day she was wearing another one of her bumshorts. " Thank you" Salvatore said smiling " You should have some more of these smashed potatoes, they're really scrumptious" I said picking up the bowl

of smashed potatoes and dishing into her plate. " No I'm fine thanks" she said as I was putting the third spoon. " That's enough, thanks" she said avoiding the fourth spoon with her hand. " Are you sure" I asked smiling like a retard fool. " Yeah I'm sure" she said looking at me like she was questioning my sanity. " Okay then" I said then I dug in my food. " I'll wash the dishes" she offered already collecting the dishes on the table. I continued with my food. From the corner of my eye I could see amusement in Alonzo's eyes. " While you're at it please cover up the left overs and put them in the refrigerator. Excuse me" I said leaving the dining room. I went into the guest room and checked on the baby. He was a long sleeper that one, he had sweat on his forehead. I leaved him right there, went into our room took my pills and retrieved my phone and earphones from my handbag. I got undercovers and listened to music while I was playing a puzzle game on my phone. Alonzo came in two hours later, he was carrying his laptop and charger " Can't sleep?" He asked getting undercovers I just ignored him bluntly even though I could hear him. He put his

laptop in between us and plugged the charger in the side lamp socket. He unplugged my earphones. " Let's watch a movie" he said looking at my even though I wasn't looking at him but I could feel his eyes on my skin. I closed my eyes, took a deep breath and opened them up again. I moved closer to him and put my head on his shoulder, held his hand. He played the movie, ' What happened to Monday'.

.

30 minutes I was was feeling sleepy, the pills were taking over. I put a pillow on his thighs and layed my head there. He put his hand on my head and kept on brushing my hair. I could hardly see the picture of the movie, my vision was blur. " I love you" I heard him say faintly and then lights out. I woke up on his chest the next day. His arms around my petite waist. I sat up straight, my knees against my chest. Head on top of them. I was just admiring his beautiful face. His hair and face looked perfect even though he hadn't taken a bath yet. He later on opened up his eyes and smiled at me. " Good morning" I said smiling. " Hey" he said yawning and rubbing his eyes.

" Staring is considered rude you know" he said sitting in an upright position. " I couldn't help myself" I said smiling childishly. " I'm that irresistible?" He said chuckling. " Let's just say I can't keep my eyes off you" I said giggling. " Mmh, let's take this conversation into the bathroom" he said seductively. He then stood up and carried me into the bathroom. We fucked under the shower water running.

.

Amanda's pov.

I woke up alone in bed it was nothing new anyways, I was naked. I sat up straight and looked around, I got off the bed with the duvet cover wrapped around my body." Don't even think about it" he said entering the room. He was carrying a tray in his hands. " What?" I asked startled by his sudden entering. " Are you trying to ruin' breakfast in bed' " he asked emphasising. " Get back here" he said sitting on the the edge of the bed, I sat back down. " Let me see, weetbix, apple and lime juice. I think I am going to

get sick. This doesn't even go together, it's terrible." I said frowning. " I only found these and stop insulting my kindness. I usually eat out" he said defensively. " Usually or always?" I asked eyebrows raised up. " Okay that's what I meant" he said sighing. " I'll have the Apple, I'll have to pass on your breakfasts vision" I said picking up the Apple and biting it. " I'll have it, I'm hungry anyways" he said picking up the bowl and eating . I put down the Apple's inner core on the tray and drank up the glass of juice. It was quite cold so I didn't finish it. " I'll go and have a bath" I said standing up. " I'll join you" he said. " No, that's not such a good idea, thanks for the breakfast anyways" I said rushing into the bathroom. I locked it and took a bath. Guilt was eating me, but there was more of fear than guilt. What now that he finally got what every man desire.

.

A short bedtime story

[6/3, 14:48] Lynne: Page 40

Salvatore's POV

Joe—Close to you

Mmmmm mmm yeah mmmmm

Mmmmm mmmmm mmmmm

Mmmmm mmm yeah

Mmmm mmmmm

Mmmmm mmmmm

When we turn out the lights

The two of us alone together

Something's just not right

But girl, you know that I would never ever let
another's touch

Come between the two of us

Cause no one else will ever take your place

(Chorus)

No one else comes close to you
No one makes me feel the way you do
You're so special girl to me
And you'll always be eternally
Everytime I hold you near
You always say the words I love to hear
Girl,with just a touch
You can do so much

No one else comes close

Mmmmm mmm mmm

Woah, oooh, oooh, girl

Mmmmm mmm mmm

And when I wake up to

The touch of your head on my shoulder
You're my dream come true
Oooh girl, you know I'll always treasure
Every kiss and every day
I love you girl in every way
And I will always will cast in my eye

(Chorus)

No one else comes close to you
No one makes me feel the way you do
You're so special girl to me
And you'll always be eternally
Everytime I hold you near
You always say the words I love to hear
Girl, with just a touch
You can do so much

Oooh baby, baby

(Chorus)

No one else comes close to you

No one makes me feel the way you do

You're so special girl to me

And you'll always be eternally

Everytime I hold you near

You always say the words I love to hear

Girl, with just a touch

You can do so much

No one else comes close

Woah, oooh, oooh, girl

No one else comes close

Damn, I love you.

I had decided to take Cora out on a picnic since we haven't been spending that much time together plus she was going back to university on Monday. Our tummies were full, we were laying on our backs on a rag. The rare sun rays kissing our skins tenderly and soothingly. It was a little bit cold so we were wearing tracksuits. Holding each other's hands. The music playing in the car, we were down the lake. " What do you think about this one" she asked showing me yet another interior design for Enzo's room. " This one, I bet it will only last for four years. How about you take some ideas from these and create something with your own personal touch or better take the interior designer's help." I suggested sighing softly. " Mhh I'll take the latter idea" she said thoughtfully. " Can we go back into the house now, it's cold out here" she said sitting upright but I pulled her back down. " What's the hurry, we hardly spend time together. Let's stay a little longer" I said glancing at

her. " But we can still spend time together inside the house, can't we" she said. " With your enemy there, I don't think so" I said chuckling. " Enemy?, She's not my enemy OK. It's just that I don't like the way she smiles at me, the way she dresses and then you had to smile at her" she said sounding pretty much jealous. " I couldn't help myself after all it has been a long time since I got such a genuine compliment. She had a beautiful smile on her face, I had to return it" I said purposely. The next thing I knew she was on top of me, hands on my neck. " Don't tempt me Salvatore, I could just strangle you to your own grave right now" she said warningly and fuming. " Calm down tiger, I was just pulling your leg" I said giggling. " yeah whatever" she said rolling her eyes angrily, she tried to get off me but I held her waist in place. " Leave me Salvatore, I'm never going to talk with you" she said. " I was just joking, sorry" I said smiling. " Well it's so funny." She said seriously pissed off. " Damn your anger turns me on" I said. " You look so sexy, looking what you've done to junior" I said pointing at my boner in-between her thighs. " You will get the pussy from those who gives you sweet

compliment" she said folding her arms around chest. " Are you sure you want that" I asked while getting my hands under her Jersey and vest. I got to her warm skin, she jumped a bit. " Get your cold hands off my waist" she said eyes popped out. " I dare you to make me" I said with a smirk on my face. " Do you remember the first time I got my dick inside you, you moved up the couch trying to get away because it was too big for your pussy. With hard difficulty i finally got it in, you cum just when when I was half in—" it's not going to work" she cut me off. " I'm lost, enlighten me please" I said acting so dumb. " I see what you're doing, you're trying to get into my head. You're trying to turn me on. It's— and then her breathing hitched because I started to move my hands in circles on her tiny delicate waist. Her chest rising and falling so visibly" What is it with your waist that makes you lose your senses, as I was saying I started moving slowly and steadily inside you, I could feel your walls expanding but I couldn't find it in me to pull out and spare you. Your pussy was so tight and warm, driving me insane.—" she tried to get off my laps once again but I tightened my grip one

more time. I could see that what whatever i was doing was getting to her, because her breathing escalated to another level. I unzipped her Jersey and got rid of it along with the Jersey. She was full obeying the law of attraction. Her firm breasts were hard . I caressed her whole upper body with so much patience and tenderness. There was nothing a woman loved then being caressed the entire body. Her eyes were closed, I pulled up my knees and she leaned over them. " Salvatore, the bodyguards could be around here" she said suddenly anxious. " Relax, they're not around. We're alone" I said throwing away the Jersey she had just covered her breasts with. I kept on playing with the nipples. She even forgot that she was angry, " then we took a bath together, I hadn't had enough but you were in pain, just when things were getting hitting in the bathtub you walked out. I followed you and pleaded with You, you tried to refuse but finally gave in. could not get enough of you, I can't get enough of you. 15 minutes later she had her back on me, she was kneeling down, chest bended over the rag, her pink pussy and fine ass all out for me. I kept on teasing her with my dickhead

on her entrance, " Salvatore please" she pleaded impatiently. " What do you want Il mio cuero batte" I asked smiling. " I want it, I want your dick" she said fastly. " How badly do you want it" i asked putting it in just a little bit" I want it so badly, badly, fuck me already" she said angrily. I forcefully penetrated making her scream and move away a bit but held her back in place and I started moving...

.

Amanda's pov

" I'll see you tomorrow" he said as he just turned off the engine, we were at Mr Muscles' premises. " I don't think that'd happen, look whatever happened was a terrible mistake and it will never happen again, let's just forget it ever happened" I said trying to open up the door but it was locked. " Wow, I can't believe you just said that. " He said astonished and a little bit hurt. That was new, " what?, You got what every man wants. Congratulations you got the pussy you've been after. Just open the door for me and let

me leave" I said impatiently, it was better to reject people first before they rejected you. I wasn't going to get emotionally attached to nobody, that way I'd have my heart secured. " I want you to look me in the eyes and tell me that you didn't feel what I felt last night, tell me that my presence doesn't affect you in any way, tell me you don't love me and then I will let you go." He said so emotionally. " Love?, Love is just a word. It means nothing in nower days. I don't have time for love, it's overated. It's all a lie" I said looking him in the eyes. " The door is unlocked, you can get out" he said so calmly, I swallowed the hard lump in my throat and get off his car. He drove off. I rushed into the house. " Finally she decides to grace us with her presence". The nanny said playing with the baby. " Shut up" I snapped walking upstairs. I locked the door and threw myself in bed, I can't remember how I dozed off but I was woken up by the banging sound on the door. " Mandy open up" Cora shouted from the outside. "Okay I am coming" I screamed getting off the bed. I unlocked and she opened up, I went into the bathroom and washed my face. " Are you okay?, Simpiwe tells me that you came back upset"

she asked looking concerned. " I cheated on Leah, I slept with him. Believe me I tried to resist him,his touch but my body betrayed me. It's like he knew every single passcode to every inch of me. And then in the morning I had to act like it was all good, like I was used to sleeping around with men." I said walking around in circles. " Calm down, I'm confused. Who are you talking about" she asked looking dumbfounded. " Michael, I slept with Michael Sullivan. That jerk head, he sleeps with a lot of girls." I cursed." Do you love him" she asked sitting down on bed. " Love?, Love him?. I don't know, I wouldn't love a man like that" I said in denial. " Do you ever miss him, be honest" she said looking me in the eyes. I nodded. There was no use of lying to her, she knew me cover by cover. " Do you enjoy his company" she asked and I nodded helplessly once again. " Does it feel good to feel his touch, do you ever think of him and find yourself smiling" she asked. " Yes yes yes, just get to the point Cora" I snapped impatiently. " You're inlove Amanda, you love him" she said not so surprised. " I love him?, I love him. Gosh him of all people. " I said in defeat after the realization of the

enormous amount of love i had for him. " This can't be, I can't love a man like him. He's a womanizer, you should see his social media. Why does my heart always have to betray me. First it was Tim and then Jack and then this jerk" I said sitting down on bed. I was suddenly feeling so weak. " Calm down okay, everything will be fine... does he know that you love him. I mean have you told him" she asked once again. " No!, Never. I told him to leave me alone. I don't ever want to see his face. " I said solemnly. " Wooh, OK but does he love you, what do you see when you look into his eyes" she asked confusing me even more " Cora I am not like you. I can't just look into somebody's eyes and then read their thoughts/feelings. If you love me you tell me and that's that" I said and she found amusement in all of that. " Okay so did you guys use protection" she asked giggling. " Shit, shit. Oh heavens i am so dead, my parents are going to kill me if I get pregnant. What have I done" I cursed walking around

. " Calm down, we can fix this. All you need is just a morning after pill" she said holding me in a

stationary position. " I'll ask the driver to take us to the pharmacy." She was so matured and calm. " And you have to make a decision, it's either Lethu or Michael. You can't have your bread buttered on both sides. You have to chose between the truth and lies. What I can tell you is that life is too short to be lived in fear and unhappiness. Choose wisely" she said, she was like the best sister I never had.

.

Cora's POV

" Do you think that my friend has any chance with Michael" I asked moisturizing my arms Infront of the mirror. " I wouldn't know, all I can say is that she's different from the rest of the girls he usually date or rather sleep with" he said walking around with the baby while feeding him. I insisted that he slept with us that night. " How so, I mean how different" I asked closing the body lotion and standing up. " Well the girls he usually date are sophisticated, more physical mature than mental, they have artificial nails and hair. Classy and elegant. More feminine then Amanda" he said as I got undercovers and took my romance

novel from the side stand of the headboard. " Do you think she stands a chance of winning his heart" I asked. "That's entirely up to Michael's heart, I wouldn't know. Don't you think you should be having a driver's license by now?" He asked changing the subject. " No why" I asked staring at him in curiosity. " I'll teach you how to drive soon" he said not really answering my question. " Why?" I asked . " It's the funeral service tomorrow and I am just wondering who'd drive since I'm so tired" he said putting the baby undercovers and getting undercovers too. On his side of the bed. It was around 22pm. After that picnic he went to work and came back late. " You have a driver " I said. " You want me to take a driver to a funeral, either way I am teaching you how to drive end of discussion" he said laying on his back. " We shall see, I have a degree to catch, i need to spend at least 52 hours in studying per week. And don't forget about the session that takes two hours. I don't have time" I said stressed. " There's no need to panic, everything will be figured out in time. I also have loads of businesses to take care of. " He said putting his hand on my shoulder. " There will be

times when you will be compelled to drive, this is necessary too, it will be squeezed in somehow" he said seriously. " What happened, you're scaring me. Did something happen. Are we in some sort of danger" I asked panicking even more. " Nothing happened, it's better to be prepared early. In case something happens" he said. " Why don't you just teach me how to shoot then or better yet leave the life you've living" I said, holding the side of his head. " I wish it was as simple as that but it's not. I have a lot of people who'd rejoice in seeing me dead. You don't just wake up and quiet" he said holding my hands in assurance that everything was going to be fine. " Teaching you how to shoot would be the worst mistake I've ever made, I don't want you to get involved." He said sighing heavily. " Good night" I said switching the side lamp and put my book on the side stand. I didn't even read it. " Good night Il mio cuero batte, I love you" he said and I could tell that he wanted me to respond but I didn't. I closed my eyes. I heard him sighing heavily and switching off the lamp.

.

Narrated

The funeral service went out well, even though there was nothing well about it. It was filled with sadness, pain and sorrow. Close family friend and relatives were back at the Dlamini's house, Cora and Esihle were serving people with beverages and scorns. Salvatore and his brothers were outside chatting. " I can't believe he's really gone, just yesterday he was teasing me about my expiring engagement promise" Siboniso said so sad. " He was such a good man, he didn't deserve to die just like that" Salvatore said patting Siboniso's shoulder. " He was too good, can you believe that he never laid a hand on me. Whenever he was upset, he'd just take a walk in the neighborhood" Sandile commented. There was silence for a while" I could use a different topic, this is depressing" Siboniso said holding back his tears. " I think we all need to take a vacation, in December. Get out of the country a bit. " Salvatore suggested. " That'd be great only if we could afford it. Pampers

play with no man." Sandile said making the other two to giggle. " You have two kids now, what's the hurry brother" Salvatore said mocking him. " What's the hurry, dude I'm almost 40" he exclaimed. " You're being hit by midlife crisis" Siboniso said chuckling casually. " In nower days midlife crisis occurs at the age of 45" Sandile said and they all looked at Salvatore. " What?, Don't look at me. I've just turned 34" Salvatore said defensively. " We didn't say anything" they said in unision while laughing. " Baby wami, I think we should get going. I need to get some clothes ironed ASAP" Cora said coming out of nowhere. " Give me 5 minutes, I want to put these morons in line" she said but his eyes weren't at Cora. " I'm going to get my bag" Cora said going back inside the house. " Baby wami?" Sandile commented laughing. " Hey, you're crossing the border" Salvatore said warningly. Siboniso just bursted into laughter. " Bro, we should discuss about that vacation you mentioned. It'd be nice to go out with you guys" Siboniso said solemnly. Cora came back from the house, " I'll see you guys around, shall we" she said getting her arm around Salvatore's. " Good bye sister

inlaw" Siboniso said. " See you around, love birds"
Sandile said walking towards the house. " Good bye
guys" Cora said waving at them. " Hey AJ" Sandile
called out making Salvatore turn around. " She's for
keeps" he said then walked inside the house. They
walked outside the home and Salvatore opened the
door for Cora, buckled her up and then got inside,
drove off.

.

" Stop tickling me" Cora said giggling. They were
getting inside their house, Salvatore behind Cora. He
was slightly tickling her, " how was the funeral
service" simpiwe asked as soon as they got inside
the house, ruining Cora's bubbly mood. " It was fine"
Cora said so tense and irritated.

And then Salvatore surprisingly carried her into his
arms. " Joaquin" Cora called out his name giggling
once again. " Let's go and take a shower" he said
Carrying her upstairs. Simpiwe left with
astonishment, fury burning inside her.

Anyways Cora and Salvatore having an innocent

shower, he was washing and she in return washed his lovingly. " I love you" she said leaning on his back as the shower water ran down their bodies.he turned around I kissed her forehead.

.

Cora's POV

After that shower were wore our PJs even though it was around 3pm. I was in the laundry room ironing my clothes when simpawe entered. " You're such a lucky woman Cora" she said. " What do you mean" I asked not really interested in knowing. " You've got such a loving man, he takes care of you in every possible way. I can see that you mean the world to him" she said, " no, he means the world to me" I said smiling. " Infact I think he loves you more than he loves his own son" she said. " That's not true, Salvatore loves his son as much as he loves me" I said glancing at her. " I wonder how it feels like to be that much loved" she said and I could feel the edge of sadnesses in her voice. " Haven't you been loved before" I asked curiously. " Almost, we almost got there but then something bad happened to him" she

said. " I'm sorry to hear that, but I am sure you are going to find love again" I said, I don't know but I was suddenly feeling sorry for her. " I don't think I'd be able to ever love another soul like I loved him"she said and then suddenly walked out. Okay that was weird. I continued with my ironed. 30 minutes later I was done. I went upstairs and hanged my cloths in the closet. " I ordered pizza, my wallet is in the bathroom" Salvatore said, he was sitting on the bedroom couch doing some work on his laptop. I got into the bathroom and took his wallet. " R1000 should do, right" I said giggling. " Is the pizza made of gold" he asked eyes popped out. " You hardly give me any money, boyfriend to girlfriend allowance" I said kiddingly. He raised his eyebrows. " This is broad day robbery" he said making me laugh. " Remind me to open an account for you, otherwise my wallet will become Kalahari dessert" he said. "This is my first allowance and you're already complaining." I said pouting. " That's too much for two boxes of pizza" he said typing on his laptop. I walked up to him and kissed his forehead. " And I love you too" I said chuckling. " You've been saying

that since this morning, don't tell me that your end is near." He said frowning. " I just feel like it, " I'm too young to visit my ancestors, give me 60 more years and then you can start saying things like those. " I said walking away. " Hey Cora" he called my name as I exiting the room. I turned back. " do warn me if you're going to die, I'd like to hit that pussy one last time" he said it with a naughty smirk on his beautiful face. " Don't worry, I'll ask a gynaecologists to cut it out just for you" I said solemnly. " Eauw man" he exclaimed disgusted. I just laughed and left.

The doorbell rang just as I was ascending slowly down the stairs. I walked fast and opened up the door, the delivery guy was standing Infront of the door. " Your delivery ma'am, please sign here" he said giving me the board, I signed, "how much is it going to be" I asked. " R279 ma'am" he said giving me the slip. I gave him R300. " I don't have change" he said. " You can keep it, thanks" I said taking the two boxes. "Thanks,Have a great day ahead ma'am." He said before leaving. I put the pizza on the kitchen counter. " He has to pay for what he did to him" I

heard simpilwe say as I was walking in her room. " I've got his wea—look I have to go" she said in panic as she turned around and saw me. " Cora, what are you doing in here" she asked as if I had caught her eating the forbidden fruit of Eden. " Ohh I came to let you know that there's pizza in the kitchen counter if you're hungry" I said smiling weirdly. I was still caught up in what I heard her say. She carried somuch bitterness in her. " Ohh, thanks. I was just talking to my grandfather on phone. Our landlord is so despicable" she said but I hadn't asked her. " I'll see you around" I said turning on my feet. I had so many thoughts running inside my head but I brushed them off. And went to the library to study.

.

" I got you something" Salvatore said as i got into our bedroom around 23pm. He put his hands under a pillow and came back with a covered up box. " What is it" I asked standing on the bed's edge. " He stood up and came by my side" what don't you open it up and find out" he said giving me the box. I unwrapped the small rectangular shaped box,i t was written

American Swiss, I opened it up and I couldn't believe what I found there. "Wow" I exclaimed. "You like it" he asked. It was a red big diamond stoned necklace. It looked way too much expensive. "It's beautiful, how much did it cost" I asked. "Let me help you put it on" he said ignoring my question. "When did you buy this" I asked as he was helping me put it on. "On my last business trip to Dubai" he said. "I know you don't celebrate this day, but I can you allow me to say 'Happy birthday' my love." He asked, giving me one of those smiles i couldn't resist. "Salvatore please" I said sighing heavily, I tried so hard not to remember my birthday and then he had to remind me. "Please" he said. I nodded and turned around to face him. "Happy birthday and many more to come." He said kissing me all over the face. I smiled at him, "so how do you like the your gift" he asked. "It's stunning I love it. Thank you" I said hugging him.

.

5days later

It was early in the morning, we both were getting ready to go our separate ways for the day. I was

standing Infront of the mirror. I was applying my makeup and Salvatore fixing his bowtie Infront of the mirror. I was wearing a tight short sleeve black dress, knee length black leather boots and a long brown light fabricated overcoat. Salvatore was wearing a grey scotched suite and brown Italian made formal shoes. He had an important meeting. There was suddenly a knock on the door. I went over and opened up, simpive was standing there still in her gown. "Good morning, I made some soft porridge, it's getting cold. You should come and have some. " She said smiling. " Thanks, we'll be there in a Sec" I said returning the smile. " Ohkay, hurry. I'll dish up for you so long" she said. " You look stunning by the way" she said. " Thanks" I said before closing the door. " There's breakfast downstairs, hurry up" I said getting my handbag from the closet. We both went downstairs. "' I put some extra lemonade in your, since I can see that you like to keep in shape. It might be a little bit bitter" she said serving us. " Thanks again....it taste great" I said after taking in one spoon." I know right, my grandmother gave me the recipe. I thought I should say thank you guys for

treating me so well" she said. She and Lorenzo were to go back to Nina's apartment within 3days. " You're always welcome, as long as you take good care of my buddy" Salvatore said. We are up and the driver took me to university, Salvatore drove himself to work. He was still searching for another driver.

.

" Are you OK" Kellen asked me. " I don't think so, my tummy doesn't feel right. It hurts, I've been to the ladies room for the third time." I said almost in tears. My tummy was killing me. I was almost in tears, " I need to go" I said rushing to the ladies room once again, I relieved myself once again, wiped my butt and wore my panties. I was I about to flash the toilet when I noticed the water had turned red and the edges of the sit walls had blood spots on them. I flashed up, my tummy felt like it was on fire, my intestines twisting. I was feeling nauseous and dizzy and weak, with the help of the walls I walked out of the ladies room, I needed to see the doctor. I was burning up and sweating, " Salvatore" I kept on whispering his name in pain. I didn't make it that far,

I collapsed and then lights out.

.

Comment share and like.

[6/3, 14:49] Lynne: Page 41

Salvatore's POV

The meeting ended around 13:30pm. I got out of the boardroom and went into my off, it was being held at hotel Paradisé and we had a few offices there for meetings and other stuff. I had switched off my phone before I went into the meeting, I took it out of my pocket and switched it on. I got a lot of missed calls from Cora, I called her back but a man answered. " Who are you?" I asked frowning. " Mr Salvatore Cora has been admitted in hospital" he said. " What, what happened to her. Is she okay, where's she?" I asked all at once. " She's at the Francis public hospital, you need to hurry" he said and then I hung up, took my car keys and rushed into the elevator. Which seemed to be taking hours and hours to get to the underground parking lot. I used my GPS because I was not familiar with that

particular part of the city. It took me an entire hour to get there. I parked outside and walked in. " Excuse me, where Can I find Cora Maphumulo" I asked the receptionist who was busy typing something on the computer. " Sir please go and Wait in the waiting room" she said chewing on her bubble gum. " What the fuck is this... I'm asking you to fuckin' show me the ward she's in and you're telling me to wait." I cursed " sir stop shout—.." Mr Salvatore, thanks God you're finally here" I heard a voice say behind me. " Where is she?" I asked the guy who called me, I guessed. " Come this way" he said leading the way. " What happened to her, how did she end up here" I asked while we were walking. " I don't know, the doctors are still with her in the ICU. Well it all started a few hours ago, she was constantly going in to the ladies room, she had a stomach bug or so we thought and then on her forth time into the ladies room I heard students screaming. I went out and checked, she was lying on the floor with vomit by her side. I rushed to her, she was unconscious. I called an ambulance but you know how the public services are, it was taking it time so I drove her here. I used

her phone to call you" he explained. " The doctor said we I must wait here" he said as we walked into the waiting room Infront of the ICU. There were other people there, how long has she been here?" I asked running my fingers in my hair. " 3hours if I'm not mistaken" he said. I took off my jacket, i was burning up and sweating. An hour later" Mr Kellen" the doctor came in and called his name. He stood up and I followed, " her condition is critical, you might want to call her family" the Dr said. " I want to see her" I said impatiently. " Who's he? " The doctor asked frowning. " I am her husband, i want to see my wife immediately" I said angrily. " Now that her husband is here, I'll take my leave" Kellen said and then walked out. " Well it's good that you finally came but I'm afraid you cannot see her right now. Her condition is critical" he said. " You should be telling me what's wrong with her but instead you're busy telling me that her condition is critical what should I do with that stupid information?" I asked so angrily. " Sir calm down, I understand your frustration. She has consumed the most dangerous poison, we have not been able to identify it at the moment but we've

given her medication to stop it from causing more damage. The results will be back within two days until then we just have to wait." He said driving me even more insane. " You know what I'm calling a better hospital, arrange for her transfer papers and whatever it is that you Should do just do it. I want my wife out of this stupid hospital within the next two hours. " I snapped taking my phone from my pocket. " Sir, her breathing is supported by machines. It will endanger her life if she gets transferred, please think about it" he said. " I'm not letting her stay another four hours in this useless hole, her chances of survival are slim in here zero God knows I'd never forgive myself if anything should happen to her while I watch. I'm getting her out of here" I protested. " seems like you've made up your mind, I'll arrange for the paper, whatever happens to her will be on you" he sabefore leaving. I made a phone call and an hour later the airplane came. She was safely transferred to the white gardens hospital. I was once again waiting in another waiting room.

.

An hour later doctor Davis came out of the ICU. "How's she, she's stable but critical. Whatever poison she ingested is very strong, we've done an X-RAY Scan her gut is corroded. Her intestines are damaged badly. We've managed to stop the bleeding, the tests will come back from the laboratory within the next few hours" he explained. "Will she make it" I asked not really anticipating for the arrival of the answer. "I don't want to lie, it's bad. It's a miracle that she's still Alive. We will be able to speculate tomorrow right now, I really don't know" he said crushing my already bleeding heart. "Can I see her" I asked swallowing the lump in my throat. "You can go in" he said patting my shoulder and then he left. I turned the door knob and pushed the door opened. I took my own pace, walked up to her. Her skin was reddish brown. It looked like she was coming down with skin rash. I sat down on the couch near her bed. "I'm...mi dispiace(I'm sorry). Non posse perdarti ora sei lamia Vita per favore svegliata(I can't lose you now, you're my life please wake up)" I begged holding her hand, I could not hold back the tears, like a pool of water they came rushing down my face. "Il

mio cuero batte(my heart beat)... " I called out softly. She didn't budge, we stayed like that for a long time until..."Kong" Michael said getting inside the ward. My whole friends walked in, even Amanda was there. She Waltzed to the other side of the bed and held Cora's hand. " Coh, open your eyes. Please wake up" she pleaded crying. " She's sedated, it's pointless, I've tried" I said helplessly. " Is she okay, who did this to her" siwe asked walking towards Cora. All the women attended to her. I stood up, " what are you guys doing here" I asked sighing softly. " We're your family, why didn't you let us know about this tragedy" Mbutho asked angrily. " How did you find me" I asked. " Your father contacted us, since he's out of the country" Kevin said but his eyes were on Cora. " But I didn't call him—" he has his ways, he's the Bull after all. But that's not the main thing here. What's wrong with he?" Michael asked looking concerned, that was new. " She ingested poison" I said with an aching heart. " How could she do this to me, she can't just leave me alone. Why would she consume poison, she was happy. Everything was fine, wh—" " Whatever you're insinuating is not true Salvatore.

Cora's not that selfish, she might be a lot of things but she's not selfish. My sister is not suicidal, someone evil must have done this to her.... look at her" Amanda snapped angrily and crying. " She's right, I might not have known her for that long but she's such a selfless, bubble girl. I don't think she did this to herself" Priya added. " What did she eat today?" Tixiang asked. " How would I know, we went our separate ways, I was not with her the whole day" I kind of snapped so frustrated. " Wait let me call her bodyguards" I said and then made a phone call. " Son of a bitch" I cursed after hanging up. " These fools couldn't even help her get here, she could have died and they were busy calling me" I cursed. " What did they say" Rajesh asked. " She didn't eat anything in university" I said sighing. " Didn't she have breakfast?" Amanda asked. " No, I would kn—wait a minute. Shit how could I be so stupid. I'll kill that bitch. The nanny, she did this, how could I have missed the signs" I finally got it." I always knew that she was a bad person, I never liked her. She must pay" Amanda said with so much rage and anger in her voice. " If she did this to Cora then the baby is

not safe" Divya said thoughtfully. I immediately made a phone call to the securities at home. " What do you mean she left?" Ki asked, if that wasn't the worst day of my life then I don't know which one would be. " She took the baby and went to the mall, she hasn't returned since then." He said. " How could you be so careless, how could you let her leave with my child. You're so fired" I shouted on the phone. I then hung hung up. " Would you please keep your voices down, you're disturbing the patients" a nurse said entering the ward. " Sorry miss" Tiaxiang said eyeing the nurse. " It's okay, just keep your voices down" the nurse said smiling and left. " Maybe she dropped the baby at his mother's let me call Nina" I said dialing Nina's number and calling her. " What do you want!" She asked so rudely. " Is Lorenzo OK" I asked, I really didn't want to let her know that he might have been kidnapped or even worse, dead. " You have the nerve, you fire the nanny and then drop the baby here and then you go ahead and call me in the middle of the night, you're a nuisance just like your baby" she shouted and the hung up on me. " He is fine, I want the nanny's head within the next 24hrs"

I said jaws clenched tightly.

.

My heart was shuttered upon seeing my best friend laying like that, her skin sent goose bumps all over my body. Michael was driving me to the campus, I didn't realize that I was crying until I felt his thumb on my face. " Stop crying... we're here" he said switching off the engine at the gate. It was around 4:00am, the guys were busy searching for simphiwe through laptops, tablets and phone calls. Micheal was to go to Nina's and interrogate her as if he was working on some legal case. It was going to be easy since he was a detective. I had always suspected that they were on the wrong side of the law and that day my suspension were confirmed. Anyways it was non of my business since I was not involved with Michael, it didn't matter to me at all or so I tried to convince myself. " Thanks for taking me to the hospital" I said taking a deep breath. " There's no need,i did it for Cora's sake. You need to get some sleep" he said dismissing me. " About what I said that day, I'm sorry. You're a good guy and—" look it's

okay I understand. I need to go now. I have work to attend to. If you'd excuse me" he said sighing. " Ohh OK, thanks again" I said getting out of his car. He drove off as I checked in using my student ID. I took off my clothes and went to sleep in my undergarments. Not that I slept anyways because I had a nightmare, it was like we were burring Cora and she suddenly had maggots on her face. I woke up sweating and scared and then there was a knock on the door. " I'm coming" I said taking my gown on the couch, I put it on and opened the door. I was hit by a thunder slap and the another one followed and then the third one. I couldn't take it anymore, three slaps in a row? I could not take it anymore MN I held her hand. " Enough, what do you think you're doing" I shouted almost in tears. " Where did you go to last night, you bitch. You slept with him didn't you" she insulted me. I walked back, leaving a distance between us. " What are you talking about, what are you talking about" I asked shouting so angrily. " Don't act all jolly good fellow in front of me, where did you go to last night. You slept with your so called'gay friend' Michael. My friends saw you getting in his car

in the middle of the night. " she cursed fuming. " Shut up, what nonsense is this. My friend is fighting for her life in the hospital and here you are accusing me of shit I didn't do. For your information he was taking me to see Cora in the hospital" I shouted furiously angry. " Cora?... Cora's in the hospital?, How, what happened to her" she asked walking towards me, she tried to hug me. " Don't don't touch me, get out of my room. I'm so fed up with you and your insecurities. I'm done, I can't do this I need a break" I said, tears streaming down my face. " What, what are you say, you can't do this to us. You can't break up with me. Are you breaking up with me?" She asked in a defeated husky voice. " I'm sorry, I should not have slapped you. It will never happen again" she said sincerely. " I need a break, I'm so suffocated. I need a break, just leave" I said walking towards the door, it was opened so I held it for her to leave. " Look I'm giving you a few weeks" she said then left, what have I gotten myself into to. No, I was not about to tolerate abuse like other women did. The right side of my eye hurt so badly. I looked myself in the mirror and it was red, I called my driver

and went to the showers to take a shower.

.

Salvatore's POV

" Good morning Mr Salvatore" Dr Davis said as he entered the ward. I had fallen asleep on the couch. He was busy monitoring the machines and scrubbing something down on the patient's information board. " Dr Davis" I said rubbing my eyes and yawning. " Here are the results." He said handing me the results on a brown unsealed envelope. I took the white paper out and read, it was scientifically written. I didn't fathom most of the things written in there

" Could you explain " I said putting the paper back in the envelope.

She ingested asernic poison. Asernic poison is one of the classics hugely popular up to Victorian times, it is easy to acquire and effective.

The superficial effects are

-jaundice and skin rash but this tends to be after a

long build up

-acute poisoning from high dose results in intense gastric distress. Basically everything goes wrong with your gut causing

-vomiting

-diarrhea

-bleeding along with pain

Death follows convulsions and coma with circulatory failure being the ultimate cause. This may happen within a few hours of ingestion." He explained leaving me drained and defeated. Death was yet again to win, it was yet again about to rejoice in retrieving the only thing that kept a smile on my face. " She's going to die?, Coma? I don't get this" I asked in a husky voice. " The effects are complex in her case, since she was admitted early in the hospital. Death is a far away thing, I have no clue about coma. We will know within the next 48hours. The sedatives should be flushed out of her system within the next 6hours. Her heart beat has got back to normal, she should be fine. We will know keep on administrating

pain medication on her, she has been injected with medication that will heal the wounds. You need to go home and freshen up" he said walking towards the door. " I can't, she's not safe—" have something to eat at least" he said before leaving.

.

" Have you found anything yet" I asked on phone. I was talking with Kevin. " I think we've stumbled on something you should get to hear in person. We've located the township where the taxi dropped her, I have my guys all over there. she will be found." He explained. " Well hurry up, I want her buried. " I said fastly. " Calm down, we're getting there, she will be found today itself. " I'll contact you in two hours , just make sure that Cora is safe" he said. " Ok sure" I said then hung up. " Kong, you slept here" Michael said coming into the wardroom. . " I have no choice, until I make sure that the culprit is dead I can't leave her alone." I said standing up and walking to the bathroom, I Washed my face and rinsed my mouth with water. " So, what have you got from me" I asked. " Nothing useful, I almost slapped your stupid baby

mama, she's so dumb, this is all I've got" said giving me a document. " There's absolutely nothing here, except for the photo" I commented. " Exactly, the girl is like a living ghost, your baby mama just hired a random psychotic woman, she says she said she was from the caretaking agency" he said. " But I myself called the agency and they confirmed that they knew her" I said shocked. " Exactly, they knew her, she used to work there. She was fired last year when a couple of clients started to complain about her. she used a fake ID book. It's complicated" he said walking around, back and fro. " This is all my fault, I'll have to wait for Kevin, he has got better lead. I also need to take a shower. But—" you're right, you need to go home, take a shower, have something to eat. Get some sleep" Amanda said entering the ward. " I can't leave her alone" I said sighing. " There's no need to panic when I'm here and the detective himself is here. We will keep her safe" she said putting the flowers she was carrying on the small table besides the bed. " Amanda , Michael would—" he will protect Cora, just go already. How would you possibly be there for Cora if you become a patient

yourself, you also need to rest. Leave already before I change my mind" She insisted " she's right, go dude" Micheal agreed and just like that I stood up and left.

.

Amanda's pov

" What have you put me into , I have a lot of cases to deal with." Michael asked as soon as Mr Muscles left, " what's my fault in this, even you agreed to protecting Cora. I didn't hold a gun to your head, you agreed on your own" I said fixing Cora's pillows. " Whatever, what is it with the shades indoors?" He asked. " Is it a crime?, If so then do arrest me officer" I said sarcastically. " Ohh so now she's being sarcastic. Very funny" he said. " It was such a bad idea to stay in here with you" I said taking a deep breath. " I hope that your girlfriend didn't beat you up " he said. " Wha, what, what are you talking about, she'd never" I said, I was stuttering all of a sudden . " Do you know what I've learned being a detective for

the past 5 years," he said walking up to me. " What, how would I know anyways, this is ridiculous" I said acting so bravely. " Your body language and stuttering tells me that you've lying" he said then removed my sunglasses. " She did this to you?" He asked. I nodded defeated

.

Salvatore's POV

" She's was venom's girlfriend?, As far as I know venom had no serious relationship" I said. Kevin and I were sitting on the dining room in my house. " Apparently he did." He said. Venom was the one I cut his tongue ears and legs, he was still at the NGO. " Wait...the guys are calling me" he said answering the phone. " They got her..." He told me. " Tell them to take her to the warehouse" I said. " Take her to the warehouse, sure OK. " He said then hung up. " Let me go and get my gun" I said going upstairs.

[6/3, 14:49] Lynne: Page 42

Amanda's pov

" She did this?, To you?" He asked one more time. "

YES, It's fine. Im fine" I said putting my glasses on. " No it's not fine, you're not fine. Did you hit her back?" He asked furiously angry. I shook my head no, " I never viewed you as a weak woman, why didn't you slap her back" he snapped. " Just drop it okay, I said I am fine. You don't have to act as if you give a damn about me" I snapped back. He removed my glasses once again, put his hand on my right cheek, his thumb running on my red bruise just under the eye. " Of course I give a damn about you, can't you see that?" he said, I was looking into his eyes the entire time, I saw pity and something else I could not understand. I didn't have an answer to his question. He got closer and kissed my forehead slightly, he embraced me. I hold him back, " I love you Amanda" he said out of nowhere, my heart started pounding heavily, my cheeks and ears burning up. " You, you do?"i asked unbelievably. I was looking at him blinking a couple of times. " Yes, I loved you from the first time i saw you" he said. " That's great because I think I love you too" I said smiling. " You think?" He asked holding my face on both sides. " I'm not sure about this love thing, I'm still learning" I said

confused myself. " Me neither" he said making me frown. " Don't look at me lik—.. and he was cut off by his ringing phone, he took it from his pants pocket and answered. "Kong.... that's great....but I thought I'd be there with you guys. I enjoy seeing you do those fucked up things to your enemies...this is just another inconvenience... OK sure. Cool, make it quick though. Sharp" he talked and hung up. "The Good news is that they've got the girl. The bad news is that I won't be there to watch her tasting her own medicine. What a pity" he said sighing. " Aren't you guys going to turn her in" I asked. " That would be way too easy, she needs to experience what they call slow, tormenting, torture and painful fucked up death. And with Kong, I know she's going to get just that" he said, and you could see the image of what he was saying with so much rage, it was monster like. " How did you become a CC" I asked really curious. " What's that" he asked puzzled. " Criminal Cop " I said. " And who said I was a criminal?"he asked. " There was absolutely no need for someone to say it, from what was happening last night. I read through the lines. My puzzle got solved." I said, ' so

cocky' Cora would have said. " Speaking of puzzles, how about we solve ours first, the love triangle " he said .

.

Salvatore's POV

She was sitting on the chair in the middle of the bright lighted slaughter room. Another chair Infront of him, a table with tools and a bathingtub full of ice, She was unconscious. I poured the bracket of iced water Infront of her. " Jesus, oh god where Am I" she asked standing up. " Welcome To Hell" I said. " Mr Salvatore?, What Am I doing here. How did i get here?" She asked walking around. The guys were standing in a straight line behind me. " You're deeds got you here, do sit down" I said sitting down on the other chair. " Mr Salvatore, why am I here?" She asked sitting down, looking so disorientated. She'd look at the guys and then the whole room, searching for an escape hole?. The room was sealed painted in white you could hardly see the door, which opened by entering a code. " Let's get down to business, so the porridge yesterday. It was really good I must say.

Bon appetit" I said flashing a smile. " Get me out of here please" she said. " You will get out of here ASAP as long as you'd cooperate with us. It will take just a few hours" I said. " So the porridge yesterday, what did you put in it. Let me specify what did you put in Cora's porridge?" I asked so chilled. " Lemonade, butter, honey" she said, I gave her a hard slap across the face. " I'll ask you one more time, What did you put in there" I asked leaning on the chair. " I've already told you, lemonade,butter and honey" she said holding her cheek. I threw a couple of slaps across her face, " gosh how I hate to hit woman" I said standing up and squeezing her cheeks together with my one hand. " Ohhw, look at ya bleeding nose. Let me wipe it clean for you" I said taking one of the cloths from the table. " Now...are you ready to answer?" I asked sitting down. " Fuck you" she swore at me, if there was one thing I hated the most was a woman swearing at me. I lost my cool and found myself punching her like a punching bag. " King Kong, control!" I heard Kevin say behind me. " This is all your fault, you shouldn't have sworn at me." I said standing up straight and sighing. She

was such a stubborn woman, she was breathing fire, her face was beautifully painted but she still wouldn't budge on talking. " Could you help me tie her up" I asked one of my guys and Tiaxiang came to the rescue. " No, no, no!. Stop, I did it okay. I put poison in her porridge. Please don't kill me" she begged. " Don't you guys think it's a little bit too late now?" I asked sarcastically. " Her times up, hurry I need to get back to my wife" Mbutho said and they all laughed. She was tied up tightly on the chair, her hands free. I put the tools down, put her one hand on top of the table and cuffed them on the handcuffs attached to the table. " Now we're getting closer to the real thing that was just a teaser trailer. The actual movie is about to start" I said sitting down opposite to her. " Why would you try to kill her, i mean she didn't do anything to you or did she?" I asked picking up the cigar cutter. I put one of her fingers in. She just stared at me, " let's hope you this will make you open your mouth" I said then pressed the cutter and it cut her finger flesh and went deep into the bone and chopped it up. She was whining and crying the entire time. Her finger was moving on

the side, blood oozing out of her hand. " Shut the fuck up bitch" I shouted slapping her. " I waited for her to finish crying, she cried until she had hiccups. " Are still waiting for an answer" I said sighing heavily. " You devil's advocate, you kill my boyfriend. You killed him, you're a monster. Who cuts somebody's ears out, you're twisted" she screamed whipping. " Which one cause I've killed lot of man, I've cut a lot of man's ears. Lone wolf?, trigger?, Sparrow it must be venom then" I said leaning backwards. " Why, why did you kill him," she asked angrily like she wanted to break free. " I didn't like him, I crippled him. He is still that if you didn't poison him to his grave. Back to the real business, now I want to know why you targeted her. Why not me, I was the one who crippled you boyfriend" I asked. "I wanted you to know the dark hollow feeling of losing the one that means absolutely everything in this world, I wanted you to suffer. Initially I had planned to kill the baby but it was not going to be worth a while, I found a better target. How did it feel like to watch her die slowly Infront of you?" She asked laughing like a mad woman, psycho. I put the cut on another finger and

cut it and then the other and then the other one until the entire finger were limps on the table. She was screaming and crying and yelling. " Look what you made me do, I am sorry. Why do you people always compel me do these horrible things" I said shaking my head. " Please spare me, I'm sorry. Please let me go, I shouldn't have killed her. I'm sorry" she said, keeping on hitting the table with her head. " It's a little bit too late for your stinking apologies, do you know how much damage you've caused. Her skin has rashes, her gut is wounded, she might go into coma. She's the most kind and loving person I've ever met and you targeted her. I will not spare you." I shouted furiously angry. " Please, please, please don't kill me" she begged for her life. " You're lucky because you have a chance to beg for mercy while she didn't but don't worry. I don't feel like killing you, you don't deserve to die. I'll spare you, since you spared my son" I said uncuffing her hands. " Take off your clothes" I said slowly after I untied her. " What, Why" she asked eyes popped out. "Fucking take off your clothes" I shouted. She did, using her one her, she was left in her undergarments. " Get there

inside" I said pointing at the bathtub full of ice cubes, she walked up there got in. She was looking at me with begging eyes the entire time. " Sit down" I snapped pushing her down. " Please let me go, please" she begged, I had no soft spot for her tears or whatever." Lay back, I want to see your head only, if not then this will finish you off" I said running my gun on her face. " Anything yet?" I asked doctor Davis on the phone. " There's no change, she's still unconscious, give her more ti—" He said. I hanged up right. " Kong just finish the bitch off, time's running out" Rajesh said. " I have decided, I don't want her dead. I want her not to be able to look herself in the mirror, I want her to see my face whenever she close her eyes. I will spear her" I said. It had been 30 minutes since she was in that iced water, her face had turned pale white. " OK, get out" I said. She stood up slowly, she was evaporating, her teeth colliding, her whole body shaking, " sit down" I shouted. She sat down on the chair. " Machete I need your help on this one, I need a tattoo across her right eye. Make sure that she can't ever use it again." I said. " I was starting to get bored, finally"

machete said. Making the other guys to chuckle out of amusement. He did just that with his knife, " I'm tempted by the other cheek, are you sure that you don't want another one there?" He asked seriously. " No, I think she's good now, aren't you" I asked slightly slapping her other cheek. " Please don't hurt me, I have a baby to take care of, please. Please don't—." " She has a baby?" I asked referring to Kevin. " A five year old daughter and a grandmother" Kevin said yawning. " That's hilarious, how could you be so heartless then. Didn't your boyfriend warn you about me" I asked. She shook her head " no". He face was bleeding uncontrollable. " I feel like killing you right now, you're so disgusting" I said pissed. " What will you tell the cops" I asked. " Nothing, nothing, nothing. Please spare my life" she begged crying, saliva, blood and mucous dripping off her face. " Could you do me one more favour, cut her tongue for me please. I don't trust this bitch" I said after looking into her eyes and not finding what I wanted to find. " The pleasure is all mine" Machete said. " Open up" he said calmly. She shook her her head no. " Use this" I said passing him an electronically shocker.

She shocked her, her whole body was shaking and she fell down on the floor helplessly and weak, that's when he cut her tongue after separating her clenched jaws. " I'll keep this" he said flashing the tongue Infront of us. " Could you please dump her at the hospital entrance, I need to go to the hospital." I asked wiping my hands. " Why do we always have to get the unexciting duties" Tiaxiang asked while he and Kevin were picking up the unconscious woman. " Until you learn how to use a knife then we can talk" I said opening the door. " But I can use the sword" he said. " Could you stop complaining... She's one heavy helluva woman" Kevin complained. " I am out if here" I said as we got into the garage. I got into my car and drove off.

.

I passed by the house to freshen up and have a change of clothes since ones I was wearing had blood spots, I passed by the mall and bought a huge snow white teddy bear.

When I got into the hospital it was 5pm, I parked underground and to the elevator to the ward floor

she was in, I saw Michael and Amanda sitting cozy in the waiting room. " And then?, If you guys are here then who's with her?" I asked arms folded on my chest. " Relax, the nurses are bathing her ... Is she dead?" Michael asked standing up swiftly that Amanda almost fell on the bench because she was leaning on his shoulder. " She's not but she got more than that. I figured that death would be an easy way out for her. Let's just say she lost about five fingers, an eye and tongue. She'd definitely get pneumonia" I said solemnly. " I can't listen to this, I think I'll puke. Excuse me" Amanda said rushing out, I just chuckled and sat down. We were the only ones in that waiting room. 30 minutes later the nurses got out. " Thanks for looking after her, you can go home now" I said. " There's no thanks or sorry in this family. I'll see you tomorrow" he said and then we fist bumped. " Let me go and get that drama queen" he said and then left. I went inside and found her still laying in the same position I had left her in, her skin looked better than the day before. She looked kinda oil, I guessed it was some kind of treatment for the skin. I kissed her forehead, sat down on the couch and held her

hand. " Hey... I'm back. I found the one who did this to you and I've made sure that she pays. Aren't you tired of lying down, please wake up" I said planting kissing on her hand. " Mi dispiace, avrei dovuto sapere che non poteva fare nulla di buono , de devesse accarderti ,lo, lo, potrei(I'm sorry, I should have known that she was up to no good, if anything should happen to you, I,i, would never forgive myself.)" I pleaded with her. And the my phone rang it was grandma I answered. " Nonnn Cora è In aspedale (grandma Cora is in the hospital)" I said first.

.

" Your father told me that's why I called you, ma coma è successo, start Beno?, Guards che stiamo prendendo il primo volo il (but how did this happen is she okay. Look were taking the first flight there" she said sounding so worried.

" Nonna non c'è bisigno Di quello, tiaggiomo see succede qualcosa, pei è su sedative in questo momento, anche lo non posse...(Grandma look there's no need for that, I'll update you if anything

happens, she's on sedatives right now, even I can't help...)" I said helplessly. Them coming to SA was not going to change anything. " È coma mia nipote, vergo, fine della discussions (she's like my granddaughter, I'm coming, end of discussion" she said then hung up on me, just like that. " She's so stubborn, I guess I have this magnet that tends to attract stubborn woman in my life. You're also stubborn just like her. I wonder if our daughters will take after you or me. But no, I'll like them to be just like you. You're perfect, everything you do is immaculate. " I said holding her cold hand against my cheek.

.

Amanda's pov

" Please drop me here" I said when we were just a few blocks away from the campus. "Why?" He asked still driving forward" I don't want any trouble, can you just stop without questioning me" I huffed. " No, I'm not going to put your life in danger just because your little stupid girlfriend has insecurities trust issues" he said driving on. " I guess that's the thing we have

in common" I said looking out the window. He didn't say anything until he stopped at the gate. " I'll see you tomorrow" I said opening the door. " Amanda get back inside if you do not want me to cause any scene" he said warningly. There were students still moving around. It was 18:00pm, I got back inside. " What is it?" I asked sighing. " Do we have to always argue on these petty issues" he asked looking so irritated. " Mhh, can I go now before her friends sees me in your car once again" I said looking at him. " You don't have to worry about her, she's never going to lay a finger on you" he said holding my hand. " What do you mean by that?" I asked frowning. " What did you do to her" I asked suspicious of him. " Can I get a kiss goodbye" he asked ignoring my question. " Mike please" I said shyly, scared of people who were passing by, my heart beating oof my chest. " Stop fighting this, stop fighting us" he said holding my head from both sides and then he pulled me in and we kissed passionately, I put my hands around his neck and drew him closer to my body, that kiss left my body yearning for more, my breathing increased, heart racing. He had his hands on my waist, I was

more like sitting on the handbrake than the sitting. " I want you" he said breathing faster than normal. " Let's go into my room" I said shamelessly, I wanted his thing moving inside me.

.

30 comments required

[6/3, 14:49] Lynne: Page 43

7days later

.

Salvatore's POV

It had been three full days and Cora was still unconscious, no change at all. The rash had died down a bit more than the first day. My grandparents did come, they were both staying with me in our house. Grandma visited Cora daily just like I did. I haven't had something to eat ever since, I had no appetite at all. Grandma tried to force some meal on me but it all came out in vomit. On day two Cora's body vibrated and Shaked like she was going to die and the her heart stopped beat but the shocked her

back to life. I was even scared to go inside and check, I was afraid I'd find her lying lifelessly on the hospital bed. Tears couldn't stop streaming down my face, I found myself driving away, without knowing the destination I was heading to. The doctors had ruled that she was in a coma, her lips were so dry and cracky. I worked from home, my businesses were suffering too. Some day I was supposed to go to The hotel Paradisé to welcome some VIP Russian tourists but I couldn't make it and they placed complains. I was laying on bed, it was 09:00am, I didn't feel like getting out of bed, what for?. Nothing was exciting anymore. And then there was a knock on the door, " go away!" I said faintly. Grandma budged in uninvited. I felt cold liquid hit my body, no body told me to jump off the bed. " What the fuck...shit. what are you doing" I cursed. I was wet wet wet, " don't you swear at me young man, I raised you better than that. Get your ass in that bathroom and get some bath." She snapped, " for what?, Let me go to sleep. It's the weekend. I'll only go to the hospital around 2:00pm" I said sitting down on the wet bed. " I see, you want me to pour hot

water on you. Don't worry I'll give you just that...."

She said, I just sighed. " Look son, if you keep on being like this! , Nothing will ever go right. Do something, go to church pray or something. Cora would be very disappointed in you, do you want to be a patient too?, Do you want to get admitted ttoo. This is not done, look at your beard, get yourself ready. I've prepared breakfast, you will eat it even if you vomit I don't care. Take a bath Mary is here, she's change the shirts" she said and then left, it must have been a Thursday for Mary to come and clean. I went to the bathroom and took a shower, I blow dried my hair, sprayed up and combed. I didn't shave my beard, I looked awful. I needed a whole day in a salon but who cares. I wore my puma white tracksuits and Jordan retro white with a touch of red sneakers. I went downstairs and found the grands sitting on the dining table. Breakfast was served. " Who bought the groceries?" I asked sitting down, grandma was dishing up for me. " Some kind ghost" she said so irritated. " Really, is it possible that the same ghost is serving me right now" I asked and I felt a slap on the back of my head. " Ouch!" I

exclaimed holding the spot where she hit me" Eat up you moron" she said grandpa laughed and I smiled a bit. And then my phone rang, it was the hospital. " Hello" I said my heart skipping, fear creeping in. " Mr Salvatore, please come to the hospital immediately. " The other person on the line said. " What is it?" I asked. " We will let you know as soon as you get here" she said. " Ohh OK. I'll be there in an hour" I said after taking a deep breath. " What is it?" Grandma asked sitting down. " Nothing, let's finish our breakfast first" I said digging in. Usually when somebody has bad news and they blow your phone. They make sure that you get there first before they break it down to you. " Whoa whoa, take it easy on the food" grandpa said. I didn't realize that I was eating up fast. " What was the call about, you're scaring me now" grandma asked. " I don't know, it was the hospital. They said I must get there Immediately. What if, what if she's— she's dea—" ... " Don't even say it, let's go. Nothing has happened to Cora.

, She has her whole life ahead of her. Stop assuming

the worst" she said standing up. I stood up and got the car keys.

.

We got In the hospital around 11am, the weather was cold and drizzle. We walked up to her ward after getting out of elevator. There were a lot of nurses and a doctor inside we were watching through the window, we couldn't really see her. I keep on walking up and down. " Ohh, it's good that you're here. She's awake, you—" she's awake?, Not dead?" I asked just to make sure that I heard him right. " She's 100%alive, you can go in and see her. But try not to stress her out. And yes her voice is not in good shape, the lesser the questions the better" Dr Davis said, the nurses were getting out of the ward. I turned the door knob and we walked in. She had her eyes closed, " Il mio cuero batte" I called out, she opened up her eyes. She was really alive, " you're alive" I exclaimed attacking her with a hug. " Alonzo, you're squeezing her" grandma shouted. " Ohh, sorry" I said moving away. She had tears in her eyes and a broad smile. " Hey" she said in a husky tiny, most

tiny little voice. I almost couldn't hear her, you could tell that it was difficult to even say that one word. " My baby are you okay" grandma asked walking up to her other side, " grandma, grandpa" she said smiling. " I'm glad you're awake" grandma said. " Or else how would you have given us grandchildren" grandpa added. I couldn't help but giggled. She smiled, grandma laughed. " You thought you'd just pretending to be dying and we'd forget about the three grandchildren. Never, we still want them" grandma said. " So unfair" she said smiling but her face also reflected pain. " Let's leave these two alone now, I'm sure Alonzo must be fuming inside" grandpa said. " How did you know" I asked chuckling. They laughed and left.

I went over and closed the blindfolds, I then went and sat on the bed, just beside her. I held her hand in my hands. " What" she asked after a long time of me gazing at her. " You're alive, I thought I had lost you, last week you—..." I'm here now" she said wiping off my tears but she was crying herself. " Don't ever do that to me, it's so unbearable" I said wiping off her

tears. " I won't survive without you, you're are my heartbeat" I said trying by all means to all means to hold back my tears. " I love you" that all she said. I wanted to hold her tightly into my arms, I wanted her to say more than just three words. " I love you" I said leaning in and planting a kiss on her dry lips. I put my forehead slightly on hers, she put her hand at the back of my head and kept on moving it there. It felt so good, so relaxed. Made me realize how much I missed her touch, " I miss you so much" I said. " Even now?" She asked smiling. " Yes" I said faintly. " But I am here" she said. I sat up straight, " I miss you in your finest things" I said looking into her eyes. " I don't understand" she said frowning. " The room feels so cold without you" I said. " Ohh, you miss sex" she said rolling her eyes. The attitude was still there by the way her eyes were kind of yellow like." Not me" she added. " I miss the whole all you, I miss the way you say ' baby wami' . The way you talking, you tiny little voice" I said. " The way you moan when you eat, the way your breathing gets hitched whenever I touch your waist, the way you say ' Salvatore' when you're furious—.."I don't say it like

that" she said then coughed. I got her the glass of water and helped her drink up. " Yes you do, and don't interrupt me when I'm talking..." I said after putting the glass down. " As I was saying; I miss the way you say Alonzo when you're upset and the way you say Joaquin When you're happy. The way you begged for me to put it inside you when we're—..." Stop it" she said blushing. " What?" I asked removing her hand from her face. " I'm feeling shy" she said, her cheeks were already pinkish in color. " Ohh really?, Do you know how I'm feeling right now?" I asked seductively on purpose. She shook her head no. " The alcohol was so bitter, it makes me feel horny too" I said leaning closer to her. " Stop it" she said looking anywhere but me. " Do remind me, who's dialogue was that?" I asked, I was 3inches away from her face. " I can't remember" she said covering her face. I removed her hand once again and tilted her head so that she can face me. " Really?, Is it that you really don't remember or you're just pretending not to?" I asked looking her straight in the eyes. She did not say anything, I could tell that she was finding it hard to breath. " Mmh" I asked

removing the strands of hair from her face. " Aren't you going to answer me" she shook her head no" . Her eyes were on my lips, I knew what she wanted, " you want me to kiss you?" I asked smiling. She nodded, I was about to when, " get a room please" Amanda said getting in,they were all there including my brothers. " You guys have no timing, really" I said getting off the bed. They were carrying teddy bears, balloons, flowers and snacks. " Twin sister, I missed you" Amanda said hugging her tightly. " What's wrong?" She asked upon seeing her tears falling. " You're hurting me" she said in her husky dry voice. " Guys, no hugs OK" I said, " you can't talk?" Amanda asked looking as if she wanted to break down and cry. Cora nodded, " it's my turn now" Esihle said moving Amanda away , we all just laughed. " Look what I've got you, isn't she just cute" she said referring to the teddy bear she was carrying. Cora just smiled, " It's my turn now siwe said" pushing Esihle away, it was hilarious to watch. " I've got you the most expensive flowers ever, sniff them" she said. " Siwe, she's not quite a flower type of girl, she doesn't really have a soft spot for them" I said

clearing my throat. " ohh, I didn't know. Kevin! This is all your fault" she said whining, a whole lot of us laughed. They all had their turns.

.

" That's not true" I protested. " Shame you should have seen, he was whipping the entire week.... okay if you do not believe me just look at him. He looks skinny and what is it with the beard " Amanda said. They were ganging up against me. " Stop harassing him" Cora said solemnly. " Ohh now she can talk" Tiaxiang said laughing. It was around 4:30pm in the the afternoon. The door opened up and the doctor came in," the patient must rest now, I'll request you guys to please leave" Dr Davis said. " Come on, we just got here" Divya said . " You've been here for the past four hours, I think" he said glancing at the wrist watch." Cora, we will see you tomorrow. Let's go guys" Michael said. My grandparents were long gone by that time, they had taken a cab. " Could I have 30 minutes with her" I was asked the doctor who was standing on the door way. " Just 30, I'll be back" he said then left. I went over to her, " she was right" she

said. " You look horrible" she added smiling, I could tell that she wanted to laugh at me but couldn't. " I thought you were on my side" I said standing over her head. " You really need to shave" she said then took a deep breath. " Stop talking you're hurting" I kinda said a little bit louder than I intended. " Sorry" I said holding her hand. " You must be in an agonizing pain and here I am shouting at you" I sighed and looked up. " It's okay" she said. " I'll see you tomorrow, OK" I said looking into her eyes. " Don't go" she said. " You need to rest, you can't even talk. I'll come back tomorrow morning and I'll bring your phone along" I said brushing her hand with my thumb. " How's Lorenzo?" She asked all of a sudden. " He's fine, let's not go there. Focus on your recovery, everything is fine. I love you, okay?" I said kissing her forehead. She nodded, " stay a bit" she asked one more time. I sat down on the bed." How about a kiss goodnight, will that make your day" I asked smiling. " Let's see" she said smiling.

[6/3, 14:49] Lynne: Continuing

Salvatore's POV

I woke up around 5:00, took a shower. I needed to have some work done before going to see Cora in the hospital. I wore my crisp white shirt and dark blue suit and black formal shoes. I drove to the NGO. Parked outside the building and walked inside. " Sir!... Good morning sir" the receptionist exclaimed looking surprised. " I am here see Carlos and Jabulani" I said tapping on my phone. " They are in room 16, by the end of the corridor on your—." " I know every corner of this NGO, excuse me" I said walking away. I got into the room they were in, Jabulani-Venom was in a wheelchair. While Carlos-lone wolf was sitting on a wheelchair. Their eyes popped out as soon as they saw me. " Don't panic, I'm not here to finish you off. I'm just here to talk, man to man" I said sitting down on the bed. " Actually I am here to speak since you both cannot reply" I said sighing softly. " I just wanted to check up on you guys, things aren't really looking good out there. My enemies are coming back for me, I just wanted to make sure that you both are still here. Are

they treating you well?" I asked but they didn't answer. " I asked you a god damn questions, you pussies" I snapped thorough gritted teeth. " Mmh, mmh" they both said in unision, nodding. " That's more like it boys, now where were we?. Ummh yes, Venom—should i even be calling you that now?. Anyways your baby mama tried to kill my wife and guess what happened to her?." I said crossing my leg over the other. " I must admit, she was really good" I said thoughtfully. I saw venom's lips moving like he wanted to say something. " Don't worry I didn't like her nor did I kill your daughter. But I bet she'd wish she'd just died." I said giggling. I saw tears and rage in his eyes. " You will see her, my source tells me that she visits you constantly. Don't you guys think it's rude of you not to let me know when you get visitors, this is probably a waste of time, I bet you can't even hear me properly since your earlobe are no longer intact. I'd love to stay and chat with you guys but I got somewhere better I gotta be. See you around" I said before exiting the room. " Ohh be ready I might change my mind and decide to eliminate all what's left of my enemies" I

said looking back. " I need the CCTV footage from 4months ago to be delivered to my house this evening. " I said to the receptionist, " yes sir" she said. I then left for the hospital. It took me 1hour &30 minutes to get there. I took the elevator to her ward as soon as I parked my car. There was a nurse in her ward when I got there. " I want to get out of here" she snapped, her voice was way more better than the other day. " Look miss, I understand your frustration but there absolutely nothing I can do about. It's not my duty to discharge you." The nurse said patiently. " What's going on here" I asked as I walked in. " Salvatore, I want to go home. I don't want to stay in here" she said crying. " Sir please make her understand, she's still weak. She can not be discharged at the moment" the nurse said hanging the patient's information board on the bed's edge. " Excuse me" the nurse said. " I don't want to stay here anymore, I hate you" she shouted at the leaving nurse. " Cora, calm down" I said sitting on the bed. " I want to go home" she said crying, I was perplexed. " We will go home, when you are doing well. Right now you need to be here" I said holding

her hand but she yanked it away, tried to turn on her side but failed to she the looked away. " Leave" she said. I tried to hold her hand again but she slapped my hand, " what's wrong with you, this hospital is the best" I asked sighing heavily. " I hate hospitals" she said. "That's an irony because you're going to be working at one in the next 11 coming years" I said smiling. " Well I hate being the patient" she said fuming. I leaned over and kissed her cheek, she tried to push me away but I was too strong for her. " You look so cute when you are angry" I said, well I shouldn't have said that because she started to hysterically cry. " I want to go home with you" she said through the tears. " Hey, It's okay" I said leaning my head on her right side of the head. " I've got a plan" I said retrieving my phone from my pocket.

- 2hours later

Cora's POV

Uh huh, uh huh (Yea Rihanna)

Uh huh, uh huh (Good girl gone bad)

Uh huh, uh huh (Take three... Action)

Uh huh, uh huh

No clouds in my stones

Let it rain, I hydroplane in the bank

Coming down with the Dow Jones

When the clouds come we gone, we Rocafella

We fly higher than weather

In G5's are better,

You know me,

In anticipation, for precipitation.

Stack chips for the rainy day

Jay, Rain Man is back with little Ms. Sunshine

Rihanna, where you at?

[Rihanna]

You have my heart

And we'll never be worlds apart

Maybe in magazines

But you'll still be my star

Baby, 'cause in the dark

You can't see shiny cars

And that's when you need me there

With you I'll always share

Because

[Chorus]

When the sun shines, we'll shine together

Told you I'd be here forever

Said I'll always be a friend

Took an oath I'ma stick it out 'til the end

Now that it's raining more than ever

Know that we'll still have each other

You can stand under my umbrella

You can stand under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh)

Under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh)

Under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh)

Under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh eh eh eh)

These fancy things, will never come in between

You're part of my entity, here for infinity

When the war has took its part

When the world has dealt its cards

If the hand is hard, together we'll mend your heart

Because

[Chorus]

When the sun shines, we'll shine together

Told you I'd be here forever

Said I'll always be a friend

Took an oath I'ma stick it out 'til the end

Now that it's raining more than ever

Know that we'll still have each other

You can stand under my umbrella

You can stand under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh)

Under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh)

Under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh)

Under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh eh eh eh)

You can run into my arms

It's OK, don't be alarmed

Come here to me

There's no distance in between our love

So go on and let the rain pour

I'll be all you need and more

Because

[Chorus]

When the sun shines, we'll shine together

Told you I'll be here forever

Said I'll always be a friend

Took an oath I'ma stick it out 'til the end

Now that it's raining more than ever

Know that we'll still have each other

You can stand under my umbrella

You can stand under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh)

Under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh)

Under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh)

Under my umbrella

(Ella ella eh eh eh eh eh eh)

It's raining, raining

Oh, baby, it's raining, raining

Baby, come here to me

Come here to me

It's raining, raining

Oh, baby, it's raining, raining

You can always come here to me

Come here to me

[2x]

It's pouring rain, it's pouring rain

Come here to me

Come here to me

I was in his car, we had escaped from the hospital. he had called Robinson to bring me something to wear, and put me in a laundry basket, wore a senators clothes. we passed by the mall and I bought the CD I was carrying the entire trip to the house, he bought me some snacks too. I was eating yoghurt while he was driving, hospital food tasted horrible. " Happy now" he asked glancing at me. "

Very, that jumpsuit looked fabulous on you" I said giggling. " Don't start" he said warningly but smiling. He parked Infront of the garage and got out, I opened up the door, " don't even think about it" he said coming to my side. " What?, I want to walk on my own too." I said, he picked me up into his arms. " Joaquin!" I exclaimed trying to get off. "Stop it" he said closing the door with his leg. I held on to him, my head snuggled up on his neck. He put me on the kitchen island counter. " Don't move, if you dare to disobey my orders I'll be forced to shoot" he said kissing my forehead. I just rolled my eyes. He went away and came back with the snacks we had bought. " What would you like to have for breakfast Mrs Future me" he said staring into my eyes making me blush in the process. " Ohh, she's blushing" he said so cheesy. " Stop it" I said smiling. I took a deep breath and thoughtfully said. " Scrambled eggs with feta cheese, green salad, bacon, lamb chops toasted bread and chicken parmesan" I said, his eyes were popped out. " Don't you think that that's a little bit too much for your small tummy. " Nooo, I've been starving for days" i said seriously. " Okay, just be

careful it might pop" he said putting on an apron. " I have one more request" I said looking at him, " and what that be" he asked sighing. " Relax it's for your own good... I've been looking at your crispy white shirt and a thought came in to my mind. ' what if it gets dirty'. Please take it off and then you can put the apron on" I said solemnly. " Ohh, how considerate of you" he said taking the apron off and then then shirt off he then put the apron back on. " Aren't you just naughty, acting all smart on me" he said standing Infront of me. " What, what have I done" I asked pulling out the best of puppy eyes ever. But I ended up laughing and he joined in. " You're insane" he said walking away. " There's no crime in wanting to see your masculine arms, your broad chest and six pack. I've missed those" I said smiling. " I'll take that as a compliment" he said starting with his cooking.

.

"No, It's cold up there" he refused. " But Kong" I said. " For the second time I am telling you, don't call me by that name" he said seriously. " I'm sorry" I said. "

Please, I really want to go up there" I said. He was done with preparing the breakfast and I wanted to have it on the roof top. " Please please, plus I'll be going up to the hospital in a few minutes. Can't you do this one last thing for your il mio cuero batte" I asked blinking a couple of times. " That's just blackmail on its lowest level" he said. " Please, please" I pleaded pulling him over. " Cora, you're here" grandma asked entering the kitchen along with grandpa. " Hello grandma and grandpa" I said half smiling. " Have you been released?" Grandpa asked unpacking the plastics they were carrying. " No I esc—"..." Actually Dr Davis gave her a few hours out. So we thought we should come here and spend time together" Salvatore said cutting me off. " Isn't it Cora" he asked, I was staring at him confused. He pinched me. " Ouch!, Yes yes grandma the doctor saw that I was suffocating" I said fastly. " You guys are acting strange" grandma said shaking her head. " I'll just go ahead put these on the rooftop" Salvatore said Carrying the huge tray which had our breakfast. " Has the pain in your throat gone down?" Grandpa asked. " Pain?, Ohh yes I can talk now, it's still there

though but I can talk." I said. " I'm just going to lay down, let me know when you're leaving" grandma said. " We were going to go to the hospital to see you but now that you're here I guess we'll come by tomorrow" grandpa said. " You're such good people, it feels like I'm one of your grandchildren too. I'm grateful to have You in my life" I said from the heart. " You're are one of our own, anyone who puts a smile on our grandsons face is considered family" he said. " Let's go" Joaquin said getting in the kitchen. "Ride on" he said giving me his back. "In A piggyback style?" I asked giggling. " Come on... Grandpa we will see you around" he said as i hopped on his back. He ascending up the staircases with me on his back. " Let's do it again" I said laughing as he put me on a couch " with your heavy ass, forget it" he said. "I thought you loved this ass" I said pouting in a sulking manner. " I am in love with it, but it's no secret that it's heavy" he said giving me a plate of breakfast. " Mxm, you're such a rude" I said eating up. He sat besides me and took his plate of breakfast. Your could hear the harmonious singing of the wild birds and the waterfalling hitting the rocks down

there. The smell of all the wild things. 30 minutes later I was done eating. I stood up for the first time in days, my gut hurts a little bit but I carried on. " What do you think you are doing" Salvatore exclaimed upon seeing me standing. He stood up and made me sit down again. " I want to look down the lake" I said sighing. " You've been down there, you've seen it before. There's nothing new" she said scornfully. " Could you carry me to the rails then, I just want to watch, for 2minutes I promise" i said begging. " Two minutes" he said picking me up after thinking about it for a while. " Put me down, I'll lean on the rails" I said he did just that after sighing. He stood behind me and held my waist slightly just for support. " To you there must be nothing new about this view but to me it changes every time I look at it, it's like the stars. You might think that there's no change or difference in them but it's there , all you need is just to look a little bit closer and deeper." I said leaning on his chest, I could feel his heart beat reciprocating with mine. " This view changes my mood just like the stars do, everything may go away but they're always there for me, they're the only thing

constant in my life. " I said putting my hands on top of his. " Some nights it may be too dark and they might fail to appear but I know for sure that they're there, looking out for me" I added. " Do you think you'd ever consider me as one of the stars" he asked kissing the top of my head. " When the darkest of nights come that's when you and I would know if you're one of the stars or not" I said. " How do you do it?...how do you get everybody to love you?" He asked. I shrugged my shoulders casually. " Maybe it's because of the love portion that I feed them" I said kiddingly. He giggled a bit, " but there's one thing that has never loved me or show any kindness or some sort of mercy...life. I sometimes think that we were enemies in the last life... it's insane isn't it" I said chuckling bitterly cold. " Don't talk like that, so what if life does love you. I love you, I love you to infinity and beyond that" he said turning me around. " There's nothing beyond infinity" I said giggling. " Don't act smart with me" he said holding me close to his body. " Actually I am smart" I said giggling. " Okay that's enough we're going back to the couch, you always have something to say" he said Carrying me

into his arms." You might be a devil's advocate but I am a devil's little talkative rascal" I said giggling He put me down on the couch but I held on to his neck, "kiss me" I said looking into his eyes. " I don't think that that's such a good idea" he said alert. " just once" I said pulling him over, he kneeled down Infront of me and I leaned over and kissed him, my tongue invaded his mouth. I needed more and more, two minutes later my breathing was hitched. He had his hands on my waist after all. I went close to him until he was in-between my thighs.he pulled out and looked at me as if he was searching for something. " No, not yet" he said resisting. I knew he wanted me as much as I wanted him, his giant cucumber was bulging over. " Please, I want you" I said biting my lower lip. " I said no" he said standing up, " Joaquin just once" I said taking off my white dress that I was wearing. He was looking else where but me. " what are you doing" he said asked shocked upon seeing me naked, I was in my panties only. " I want you to make love to me" I said standing up with quite difficulty and standing Infront of him. He looked at me for a long time. " Shit, I can't take this anymore"

he said putting me on a couch and the rest is history.

.

Amanda's pov

I woke up with him snuggled up on my body, the bed was pretty small for two. He was behind me and I was wearing his shirt only, he was sound asleep. I woke up and went to the bathroom to take a shower. Water was hitting the top of my head to my whole body, the shower glass covered up in a mist, reminiscing about last night's 3 hot love making session. The things he did to me, no man could ever top that. He got me screaming and crying and asking for anchor. He knew every sensitive part of my body, he sucked me through my cum. He was driving me nuts and I was loving every minute of it. Just when I was thinking about him, he joined me in the shower. " Good morning my lady" he said kissing my back and holding my hands, he got his fingers in-between mine and held on to the wall. He thing was poking my ass, " ain't you going to greet me good morning?" he asked kissing planting a kiss on my neck, I was so sure he left a Hickey there. " Good

morning Michael" I said , my heart beating out of my chest. " You're such a hopeless romantic, no sweet names?" he said making me feel disappointed in myself. " That's just how I am, I don't know how to be rom—...." ahhh, I was just kidding. Relax" he said moving his hands all over my body, adrenaline rush caught up with me. He squeezed my tiny breasts and teased my nipples. " We should get ready and go out for breakfast" he said getting his hands off me and washing his body serious. " But I thought we were going to—..i couldn't say it but he knew what I wanted, he just turned me on for him to leave me hanging?." to what, say it " he asked looking into my eyes. " Nothing, excuse me" I said trying to get out of the shower. " Where are you going?" He asked blocking my way. " To take a bath" he I said looking anywhere but him. " We're both going to take a shower together...I love a woman who can speak their minds" he said, I felt like crying.

[6/3, 14:50] Lynne: Page 44

Salvatore's POV

After spending time with her I returned her back to

the hospital, Dr Davis was not pleased with what we did. Said something like 'you'll bear the fruits of your silly behavior' we just laughed and passed on. Life is too short to be lived in seriousness all the time, apparently he had been blowing up my phone but the thing was that I had left it in the kitchen counter when we went upstairs. Anyways I came back home around 3pm and visited all my businesses, I came back home around 23pm, the grandparents were in bed by that time. I was so fatigued, I took a shower and went to bed. They were going back to Italy on the next day. I drove them to the airport around 6am and went to work. I was monitoring the chefs at restaurant Paradis  when my phone rang. " Hello" I answered after noticing that the call was from the hospital. " Mr Salvatore you're needed in the hospital, miss Maphumulo is in serious pain" the caller said. " What?, What happened. I thought she was doing fine.... I'll be there in 30 minutes." I said then hugged up, I was confused and worried but it took me 30 minutes exactly to get there. I took the elevator to her ward, the doctor was inside when I got there. " Sir, please wait outside" the nurse required as I

entered. "I'm not going anywhere, she needs me" I said pushing her aside. She was crying and screaming. I bet the whole floor could hear her, the doctor was busy checking her heart beat and pulse. Whatever stuff he was doing was not so helpful. " Can't you give her something to ease the pain?" I snapped. Her hands were on her abdomen. " Salvatore let us do our job please" the doctor said so calmly. " Nurse give her another dosage of those sedatives" he said. " Cora, what's wrong. What happened?" I asked holding her hand. " Mr Salvatore I'd like you to leave the room now, let's do our job" Dr Davis said. The nurse injected her on the arm after they hold her still. " Ahhh, please help me, Joaquin please save me, Joaquin" she kept on calling out for me until she was knocked out by the medication the administrated to her. It was so frustrating to see her cry like that, frustrated to be so helplessly. " I kept on walking up and down. " What was that?, What's wrong with my girlfriend. She was doing just fine yesterday" I shouted holding the doctor by his coat. " Violence is not going to be of any help, would you just calm down. This is all your fault, her internal

wounds are still raw and you took her out yesterday, went and did God knows what. I warned you didn't I? . She's bleeding once again, the pain has come back in multiples of what it was before." Dr Davis said calmly, I let go of his coat. " This cannot be it, this is just—" I said scratching my head, so confused. It was like she was possessed by some kind of a demon or something. Her abdomen area was rising and falling. " You're right, it's not only the poison's wounds. She's also on her menstrual periods. Does she normal experience cramps when she's menstruating?" He asked me. " No, not at all." I said. " The poison must've triggered something In her uterus. We will do some tests and see to it. Excuse me" he said leaving with the patient's information board. I was left there dumbfounded and angry with myself and her. I shouldn't have allowed my emotions to take over the last day. I should have been responsible like I always was, but then I realized something that day. She was my weakness, she's my weakness. I never had that before, I walked up to her. She was snoring. Her lips pouted a bit, she had tears falling off her right eye. Her hands on her

tummy, " this is all your damn fault, you kept on begging and pleading. You know i can't say no to you. Especially when you're in this condition, and why did you have to seduce me?, Why?, Why?,why?. Why did you?." I asked hitting the side stand. " Look at you now!" I shouted then stood up and left. I needed to get some fresh air and space and time to think.

.

I came back around 4pm, I had changed my suit into white shorts and shirt and sandals. I found Amanda and Esihle there when I walked in to the Ward. " Big bro, long time no see" Esihle said forwardly. " How are you guys doing" I asked. " We're doing just fine, we're just here to see sisters inlaw" she said. " What happened to your voice Mr Muscles" Amanda asked. " I think I'm coming down with flu, I'll leave you guys to talk" I said. " Heavens forbid, we've been here for hours. We will leave you love birds to talk. Cora I'll see when see you" she said blowing her a kiss. " Bye sister inlaw" Esihle said waving goodbye. " Bye" Cora said smiling. " You look better" I said sitting down on the couch. " I feel a little bit better" she said gazing

at me but I avoided her eyes. " You're angry with me ain't you" she said sighing. " No I am not, why would I be" I said casually and calmly. " You clench your jaws now and then, and the fist?. You're avoiding my eyes... I'm sorry" I said sincerely. " We can't change the past, what's done is done and I was an accomplice too...infact this is all on me. I am the older one, I should have been more matured about this whole thing. It's okay, we're past that. You're fine now" I said fastly and serious. " Don't, don't do that, don't say that" she said blinking a couple of times. " What?, Do what?" I asked puzzled. " You're making me feel bad, really bad" she said. " How's the pain" I asked. " I don't know, my body feels so numb, I can't feel it" she said sighing heavily. "When did all this start?, The pain" I asked. " Yesterday during our session on the roof top" she said looking away. " But I asked you if you were alright, I asked you if you were comfortable , I asked you not once not twice but thrice and you said you were good. You fucking lied to me and now look where it landed us" I shouted furiously angry. " Don't shout at me, don't shout" she said crying." To hell with that, you should

have seen yourself. It was like you were dying. You don't know how that feels like, the fear creeping in my gut, I've been here before. I've seen you stop breathing and you're telling me to stop shouting. How I wish the roles were interchanged and then you'd see and feel what I am going through. Why would you be so careless" I shouted walking around the ward. " I'm sorry, I'm sorry please stop shouting" she pleaded crying. " You know what I'll see you tomorrow" I said then took my car keys and left. " I'm sorry please come back, she kept on calling out for me. I left anyways.

.

The next day

Cora's POV

After the doctor was done checking on me the nurse helped me to get t

Into the bathtub and take a bath. I got out of the bathingtub and drained the water, I had no energy to wash the bathingtub,. I wiped my body,brushed my teeth, wore my panties along with the hospital's

sanitary pad, I moisturized my body with the aqueous cream i was provided with. Wore the hospital p

Blue pants and shirt and then got back to bed. I was served with oats/porridge around 7:00am. It took me 30 minutes to finish eating and the nurse came back to collect the dishes. Thank God I had my cellphone with me or else I would have been bored the whole day, my abdominal pain was no longer there. I kept on checking the door only to be disappointed not to find Joaquin there. Hours passed by but he still hadn't come, I had no visitors except for phone calls from his friend's wives and Amanda and grandma who I recently found out that she was no longer in SA. I was really disappointed and hurt to find out, they didn't even say goodbye. Amanda had back to back classes so she couldn't really visit me, I on the other side was missing out on classes. My world was really shaking, just yesterday everything was fine and then...

I finally fell asleep after a long time of jogging my mind. I was having such a great dream when

somebody shook me to wake up, I slowly opened up my eyes and saw Salvatore standing over my head. He was staring down at me, he was wearing a grey suit carrying an overcoat in his hand. " Hey" he said brushing my hair with his hand. " I'm sorry about yesterday, I shouldn't have shouted at you. I'm sorry" he said kissing my forehead." No you were right, I was at fault and I should apologize for it. I'm sorry, I should have told you that it was hurting. It's just that it felt so good" I said truthfully. He smiled, " Am I forgiven?" I asked and he nodded. " I love you so much, you wouldn't understand" he said sighing heavily and looking upwards. " Don't say that, I do understand. I understand because the feeling is mutual. I love you so much" I said solemnly. " I got you something" he said sliding his hand on his pocket and it came back with a PS. " PS I am sorry" he read out loud. PS was my favorite snack bar ever. " Thanks" I said smiling. " tell me something. Have you ever experienced any period pains previously?" he asked . " No, not that I can remember" I said thoughtfully. " Ohh okay" he said sitting down on the couch. " I am missing my lectures, it can't be good. I

need to get out of here ASAP" I said sighing heavily. " You don't have to worry that much, of my guys is there taking notes for you and making videos. It won't be the same as you being there but it's something" he said holding my hand. " Thanks" I said staring at him. " Staring is considered rude where I come from" he said smiling. " It's a sign of admiration where I come from" I said seriously. " Why are you staring at me like that" he asked because I didn't dare to stop. " I'm just thinking of how much lucky I am to have you in my life, you're my hero and Savior" I said sincerely. " I adore you Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore" I said and then I felt his thumb on the right side of my eye, he wiped away the tear that had fallen. " Let's go to California on December holidays" he said out of nowhere. " California?, What goes down there?" I asked. " The resorts, the most beautiful beaches and crazy clubs" he said. " That sounds wild, I've been to California before. I've never been pretty much anywhere" I said. " Our friends are coming along, we did this the other year but we went to Miami Florida it was great" he said. " It must have been because you had your '

wife' with you" I said out of nowhere. " Where does that come from?" he asked chuckling. But I didn't answer.

" Are you jealous?" He asked. " Of your ex wife, why would I be jealous?. Should I be jealous of her?" I asked looking forward to hearing the answer. " You're insane, why are you asking me that?.

Anyways I have to go. I've got a lot of work to do" he said after glancing at his wrist watch. " Leaving already?, You just got here" I said Feeling sad and disappointed. " I'll stay for an hour and then leave , I have two meetings tomorrow. I need to prepare for them" he said kissing my hand.

.

A week later

Amanda's pov

.

" You're kidding right?" I asked eyes popped out. " I'm serious here, read my face" Cora said. " No, I'm not going to do that, geez that's disgusting. Here" I said, really disgusted. " Before we even get there, how do I,

how do I ask for sex ?" I asked shyly and feeling so stupid and naïve. " And here i was thinking that white girls are very fast and shameless" she said laughing at me. " Mxm whatever I'm leaving" I said so upset. " Hey don't go, I was just kidding. Relax" she said holding my jacket and I sat back down on the couch. She was still in hospital getting discharged the next day. " Why are you so serious?" she asked rolling her eyes. Her habit really got to me. " Why are you making fun of me, do you know how hard it was for me to finally ask you that. I have been wanting to ask you for days and now that I finally do, you do this?" I said seriously pissed off. " OK I'm not, I shouldn't have made fun of you. it's just that I assumed that since you're white you know... I am sorry" She said solemnly. " It's cool, are you going to answer me or not" I asked eager to hear the answer. " I don't know either but the other day I just took off my clothes and that was just it. Why don't you just say ' I'm horny can we bang'. Or maybe you can just start to undress him when you're kissing" she suggested I couldn't hold myself. I laughed out loud till my tummy hurts

" Is that what you do?" I asked giggling. " Do you be like ' ohh Mr Muscles baby I am horny can we bang' and then he be like' ohh let's bang baby, do you want it on the couch or on the bed' or maybe—..." Argh stop it, that's weird and Eww. Why would think like that yack !" She cut me off . " We don't do it like that okay?, I can't remember us talking before getting it on. We just do it, no questions asked" she added. " Mmh, you just do it when ever you feel like it, what if one of your you doesn't feel like it. What if he refuses to... This is risky, I won't be able to take the rejection." I said. " That has never happened before, you have to loosen up a bit Amanda. Feel good in your own skin, you're stunning it's about time you own up to that and stop worrying about man's rejections or whatever. Besides I think that this jerk you're with really loves you, be brave and courageous" she said. " Thanks Doctor Phil , I'll see what I can do" I said sighing softly. " We're going to be having dinner tonight at 7:00pm. I haven't seen him in days let alone talk to him. He's always busy with cases. I don't get why he has to work as a detective when he's a criminal on the other side. " I

said sighing heavily. " You're definitely asking the wrong person," she said hands raised up. " Don't you ever feel worried about Mr Muscles, that one day he might not make it back home, that one day he might get caught and arrested for decades" I said concerned. " I fear that my parents won't accept him if this thing we have does work out, he's 10 years older than me. Do you remember Lucas from last year's Eve, I get the signal that they desire him for me. He's doing his fourth year in cardiology" I said saddened about what may happen and what may not happen. " You don't have to worry of what may come your way, you will cross that bridge when you get there. First things first; have you broken up with Lethu?" She asked me. " Not yet, how do I break it down to her. I'm scared, how do I tell her that I never loved her to begin with. She'll be shattered, she loves me, I'm not even sure that me and Michael will work out. What if I am just busy chasing stones while leaving the really diamond" I said so puzzled. " Enough of your rubbish Amanda, I'm sick of this. Do you think I know my future, do you think everybody else knows they future and that's why they chose to

take the paths they took?. It doesn't work like that, we're all taking the risks and keeping faith in our choices. That's hi how life is, it's all about gambling, we don't know what the outcome of it all might be but we still gamble. You just have to let your guard down and let your fate and destiny take over. And who said Lethu was a diamond, maybe she's just dusty and you know very well what happens to people who play with dusty. They end up getting TB and sore throats just woman up and face her" she shouted so irritated but I got the message anyways. " I'll do it but I have one favour to ask of you, would you please accompany me when it's time" I asked seriously. I was afraid she was not going to take it slightly, she might hit me again. " Of course I'll be there, you don't need to ask, what are twin sisters for if you have to ask. I want to see the whole drama in person. I'll be recording the whole thing" she said dramatically. " You're insane, has anyone ever told you that?" I asked giggling. " I get that every time babes" she said so cocky and sessy. We both laughed in the end. My crazy twin sister, I wouldn't trade her for anything.

.

" You look beautiful tonight" he whispered into my eyes as we got out of his car. I had my hand wrapped around his arm. I was wearing a little red dress and black high heels and black diamond earrings and necklace My hair curled up to the side. " Thank you" I said blushing. " Did you get a discount" I asked jokingly as I noticed the bold italic font written' restaurant Paradisé'. " Why not, it's my friends restaurant after all?" he asked chuckling casually. We woke in as the Asher opened the door for us, " welcome sir and madam" a guy with a crazy accent said. " You must be Mr Sullivan and this must be Miss Timber, this way please" he said escorting us to our table. He pulled out the chair for the both of us and we set down. The bottle of wine was already on the table, ice cold. Ten minutes later our food came, " but I didn't order a anything" I said looking at him. " The order is placed through an email or a phonecall. I should have asked you first before placing the order, my apologies for that." He said it like a gentleman he was. It was Italian dishes,

it tasted so Devine. " Can I ask you something?" I asked anyways. " YES of course" he said chopping his grilled chicken and taking it into his mouth. " What Am I to you, what are we?. Are we boyfriend and girlfriend. " I asked nervously. " I thought you knew that by now, since you said you love me and I love you we are boyfriend and girlfriend to me. I don't know about you " he said so chilled. " Good, I just wanted to be clear on that.... But how come you never bother to ask me about Leah" I asked. " That's probably because I fixed that" he said. " What do you mean by that" I asked confused because it was the second time he said that. " You should ask her" he said. " Can we talk about something else?" he asked politely. " Yeah sure, what would you—..." Mikky is that you?" A voice asked from behind me. I turned around and looked. It was a white woman in a black formal suit. " Michelle?" He asked standing up, she walked up to him and they hugged. " What are you doing here, it's been a long time" he asked smiling. " dude I've been here for the past four months and you silly boy didn't even bother to come around my house" she said poking his shoulder. " How would I

have known that you're back, I am not a fortune teller you know" he said giggling. " You're such a bad friend" she said dramatically pretending to be hurt. I was sitting down watching the whole thing, it was like i didn't exist. " Ohh I almost forgot, Michie meet my girlfriend Amanda,Mandy this is my long lost friend Michelle " he said introducing us. " Hi, it's nice to meet you Amanda" she said looking at me. " like wise" I said smiling. I was not so sure if it was nice or going to be nice or not so nice or never at all. But got sure I didn't like her already. " I hope you don't mind if she joins us. We have a lot to catch up on" Michael said not even looking at me. " Of course not, she's welcome to join us" I said faking a smile. He would have noticed if he was even noticing me. " Thanks guys, I was surely going to get bored over there" she said occupy the third site. There were four sits on our table. " How do you guys know each other?" I asked curiously because they seemed to click from the beginning. " We were childhood friend, we went to pre school and secondary school together but sadly I had to go overseas to study that's when we lost contact" she explained. The

waitress came with her order. " Forget about that, what I'm interested in is what are you doing in here" he asked. " In SA or in this particular test?" She asked frowning. The woman was beautiful no doubt about that, she was elegant and sophisticated. " All of the mentioned" he said." Ohh, I have started a clothing line here. I missed home so I'm back. As for the restaurant I heard it is the best in the city so I am here" she said seriously. " Welcome home" he said. " I want a welcome home party detective Sullivan" she said drinking the glass of red wine. " who told you I was a detective?" He asked smiling. " My parents of course" she said. " Noisy old chickens" he said and she punched his shoulder. " They are still my parents after all" she said giggling. " What I'm interested in finding out is how did you two meet" she asked looking at me. " You ask him" I said smiling. " Well, my friends and I were celebrating something and she had come along with a friend's girlfriend. It was her first time there but you could have seen the way she was blabbering. A few minutes later she went to the ladies room and I followed her. I was holding her wrist and trying my luck but she just did the most un

speakable thing. She screamed for the whole house to hear. . I knew from then that i had to have her" he explained, even I had never heard that version of the story. " Sounds so romantic and insane. You say she was blabbering but she had been quiet since I got here" she said. " She has her moments" he said drinking his wine. Moments later we were having dessert. " Do you still remember that time when my parents caught you creeping out of my room early in the morning" she said giggling. I swear I was going to get sick from listening to both of them reminiscing about their childhood memories. I got the vibe that they were once lovers, no doubt about that. I hated the way he touched her and the way he smiled at her. " We were doing our senior year back then. Geez it was so embarrassing" he said laughing. " excuse me, I need to go to the ladies room" I said standing up with my purse. " Come back soon" that's all he said, come back for what?. So the I could listen to his childhood sweetheart jogging his memory about their love. Like hell I was, heavens forbid, I called my driver and gave him the address so that he could come and pick me up. 30 minutes later he

texted me that he was parked Infront of the restaurant. I got out of the ladies room and headed for the door, making sure to avoiding him and her. " Amanda wait , where are you going?" He asked standing up and rushing to me. I opened up the door and walked towards the car. " Where are you going?" he asking following me. " Can't you see?. I am going as far away from you as possible. Go back inside, keep on chatting with your so called friend. I'm out of here" I said opening the door but he closed it. Wrong move, I gave him the mother of slaps across his whoring face. " I said go back inside. She can have you, you're free to have her too" I said pointing my index finger at him. He was looking at me unbelievably. I got inside the car and left him standing there, lucky him there were no people around to witness that slap.

.

I went home, I needed to be alone and be at peace. That's was the place where I could find that. It was sparkling clean, the house caretaker must have been cleaning earlier on. I got rid of the dress, shoes and

jewelry i was Wearing with so much anger. How could he, how could he have done that to me, to us. It was like i didn't exist, for the whole three hours I had to tolerate her. I went into my dad's wine sailor in the basement and took a bottle of white dry wine. I passed by the kitchen and took a glass and then went upstairs... Took off my undergarments and got into the bathtub. I opened up the bottle of wine and poured it into the glass. I drank up, I don't know when the it got finished but a while later the bottle was empty and I felt so sleepy. I felt so relaxed and good.

I was woken up by the bright sunlight hitting the window, I said up straight with a mother of all headaches. I got out of the bathingtub and wrapped my body into a towel. I looked myself in the mirror, I looked so horrible, I wore my long. I went over to the toilet seat and peed. I brushed my teeth after that. Moisturized my body and wore my lazy oversized dress. I was not going to university, I decided. I went downstairs. The fridge was empty. I made myself cornflakes, thank God we had bought powder milk or

else it would have got spoiled too. I went and set Infront of the television, tried to watch it but it was watching me instead. Last night's scene kept on playing and playing in my head, I made myself another bowl of cornflakes went back Infront of the TV.

.

Narrated.

" As I was saying, our machines and intelligent could not identify the problem, so we sent the scans and all the information to the higher hospital in Cape Town. The results will be back within a month or so." Dr Davis said. I was there to take Cora home since she has been released to come home. " I guess we will see you when you have the results" i said taking Cora's bags. " Cora, you might need to go up to cape Town if needed be but I'll contact you. Take care" he said. "Till then, take care" Cora said. They took the elevator down to the underground parking. He put the bags on the boot which was already full of teddy bears. " We should give this to the kids in the orphanage" he said trying to find a space for the bag.

"No ways, never. I'm keeping them. They're mine, they were bought with so much love and affection. I'm not going to give them away" she said protesting. " I'll find a spare room for them" she said, " I'm not going to argue with you, I'm going to let this one slide for now" he said chuckling. He opened up the door for her and she entered, buckled up and he got in drove off.

.

" Lorenzo is here?" She asked as they entered the house. " Yeah, I guess he came in when I went out" he said Carrying the bags upstairs. Lorenzo was crying his lungs out. " You got a new nanny" she asked. " She's temporary and I know every thing about her. No funny business this time. I interviewed her myself" he said assuring her but she was not at ease with the whole thing. They got in the sitting room and the nanny was walking up and down trying to get the baby to calm down." Hi" Cora greeted the old woman." Hi" the old woman said smiling kindly. " My name is Cora and what's your name?" Cora said extending her hand for a hand shake. The woman

looked dumbfounded " She's kinda illiterate, you might want to speak in isizulu" Salvatore said smiling weirdly. " Ohh, Sawubona, ungubani iguana, mina ngingulomuntu Cora" Cora said as if she was speaking with a deaf person. Salvatore made his way upstairs laughing hysterically. " Sawubona mtanami mina ke ngingumama UmaHlangu ngivela esoweto " she said , Cora was trying to catch up the entire time. " Can I have him, the baby" she said pointing at the baby who was still crying. " Ohh, uyatetema lomtana. Udinga ukuphahlelwa" she said, Cora didn't bother trying to get what she was say. She went over to the table and took the baby formula and then walked upstairs. " Where did you get that old woman, how Am I suppose to cooperate with her. She can't speak English" Cora said unbelievably. " Blame it on Nina, she got her. It was an inconvenience since that thing with the other nanny" he said. " I think it's time you stepped up and took responsibility for your kid Salvatore. Contact the nanny agency and find a proper nanny. I know that you never wanted to have him but he's here now" she said feeding the baby who finally got quiet

in her arms. " What do you mean take responsibility?. I pay for everything he has, I take good care of my son. Who pays for the nanny?. I do, who pays for his food?. I do, who pays for his clothes?. I do, who pays for the apartment he lives in?, I do. So please don't you dare judge me" he shouted pissed. " I'm not judging you, believe me I'm not. I'm just trying to say, get more involved in his life. That's all, being a parent is not about being able to pay for his bills. It's about being there for him, take him out on a picnic, playground, go shopping for him with him. I won't kill you to do that just once in a week that's all I'm asking you. You and I know the void of growing up with one parent, don't do that to your son. " She said calmly and collected. He sighed in defeat. " You're right, I'm sorry...I guess I never got used to the fact that I got a child with her. I never wanted that" he said walking up to her and kissed her forehead." It's okay, I get it but we cannot change the past we have to learn to live with it. Call the agency and find a proper nanny, I'll interview her for you if that's the issue. We don't want another nanny drama in our lives. I don't, speaking of that, I think you should

assign some to protect Lorenzo before it's too late" she said concerned. Lorenzo was falling asleep in her arms. " You guys seem to have a strong connection" he said looking at Lorenzo. " Of course we do, he's my Lorenzo remember...all hell would break loose if Nina finds out that I named him" she said giggling, Salvatore could not help but laugh.

.

Amanda's pov

I made up my mind, being a couch potato was not going to help, so there I was. Sitting in a coffee shop, waiting for Lethu. It was now or never, moments later a thought crossed my mind. ' I

Mandy you might be acting irrational' my inner self said but it was too late. There she was, walking in with her school backpack. " Hi" I said standing up nervously. " Hi, you look good" she said smiling and sitting down. " So what do you want to us to talk about" she asked. " It's a, it's about. It's about us, look I know that you love me so dearly and I care for you a lot but this is just not working out. I thought as

time went by, I'd fall in love with you but it didn't happen. What I'm trying to say is that it's over" I said my heart pumping up so fast, I felt like puking. The hangover was killing me. " I know everything Amanda, I know that you've been cheating on me the entire time. I knew that you never loved me. Your reaction before you could say the actual word said it all. Good luck on your relationship, I hope he makes you happy" she said and then stood up and left. Okay that was easier than I had thought, weird even. I thought she'd throw tantrums and stuff. I continued with my coffee and the driver drove me to campus later on. It was starting to get dark. I unlocked and walked inside my room, turned the lights on. " You decide to meet up with her" a voice said startling me, I was shit scared. " Wha, what are you doing here?" I asked leaning on the door. " How did you get in here, it was locked" I said, my heart thundering. Michael looked so dangerous. " These are called spare keys" he said flashing them to me. " What do you want, I thought you'd be spending the weekend with your girlfriend" I said walking towards

the bed, i set down and took off my sneakers. " She's not my girlfriend" he said walking towards me. " Ohh yeah?, I guess her Virginia wasn't that hot. You dumped her so fast?" I said taking off the dress I was wearing and then the undergarments. I wrapped a towel around my body. I needed to go and take a shower and then come back to study. " I repeat, she's not my girlfriend" he snapped hitting the wall with his fist, that scared the crap out of me but I pulled on the brave face. " If you'd excuse me, I'd like to go and take a shower. I had a long day, I don't have time to chitchat. Maybe another time" I said walking towards the door but the next thing I knew I was turned around and pinned against the door. " What are you doing, leave me" I said scared. " What do you want from me Amanda, what do I gotta do to make you believe that I love you and you only" he asked looking down at me. " Fuck love, I don't need your love and shit. Just yesterday I didn't exist in your eyes. I was sitting right Infront of you but still you gaze was on her back but still you smiled at her not me and then you come here and talk emotional shit. You have to right, get out of my room" I

snapped tears falling. " What's wrong with you, we're just friends. There's nothing between us. You got to believe me. She's my ex girlfriend. We're just friends" he said hitting the door behind me. " We had to end things when she moved overseas. It's over between me and her" he added. " Well, she's back now. You can get back together and have a good life. I don't want you to force things with me, you can go back to your sophisticated beautiful woman. I don't want to get hurt one more time. Just leave, like I said before you're Free" I said, some words I regret but I guess it was easier to reject somebody before they rejected you. " Why are you doing this to us, stop trying to find ways to push me away because I am not going anywhere. I'm here to stay, you just have to deal with it. I love you not her, I'm over her. I'm sorry about last night, that night was supposed to be about us. I'm sorry, I just got carried away" he said. Why did he have to say all the sweet words that made my heart melt. He was not making it easy for me. " Give us a chance" he said, I nodded slowly. " And I am sorry for slapping you" I said looking into his eyes. " No woman slaps me and gets away with it, you'll get

punished for it" he said kissing me....I was surely punished. My pussy was vandalised, it can also testify.

.

A month later

Cora's POV

The results were out, we were once again sitting at the Doctors office. As for our therapy sessions, they carried on as soon as I got discharged. They were going to come to an end soon.

The doctor opened the envelope, to me it seemed like he was taking years. " Can you make it faster" I said. " Be patient, I have to read the results first" he said and God damn he took his time. " What does it say" Salvatore asked squeezing my hand. " Miss Maphumulo has endometriosis" Dr Davis said sighing heavily. "So?, What does that mean" Salvatore asked. Since I was a gynaecology student I knew about the disease. I knew what he meant. " It means that she can not have babies" he said but I was faintly hearing him. " what how, can you explain

more" Salvatore asked shocked. At least he had the gut to ask. " Let me break it down to you....

.

Comments in whatever language are welcome.

#admin... unedited. I think I need an editor

[6/3, 14:50] Lynne: Page 45

Cora's POV

" Endometriosis is a condition where the tissue that covers the uterus starts to grow in other places like ovaries, behind the uterus or in the fallopian tubes causing irritations and development of scar tissue. Besides being extremely painful(though some women may experience no pain). I guess this is Cora's case, the pain was only trigger by the poison. It can make it difficult to get pregnant by blocking the fallopian tubes." The doctor explained. I could hear him faintly, it was like i was reading his lips rather than hearing him talk. I wondered what the future held for us, was that it, the end point of our relationship. Every man wants children. A barren woman was just a curse in the eyes of her beholder.

He was quiet now, no questions asked. The doctor still continued to explain." The symptoms of endometriosis can vary from very mild to very severe although the severity of your pain does always indicate the degree of the condition...the primary symptoms of endometriosis is pelvic pain often associated with your menstrual period. Women who with endometriosis typically describes menstrual pain that's far worse than normal, other common signs include:

- pain with urination

- pain with intercourse

- infertility

- excessive bleeding

- pain passing stool" he said then kept quiet. " What do you say causes this again?" He asked. I guessed he had gained his voice again. " Mr Salvatore, the exact cause of endometriosis is unknown, some possible explanation include; menstrual flow problems;fatal development; embryonic cell growth; surgical scars; genetics and hormones" he vaguely

explained. " I get that but in her case, you did some scan and darn tests. You should know" he kinda snapped now. " If it's okay with Cora I'd like to know if she had done some pregnancy termination before. Because her uterus has some surgical scar and I noticed some stitch line on her abdominal area, it's almost invisible but as a doctor I did" he asked. " Cora answer the damn Doctor" he said through gritted teeth. " I don't know, i don't know anything. I've never been pregnant before in my life, so how...just take me home. " I said getting back to planet earth. " Wow, so you mean to say that the doctor is lying" he asked. " There must be some sort of misunderstanding here, I swear I've never in my life took an innocent life" I said tears falling down my face. " Believe me I've never, please believe me" I begged. " Miss Maphumulo, please try to remember. The gynaecologist who wrote these reports is the best in South Africa. He'd never lie or make such a huge mistake" the doctor said. " Maybe it happened in your childhood, just jog your memory" he added. " I don't know, I've never been to a gynaecologist before. I've never, just take me home" I said standing

up. Salvatore stood up too. " But you haven't heard the solutions...take this brochure then" I heard the doctor say. I didn't look back. The elevator was taking it's time so I opted for the staircases instead. I found Salvatore inside the car when I got to the underground parking, I got in and he drove off. The silence was thick enough to be cut with a knife. He was angry, no he was furious with me, maybe disheartened, maybe disappointed. Maybe fed, maybe wondering why I'd lie. How does one lie about something they never knew, where to from there?. How could he have believed the doctors over me, why would I hide something so big from him. " How could I have committed murder if I have never got pregnant" I said crying. " That's what I want to know, how. Why did you hid something so big from me, why would you keep such a secret from me. Our future is ruined, let's just not talk about, before I say something I might regret" he said angrily, his fist gripping the steering wheel so tightly." Salvatore please believe me" I begged. " Maybe I had a miscarriage then, God knows I'd never kill an innocent soul" I pleaded but it seemed like his ears

were deaf. " There's no use in crying over spilt milk now, is there" he said. " You'll walk to the house, I need some fresh air" he said parking outside the gate. " Let's go in and talk about this please" I begged touching his arm. " Cora get the fuck out of this car, go inside" he shouted so angrily. I've never seen him like that. I almost peed on myself, I got out quickly and he drove off.

.

I walked inside the house, Lorenzo was lying on the couch. I went straight upstairs and took a long shower, it was one of the things that eased my mind during times like those, seemed like our love was about to lose. I got out of the shower, my hands were wrinkled. I wrapped a towel around my body. Took out the cellphone and earphones from my handbag. I needed to listen to some music.

This bitter earth

Well what a fruit it bares ohhh

This bitter earth

And if my life is like the dust

Ohh that hides the glow of a Rose

Ohh what good am I, heaven only knows

.

Ahhh this bitter earth

Yes can be so cold

Today you're young

Too soon you're old

But while a voice within me cries

I'm sure someone may answer my calls

Oh this bitter earth

May not be so bitter after all

.

This bitter earth

Ahh this bitter earth

What good is love mmh

That no one shares

And if my life is like the dust

That hides the glow of a Rose

What good am I, what good am I

Heaven only knows

Like I had said before, people seem to love me except life itself. It was like I had committed some unforgivable sin against life. I was constantly being punished and for what I had never known. I used to believe that proverbs that say something like 'it gets really dark when light is about to unveil itself' that turned into crap. Light came and went by in my life, it really got darker and darker till I couldn't see. No hope was left, I was just so tired of fighting, for what exactly?. Only for me to meet up with another problem. I decided I was not going to fight that time, I was just going to let life take its course. But my spirit into the deepest of pits, who cared anyways. I had nothing to lose. Or maybe I did but I was just too tired to fight the unending battles. The battlefields was too steep for me. " Why have you forsaken me lord?, First I had to go through that rape, I was only just 13 back then. What unforgivable sin have I committed against you. For years I had to endure the

assaults, and then I had to live under the bridge, just when I had thought you had send me your angel, just when I thought I was rescued the worst happened. I went through prostitution, and then the poisoning and now this?. how much more do I needed to endure" I asked crying.

.

I don't know when I fell asleep but I was woken up by the cry of a baby. I opened up my heavy eyes, it was yet another day. I went to the bath washed my face and mouth. My eyes were swollen with dark circles around them. I put on a vest and panties since I had slept naked. I put a gown on top and went downstairs. " What happened to him" I asked and then something crossed my mind. " Umyenzi?" I asked taking Lorenzo from her. " Habe!, Bengingamenzani mina lomtana. Selokhu etetema selokhu etetema kusukela izolo. Ngshilo ngathi udinga ukuphahlelwa" she exclaimed. At the time I didn't understand what she was saying. " I need to go to school, I'll try to calm him down for you. Where's his formula...incence?" I asked kind of

irritated. " Ohh isekhishini" she said. I went to the kitchen and pick up the baby formula and then went back upstairs. " It's okay, you don't have to cry. I'm here now?. Seems like your Dad slept out last night" I said feeding him the formula. " It's strange isn't it, how could things change just like that, Mmh?" I asked him as if he was going to answer. " It's a good thing that he has you, a son. Now that I can not give him any kids" I said, the way he was sucking his formula. " How I wish I was just like you, young and innocent. This world can swallow you without any mercy" I said. " but worry not, I'm here I'm going to make sure that you don't turn out to be like me or your mother, let alone your father. You're going to have the best life ever" I said smiling, he was falling asleep. " I'm going to take a bath now, go to school and then come back. We can have our little chat when I return, we are going to have a lots of fun" I said kissing his forehead. I then went downstairs and gave him to his nanny. I went upstairs and took a quick shower, moisturized my body and dressed up as quick as I could. I went to the backyard guests house and asked Robinson to drive me to school.

.

I came back home around 16:00, I was not so sure if Salvatore and I were going to go to our sessions but I freshened up for 10 minutes asked the driver to drive me home. There was no sign of him ever coming back home.

.

" And how did you feel about that?" the doctor phycologist asked me. " I don't know, how did I feel like?. I felt betrayed, lied too. I could have lost my life that night but then again it was for the best. I'm here now, safe and alive" I said then sighed. I was sitting on one of the rocking chairs we usually set on but the other one was empty. He was not there. " Do you think he'll ever change, your boyfriend" he asked, writing everything down. " That's a question that should direct to him" I said. " No, I want your opinion on this one" he said. " To be honest, I don't know but I have faith in him. I believe in him. If he agreed to attending these sessions then anything is possible. Besides that I don't think I ever want him to change. We all have our imperfections, highs and lows. " I

said solemnly. " You think?, This means that you're not certain about what you're saying" he said. " Nothing is certain in my life one of these days, anything can happen. I've learned to flow with the wind" I said thinking out loud. " You look so tired and sore, what happened" he asked. He was going to find out anyways, he had his ways of digging out the truth. " We went to receive the results in the hospital, I've just discovered that I'm not going to be able to be a mother. I have endometriosis" I said sighing heavily. " Is that why Mr Salvatore is not here today" he asked and I nodded. " Yes, he didn't sleep at home last night, Infact I hadn't seen him since he dropped me off at the gate" I explained. " Why are even talking about this, we were still on how I escaped from The Don's claws" I said. " You tell me...

.

I came home around 7:00pm. The there was no one in the sitting room, I went to the kitchen and drank some water, I didn't feel like eating. I mixed some snacks and went to the library to study. I took a maximum of 3 hours, I was so tired and stressed.

What if something has happened to Salvatore, a thought crossed my mind. Anyways I went upstairs, soaked my body into a bubbly bath. I needed serene, I took a nap inside the bathtub. I was woken up by the sense that someone was watching me. I opened up my eyes and there he was, sitting on the edge of the bathtub. I couldn't read his facial expression, he finally decided to grace us with his presence. He didn't say anything neither did I, I closed my eyes and tried to relax. Act like his presence didn't effect me, act like it did matter if he was there or not. I heard movements but I didn't dare to open up my eyes and then I felt the water moving. I opened up my eyes and there he was joining me inside the bathtub. He set down Infront of me, I closed my eyes and leaned backwards once again. I could feel his eyes on me, I stayed inside for a maximum of 15 minutes and then got out. I wrapped up a towel around my body, he was watching me the entire time. I got out of the bathroom and went to the closet. Wore my panties , night dress gown along with sleepers. I was feeling restless got undercovers after setting up the alarm to wake me up in the

morning, I had earlier lectures and assignments I needed to submit I covered . Good things was that I no longer needed the anti-depressant capsules. I was falling asleep when I felt a hand touch my waist, he snuggled up to me. " I was in Durban, I found out that your father took you to a gynaecologist when you were 14 years old. You were 5months pregnant, he operated on you since the embryo was matured enough to be a baby. Do you remember anything?" he asked breathing on my neck, I could feel his heartbeat. I got out of bed and went to the balcony, I was suffocating. The information was too much to handle, he followed me and set on one of knitted couches in the balcony. After a long time of silence I swallowed down the huge lump in my throat. " He said I was suffering from appendix....I don't something like that but that day he said the doctor was going to help me remove it. It doesn't matter now, like you said 'what's done is done, there's no use in crying over spilt milk' I should have just died along with my mother. What's the use of being alive if life brings me nothing but pain and suffering" I said, sighed and then went inside. I sat on the bed, he

followed me in and kneeled down Infront of me. " I'm sorry, I'm so sorry for everything you had to go through. I'm sorry for not believing you" he said getting in-between my thighs. Tears cascaded down my face, I looked up. Trying to hold them back, I wiped them off. My chest literally hurt, every inch of my body was in pain. My heart, ohh my heart was bleeding uncontrollable. " Your apology changes nothing, it won't erase the pain. Just leave me alone." I said pushing him away and standing up. I went into the bathroom and washed my face once again, I was not about to cry. I was doing just that before he came into my life. "Big girls don't cry" I said looking at myself mirror image. " You'll be fine, you're a star after all. Stars always shine, no matter what" I told myself, but I didn't believe it that time, something was different. I got out of the bathroom, he was standing on my bed side. " Could you excuse me" I want to go to sleep" I said standing Infront of him. " I'm sorry il mio cuero batte. I'm so sorry" he said. " Sorry?. For what exactly, please don't patronise me Salvatore. Are you the one that turned me into a barren, a curse of a some. Are you?' just

get out of my way and let me go to sleep" I said with an aching heart. He didn't move. " I said get out of my way, if I was in my senses I could have just walked up to the other side and got undercovers but I wasn't. I was mad, I was mad at myself for letting life hit me so hard, I was angry at my late mother who chose to keep me, I was angry at that evil men who called himself my father, I was angry at Joaquin for living me alone in that state where I needed a shoulder to cry on. " I said get out of my way" I screamed hitting his chest so hard. He grabbed my hands, " leave my hands, I hate you Salvatore. " I screamed trying to get my hands free but I failed miserably. I ended up crying my lungs out against his chest" he put his hands around my petite body and held me tightly against his chest. " She, everything is going to be fine, I'll fix everything" he said. That's what I needed to hear. I wanted him to just hold me and tell me that everything was going to be fine, that he was going to fix everything like he always did. My feet couldn't carry me anymore I found myself sliding down the floor but he picked me up and put me into bed. I couldn't stop crying. I

was snuggled up to his warm body, my head on his chest. " Stop crying now, you need to stop. You're going to get sick" he said softly. " I can't, I can't give you children. The little yours dream is ruined. " I said crying, I got a hiccup from so much crying. "That's not true, I read the brochure. We will have little yours and mes. Endometriosis can be diagnosed. It can be diagnosed, there are many different ways to diagnose it. I found out that it can be diagnosed by laparoscopy, which is an operation looking with a camera inside the tummy. It can also be treated with hormones or surgery. It may be expensive but worth it, I'm willing to pay whatever the price is. There's no way that I am not going to have little yours and mes running around the house" he said sounding happy. " Really?" I asked sitting upright and looking at him. He nodded, " we are going to have babies, I'm not a barren?" I asked. " Yes, we're going to make our own little insane family" he said. Sadness turned into joy, I quickly wiped away my tears. " We're going to have babies" I screamed unbelievably. He laughed at me but then he got serious again. " I'm sorry Il mio cuero batte, the way I behaved earlier on, that was very

mean. You didn't deserve it, I was just so angry..." he said sitting upright. " You hurt me big Joaquin but I understand. With The line of business I was in anyone would have probably assumed that I aborted a lot of kids" I said looking down, tears forming in my eyes. " I'm sorry, please forgive me" he said sincerely. I nodded after taking a deep breath. " I forgive you" I said smiling faintly." I'll make it up to you" he said tilting my head so that I look at him. " How?" I asked frowning. " I'm going to cook something for you now, you probably didn't have anything to eat the whole day plus yesterday" he said it with questioning eyes. " I'm not feeling hungry" I said, making myself comfortable in bed. " You're not going to sleep on an empty stomach, not under my watch" he said pulling away the covers. " Joaquin, I have early class tomorrow" I said whining. " Do you remember that day when I poured cold water on you while you were in bed?" He asked seriously. " Yes, so?" I asked shrugging my shoulders. " Don't let history repeat itself," he said walking towards the door. " What a unique way to apologize. I like your signature you devil's advocate" I said getting out of bed and

following him. We were just like that, all it took was just a few minutes of apologising and then we're all fine again but then a few minutes later we're bickering about something else.

.

I woke up around 4:00am or rather I was woken up by him. I took a quick. Tied up my hair into a messy pony tail. Wore my black loose adidas track pants, white off shoulder crop top and black pencil heels. Applied a little bit of makeup and lipgloss. I looked cute, really cute. " Let's go" I said to Salvatore who offered to take me to UJ. After I had my cereal. He was wearing grey scotchd suit and brown Italian shoes, ready for work. " A person can't even get a good morning kiss in this house" he murmured but I heard him anyways. We got into the car and he drove off, the only voice in the car was that of early news man. 40 minutes later he was parked in front of the gate. I had 20 minutes before class. " Ain't you going to get out and open the door for me" I asked, sighing softly. " I am sorry your highness" he said getting out, I giggled a bit. He opened up and I got out. " I guess

I'll see you at home later" I said putting my backpack on my back and carrying my laptop with my hand. " That's just it?" He asked. " What?... You seem moody" I said reading his face. " I don't want to come out as controlling but don't you think that the top you're wearing is a little bit more tiny" he said looking at my bare waist. I put my free hand around his neck and pushed him against the car. " You don't have to worry, I'm all yours" I said brushing his back of the head. He sighed, held on to my bare waist. Which got my shivering a bit. " Tell all of those boys that you're already mine. I really don't feel like pulling a gun on somebody's head" he said seriously. " I'll let them know" I said smiling. I kissed his lips slightly. " I'll see you at home" I said looking into his hazel green eyes. He kissed me, with somuch hunger and passionate. We haven't had sex in four weeks, I was busy trying to catch up. I'd sometimes come to bed around 3am, so tired. Sometimes he'd drag me out of the library. We had examinations so it was a must that I studied a lot. The university was going on the third term holidays within a week's time. I pulled out of the kiss, there were students passing by plus it

was giving me an unwanted reaction down there. " I'll see you later" I said wiping off the lipgloss on his lips. " I love you" he called out. " I love you" I said blowing him a kiss. He smiled shaking his head unbelievably. I just chuckled and left.

The classes were a few. I had an examination coming the next day. I went to the library and studied after submitting my assignments. " Hey stranger" I heard Amanda's voice whisper behind me. "Twin sister" I murmured softly. She came over and joined me. " The love bites?" I asked looking at her neck. She smiled and looked away, " you guys were getting it on last night" I asked demonstrating with my hands. " Stop it" she said slapping my hands. " You lost some weight, you look tiny. Tell Mr Muscles to stop burn your fat with his dick" she said, my eyes popped. There were other students around. " Shhh!" The librarian said coming towards us. " No, no ways. It's been a month since, we. You know. Let's talk later, I have a examination to study for" I said focussing on my book. I could tell that she had a lot of questions she wanted to ask.

.

5 hours later Amanda's and I were walking outside the university. " I don't think I can survive a month without a dick session" she said shamelessly. " Amanda?, What has Michael done to my naïve friend. Where's my Amanda?" I asked gagging unbelievably. " That Michelle girl I told you about is trying to show me flames but guess what I going to show her fire. Bitch trying to steal my man from me" she said burning up. " I thought you were never ever going to fight for a stupid dicklet" I said remembering her words correctly. " I changed my mind besides that's not a dicklet. It's a fat long dick" she said. " Euw, too much information" I said dramatically disgusted. " Look who's here" She said looking forward. I looked where her eyes were at and boom Joaquin was there sitting on the hood of his yellow Ferrari, wearing black. Some students were busy admiring the car. " Heavens swallow me already" I said, he was looking straight at us. There was no turning back now. We walked up to him. " Mr Muscles" Amanda said saluting like a soldier. " How is Michelle doing ohh I

mean Michael" he asked sarcastically. " F you. Noisy chicken" Amanda said clicking her tongue. Joaquin just giggled. " Cora I'll see you around" she said already walking away. " I admire your courage Mandison" he called out. Amanda just turned around and raised her middle finger. " You guys are crazy" I said shaking my head. " So what brings you here" I asked curiously. " Put me behind bars if it's crime to get my girlfriend from school" he said getting off the hook. " Let's go" he said opening the door for me. I got in and he closed it, I buckled up while he got in. " I don't like this car" I said taking a deep breath. " Why?" he asked buckling up, " you drive like a maniac when you are in it, it's too fast" I said. " Remembering that first time I gave you a ride home?" He asked. " You mean to say that time when you forced me to get in" I corrected him. " Did I put a gun on your head?" he asked driving off. " No but—" exactly" he cut me off. " But you—..." Tah tah tah tah" he said cutting me off. " You were—..." Tah tah tah tah tah" he did it again. " Can I talk" I asked sighing heavily. " I was just kidding, go on." He said giggling. " As I was saying you looked so—..." Tah tah tah tah

tah" he did it once again. " Fuck you" I said angrily. He just laughed. " It's not funny, that's just so immature of you" I added. " Why so serious, I was just kidding." He said putting his hand on my shoulder but I yanked it. " I'm sorry, I'm sorry" he said but I just looked out of the window. " For how long are you going to ignore me" he asked after a long time of talking A lone. " Cora wami, mi dispiace(I'm sorry" he said. " It doesn't matter in what language you say it. I'm not going to forgive you that was rude of you" I said folding my arms on my chest. " Mashiyamahle, ngyaxolisa" he said. I could not help but smile. It was funny, the way he said it. " Ohh, she's smiling. She smiles, come on was that a smile?. Did I just see a smile?" he asked so cheesy. " You're insane" I said giggling. " Be careful it's contagious" he said smiling. It's almost 5:00 let's just go straight to the phycologist. We did just that.

.

Two months later

[6/3, 14:50] Lynne: Page 46

Amanda's POV

.

I was in the midst of my finally examinations. The university was going to close within two weeks time. Things were hectic for me. I haven't been spending time with Michael lately and it's not like he complained. He was a busy man too. It was a Friday and he was taking me somewhere, a surprise of some sort. If it was up to me, we would just stay in doors, catch a movie or something. I was really tired, I was not the kind of girl to work strenuously but university was showing me flame and the last thing I wanted to do was disappoint my parents in anyway. I glanced at my mirror image one last time, I looked good. I was wearing a short little red dress and black knee length black leather boots, which were 5inch heels. I put a black overcoat, which was below my knees. Tied my her into a neat straight up pony tail. A threw a little bit shade of makeup. I checked my things one more time in my bag, everything was there. He blew up my phone telling me that he was out side campus. I locked up my room then took the

elevator down, I checked out and walked to his car. He was driving his white BMW X4. I opened the door and got inside. "Hi" I said after closing the door. "Hi" he said looking so tense. "So where are we going?" I asked trying to ease the tension between us. "It's a surprise" he said driving off. "Come on, tell me" I said putting my arm around shoulder. "No, I intend to keep it a surprise" he said smiling a bit. "You're such a bore" I said rolling my eyes. He drove for about an hour, we'd talk there and there. He parked in front of this big mansion in the suburbs. He rang the gate bell. "Who is it?" a male voice asked on the speaker. "It's Mike" he said and then the gate opened up for him. "Who's house is this" I asked as he drove in. "Patience" he said parking the car in front of the garage. He walked out and opened the door for me. I got out and he closed the door. He took my hand into his, "come" he said. I was suddenly feeling nervous. We walked to the main door, he knocked and the door opened up. I saw an elderly woman and man, a boy and girl of my age standing in front of us "dad, mom" he said attacking his parents I figured with a hug. 'heavens swallow

me already' my inner self screamed helplessly. " Son..." His father said looking overjoyed. " My son" his mom said smiling. " Brother Mike" the girl said attacking him with a hug. " Guys" he said hugging both of the teenagers. I was just standing there like a fool, forcing a smile. My cheeks starting to not like the strenuous exercise. " Mom, dad this is Amanda. My girlfriend" he said putting his arm around my shoulders. " Hi" I said waving weirdly. " Hi, come in guys. Dinner is served, I want to know what we owe to get such a pleasant surprise" his mother said. We walked to the dinner table. Michael pulled out a chair for me, I sat down and he did to .

.

" How old are you Amanda dear. You look like the twin's age. They have just turned 17" hi mother asked. To be honest I didn't like her question at all. It was like she was saying I looked to young to be with her son. " I'm 18 years old, I turned 18 on January" i said as we were eating. " Did you know that Mike is 28 years old, what does that make you. Ten years you—..." Ma please, I love Amanda and she loves me.

She makes me happy" Mike said more like begged. " Josh, did I say something wrong" she asked her husband. Acting so dramatically hurt." Grace please, let's just have our dinner in peace. Our son has finally come home after so many years" his dad said. " Brother Mike, I've been meaning to call you. I need new sneakers" omarion said. He was the twin boy. Omarion and Ontario, strange names. " It had to be that, isn't it." Michael said chuckling.

" The food tastes good" I said. " Thanks, I prepared the stew" Ontario said bubbly. " Do you go to university" omarion asked. " Yes" I asked shortly. " What do you study" Ontario asked looking so excited. " I'm doing my first year in physiotherapy" I said after sipping on my juice. " Great, I've chosen the same carrier too. I must get your number. We can talk more about this" Omarion said solemnly. " Sure why not" I said smiling. "Ontario, the dishes" grace said signalling for Ontario to collect the dishes. Since we were done eating. He was such a bitter woman, make me cringe a bit. " I'll help" I said standing up, we collected the dishes and went to the kitchen. "

Would you help me with the dessert" she asked looking so jumpy. " I thought we were going to wash the dishes" I said confused. " No, dessert first. Mom likes things in a certain way" she said getting the burnt cake from the refrigerator. She cut it into equal pieces. Took out the forks and side plates from the shelves. " I'll carry those" I said... 15 minutes later we were done. Ontario and I were washing the dishes. When I heard noises from the sitting room. " I'll go and check" I said wiping my hands. " That's not such a good idea" she said following me. " Why" I asked walking out of the kitchen. —" is she the reason why you haven't been coming home, huh" Grace asked, shouting. " Mother, please. You know the reason why" Michael said sighing heavily. " Grace, what's wrong with you" Josh asked frustrated. " What's wrong with me?, I haven't seen my son for the past 3years and you're asking me what's wrong with me" she shouted. " Is everything OK?" I asking walk

.

[6/3, 14:51] Lynne: Continuing

Walking into the sitting room, " what does it looks like to you" she snapped at me. " Mother that's enough OK, Amanda get your bag. We're leaving" Michael shouted. He was furious, after a long time of keeping quiet and calm he finally bursted. " We're leaving?" I asked frowning. " Yes, we're leaving" he said firmly. " Michael, please don't go my son . You just got here. Please sleep over. " His father begged. He was the humble one while she was the bitter gourd. " Father, you'll have to forgive me but I cannot stay where I'm not needed. If she can not get along with my girlfriend then I am compelled to leave" he said sighing heavily. " Mike, can I talk to you aside for a minute?" I asked. " Yeah sure, follow me" he said walking upstairs. I followed him, grace was sitting on the couch fuming. He lead me into some room. " What is it?" He asked turning around to face me while I closed the door. " Look, I don't know what the issue is between you and your family or rather your mother. Whatever it is it doesn't concern me. And shouting at her like that is not cool, she's still your mother. Anyways you brought me here to meet with your family, your father just asked us to sleep

over. I heard that you haven't been here for 3 years I get your mother's frustration. Any parent would be devastated by this. Whatever difference there is between the two of you, just try and find a way to fix it. For the sake of our relationship. Anyways we're going to sleep over" I said without questioning him. "Are you done, can I talk now?" He asked folding his arms around his chest. "Yes" I said firmly. "You do not know what transpired within this family, it's not something that can be fixed with just a snap of a finger. It's not that easy, you do not know the reason why I stayed away. It's clearly that mother does not want you around here nor does she want you in my life. So why should I stay. We're leaving" he said walking towards the door. I stood in front of the door knob. "We're not going anywhere Michael, we're not. Your mother loves you, she's not that bad. I saw the way she embraced you. Just talk things out" I said blocking his way. "Amanda get out of my way, I said we're leaving and my word is final." He snapped. Well if you're leaving then suit yourself but I'm not going anywhere" I said walking towards the bed and sitting down. "You're kidding right?" He asked

shaking his head unbelievably. " We're leaving Amanda and my word is final" he said firmly. " What are you going to do, drag me downstairs" I asked frowning. " Try me, I'm going to the car. I want to see there within two minutes" he said then left, the look on his face was daring. I felt like saying fuck you. Like the stubborn woman i was I set still and started counting down from 120–0. Ten minutes later I was sitting there but still no sign of Micheal. Could he have left without me?, A thought crossed my mind. I walked downstairs, I could hear voices of people giggling as I was walking. I found Michael and his little brother and sister playing a video game. " What's going on in here" I asked sitting on the couch. " Amanda, thank you for convincing this one to sleep over" Ontario said giggling. " No problem" I said slowly.

.

" What changed your mind?" I asked as we were getting undercovers in his room. I was wearing his shirt and he was sleeping in his boxers. " I pumped into my dad as I was walking downstairs and we

talked. Good night" he said switching off his side lamp and turning his back to face me. " And here I was thinking i was the heroine to the mid chapter" I said snuggling up to his back, my arm under his. Head on top of his. " Don't you think we should try this bed out" I said getting my hand under his boxers. " Amanda, I am tired. Can I please get some sleep" he said sounding so irritated or maybe it was just my misconception. " Ohhk, suit yourself then" I said turning around. We slept back to back that night. Worst first night at my in-laws house.

.

Cora's POV

" This one should do, you like it" I asked showing Lorenzo a book. He just smiled at me, saliva drooling off his mouth. " Yeah, you love it. Finally. Let's see if it's mouth watering as you say it is" I said playfully. Lorenzo was in his baby chamber. I had finally got an interior designer to get it designed. It has a hulk theme touch. " Okay let's begin reading...There was once a spider who caught a fly. ' I am going to eat you' she said. ' make your last wish'

- ' my favourite dish' said the fly.

- ' is apple pie with a glass of cider'

- ' your wish shall be granted' said the spider.

-the spider fetched the apples, baked the pie, and pressed the cider

- ' thank you very much, miss spider's said the fly, ' for this good cider and apple

- ' you're welcome' said the spider, eat all of the pie and leave none of the cider.

- ' no fly has ever tasted such delicious pie' said the fly.

- would you like a litt—... "what are you guys doing here?" Joaquin asked walking inside. " Shhh..I'm reading a bed time story to Lore" I said. " He's already sleeping" he whispered smiling. I looked at Lorenzo, damn he was long gone..." He didn't even give me a warning, sly child. Little devils rascal" I said standing up and putting the book in one of his books shelves. I had purchased a lot of books, it was more of a mini library in the room. " That's my child

you're insulting" he said warningly. " Like father like son" I said yawning. I was really tired,like tired tired. The examinations got me working like a slave. And with my career field it was only going to get worse, one of the things I needed to discuss with Joaquin. The four year residency requirement which was to begin the following year. " Stop talking nonsense and let's go to bed" he said. " Gentlemen first" I said smiling. He just walked up to me and carried me into his arms. " I can walk you know" I said smiling. " You look like someone who just got discharged from the hospital, you might faint" he said. " Is it that bad" I asked snuggling up to his neck. " You look horrible" he said. "Ouch! I thought boyfriends were supposed to boost our self-esteem not lower it" I said sulking. " You're lucky, you got the honest one" he said putting me on bed. " I need to go and pee" I said getting off bed. I came back and the main lights were switched off. I threw myself on bed and sighed in relief. " I will get out of this bed around 15:00pm, don't wake me up" I said faintly. " You're sleeping with your gown on?" he asked." Good night baby wami" I said slowly. " I thought we were going to ha talk tonight, since we

can to bed at the same time. I hardly see you one of these days. " He said, sounding so disappointed. " We'll talk tomorrow, I'm too tired please" I said. " Okay" that's all he said. I dozed off. It was true we hadn't been talking that much one of those days, I couldn't remember the last time we got intimate.

.

" Petunia!, Petunia!" I called Lorenzo's nanny. She was the new nanny. Young and literate. " For heaven's sake the baby is crying" I shouted walking to Lorenzo's room. I was woken up by his cries, it was around 10:00 am. Alonzo was not around. I picked him up along with his formula and then went downstairs. " Petunia!" I called out, she came rushing to the kitchen, " sorry Cora I was doing his laundry" she said. " It's OK just wash his bottle and make a fresh one. He might be hungry, I'll go and bath him" I said angry but calm. I walked back upstairs with him. I poured warm water into his bathing basin. He wouldn't stop crying, what have we got here. I asked charging his diaper. " Ohh, I see why you wouldn't stop cry." I said cleaning him up. I got him clean

clothes and towels along with new diaper and lotion, baby powder from his closet, I Washed him and dressed him up through his tears. " Shhh, it's okay now. Stop crying I'm here. Let's go and get your formula" I said walking with him downstairs. He formula was on the kitchen counter. I took it and went to feed him in the sitting room. 30 minutes later he was rejecting it. " I also need to take a bath, let's go to aunt Petunia" I said standing up with him I'm my arms. I found Petunia in the kitchen boiling Lore's eating utensils. " Can you take him, I need to go and take a bath" I said. " Come here boy boy" she said extending his arms, I gave him to her but he was holding on to my gown. " Baby Lore mom Cora has to take a bath now, go to aunt Petunia" I said trying to get his little hand loose. He suddenly cried extending his arms towards me. " No, no ,no. I'll see you later" I said walking out of the kitchen. He was crying loudly. Anyways I took a shower, moisturized my body and dressed up. I took my phone and walked downstairs. I found Petunia watching television with Lorenzo in her arms. " Give him to me, I left a mess in his room. If you could kindly clear it

up please" I said sitting down. " Sure" she said giving me the baby. I took him and went to the kitchen. Put him on his baby high chair. I started preparing breakfast for myself and Petunia, it was more of a brunch because it was 12pm. My phone just rang. I answered and put it on loud speaker. " Twin sister" I said spread butter on bread. " Guess what?" She said sounding excited. " What?.. don't tell me you're pregnant" I said. " What?, No. No silly" she said sounding so shocked. " He proposed?" I asked. " Argh!. you're creeping me out... anyways Mike took me to meet his family last night" she said screaming. " Okay, I've got good news for you too" I said slowly. " What's the good news?" She asked. " The good news is that my phone is on the table counter right now, which means that my eardrum isn't damaged by your loud screaming" I said sarcastically. " Mxm, fuck you" she said. " Mind your language, I've got a baby like here" I said. " Let's meet tomorrow, I miss you" she said. " You know Sunday are for God" I said. " Come on, you can skip one service for a sister to sister get together" she said more like pleaded. " No, we will do that during the holidays besides. I've got a

test on Wednesday I have to revise" I said. " Fine, I'll just stay here alone sad with a container of ice-cream watching movies from 1970s" she said. " It's not working Mandy" I said laughing. " Whatever bye" she said, " wait" I said fastly. " What" she asked. " Ate they good people?, His parents. How are they" I asked. " The mother is bitter, father is calm, daughter is bubbly, son is okay " she said. " What happened" I asked curiously. She explained everything to me. " Whoa, did he tell you what happened" I asked eyes popped out. " No, I believe he will. Whenever he's ready to" she said casually. " Congratulations on your in-laws" I said laughing. " This is scary, we've only been dating for 4months, next thing he'd want me to introduce him to my parents. I'm scared" she said. " There's nothing to be scared of, relax. This means that he's serious about you. No games, you're his end game" I said smiling as if she could see me. " Don't jinx it Cora" she said giggling. " Good bye, some of us are busy" I said laughing. " Bye" she said then hunged up. I finished up making breakfast and served it in to two plates. " Petunia, I made you breakfast" I called out. .

.

" So, how is it?" I asked Alonzo as he took in the first spoon of his food. I prepared dinner. We were eating around the dining table. It was 8pm.

. Actually, Google and Petunia helped me prepare my first dinner dishes. It was just simple grilled full chicken, fried rice and a few salads. " It's...not bad, it's good actually considering that it's your first time" he said after chewing down. We finished up eating, Petunia and I Washed the dishes while Alonzo went upstairs. Lorenzo was sleeping in his room. Baby intercom helped Petunia to hear when he was crying at night. " Good night P" I said walking my room " Good night Cora" she said walking to his room. The shower water was running as I walked in, I walked in to the bathroom, took off my clothes and joined him in the shower. He was facing the other side. I wrapped my arms around his chest. " How was your day" I asked leaning on his back. " Great, the profit figures are looking good in all the businesses. How was your day" he asked pulling me to stand Infront of him. " Wonderful... I spent enough time with

Lorenzo." I said washing my body with a sponge. He was looking down at me the intire time. " What?" I asked. " It's amazing how you take such good care of Lorenzo with every opportunity you get, you always manage to make time for him even though you're occupied with your school work." He said , there was a new facial expression on his first. I had never seen that before. " Last month when I was there to see Enzo. I found Nina wasted on the couch, there was smoke all over the apartment. The baby was crying on the other room" he said, his voice carried a lot of emotions. " Why didn't you tell me this, why are you telling me now" I asked kinda angry, who does that with a baby around. " I didn't want to stress you... you were in the middle of your examinations.... anyways I took him to Kevin's place. Siwe's baby nanny took good care of him for almost a week while I was searching for a good nanny." He said. " But he had that elderly woman for a nanny" I said confused. " She was it running some errands for Nina" he said. " I don't think Nina even loves Lorenzo. She's—..." Don't say that, every woman loves their kids. She does, deep down inside she does" I said

cutting him off. " That's not entirely true, not every woman is good. My mom left me, you always try to find goodness in everyone. Some people are just not that..." He said sounding so pissed. " OK, I get that... let's just forget about the outside world. Forget about all our problems and enjoy this warm water together" I said putting my index finger on his wet lips. He squeezed my butt. "If you say so" he said kissing me.

.

10 days later

"it will be just a minor surgery, you can relax" Dr Davis assured me as I was laying on the theater bed ready for the laparoscopy surgery to be done on me. They had injected me with sedatives, Salvatore was waiting for me outside. It was the last holidays of the year. The university closed 4days ago and Salvatore saw it feet that I undergo the surgery ASAP. We had planned to go to California within two week's time, the whole crew was going including his siblings. But before that he said he wanted to take me somewhere to meet some people I suddenly fell

asleep...I woke up in another ward room later on, Salvatore was by my side. Holding my hand. " Hi, you're awake" he said sounding so relieved. " For how long have I been out" I asked. " 4 hours, I think" he said glancing at his wrist watch. " And you've been sitting here the entire time?" I asked. " Pretty much, yes" he said. " How are you feeling" he asked. " Good, surprisingly good. I thought I'd wake up in excruciating pain" I said. " I'm starving" I said sighing. " Let me go and get you something to eat from the cafeteria" he said standing up. He came back with a full grilled chicken, green salad and orange juice. " There's nothing delicious in there. It's hospital food left right and centre" he said sitting down. " What did the doctor say, when Am I getting discharged from here" I asked eating. " You'll be discharged tomorrow, that's if the surgical scar is clotting just fine" he said. " We should make a baby as soon as the scars heal. What do you say?" I asked smiling. " Do you know how long I've been waiting for you to say that" he said. " Hey, I'm just kidding" I said laughing. That's when I felt the surgical scar. " I know" he said laughing along.

.

" You have a private jet?" I asked as we were at the airport. " It's my dad's, I have a yacht though" he said. We took the staircases inside. " And you're only telling me this now?" I asked frowning. " It's insignificant, that's why I haven't told you about it" he said buckling me up on the comfortable couch. It had been two day since I got discharged from the hospital. " Where are we going exactly, what's the jet for. I thought you said we were meeting some people within the country. Who are they anyways?" I asked all at once. " Geez, you ask so many questions" he said buckling up. " We're taking a plane because I want to get back in time. I have closing functions I need to attend within two days." He answered. " Would you care for some champagne sir" the air hostess asked. " Yes, also bring a bottle of juice" he said taking the glass of champagne. I was about to take one when he said " Cora, your stitches...bring a glass of juice for her"..." But Joaquin—" no buts" he said firmly. So controlling. 30 minutes later the plane took off. It landed to the

last place I wanted to be. Durban international airport. " What are we doing here?" I asked alerted. He was parking our bags into the boot of a black Mercedes Benz CL Class. " Relax, come" he said before closing the boot and opening the door for me. " I asked you a question" I said firmly. Something about the whole trip didn't sit well with me. " I told you already, don't you trust me?" he asked getting in and closing the door. " I trust you" I said shortly, trying to calm down. " I booked us into a hotel, we will meet them tomorrow morning" he said driving off.

.

The next day, we were having breakfast after bathing. " When are your friends coming, I have a bad feeling about this. Something is up, I feel like you're hiding something from me" I said feeling anxious. " They'll be here within a few minutes" he said looking his wrist watch. " Tell them to make it quick, I don't want to be here. I want to—and the there was a knock on the door. " That should be them" he said walking towards the door. He opened up, " come in" he said. I

was busy indulging in my breakfast when I heard a familiar voice calling my name. "Cora, my child" she said. My aunt. She was followed the Connie and Charles. "Cora, you're alive?" they said. I was just standing there in a fixed position. And then my worst nightmare walked in. More like wheeled in. "What is he doing here!" I exclaimed in shock. "I killed that man, what's going on here" I asked pointing at him with my middle finger, which was shaking by the way. My heart was racing in fear, tears cascading down my face. "He didn't die" Salvatore said walking towards me. I couldn't hear what he was saying but I just didn't fathom how, how was it possible. "No, no, no. This is just a nightmare. It's a bad dream" I said repeatedly while closing my ears

.

Unedited big time

[6/3, 14:51] Lynne: Page 47

"Cora, stop it OK. This is real, they are here"

Salvatore snapped at me. That's when I removed my hands from my ears. "They are here?, They found

me?" I asked slowly my eyes darting from aunty to Connie and from Connie to Charles. Except him, I was still scared of him. I realized that the therapy sessions didn't erase the fear that I had, " yes, they're here baby. Sit down" Salvatore said pulling me down, it was like i had just got admitted to a mental asylum. I was so confused and scared and furious at the same time. " Cora my baby" she said walking towards me. She embraced me, " get away from me, don't you dare touch me" I shouted pushing her away from me. My senses were intact, reality hit me hard. That was no time to cry but to strengthen up and face the truth Infront of me. " Don't, don't touch me" I said stepping away from her, my index finger pointing out at her. " Just take your evil husband and leave" I snapped once again. " I'm sorry, please forgive me my child" she begged crying. I walked to my father, who was pretty much a vegetable. " Why are you here, why are you here" I asked grabbing him by the shirt he was wearing. I asked shaking him roughly, his head was tilted to the right shoulder, saliva drooling off his mouth. I slapped the hell out of him, answer me dammit... What sin did I commit

against you for you to hurt me so much. Why did you hate me so much" I asked shaking him roughly, what hurts the most was the fact that he wasn't answering my questions. He was just staring at me, tear started to fall from his right eye. " You can also cry?" I asked laughing like a mad woman. " You can also cry?, huh. Do you remember that time when you first molested me. I was confused, scared, I cried begged you to stop. I begged and pleaded for your mercy but you didn't stop. You kept on enjoying yourself on me, your own daughter" I shouted laughing and crying, it was such a twisted situation. " You didn't stop father, instead you spit on my face. What did you say again, oh yeah I remember you said something like " you whore, you should have died instead of my wife. You killed my wife, you useless bitch" . My tears didn't stop you, instead they kept you coming in for more, you'd sneak in to my room with every chance you got." I shouted, found myself slapping him again. " I'm , I m sorry" I heard him say faintly. " It can talk, the monster can talk people" I said turning around to face them. Aunt was sitting down crying, her children consoling her.

Salvatore was just standing there watching like a spectator watching a sport's game. " The monster can talk, how marvelous. What did you say, you're sorry?" I asked loudly. " You're sorry, is your stupid sorry going to restore the eternal damage you've caused, is it going to erase the pain and sorrow that I went through for the last past 16years. Do you know the broken woman that you crafted, the unsecured scared women you molded with your own two hands... Do you remember that that, when was it again?. Ohh I remember. The 10nth time you were raping me, I said sorry. I apologized for mother's death but that didn't seem to make you stop. You enjoyed every pain and suffering of mine, some days I'd stumble and fall and you'd laugh with so much joy. Do you remember the whipping you gave me when I failed my 9th grade. I ended up in hospital, from that day on I made a promise to myself never ever to fail." I said crying in pain.

.

" And yet here you are, apologising like what you did to me was minor injury. Like you're apologising for

slapping me or something. You ruined me father, you ruined my life. Do you know what I've gone through, I became a fucking prostitute. But that was better than being molested by my own father. Your sorry can never repair the scars and injuries you caused" I cried then crumbled down. I couldn't breathe, my heart was failing me. I felt so dizzy and nauseous. Salvatore came to my rescue with a glass of water. He helped me drink up. I calmed down a bit, he carried me to the couch and put me there. I held on to his t shirt , I wanted him to hold me into his arms. Even though I was at him for setting me up with them. He could have warned me about it, but he's Salvatore. He always does what he thinks is right, with or without my consent. He set down and put his arms around me, tears couldn't stop streaming down my face, there were no sobs but only tears. Aunt and my siblings set on the opposite couch.

" I'm sorry Zee, I'm sorry. I didn't know that he, he was doing such a despicable thing to you. I swear I didn't know, please forgive me" she said wiping away

her tears. " You were supposed to know, you were supposed to be my mother. You just were never there, it was always work work work. But it's fine, I was never your issue to take care of. You don't need to apologize, you did nothing wrong" I said snuggled up to Salvatore who kept on moving his hand up and down on my shoulder. " I'm sorry, please don't say that. You know I love you like my child, you're my child. Please forgive me and come back home, we miss you" she pleaded crying once again. Connie was crying silently. I kept quiet for a long time, " I'm sorry but I can not come back to that pit of hell. It never felt like home. Yes there are some good memories about it but I was never fully happy there." I said after taking a deep breath. " Please visit us, just once, I miss you" Charles said. The twins and I were forever so close. " I can't, I can't at least not now" I said shaking my head no. I sat up straight, " I thought you had died but I never stopped looking for you. I kept on writing to the papers. The house is so dull without you, you always kept the smile. To think that you kept on laughing while you were going through somuch pain... Why didn't you tell me, just

once Cora. I would have done something to..." Aunt Said then cried. " What would you have done, when you couldn't get him arrested for abusing you now and then what could you have done. He was a police officer, he had a gun. He used it to threaten me, he would have killed me or maybe killed is all. Even if I did tell you, would you have believed me. He is my father, no one would have believed me. I would have been painted as insane instead" I said angrily. " I read the letter that you left on the wardrobe. I found him laying on the floor of your room, on a pool of blood. " She said. " It's a good thing that the devil is still alive, I also want to watch him suffer. I want him to watch my success." I said with so much vengeance In my heart. I stood up and walked to him. " What did you say, that I'll never be a doctor? I guess I should be thankful for all the miserly you put me through. You thought you were pinning me down but you were unknowingly raising me up. I'm thankful for the woman you crafted me to be, guess what. She's not scared to face anything that comes her way, life has hit her so hard that fear kept it distance...I want to get out of here before I strangle him to death." I

said going to get my bags. " I'm I'm sorry" I heard him say. " I'd never forgive you, you barstard. After all that you put me through, you thought you'd just come here and apologies and that'd just it. How easy for you" I snapped. " Salvatore I want to get out of here" I said walking towards the door. " Cora please don't go, it's been a long time since we last saw you please " auntie begged. " I am sorry but I can't stay in the same room with him" i said opening the door. " Give us your contacts at least" she asked. " Why don't you understand, why?. I want nothing to do with you. I want nothing to do with my past. Just go back to your lives and I'll do the same . Please" I pleaded hands put together in a praying manner. " Mr Salvatore please talk to her" she asked. " At this point there's nothing I can do, sorry. I tried, it's all up to her now" he said approaching the door.

.

4 hours later we were back at home, I pulled my suitcase to the closet and unpacked the clean clothes. I took the dirty ones to the laundry room, there were others there too. I did my laundry. I was

angry at myself, my family but mostly at Salvatore. He had no right to do that. I did my laundry with out most anger, I dried them up and ironed them. I needed to do something to channel my anger at something, I hadn't said a thing to him since we left that hotel room. 3 hours later I was done, I folded them up perfectly and carried them to our room. I found Salvatore sitting on bed, I passed him by and went to the closet, I packed my clothes in their rightful places and hanged the ones that needed to be hanged. " Can we talk?" he asked as I got out of the closet. I walked past him towards the door but he rushed there first and closed it, he then locked me in. I just stood there expressionless. I had no energy to argue with him, infact I had nothing to say to him. "Can you sit down" he said pushing me towards the bed. He pushed me down when we reached the bed. He kneeled down Infront of me, " I'm sorry I didn't let you know about who exactly we were going to meet, it's just I knew that you were going to refuse if I told you directly. I saw how you missed your siblings. Every time you'd looking at their photos with sadness, I noticed. I just wanted

you to get closer and get rid of the anger inside, maybe forgive your parents and start afresh. I want you to be happy, that's all. I thought that this would be the best solution but apparently it's not. I'm sorry you had to find out like that, your aunt and I have been in contact with each other. I once went to meet up with her and I am sorry I lied" he confessed. " Are you done, can I go out now?" I asked looking into his eyes.

[6/3, 14:51] Lynne: Continuing

" Wow...I was just trying to help. We have to resolve this issue. I apologized already, what do you want from me" he asked. " Trying to help?, Who asked you to, I was doing just fine, who gave you the right to dig into my past. You have your own issues deal with those and open the damn door for me i want to get out " I snapped angrily. " You're not going anywhere until we fix this, I'm not going to open that door until you forgive me" he said. " Would you like me to forgive you because I feel like it or to forgive you because I can't stand being locked up in the same room was deceiver like you" I asked looking at him,

he just stared at me. " Are you going to open up the door for me or what?" I asked but he remained Still. I walked to the bathroom and took a shower, got out and wore my PJs and then got undercovers. He was still sitting in the same position, I pulled the covers up and covered my head.

.

Salvatore's POV

So I was suddenly the deceiver, 10 minutes later I stood up and went to the bathroom to take a quick shower, I had a mission to attend to. I wore my black leather jacket, sneakers and gloves, black pants and shirt. I then exited the room, I took me an hour or so to reach the warehouse. Everybody was there when I got then, " let's get going" Mbutu said tossing me the car keys. I got in the drivers side and he got in the other, I closed the door and started the engine. " Am I that late" I asked driving off. " There has been a change of plans the transportation truck is moving out within the next hour" he said, I pressed the accelerator pedal harder. " But it's still the same truck right?" I asked. " Positive on that, telescope

double checked on that" he said. " This could be a trap" I said. " Should we abort the mission" he asked. " No, it's too late now" I said as we were joining the highway. We were going to hijack a jewellery retrenching company. The time was 9:15.

.

Cora's POV

I woke up around 12am, it was not like I had enough sleep to begin with. Salvatore was not by my side, I checked the bathroom and closet but he was not there. I checked the guest rooms, I literally checked all the rooms in the house but he was nowhere to be found. I ended up watching television just to make time pass by, still no sign of him. I went back to the bedroom, tried to call him up but his phone was unreachable. Just when I was giving up, he walked in wearing black clothes. He was carrying a gun in his hand. That was my first time seeing him like that. " Where were you?" I asked walking towards him. " Do you know how worried I was, I tried calling you but—." " I was busy talking and he was taking his clothes off." " I'm talking to you" I

said. " I don't have time for this, I'm really tired. I just want to go to sleep please" he said folding his clothes and putting them on the dressing table, he was left in his boxers. " Ohh, OK fine. It's not like I care anyways" I said walking away but he grabbed me by my arm and pulled me to his body. " You don't care?" He asked gazing into my eyes. My eyes darted between his eyes and his hand on my arm. " I don't care,why should I?" I asked. " What if I died there, is that a good enough reason for you to care" he asked. I swallowed up the hard lump in my throat. " Is that enough to make you care, answer my damn question" he said grabbing my arm roughly. " You're hurting me, let go of my arm" I said wincing in pain. " Answer my damn question" he said so coldly, it sent chills down my spine. The last time I saw him like that was a few months ago, when we weren't dating. When I chased him away from my apartment. " Stop it, you're hurting me" I cried out loud. That seemed to get him back to his senses. He let go of my arm and walked to bed. My arm was bruised where he had held me tightly. He switched off the main lights and his side lamp and then went to sleep. I took my

phone and went to sleep in the guest room, I cried myself to sleep.

.

I woke up with the feeling that someone was staring at me, I opened up my eyes and found Salvatore staring down at me. He was carrying a tray in his arms, looked fresh and clean. " Good morning" he said seriously. I got out of bed and went to the bathroom to wash my mouth and face. I came back and took my phone under the pillow. " Good morning" I said leaving him right there. I walked to the kitchen to make myself something to eat, I was starving to death. " Cora?" he called out my name I just kept quiet and got myself milk from the refrigerator. " Cora...—" what?, What do you fucking want. You want to bruise my arm once again, here it is. Take it" I shouted angrily. He walked up to me and held my face from both sides. " I'm sorry for last night, I'm sorry. I didn't mean to hurt you, I couldn't control myself. And I am sorry for the meeting" he said, I looked into his eyes. Trying to read the emotions, he was sorry. " It's like you wronged me

knowing the fact that I'd forgive you if you apologise." That's all I said. " Can't you forgive me, just this once" he asked holding one of my hands into his. " When my heart agrees, when the time is right. Excuse me" I said moving away from him. " Could you at least have breakfast" he said. " I'll make myself breakfast, thanks anyways" I said making myself weetbix. He sighed, " OK" he said.

.

I showered and dressed up in my jeans, boots and white shirt and an overcoat. It was quite cold outside. It was quite cold outside. He was sitting Infront of the television, watching sports when I got down stairs. " I am going to the mall, I'll ask Robinson to drive me" I said walking towards the door. " Wait I'll take you there" he said standing up swiftly. " Aren't you watching a game?" I asked turning on my heels. " I was, I also need to get a few things there... Let's go" he said. " Sure" I said frowning. Anyways we reached the mall an hour and 30 minutes later. " I'll call you when I get to the car" I said glancing at my wrist watch. " Sure" he said and we went our

separate way. I needed to get an injection at the pharmacy, after that I went to buy myself a few things I needed. " 2hours later I was done" . I went back to the car and luckily I found him there speaking on the phone. I put my stuff on the back seat. And the got in the front seat, " yeah sure, I'll see you you later" he said then hunged up. " You done?" He asked shortly I nodded. He drove off to the house. 3hours later I was chilling on the terrace talking with Amanda on the phone. " can you believe the nerve?" I asked laughing. " So he was like ' I know you have someone in your life. I'm not willing to disturb that either but— and then Salvatore had to enter carrying a tray once again. " Look Mandy I have to go" I said then hung up. " Could you accompany me to the closing function tonight" he asked putting an bowl of paste Infront of me. He then set down and put the other Infront of him. " yeah sure, at what time is it?" I asked eating up. " Within the next four hours to come" he said. " I probably should go and pick out an outfit to wear" I said. " No sit down, I bought you something" he said. I set down and we ate together in silence. " Salvatore, what happened

last night" i asked. He looked at me confused but his brain clicked. " It was a trap like I had suspected, we barely escape all thanks to Mike being a detective. He always carries his radio, you really don't want to hear the details. We are all fine" he said.

.

I was wearing a red long dress, opened on the waist.

[6/3, 14:52] Lynne: Page 48

Cora's POV

As I was saying I was wearing a red dress, with circle openings on the waist, knee length with a thigh high slit, red 6inch heel stilettos. Makeup on flick, cherry red lipstick. I ascended down the staircases, Salvatore was waiting for me downstairs. " You look...hot" he said after checking me out, that was new ' hot'. I've heard beautiful, gorgeous, stunning, sexy, got used to 'pretty' but never hot. " Thank you, you don't look bad yourself" I said without a smile. His compliments always managed to melt my heart but there was still that part of me that was just not there yet.

" Shall we" he said taking my hand into his. The limousine was already waiting for us on the front door, Robinson opened the door for us. We got in and he drove off, Alonzo was staring at me like I was some piece of meat. " Can you stop already" I said after a long time of patience. " What?" He asked smiling. Damn that smile, I said damn that smile. " Stop staring at me" I said feeling a little bit shy. " I can't help it, are you sure that you're still angry?" He asked moving closer to me. " What are you doing" I asked sighing. " Can't you just forget about everything, for tonight. We can do this tomorrow, you can wake up angry with me tomorrow. I'll take that, it's allowed" he said kissing my shoulders. " Can we not do this, whatever you're doing it's not going to work" I said looking up. " Are you sure?" He asked putting his hand around me so that he could touch my bare waist. I swiftly moved away. " Don't!" I said warningly pointing my index finger at him. " What?" He asked acting all innocent on me. " Spare me the innocent face, I know what you're up. Trust me the make-up sex-ish is not going to work on me. What you did is Major. I still can't believe that you'd sneak

behind my back and contact my family, letting me first wouldn't have cost a thing. You lied, I hate lies. Worst liars " I said a little bit louder than I intended to. That topic got my emotions all wrecked up. " Once again I am sorry, but we both know that not keeping you in the dark was going to make the mission impossible. You would have refused to meet up with them, like you left with your aunt begging. It's probably not my place to say this but I think while burning the devil you're also making some innocent souls catch fire" he said, I kept on reviving the words until they stick. He had a point there, but was I wrong?. Those innocent souls were there when I was burning in the pits of hell maybe i also wanted them to feel the heat just once. " I'm really confused here...what were you saying about the make-up sex-ish thing" he asked after a long time. My brain clicked, " you know what I meant" I said faintly smiling. " No I don't" he said chuckling. " Yes you do" I said. " No I don't" he protested. " Yes you do" I said. " OK maybe I do but I want to hear it from you" he said shifting closer to me. " Ohh" I said. " Tell me" he said holding my waist once again. That got me

confused whether I was or wasn't angry with him. " No, I don't want to" I said looking away. " You will" he said massaging my waist, " stop doing that" I said my breathing hitched , worst part was that I hadn't had his giant cucumber inside me for weeks now. His touch was torture, but God is a God of miracles I was saved by the stopping of the car. Destination reached, the driver opened the door for us." I'm not done with you" he said as I was getting out, that planted a smile on my face.

.

The party was business related so you can imagine how boring it was, for me at least. They said their closing speech, appreciated those who needed to be appreciated like best employees of the year. There was music too, for whites if I must specify. If you've ever watched one of those office movies from 1970s-1990s you probably have a clue of what I am talking about. I was just wondering around the reception with a glass of wine that I hadn't dare to sip on. Because if I did, the night would have ended early for Salvatore. I was bad with alcohol, still am. "

Can I have this dance" he asked me out of nowhere. " I'll have to pass" I said ignoring him on purpose, I kept on walking around And then I felt his hands on my waist. " What the fuck" I hissed turning around. " Don't do that, you just don't do that." I said warningly. " What options have i got?, Come and dance with me before I drag you to the dance floor" he said. " Hold this" I said giving him the glass of wine. " Let's dance then, smart mouth" I said scornfully. " Have you been drinking?" He asked putting the glass on the tray of a waitress who was just passing by. " No why" I asked frowning. " You're acting strange on me" he said following me to the dance floor. " Hello, it's called anger, anger. Im still angry at you. Infact I am furious" I said rolling my eyes. " I thought we agreed on the point that you'd be angry at me tomorrow, but for tonight we'd just be good lovers" he said with a naughty smirk on his face. " Haha ha, how hilarious" I said sarcastically, he just chuckled softly. He put his one hand on my waist, held on to my hand with the other. While I put my other on his shoulder. " You'd excuse me if I happen to step on your toes, I am not familiar with this kind of music" I said looking into

his eyes. " You're kidding ,right?" He asked. " Read my face, what does it say" I asked seriously. He just shook his head in disbelief. " You're just... Too much, why are you giving me such a hard time" he said through gritted teeth. " If you really wanted to dance with me, you could have just taken me to a club or something. Even the house would have be better. Not this old age home" I said faking a smile. " I thought you were insane but I was wrong you're totally mental unstable" he said and just then I stabbed on his toes. " Ouch!" He said a little bit louder that he caught some people's attention. " Ohh my bad, sorry honey" I said smiling widely. "What was that for?" He asked frowning. " For calling me crazy" I said eyes popped out. " Let's get out of here" he said all of a sudden. " Finally" I said sighing.

Well we walked to the car side by side, " you paralysed me cora, my toes are numb" he said. " Stop whining like a baby" I said chuckling. He opened the door for me, I got in he then went to the drivers side came back a few seconds later.

.

" I thought we were going home" I said upon seeing the car taking a different route from which we came by. " We are going home, but I want to check out something first" he said. " Ohh OK" I said then layed on my back on the couch, heels on the couch, knees up. I was checking my Twitters. he was loosening high tie and unbuttoning the first three buttons. It took us thirty minutes to reach club Paradisé. " Wait here, I'll be back" he said taking off his jacket. 10 minutes later he was not back so I got out and followed him, " ticket please" the bouncer said. " I'm with Salvatore" I said looking him in the eyes. " Miss we can't let you in without a ticket" he said pushing me slightly " Jason, you really don't want to do this with me, if Salvatore finds out that you touched me. I worry about what will actually happen to you. " I said a little bit irritated. " Let's do this, I'll take you to the boss, if it so happens that you're lying then..." He said warningly but I was not shaken. Well he walked me through the crowded club to some corridor he then opened the door, I found Salvatore counting some cash. " Sorry boss, is she with you" he asked. Salvatore looked at us for a while, " you can go

Jason" he said. " I've been waiting—..." Just lock the door behind you" he said sounding a little bit cold, I did as instructed and then walked up to him. " I've been waiting for you for so long" I said sitting down on the couch. " Couldn't you have waited a little more, you call 10 minutes long?" He asked. " I'm allergic to patience" I said standing up and sitting on his desk. He was so concentrated on counting the cash. " Let me help you" I said trying to pick up some notes, " don't" he said slapping my hand. " Ouch! What was that for" I asked getting off the table. I walked over to table just behind the door. It had a bottle of ice tea colored booze, I didn't know-whiskey maybe?. Anyways I poured myself a glass. I took a sip " shit" I exclaimed spitting it out quickly. I caught his attention, " what are you doing?" He asked walking towards me so angrily. " Do you know how expensive this whiskey is" he said taking the glass from my hand. " And why did you have to pour somuch" he snapped. " Sorry, I am so bored" I said sighing. He just stared at me unbelievably, " so childish" he said. " I said sorry, that was unnecessary" I said offended. " Whatever Cora, i think it's best that you go back in

the car" he said walking away. I followed him and held him from behind, " Am I troubleshooting you that much" I asked running my hands on his chest. " No you're not, you're actually really really really troubling me, you're a troublemaker" " he said not so kidding. " I'll take that as a compliment" I said sitting on the desk and crossing my legs over. " Couldn't you have asked someone else to do this, or ask for help. It's a lot of money" I said. But he didn't answer.

.

15 minutes later I was laying on my back on top of his desk talking alone since he wouldn't answer me. " There It is, I'm done, happy now?" He asked after finishing up with the last stack. " I'm way beyond that point, I'm tired. I think I going on sleep in here" I said yawning. He was busy packing the stakes inside the safety. " That's not such a bad idea, at least I'll be free from your crazy talks" he said. " Okay good night, make sure to lock the door on your way out, I'll call you if I need anything" I said closing my eyes. " Hey, what are you doing" I asked sitting upright instantly. He just got in-between my thighs. " Don't you want to

try out this table" he asked pushing my upper body back down and unveiling my thighs. " Huh?" I asked kinda puzzled. " Make-up sex-ish?" he asked slowly moving his hands from my thighs to my bare waist. " in here" I asked looking around. " Why not, I thought you were wild" he said moving his hands in circular motion on my waist, that was torture to my valley of fire. I didn't say anything to that. He moved my dress up to my waist, I took it all off. I was left in my white lacy undergarments. He kept on massaging my mound of valley of fire ontop on my underwear. He was moving he hands all over my body, he then slowly took off my underwear, separated my legs more widely actually my heels were on top of the table east and west. Mind you he was fully clothed while I was in my bra only. He started to kiss my inner thigh, that was tantalising. Just when I thought he would kiss me there, he came up to my tummy, teased my umbilical cord. He took off my bra with my help of course. I let him warship my body, he kissed me on the lips after pulling my ass a little bit on the edge of the desk. He nibbled my upper lip, I could feel his bulge poking my valley of fire. He went

down kissing my neck and then my already hard boobs, he kept on sucking on them like they'd produce some milk or something, he tongue playing on circular motion around my nipple while massaging my other one with his thumbs. He'd slightly bite them with his teeth drive me crazy, he kissed the gap between my boobs before going down and kissing my waist, he then went down with the wet kissed, kissed my mould and then finally the entrance of my valley of fire. Rubbing my soft bud with his thumb, I was already wet for him. He sucked my bud into his mouth held it in for some time making my back to arch in ecstasy, my toes curled up. I held his head just the, he kept on reviving the same action until I had an orgasm. Let's save other details for honey moon.

.

A week later in California

[6/3, 14:52] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's POV

We were all in the same aeroplane to California, the

whole crew. We were sitting side by side. My third time in an aeroplane, I was sitting next to my Joaquin. Well everyone else was sitting next to their personal persons. It had been 6 hours since we bordered. I was watching a movie, had headsets on my ears. We were holding hands zero well Salvatore was sleeping on my shoulder. I couldn't not fall asleep, it was around 00:00am. I was still kind of scared of the flight, there was lightning outside It's like you're screaming, and no one can hear.

.

Amanda's pov

To get going with Michael I had to lie to my parents and I involved Cora in it. All they knew was that we were going to Durban South on vacation, we needed a breather after those stressful examinations. That's how I ended up in the aeroplane to California, I could have done things differently. Like introducing him to my parents in that way i wouldn't have to lie. I was just scared they might not like him or even accept him, I really didn't need that at that stage of my life.

Plus things with us weren't so certain, with that drama his mother pulled I had my doubts. Another thing was that I wasn't sure if my parents would even approve of their little girl dating, an older police man for that matter. One thing I was sure about was the fact that I loved Michael, I still do. He planted a smile on my face, never gave me a reason to complain. It had been 5 months of us dating and things were sailing smoothly. I was leaning on his shoulder, we were having a slight conversation. Morning conversations with your partner are the best, they bring out the spark

.

Cora's POV

We arrived around 6am, I was feeling so damn sleepy. He had to wake me up when the flight was landing. Two limos were already waiting for us, we got inside. Limo 1. Amanda, Michael, sibusisiwe(siwe), Kevin, Siboniso, Siwelile(Siwe), Salvatore and I

Limo2. Mbutho, Priyanka, Rajesh, Divya, Tiaxiang

and Esihle the lonely pairs, Sandile and his wife who I was seeing for the second time. Her name is Buhle. I also realized we had two Siwe's in the circle of friends. The kids were left at Salvatore's house because it was much bigger, each kid came with it nanny. The security was increased. " I should have just opted for PJs, wearing this tight dress was a big mistake of my life" I said whining, I snuggled up to Salvatore's shoulder. " Uyalunga" siwe said. I really wasn't comfortable in that dress. " I need a long warm bath, my body is so sore" Amanda said, she was sleepy as much as I was. " Is there a spare room where we're going" I asked. " No, it was even had finding a house which could fit us all" Salvatore said. " Ohh" I said yawning. " Why do you ask Cora, is there trouble in paradise" Michael asked giggling. " Why would you say that, I was just asking. I could use a break from being poked by his GC" I said. " What's that?" Amanda asked curiously. " It's his gian—..." Don't even think about, I swear you'd sleep outside tonight. You're busy complaining about the dress I swear you'd be complaining about the mosquitoes later on" Salvatore said fastly and warningly. I

couldn't help but laugh until my tummy hurts. " You're making us look like morons now, care to share the joke?" Siboniso said . " Baby w, should I tell them or you'd do the honors..." Hehe somebody is tasting my patients, go ahead and you'll feel the taste of my hand today. You might as well call the ambulance" he said solemnly. " Mxm some people lost their sense of humour in the airport" I said sarcastically and rolling my eyes. Well the car parking Infront of this enormously splendid, California beach house. It was so huge, Pam trees all around. I could hear the waves hitting the shore from where I was standing, the cold sea breeze hit my bare arms and legs as I got out of the car. The sun was shining so brightly, summer colors all around. The house was painted in white, the roof top red in colour. " Wow" I couldn't help but exclaim. " I could live here" I screamed twirling around. " Has she gone crazy?, Some of us have headaches due to the plane" Divya asked coming near our car. " You can say that again, I've gone crazy. I've fallen in love with this place" I said loudly. " It's funny how I never heard those words, how lucky is California. Unlucky me" I

heard Salvatore say as he was getting our bags from the boot. " I need to go and take a shower and then explore this beauty" I said " my friend is inlove people" Amanda said giggling i walked inside the house. " Welcome ma'am" I heard two voices say as I walked in. " Ohh, who are you?" I asked confused. " The house keepers, we will be serving you through out the whole weeks." The woman said. " Ohh God, heaven on earth. Am I dead yet." I asked dramatically holding my chest. They just smiled. I went up to check out the rooms. More like to choose the one with the perfect view first. " I've found my room" I screamed throwing myself on bed. White everything, with a touch of baby blue. At the back of the house, sea view. I could see the see from the balcony. Huge balcony door by the way. The sunlight graced the house perfectly. I checked the bathroom, jacuzzi?. Huge bathroom almost all white. Must've been the main bedroom. I left my purand phone on the bed and walked downstairs. " I need to take a bath as in now" I said retrieving my suitcase from Salvatore who just shook his head and smiled. The ladies were ascending up the staircases with their bags the boys

having a good conversation outside , my bag was heavy as fuck. I was huffing and puffing my the time I reached the last step. " Don't even think about it" I said upon seeing devyanka standing other doorway of the room I've choosen. " You're so cunning, this room is the biggest." She said. " Well those are the sweet fruits of my hard work" I said walking inside. " Working hard?" She asked. " Duh, I ran like a crazy chicken. What did you say again, crazy?." I said spitefully. " You're you're so argh..." She said then walked away drama queen. I might have acted like a headless chicken but my body still said it needed to rest. I found myself crawling to bed just like that I dozed off.

.

Salvatore's POV

We all went our separate rooms after talking outside, I found Cora hugging a white pillow. He ass was almost showing, that dress did no justice to my assets. I covered her up with a shawl, her lips were pouted. Her eye balls kept on moving under the eyes lids due to the sun that was hitting her skin. I closed

the blindfolds, she was on crazy hell if a woman. And her mouth oh her mouth had no filter at all. Who would have thought that Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore would fall deeply inlove with such an insane girl. She's quite the opposite of a woman i had in mind for myself. The type of womi thought I wanted and needed, the ideal woman we all create in our minds. She had a just a few spots of what I would've described as an ideal woman for myself a few months ago if I was asked. Or should I say 1year and 6 months ago, yeah that was how much time we've spent together. She was wild, lively, insanely talkative and friendly and crazy sometimes OK most of the times. But she was also down to earth if needed be, she was loving, generous and mostly had an amazing heart I've ever seen. Yes sometimes she'd annoy the hell out of me, drive me crazy, nag me. But sge was the best I could have asked for, just perfect. The word perfect didn't exist to me until I met her. I took off my shoes and fell asleep next to her, the love of my life.

You almost feel ashamed
That someone could be that important
That without them, you feel like nothing
No one will ever understand how much it hurts
You feel hopeless; like nothing can save you
And when it's over, and it's gone
You almost wish that you could have all that bad
stuff back
So that you could have the good
Yellow diamonds in the light
Now we're standing side by side
As your shadow crosses mine
What it takes to come alive
It's the way I'm feeling I just can't deny
But I've gotta let it go
We found love in a hopeless place
We found love in a hopeless place

We found love in a hopeless place

We found love in a hopeless place

Shine a light through an open door

Love and life I will divide

Turn away 'cause I need you more

Feel the heartbeat in my mind

It's the way I'm feeling I just can't deny

But I've gotta let it go

We found love in a hopeless place

We found love in a hopeless place

We found love in a hopeless place

We found love in a hopeless place

Yellow diamonds in the light

Now we're standing side by side

As your shadow crosses mine (mine, mine, mine)

We found love in a hopeless place

We found love in a hopeless place

We found love in a hopeless place

We found love in a hopeless place

We found love in a hopeless place

We found love in a hopeless place

[6/3, 14:52] Lynne: Page 49

Cora's POV(unedited)

I woke up around 13:30 in the afternoon, Salvatore was not around. I took a shower ,wiped and moisturised my body. I wore my white short jumpsuit and panties only. I didn't bother to fix my hair or apply makeup, I then took my cellphone. I was walking downstairs when I heard the voices of the girls in the sitting room. " I mean who does she think she is, just because she's dating Salvatore that doesn't mean—...I heard Divya say "Excuse me,are you by any chance talking about me" I asked walking towards them. " It's not what you think Cora, Diva here was just saying—esihle said but was cut short by Divya. " Hello, I'm still alive I can talk for myself... it's good that you came. I didn't like what you did, the car arrangements and the room. You're

acting so cleverer and sly. You get to choose the biggest room and you get to decide who rides with whom. Who the hell are you to decide for us, you might be dating Salvatore but our husbands also paid for this trip" she said walking towards me, I was still processing the bomb . " The car riding arrangements?" I asked frowning. " Yes we know, we heard. Little princess, you got to decide the people you rode with—..." Stop it right there, I didn't really chose the people I was with in the car, it was just a WhatsApp conversation that happened days ago, we cajole about the whole thing. We got into the same car because we click and we're all young not that you guys are ol—" hold it right there girlie, young and what not. Why didn't you send Salvatore to ride with us if that was the case, if the case was the problem. Just because you're dating Salvatore that doesn't mean that we have to suck up to your sly deeds, it doesn't mean that we have to prai—" You know what I'm sorry, I'm sorry for offending you ma'am. And the bedroom, you can have it. Even if Salvatore and I were to sleep on the streets we'd still be happy and we love each other I don't know why me dating

him has to be included in this conversation. Suck up to that" I said angrily. " Oh poor child" she said giggling. " You think that Salvatore loves you, he's probably waiting patiently for his next meal to pass by, like a tiger. And you've only been dating for like what?, Four five months. Well tell you what, I've known him for years, he's probably using you. He's showing you good life and you're actually starting to believe that you're inlove get over your illusion. He's 20 years older than you for crying out loud" she said harshly. " You have serious issues ma'am, look at you arguing with a smaller child. Lifeless old hag...get a life, whatever issues you have with your husband fix them and stop harassing me. I see what you're trying to do, you're trying to steer doubts in my mind. It's not working, I'm over that stage ma'am. I trust our love, let me give you a free advice just get laid. You're sexual starving. You look like a wrinkled pussy and it's not attractive" I said angrily. She looked at me unbelievably, everyone was gagging behind her. I was never ready for the thunder slap that I received next. But I gave it back with an interest of 15%. That's when the ladies separated us,

but she was just unholdable. She was trying to hit me again. " You're so pathetic, I'm out of here" . I said, noticed Amanda on the staircases then walked out of the house to the beach.

.

Narrated

.

" How dare she?, She's going to pay for this" Divya said hysterically crying. she had a box of tissues next to her on the couch. Priya was trying to calm her down. " I'm not the kind of girl to sugar coat a lie and bullshit. She might be my brother's girlfriend and this may seem like I'm being biased but im just going to speak anyways .what you said was too much, it was horribly wrong. Be true to yourself, if you walked upstairs and saw that spacious room wouldn't you have chosen it?. Sorry for this but I'm starting to think that you're jealous of her, I feel that the issue is way beyond these petty issues you're complaining about. Whatever issues you have with her just fix them. I hate hostile environments." Esihle

said her mind and then left. " I hate to admit it but she's right" Priya said sighing. " Yeah" both siwes agreed nodding. " She's right?, Who's side are you on. Her's or my side?. I thought we were friends, I thought you were my friends?" She asked eyes popped out in disbelief. " I'm not taking anybody's side, I'm just simply siding with the truth, what's right" siwe k said. " Look Diva babe, we're your friends. That's why we're here, to correct you when you go wrong. Try to find away to fix things between you and Cora. That's all" Priya said. " If you are siding with her then it's fine, you can all go to hell" Divya said then stormed upstairs. " Give us the directions to hell babes or maybe a car with a GPS" Buhle said. " Really, i don't have time to nurse old woman's feelings, I left my drama kids at home for crying out loud" she added typing something on her phone. " I thought you were a mute" Priya said angrily walking upstairs too. " Really?" Siwes asked In unision and then laughed out loud.

.

Amanda's pov

.

Well I was woken up by the noise, walked downstairs in a hurry. And found the most aspiring drama of all time transpiring in the sitting. Divya was insulting my girlfriend, I was about to invade when cora talked back. Heavens can also testify, I was so proud of her. My insides were like go go go go go girlfriend go girlfriend. And then the thunder slap and then the double thunder slap. Anyways I walked back upstairs when she walked out the back door. My tummy was growling and barking up like a mad dog. I was hellish starving, I took a quick shower then wore my long blue dress. Went downstairs, there was no more drama. " Guys What's for dinner. I'm starving" I said holding my tummy. " Actually the question should be like ' what's for brunch ' just saying" buhle said tapping on her phone. She was always on her phone that one. " There nothing in the refrigerator, the boys have gone out to shop for groceries. They've been gone for years" siwe s said. " How many years" i asked chuckling. " It feels like a thousand years, I might be wrong though maybe it's just a hundred

years, maybe a decade" Buhle said. " You should consider being a stand up comedian, very funny" I said sarcastically. " Michael is so dead, he took me out of my porch country only for him to starve me to death in this foreign country. Speak of the devil and he shall appear. The guys walked in with a lots of plastic bags, like really a lot. " Michael Sullivan I'm starving" I said out loud. All the guys tilted their heads and looked at him. And then they bursted into laughter. " I've got you Chinese food" he said. " Really?" Mbuto asked and they laughed even more. " Care to share the joke" Priya said walking downstairs. " It's just that we didn't really consider buying you anything fast, if it wasn't for chef Salvatore here. You'd probably be cooking with empty stomach's right now" Mbuto explained. " Wow, selfish much?" I asked unbelievably. " Salvatore could we have a talk....in private?" I asked walking towards the nearest room. He followed me ant then closed the door.

.

.

Cora's POV

.

I'd been sitting on the beach sand for two hours OK maybe three. Her words running through my head, I was staring into space. There were not so many people in the beach, it was private beach I guessed. For the houses on the beach line. My nostrils caught his Cologne, without even looking at him I knew it was him. He sat down next to me, folded his legs like I was. " Hey" he said taking my hands into his. I nodded, " let's go inside, there's food. You must be hungry" he said. " Can I be left alone for a while" I asked looking anywhere but him. " What's going on?, Amanda told me that you and devyanka had a fight" he said. " A person can not even get her own personal space here, why don't you go and ask your source and leave me alone" I said walking away from him. He followed me still, " do you remember that song we danced to in the club, your favourite song.?" He asked out of nowhere " there's a situation here and you're busy asking me about useless songs" I said unbelievably. " What situation?, When we're not

in that stage to talk about it then there's no situation. Anyways I've been listening to it for a while now and I've even watched the video. Caught some dance moves , do you want to see" he asked. I was looking into his eyes frowning. " Unbelievable" I said shaking my head and continued with walking. He played it anyways. He was singing along and dancing to it not so hardly though just a move of his shoulders but I was embarrassed by even that. " Salvatore stop it, you're embarrassing yourself, this is crazy" I said then walked away but he held my hand and pulled me back to him. " Come on sing with me" he said, the song was on repeat. " Just go away people are watching" I said sighing heavily. " Everybody is minding their own business, come on Just once" he said. " Just once and you'll leave me alone after that, deal?" I asked. " Deal sealed" he said. [Him: I heard about you

You heard about me?

Haha, yeah, Wal, haha

Me: cause I had some issues

Him: Wal haha back at yah, bad girl

Me: is it bad that I never made love

No I never did...." Come you dance a bit" he said. " This is crazy" I said shaking my head. " Come on" he said holding both my hands.

Me: but I sure know how to fuck a bit

I'll be your bad girl, I'll prove it to you

Him: bad girls ain't no good, and good girls ain't no fun

Me: and the bad girls want really nigga

Him: yeah cause really nigga just want—]

" This is crazy" I said laughing out loud, I couldn't take it anymore. I laughed until my tummy hurts, he was just giggling. " What?, I'm trying to adapt here. You should salute a nigga for trying" he said so blackish . " You should have seen yourself, it's bad really bad" I said wiping off my tears. " You should laugh more it suits you" he said looking at me

seriously. He then walked up to me and gave me a peck on the lips, " are you ready to talk now" he asked and I told him everything. " Amanda told me you smackdown the poor woman" he said. " She started it" I said defensively. " Let's go back inside" he said. " Piggyback?" I asked. " You're so cunning" he said turning his back on me I got on it. " I've been insulted enough, not You too" I said chuckling.

.

Narrated

.

" Can I come in" Tiaxiang asked standing outside Esihle's door. " Sure" she said after looking at him. She was lying on her tummy reading a novel. " What are you reading" he asked. She showed him the cover of the book. " Are you always like this?" He asked sitting down on her bed. " Like what" she asked sitting upright. " So uptight and serious?" He asked she frowned. " Me?, Serious?. Really. Even if I'm uptight, how is it any of your business. " She asked burning up. " Chill I was just joking" he said

chuckling. " Well the problem might be that I don't understand Chinese, I don't speak Chinese. Close the door on your way out" she said seriously pissed off.

He walked out chuckling. " For your information, I'm Korean not Chinese." He said coming back. " That's six and Nine to me, so common. You should consider getting a haircut, you look like a woman" she said sarcastically. " I like you already" he said smiling and walking out.

.

Meanwhile...

.

" Don't, don't you dare touch me" Devyanka shouted at Rajesh.

" Geez, what's wrong with you. I thought we've been through this. I apologized already, what else do you want me to do. Get water from the moon" he asked angrily. " Don't shout at me, don't. You have no right, you destroyed our peaceful lives. Didn't you for once think of our children?" She asked hysterically crying.

" I'm sorry D, I'm sorry...it was a mistake, a big mistake. I'll live to regret, I'm sorry. Please don't cry" he begged holding her tightly " I'm miserable because of your doings, you should've heard the things I said to that poor girl. I'm even ashamed to face her, how do I even begin to ask for her forgiveness... you've turned me into this envious woman I've never seen" she said crying out loud. " I'm sorry D" that's all he could come up with. Weak sorries which couldn't undo the misdeeds.

.

The vacation will be mostly narrated . comment my personal people

The vacation will be most narrated

[6/10, 13:19] Lynne: Page 50

Cora's POV

.

Things are not always as they seem to appear, our eyes can sometimes deceive us. A smile is not

always a sign of happiness and joy, so are the tears. The hard shell doesn't mean the insides are as hard as it is, And so goes the weak cover. Yesterday Salvatore and I went back to the house, there was no sign of devyanka. Infact I didn't see her the whole day after our fight. We went to sleep early, we decided to start having fun the next day. I opened up my eyes and found Salvatore staring at me, " hey" I said smiling. " Good morning my heart beat" he said removing the strands of hair from my face. " I need to go to the bathroom" I said getting out of bed, I brushed my teeth and washed my face and then came back to bed." I thought you were going to take a shower" he asked, he had already taken a bath. " Nah, I want to stay in bed the whole day" I said getting undercovers. The weather was just perfect for a walk outside, it was warm. " Should I get you breakfast?" He asked . " No now...but there's one thing you can do for me" I said smiling. " What might that be?" he asked frowning. " Take off those sleeper, get undercovers and hold me tightly" I said with a lipsealed smile. " That sounds like fun" he said doing just that, " are you sure you don't want me to take off

my clothes along" he asked kiddingly, I shook my head and smiled. He had his arm around me, I was leaning on his warm chest, one hand behind him. " You kept on tossing and turning last night, are you okay?" He asked sounding so worried. " I'm fine, it was just one of those bad dreams about home. What's are you guys planning to do today?" I asked diverting the topic. " We planned on going down to the beach, playing some volleyball or we could just go to the tennis courts and then hit the club tonight" he said. " I think I'll have to pass, I want to stay in here. With you if that was possible but I can't hold you back. You go and have fun" I said sighing softly. " What's wrong, are you still upset about yesterday's fight?" he asked tilting my head so that I can look into his eyes. " I don't know, I feel numb. There's no emotion inside me. I don't know how to explain this but I don't feel angry, sad,upset nor do I feel happy or excited or—..." I get it, it happens sometimes. I have an idea, how about we FaceTime Lore maybe that would cheer you up a bit" he said. " He's not Lore to you, he's Enzo. You always call him that, he's my Lore" I said. " OK, let's call Lorenzo then" he said

avoiding the argument I was about to start. Anyways we FaceTime with him with the help of the nanny, "feeling better now?" He asked after we hung up. "A bit, he's so big now" I said. "It's only been two days since we left and he's suddenly big, woman" he said Sha his head. "Are you in any way insult my feminine side" I asked looking him straight in the eyes. "What would you like to have for breakfast" he asked, I just chuckled. "I'm not hungry besides there's a cook. Breakfast is probably ready" i said. "Is it crime to spoil my pretty wife?" He asked. "Wife?, I see no ring on it" I said flashing my hand. "I don't believe that to be somebody's wife you need to a ring on it" he said. "Well I do. We live in two different planets, our opinions are so different from each other. I said east and you say West" I said seriously. "What makes you say that?" He asked. "You like black and I like white color" I said. "That's why you like wearing that white long dress of yours" he said chuckling. "What?" I asked. "It looks weird on you, it makes you look...I don't know, more mature?" He said smiling. "I'll take that as a compliment, even though you're mocking me" I said. "By the way black and white compliment

each other perfectly, opposites attract" he said. " And then you go ahead and say I always have an answer to everything" I said slowly. " And who's mocking who" he asked. " What's the passcode to unlock your phone" I asked retrieving his phone from his hand. " That's a no go area" he said. " Why, if I remember correctly you said you'd share everything with me." I said. " Except my phone's passcode. " He said seriously. " Come on" I said. " No, you don't get to have my passcode. I don't have yours, so why do you want mine?" He asked, it was getting hot in there. " My phone is always accessible, there's no passing code to it. You can check it out, come on give me the passcode" I said solemnly. " I am going to have breakfast, I'll be back" he said getting out of bed. " Where are you going, I want the passcode" I said, he walked out the door. I laughed my ass out, he looked so flashed shame.

.

I fell asleep tapping on my phone, " girlfriend, Wake up" I was woken up by the loud Amanda. I set upright, rubbing my eyes. " Go a have a quick shower, we're

going to the beach" Esihle said, they were all in my room except for devyanka. " What are you guys doing here?" I asked frowning. " Hurry up Cora, we don't have the whole day" Priya said pulling my covers away. I was wearing white panties and a vest. " Guys, I don't want to go" I said shaking my body in annoyance. " We didn't come all the way from SA only for you to turn into a bed potato" siwe s said. " If I remember correctly it's a couch potato, not a bed potato. There's nothing like that, it doesn't apply in this situation" Buhle said entering the room. Tapping into her phone, I giggled a bit and then went to the bathroom. " Damn, that ass. No wonder Salvatore is addicted to you" siwe s exclaimed. " Really now?" I asked looking back and rolling my eyes. They just laughed, anyway I took a record breaking shower. I got out and walked to the closet with a towel wrapped around my body. I moisturized my body and wore bum shorts and a vest and the my strapped sandals. " I'm done" I said getting out of the bathroom. We were all wearing short, the difference was in the shortness and designs. " Let's go" they said almost in unision. I took my phone and we went

downstairs. Salvatore and the boys were not around. " Where are the guys" I asked frowning. " On the beach, have something to eat and then we can go" Amanda said. " I have a better idea" I said walking in the kitchen.

.

When we got to the beach the guys were really playing volleyball. I spread down the small shawl I was carrying and put the basket of breakfast I was on it. The girls had joined the guys. I sat down, took out my breakfast and spread it out. I had packed enough just Incase someone wanted some. I started eating while watching them play. They were so noise and having fun. " Can I sit here" I heard her ask. Devyanka, I looked up at her. " I just want to talk" she added, I nodded. She sat down and sighed heavily, she looked so worn out and stressed. " I'm sorry" she said looking at me. " I'm sorry for what I said yesterday. I didn't mean to... it's just that—..." She couldn't finish. " I shouldn't have said those things, I didn't mean to—..." I've already heard that" I said cutting her off. I was still upset, " my husband

cheated on me..." She said sounding so broken. " We were so happy, for years we lived in peaceful harmony. That's not even the problem, he infected me with HIV... And now" she said, she couldn't take it anymore. I saw tears forming in her eyes. She tried to blow them dry using her hands. " Ohh Divya, I'm sorry. I'm so sorry. You must be debated" I said almost in tears myself. " The worst part is that I'm pregnant, my child might have caught the disease" she said, I pulled her in for a hug. " I've cried myself to sleep, I think I hate my husband. I hate my husband Cora." she said crying. " Don't say that, you don't mean that. I've seen you guys, you guys love each other. Don't say that" I said crying, that's just how I was, I had no idea how to comfort someone without crying myself. We stayed in the same position for a while. She pulled out, wiped off her tears, " he has lowered my self-esteem, where did I lack. I know that my cooking skills are miserable but I tried, I did everything right. I bore him children, left my career so that I could be a better wife and a good mother to our children. But still that wasn't enough, he went out and looked for someone much younger

than me, fresher and more sophisticated and glamorous." She said with so much bitterness and resentment towards her husband. " Tell me, do i look that bad, has my ass fallen down that much, what about my breasts—..." Stop it okay, stop looking down on yourself. You're perfect, you're beautiful and young. He's stupid if he doesn't see that. Stop criticizing yourself. You're just fine" I said a little bit louder than I intended to. I reminded me of the day when I asked Joaquin if my pussy wasn't tight enough for him. We all suffer from insecurities but some are extreme. " I felt so jealous of you, the way Salvatore looks at you. The way you're so happy, the way you're so inlove. Young and lively, pretty. My husband hasn't looked at me like that for almost a year now. We hardly get intimate, I can't remember the last time he took me out on a date" she said smiling sadly. " Salvatore and I ain't that perfect, we both have our share of sorrows and problems. Our problems are probably bigger than yours, at the age of 19 I'm somebody's stepmother, he never knew a mother's love, I don't have a family. There's a lot actually but we look beyond that and find a reason to

smile and laugh. Life is not a bed of roses Divya but that doesn't mean we have to be sad. I'm sure you guys will pass through this, all shall be well as long as you have each other's backs" I said. " You're such a kind person...after all what I've said to you, you're giving me such an advice, a shoulder to cry on" she said gagging unbelievably. I just smiled, " I thought you guys were happy in your marriage. You seemed so happy" I said in a questioning manner. " I tried to smile and forgive. I caught him 3weeks ago, we went for a check up. We both tested positive for HIV. He has been sleeping with her for the whole years, he had the nerve to come back from work, look me in the eyes and tell me he loves me." She said angrily. " Does he know that you're expecting?" I asked touching her flat tummy. She shook her head no. " I think it's best that you tell him and go for a couple's counseling" I suggested. " I don't think I want to keep this baby" she said looking down. " A baby in a blessing from God, who knows it might keep your marriage intact. I'm not going to tell you to keep him or whatever but a baby is a blessing from above" I said smiling. " I have three kids already" she said

chuckling. " Damn I'd kill to have such a big family" I said kiddingly. " How old are you again" she asked her eyes decreased. " 19" I said smiling. " You don't sound 19, you are so mature to be 19" she said seriously. " 19 is old enough for some kids, let's just say circumstances forced me to grow up fast" I said faking a smile. " There's still some childishness behavior in you though. Your insanity says it all" she said smiling. " Why does everybody calls me insane" I asked giggling. " That's because you're" she said giggling along. "By the way, Salvatore is 15years older than me not 20" I said. She just laughed, " I am so sorry for the insults, you guys are perfect for each other. To tell you the truth I've never seen him this happy, even with his ex wife" she whispered the last part. I couldn't help but laugh. " What are you guys laughing about?" Her husband asked walking towards us. " Woman's stuff " I said smiling. " I'll leave you guys to talk" I said standing up.i walked towards the others who were playing, " I'll be Rajesh's substitute" I said joining the guys. " Hey come back here, girls one side, boys one side. We're already short." Amanda screamed at me. " Okay" I

said walking to their side. We were playing when all of a sudden Salvatore walked up to our side. " Dude what are you doing, we're going to lose here" Mbutho screamed. " I'll lose her" he said walking towards me. He took off the white shirt that he was wearing and tied it around my waist. " What are you doing?" I asked frowning. " Yeah, you look better now. Let's play" he said then walked to their side. " My guy is covering his assets" mbutho said laughing. I just shook my head in disbelief and we continued playing. " I'm out guys, I'm too old for this" Priya said, she was a little bit chubby so..." Come on baby" Mbutho said. " No, I can't breath" she said holding her chest. " I'm out" she said walking away. " Let's Carry on" Salvatore said. " We can't Carry on, it's 5-6 . One of you must get out" Esihle said. " I'm out " Tiaxiang said. " No, I'm out. I'm too old for this" Sandile said. " No bro, the China man will get out, his long hair might get ruined" Esihle said. " Whoa!" Siboniso exclaimed and laughed. " The last person who happened to talk about his hair like that is six feet underground" Kevin said solemnly. Tiaxiang's jaws were clenched. " You're kidding right?" Esihle asked

chuckling but the guys were serious. " You're not?, Ohh. I'm going back to the house" Esihle said dropping the ball. " I guess the game is over" I said picking up the ball. " I'm going for to swim" Siboniso said taking off his shirt and they joined him except for Salvatore and Tiaxiang who walked away. Salvatore walked towards me.

.

Narrated

.

Esihle took a bath to get rid of the soil in her body. She got out of the shower and wrapped a towel around her skinny body. She took another towel and used it to dry her short curly natural hair. She was shocked to see Tiaxiang standing in the centre of her room, " you?, What are you doing here" she asked swallowing the lump in her throat. He walked up to her, it's like her feet were glued to the floor. Her mind told her to run for her life but her feet couldn't carry her. " Are you here to kill me... Please don't kill me" she pleaded eyes closed. " Give me one reason why I

shouldn't" he said. Put his hands on her shoulders. No man was allowed to touch her like that, no man has ever dared to. At university they called her the dragonzilla. She opened up her eyes, they were of the same height. Looking into his eyes could not be avoided in anyway possible. " Well...I didn't know that you hated it, how would I have known?. You didn't tell me" she said, her throat felt so dry. " Are we friends that I should have let you know" he asked. Touching her bare hips, wait bare hips. She looked at her body and the towel was dropped down.

"Wenzani?" She asked eyes popped out. He put his thumb on her lips. Kissed her, she was standing like a statue, so frozen. He was caressing her whole body, that was all new to her. It felt so foreign but good. " Aren't you going to tell me?" He asked . " What..wh—" her heart was pounding. She feared that it might fail her. The next thing she knew she was on the bed. Him on top of her, infact in-between her thighs doing wonders. He came back up to kiss her. " This isn't right, stop. Get off me" he said. " Are you sure?" he asked looking into her eyes. She shook her head no, she wasn't sure but a tear escaped her eyes.

He looked at her for a long time and then got off her. She set up right, got out of bed and went to the bathroom. Her knees were shaking, she felt a thick wet liquid in between her thighs. She took another shower.

.

Meanwhile...

.

" That was so embarrassing, you are so damn controlling sometimes" Cora saupsey about Salvatore's earlier deed. " Sorry" he said, " but you were too exposed. And I don't like that." He said. " Geez,This short isn't that short" she exclaimed. " Really?, Your ass is all out there" he said. " What are you talking about, this short is long enough" she asked frustrated. " Let's do this, let me take a pic and you'll see what I am talking about" he said and they did just that. " Okay maybe you are right" she said after seeing the pics. " But don't do that againi. It ain't cool" she said as they were walking on the sea shore. " Mmh, you almost grinded me, chopped me,

fried me into pieces. And that's all you're going to say" he asked . " Okay sorry for almost frying,grinding and chopping you" she said sighing heavily. " I might just accept that cold apology if it comes along with a kiss" he said. She stood Infront of him, put her hand around his neck and pulled her head down gave him a peck on the lips. " Is that going to do?" She asked. " This will do" he said bending over and kissing her deeply, the kiss got so hitted that it left both of them breathless. " Let's go inside" he said looking down at her. She nodded weakly.

.

" Guys, we're going to have a baby" Rajesh announced around the table as they were having dinner around 6pm. " Raj, I thought we were going to tell them after two months or so" Divya complained. " Sorry baby, I couldn't hold it in any longer" he said. " Congratulations guys" Priya said. Congratulations were in order. " I think we should cancel the club plan, I'm tired" Michael said. " Yeah... Let's just stay in doors. We can play some games" Kevin suggested. "

That sounds like fun" Buhle said. Esihle was quite around the table.... " The last time we played this game I slept on the couch" Salvatore said. " I'm not playing this" he added. " Come on, don't be a cow" the guys said. " Okay, fine. Besides I have no secret up my sleeve this time" he said joining them on the circle they have formed. There was a bottle in the middle. The time was 7pm and they all had showered and wore their sleeping clothes. "So how does this work" Sandile asked. " You spin the bottle and whoever it points will have to answer your question truthfully. If it points back to the one who skinned it there'd say a never have I ever situation." Kevin answered. " Sounds dangerous, let the games begin" Amanda said. " In the name of the holy spirit, the father and son." Cora said shortly. They all giggled. " I'll go first" Buhle said, she spinned the bottle and it pointed at Priya. Mmh, couldn't it be my husband" she said disheartened. " Mhh, how did you and your husband meet?" She asked thoughtfully. " We met at the office, I was his PA" she answered shortly. Amanda spinned the bottle and it pointed at Cora. " Interesting" siwe k said smiling. " I've always

been wondering. You never talked about your aunt who lives overseas. What happened to her?" She asked seriously. Cora was never ready for that. " I lied, I made her up. She never existed. I wanted people to get off my back" she answered truthfully. " So you lied to me?" Amanda asked. " For me to answer that you'll have to spin the bottle" Cora said, Amanda was left gagging unbelievably. " My turn?" Siboniso said. He spun it and it pointed at Sandile. " This is my only chance to ask you this, why did you resent Alonzo in the beginning. I can't remember you guys getting along without me being the connecting string" he asked. " I'll have to pass on that" Sandile said clearing out his throat. " No, I also want to know this" Salvatore said a little bit louder. " Okay, you asked for it. Your father took away my mother for ten years. I never knew a mother's love, she'd always fight with my father whenever she was home. Saying that your dad was a way better man than my father could ever be. I used to listen to it all and then she disappeared a whole year, it was just me and my dad. And another thing, you being a gangster, I have a family to take care of. I don't want any shade people

around my family, at least I didn't at first until I got to know you. I'm learning to love and accept you like a brother" he answered. " Wow, I was the one without a mother for the past years, still am but you're complaining about a mother's love" Salvatore said unbelievably. " Okay, my turn" Kevin said. And it pointed at his wife. " Have you ever cheated on me" he asked. " What?, What rubbish is this" siwe asked eyes popped out. " Answer my question please" he asked. " Of course not, I've never, I'd never" she said. " Good because i don't want to kill anyone" he said in relief. " My turn, Cora said and it pointed at Rajesh. " Do you still love your wife?" She asked. He frowned, " of course I still love my wife dearly. I love her" he answered shortly. " Good" Cora said sighing heavily. " My turn Esihle said and it pointed at Priya. " How do you manage to look so beautiful" she asked, everyone just smiled it was such a sweet question after such tough ones. " That's easy, I always smile, apply makeup, dress up. It's a simple recipe" she said chuckling casually. " My turn" Priya said. She spinned it and it pointed at Buhle.

" What keeps you on your phone always?" She asked.

" Yeah I also want to know" Amanda said. "

WhatsApp, Facebook and Instagram" she answered.

" No that's not a right answer" Priya said. " Yeah, we

want to know the main reason" Esihle said. "Excuse

me, I've already answered your question. Next" she

said. Tiaxiang spinned the bottle and it pointed at

Esihle. " Are you still a virgin?" He asked. " That's

personal, I'm not answering that" she said upset. "

You have to, we all are. There's nothing personal

about this question, if you're a virgin, you're a virgin.

If you're not that's just it" Buhle said spitefully. " Yes,

I'm still a virgin. Happy?" She asked sarcastically and

angry. " Nah, it is not tha—..." Okay that's it, next

person please" Salvatore said cutting him off.

- " are you pregnant?" Siwe k asked Amanda after spinning the bottle

- " what?, No. Hell no" she answered laughing

- "who do you chat with on all the social networks you mentioned" Sandile asked his wife.

- " my friends from back home, onamile, kholiwe. I

can't mention them all really" she answered swallowing hard.

- "mmh" that's all he said.

- " when are you getting married. " Salvatore asked siwe s, Sandile's fiancé.

- "I don't, when we have enough money. You should ask him really" she said chuckling.

- " what happened to your family" Mbutho asked referring to Cora.

- " ohhk, this game was such a bad idea. I'm not going to answer that" Cora said, face flashed.

- " no, I want to know. I need an answer to that" he insisted.

- " mbutho my man, that's not a good question. How about you ask another one—...

- " it's okay, I'll answer that... it's cool. my mother died giving birth to me and my father lives in Durban" she answered after taking a deep breath.

" This game is fucked up" I'm out of here. Amanda said. " If you have somethings to hide then you'd

leave" Michael said looking anywhere but her. " Wow, okay. Let's play the, infact I think the bottle should be removed. If anyone feels like asking, they should ask directly. " Amanda, calm down" Cora said. " You don't get to tell to calm down. I thought I knew you buy you turned out to be a stranger." She said angrily. " Ohh wow" Cora exclaimed. " Michael, why did you stop visiting your parents?" Amanda asked. " Im not going to answer that" Michael said. " Why, is it some dark secret. You're scared to share." She asked, more like snapped. " This is crazy, I'm going to bed. I have a lot of secrets I'm not ready to share. If God wanted us to be transparent to each other then he would have created us that way. It's best if we stop this before it ruins our relationships" Cora said standing up and the others followed.

[6/10, 13:20] Lynne: Page 50

Amanda's POV

.

Well after yesterday's stupid game and my crazy behavior I went to bed.i was still angry at Michael for

what he said, he went out of line. Questioning my royalty like, that to Infront of his friends. He was supposed to have my back. I was angry at Cora for all the lies, I was angry at myself for bursting out like that, I didn't see Michael come to bed last night. He got out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around his waist. I watched his every move, he was angry. He had every right, " I'm sorry for what I said last night" I said looking at him but he just walked in to the closet. I followed him, " ain't you going to say anything, look I'm not going to trying and justify what I did but what you asked me was out of the line. I did the worst, I'm sorry. " I said but he continued with wearing his clothes. " If you do not want to forgive me, it's okay I understand. Your family issues may be deeper than I thought. Once again I am sorry" I said then left the closet, he followed me. " So that's just it, you're are just going to—...he didn't finish that, I felt like puking, I rushed to the bathroom. I puked into the toilet seat. It kept on coming. " Are you okay?" He asked holding my hair. I stood up after some time and washed my mouth with water. " I'm fine" I said looking myself in the mirror, nothing was

fine. I wasn't feeling fine, his Cologne didn't smell so good. " I'm sorry Michael" I said feeling so emotional. " It's fine, I started it. I was wrong I shouldn't have questioned your royalty. You had every reason to be angry. Im sorry" he said, and then I went in for a hug.

.

Narrated.

.

Cora was sitting Infront of the dressing mirror, Salvatore sleeping in bed. She was going through her family album, her father excluded. Most of the pictures there were that of her mother, she was still wearing her PJs. " Hey, what are you doing" Salvatore asked sitting upright. " Nothing" she said hiding the album in the shelves.but it was a little bit too late for that for that, he walked up to her. " What are you hiding?" He asked opening the shelves and he found it. " Do you think that everything could be fine again, do you think that we could ever have normal lives, I know that once something is torned it could never return to it normal state but do you think

things could be mended again. Do you think I could ever have a normal life, be a normal girl. Like all the girls. Be fully happy without worrying that sadness would follow, I also want to be happy for the whole month without new issues or ghosts from the past, I want to be able to laugh freely, be fully happy without the thought that happiness and sadness are like sisters holding hands. If one shows up, the other will follow eventually. Don't you want to have a normal life where by you worry about things like water bills, the groceries and stuff. Why do things always have to be complicated" she asked. She was not crying this time, she was smiling with a bitter heart. " Come here" he said pulling her up. " Who wants to be normal, our lives are just fine. We're happy, you and I. Normal things are for boring people" he said holding her face from both sides. She smiled a bit. " Seems like our happiness comes with a lots of sadnesses" she said chuckling. " It's major, everybody dreams of having such great happiness but it costs a lot. i miss my mother, it's funny how I miss something I never had. Sometimes I wonder what life would have been like if I was born

into a different family." She said chuckling casually. It broke Salvatore's heart to see her like that, he'd rather see her cry than see her like that. He knew she was acting all strong but dying inside. " Is this about yesterday, about Amanda?. Everything will be fine, you guys will fix things. I can't bring back your mother but know that I am here for you, I'll take care of you. Things will fix themselves with time, you don't have to stress" he said eyes darting between her eyes. " I love you okay" he said kissing her forehead. " She probably hates me, I betrayed her. Broke her trust, I've always known that this day will come but I never knew it'd come so soon. Whenever I Start to think that I'm winning, everything is going well. I end up losing big time. You should have seen her face, she's like the best sister I've never had" she said. " I think you should go and talk to her, try to explain the entire story. If she was ever your best friend. She'd forgive you, OK?" he asked. She nodded, " go and talk to her" he said said. She hugged him tightly before exiting the room. Before him, she couldn't remember what life was like. It was like she'd known him for years and he has always been

her greatest strength. He seemed to have a solution for everything, every single problem of her he'd fix without thinking twice. Even if it hurt her sometimes but she always knew that the intentions were good.

.

She knocked on Amanda's door, " come in" she said from the inside. Cora walked in after opening the door. She found Amanda sitting on bed busy with something on her phone, Michael was not around, " could we take a stroll down the beach" she asked standing in the middle of the room. Amanda looked at her without saying a thing. " Please" she added. " Sure" she said standing up and they walked out to the beach, they were walking on the shore. No words were exchanged for a while," why, why did you have to lie, deceive me, betray me. Why?" Amanda asked suddenly bursting out with anger. " For the whole three years Cora, is your name even Cora?, Who are you, I don't know you. Is Cora even your name?" She asked angrily. " What do you mean...of course Cora is my name. My mother named me Cora, it was the last word she uttered after she died... it's me Cora."

She said. " I want to know why you had to lie to me..." She asked. " You'd probably never want to be my friend after this one but I am going to tell you anyways, I was 13 years old when my father started to rape me. When I turned 16 I ran away from home, I was already accepted at Harmonic Paradise Secondary school. I stabbed him and ran away, apparently he's still alive. I was homeless... "She told her the whole story without leaving any details.

.

Load shedding...to be continued

[6/10, 13:20] Lynne: Page 51

Cora's POV

.

After I told her my whole story all she did was stare at me, I tried to read her facial expression but it was blank. It was like she was trying to process the whole thing, I then saw a tear run down her eye. She attacked me with a hug. " I'm so sorry Zee, I'm sorry" she said crying. The way she was crying it was like she was the one who just told the bitter sad story.

She backed away and gave me an unexpected slap. " Why didn't you tell me about this earlier, I would have helped you. Why did you have to suffer alone while I was there, I'm here." She asked Angrily. I smiled at her through my tears, at least she still cared. I wouldn't have minded even if she slapped me a hundred times as long as she still cared about me. " I'm sorry, I was scared I might lose you. That you might never want to be my friend. That you'd see me differently. I'm sorry I lied" I said pulling her in for a hug, we stayed in the same position for a long time.

·

" so am I forgiven?" I asked wiping away my tears and trying to calm down. " You're such a strong woman and yes I forgive you. I love you" she said with tears running down her face. " Why are you still crying, I'm fine now. I'm here, safe." I said wiping away her tears. " I'm crying because you're crying" she said smiling. " You're such a bad liar" I said giggling, she chuckled a bit. " So the therapy sessions were about the whole thing?" She asked, I nodded. " Mostly" I added. " What now?" She asked

sighing. " Now we're going to go back inside, take showers. Wear our best outfits and explore the city of California" I said smiling. " That sounds like a plan" she said. " Plus I've tolerated your stinking mouth for long enough" she said. " The feeling is mutual" I said chuckling. Well we went back inside and did just what we planned to do.

.

The other ladies were having breakfast when I walked downstairs, guys were out on a morning jog. I was wearing skinny jeans and boots along with a pink sweater.

" Guys, Amanda and I are going to explore the city, would you like to join us" I asked smiling. " Have you called a cab?" Priya asked, no Amanda must have done that by now. " Done what" Amanda asked ascending down the staircases. " Called a cab?" I said in a questioning manner though. " I thought you'd" she said. " You definitely crazy guy" Buhle said giggling. " Don't call me crazy" Amanda said warningly. Everybody turned their attention to her . " Gee, I was just kidding" Buhle said frowning. " Well I

didn't like it" she said but she was wearing a black tight short dress and high heels not so high. She looked pretty good. " I'll Google the cab's contact number from around here" I said tapping on my phone. And I got it and called it. " So who's with us, the cab will be here within 30 minutes" I asked sitting down.

.

30 minutes later the cab was overloaded with 6 people including the driver, it was Priya, Amanda, siwe s, siwe k and I. Devyanka ,Esihle and Buhle decided to stay back and chill besides we were going to hit the club that night. The cab dropped us at the mall. The city was insanely busy and beautiful, the tall buildings and sidewalks. The mall was enormously splendid. " Shopping spree?" Priya asked. " Definitely yes, Kevin is going to kill me for this. I took his black card" siwe k said in a praying manner. We all laughed. Well I had about 20k in my card. Plus I had better use for the money, yeah Salvatore opener an account for me. " I don't have a single Penny on my, once we changed what I have into

dollars believe me I'm going to get out with a pair of socks only" Amanda complained. " Coming here was probably being forward and stupid" siwe s said. " Excuse me I need to make a call" I said walking a little bit further away from them.

.

" baby wami, can I ask you for a small favor" I asked anyways. "It has been a long time since I heard those words 'baby wami' what is it" he asked sounding suspicious. " Could you by any chance borrow me 20k" I asked, fingers crossed. Eyes closed, " Mmh, let me guess. You've gone shopping and you've only realised now that you have low amount of money" he said. " Are you going to transfer it or not" I asked rolling my eyes. " What will I get in return" he asked. " Interest, duh" I said. " How about a red lingerie for collateral" he said so naughtily. " What a surprise, I never knew you were a cross dresser too." I said that on purpose. " You're so dead Cora" he said by the sound of his voice i could tell that it got to him. " I'm just kidding, so...the money" I said seriously. " The collateral agreement?" He asked. " Relax, you know

I've got you. I must admit it's a strange collateral, don't you think." I asked chuckling.

.

" we've been waiting for you for like forever"

Amanda said, " let's go to the bank" I said putting my phone in my purse. " Let's go" siwe s said. " I'm more of an escorter than a shopper" She added. We all giggled, well we bought a few things. If it was SA I would have got a lot of bags. We then went to some eatery for lunch, I was starving since I hadn't had breakfast.

" You might want to slow down on that chicken" I said to Amanda who was eating like someone who has been starving for days. " It's so good, I can't help myself" she said with her mouth full. " Eauw man, that's gross" Siwe s said looking so disgusted. We all just laughed, " let's go and Catch a movie" siwe k suggested. " Great idea, it's about time we had some fun. I've been indoors for two days" I said sighing. So we catches a romcom. The time was 4:30 when we got out of the mall and catched a taxi home. The guys were watching a football game when we got to

the house. The girls were not around, probably in the other sitting room or upstairs in their bedroom. " Hey guys" I said but no one answered including Salvatore. " Okay" I murmured then went upstairs. Priya joined the guys, I guessed she liked football. Amanda walked to the kitchen, the others. I don't know where they disappeared to. I received a phone call from Petunia, that was strange. " Hey P" I said answering as I opened the door to our bedroom. " hi Cora, I've been trying to get hold of Mr Salvatore but his phone has not been going through" she said sounding so troubled. " Ohh, his battery must have died. What's the matter. You sound so troubled" I asked. " I can't get hold of Nina. I am was supposed to be heading back to her apartment yesterday since fifteen days are over" she said. " Ohh, let me do this. I'll go and talk to Salvatore. I'll get back to you within a minute" I said. " And Cora, I'm supposed to be going on leave. Please remind Mr Salvatore that. If we can't get hold of Nina, then I won't be able to spend Christmas day with my family" she reminded me. I'll see what I can do" I said then hung up on her. I took off my boots and then walked downstairs bare footed. There was

a lot of commotion there since their favourite team had scored a goal. They were jumping around, "Joaquin could we have a talk" I asked. "Yeah" he said, not even looking at me. "Joaquin" I said calmly. "Cora I'm watching a game" he said shushing me off with his hand. "Salvatore!" I exclaimed and got his attention. "We need to talk" I said firmly. "What the hell.." he said standing up. I went outside and he followed me. "What's wrong with you?" He asked angrily. "I should be asking you that... anyways Petunia called—" ..." So?" He asked impatiently. "Geez, would you let me finish. Stop acting so childish" I said rolling my eyes in anger. "So now I am childish, for really?" He asked pissed off. "Just stop, this is not about you...she can't get hold of Nina. You know what, you fix this. Why am I even bothered and one more thing she's supposed to be going home for the holidays. See what you can do about it..." I said then left. I went upstairs, saw Esihle on her bed as I passed by..." Are you okay?" I asked going inside her room. "Yeah, I've just woke up from sleep" she said yawning. "Ohh" I said sitting down on the bed. "What's up" she asked. "You seem

upset, are you okay?" She added. " No I'm not, Geez your brother can be so annoying and frustrating sometimes. I could just strangle him to... sometimes" I huffed angrily. " That's how man are, or rather relationship. They say couples who bicker a lot are much luckily to stay together forever. " She said getting out of bed. " Mhh, you also know something about romance...we don't always bicker. We have our moments. I had something serious to talk about and he just, anyways it's over now" I said sighing heavily. " Are you OK though" I asked looking into her eyes. " I'm fine, why do you ask" she asked smiling. " That game night, with what went down. Are you fine?" I asked. " Ohh that, I'm fine. It was not such a big deal but remind me never to play that game again" she said giggling but not so fully. " What's going on between you t?" I asked. " Tiaxiang?" She asked . " Exactly that, what's up?" I asked. " Nothing, he was just being mean. I guess it was his vengeance plan... I don't know, really" she said. " The fact that you knew who i was talking about before I could even say his name says a lot. Anyways get ready, we're going to the club tonight" I

said before leaving her room.

.

Narrated

.

Cora was wearing a black leather flare skirt which was short, stockings which complimented her skin, black leather ankle length boots and a white vest. Hair curled to the left side of her head. Salvatore was wearing faded jeans, white Jordan sneakers, crispy white shirt which was untucked. Every single one of them looked great, " the limo's are here" Siboniso screamed from downstairs. Esihle checked herself one more time in the mirror before exiting the room with her purse, she was wearing a maroon little tight dress and white heels.

" Shall we?" Priya asked her husband, mbutho. She was wearing black jeans, black crop top and boots. He husband wearing puma tracksuits. " You look stunning" he said taking her hand and they walked downstairs. " Buhle, hurry up" Sandile said impatiently as he had heard that the cats were

waiting for them. " On more minute" she said putting on her wrist watch. " There we go, done" she said pouting Infront of the mirror. She was wearing a white dress, just below her knees and white block high heels. He husband was wearing formal trousers, white shirt tucked in. The last up three buttons unbuttoned. " Finally" he said in relief.

Siwe k was applying her lipstick Infront of the mirror. " Did you check on the kids" she asked. " Yeah, she has just put them in bed. And yes she read to them" Kevin said smiling to her wife through the mirror as he was standing behind her. " You look extra handsome tonight, I could just snack on you right now" she said smiling. " You have no idea of the things I want to do to you. I could just rip that dress and..ohh let's go before I get hard" he said. She just giggled. " She was wearing a black short dress, just below her ass. Black pencil heels, weave on point. Make up on fleek. " Let's go" she said taking her purse and phone. Her husband was wearing a blue t-shirt, jeans and sneakers. His glasses made him look extra handsome. The eyes were just another

thing, one of the things that attracted Sibusisiwe ...

" I told you I needed a new wardrobe, look what I'm wearing. You should have see the other ladies, shopping like it ain't nobody's business. Look what I got, only one dress and that too with Cora's help. I was so embarrassed" she said upset. " The budget is tight this month, I'm saving for the house we're going to move in after we get married. I am also saving for the wedding...you look just fine, you look beautiful. Don't worry, I love you okay" Siboniso said to his fiance who was almost in tears. " I love you too" she said smiling. She was wearing a red knee length tight dress, which hugged her body just beautifulky, red bottoms and Siboniso was wearing black pants, black sneakers, white vest and a jacket. " Shall we?" He asked and they walked out with their phones. " Do I look fat" Divya asked checking herself out. " Like I said before you look amazing, you are not fat. At least not yet" Raj said with a smirk on his face. " I'll wipe off that smirk with a slap" she said firmly. " Auw sorry" he said pulling his ears. " Let's go" she said clicking her tongue. They walked out. She was

wearing a mid thigh pink Lacey dress and pumps. " Stop being so grumpy, you don't look so good" Michael said teasing Amanda. " I'm not being grumpy, I'm simply asking you not to wear your Cologne. It doesn't smell so good" she said. " Since when, you've always liked it and now?." He asked frowning. " I used to but now I don't" she said. " Which one should I wear then?" He asked. " This one" she said spraying him with her feminine Cologne. " Geez Mandy, what are you doing?" He asked trying to move away but it was too late. " And this one, down the ground" she said taking Michael's Cologne and growing it outside the window. " What are you doing" he asked trying to run to it's rescue but it was yet again too late. " Do you know how much that costs" he asked angrily. " Let's go already, what's done is done" she said taking her handbag from the bed. " You're definitely crazy, who does that" he said angrily. He was wearing Adidas tracksuits and sneakers, she wore the same. They went downstairs with Michael murmuring curses. Tiaxiang was wearing shorts and a long sleeve shirt and sneakers, he was talking on the phone as he

walked downstairs.

.

3 hours later, Amanda was sitting on Michael's lap and they were having an intimate conversation. Priya and Cora were somewhere in the crowd dancing. Divya and Buhle were girl chatting. Salvatore, Mbutho, Sandile and Kevin were Infront of the bartender. Having some shots. Siwe k, Sandile, esihle and Tiaxiang were having wine on their table. Siwe s was there too but busy on her phone. " I'm telling you, man gets grumpy when they're sexually starving" Priya screamed at Cora as the music was blasting up the roof. " I just don't feel like it" Cora screamed back. " Well he might start looking for it somewhere else" Priya screamed. " He wouldn't dare" Cora said fuming. Priya just giggled...." Excuse me" Esihle screamed as her phone rang. She walked to the bathroom which she found not so good. It was crowded. She got in one toilet booth and answered. " Mom?" She said answering. " When are coming back home, I'm so lonely" she said. " Mom!, I told you before I left and anyways how are you able to

contact me. Never mind, I'm in a very loud place right now. I'll call you later" she screamed. " Esihle you—..." " Bye mom" she said then hung up on her. She got out of the ladies room, she was walking towards the others when she bumped into him. " You!" she exclaimed. " could we talk outside" he asked holding her hand. " I have nothing to say to you" she said angrily. " Please" she pleaded then pulled her outside the club. There were a lot of people waiting on the line outside. " We will be back" Tiaxiang told one of the bouncers. Who nodded in agreement. They walked a little bit far from the crowded club. " What is it?" She asked yanking her hand off him. " Forgive me for this" he said then pinned her against the wall and kissed her, hungrily but passionately. She kissed him back, his hand went to her ass and squeezed it. That's when she pushed him away. " Stop it" she shouted. " What are you doing, first you embarrass me Infront of your friends and then you kiss me" she snapped angrily. " There is nothing to be embarrassed about, I think It's precious that you're 23 but still a virgin" he said walking towards her. " Why did you have to ask me

such a stupid question Infront of—..." she asked looking up. " I was just curious upon seeing your reaction earlier on that day. I wanted to know, you would have probably thrown a fit if I asked you alone. I would have probably scored myself a blue eye, that too without getting an answer" he said holding her waist. She looked into his, a slap yeah he would probably have got, she thought to herself. Why hasn't he pushed him away already, the guy was holding her waist for crying out loud. She liked the way his safely on her body. " You look extremely beautiful tonight, this maroon dress compliments your dark skin perfectly." He said looking into her eyes. " Thanks" she said breathlessly. He once again took her lips into his, she let his tongue into her mouth. Eyes closed, they were both feeling the hit and then he pulled away from her. " Let's go back inside" he said clearing her throat. She nodded weirdly and they walked towards the club...." What do you mean she can't get inside, I got the ticket, she just forget hers inside. And you saw us getting out" Tiaxiang said angrily. " Sir, we cannot let her in without a ticket. Sorry" the bouncer said. Well Esihle

had left her ticket inside, she thought she didn't need it since she was inside and then he had to take her inside. " Well, can't we buy another one" he asked running his hands through his hair. " You'd have to wait on the line again" he said. " Fuck this" Tiaxiang cursed kicking the ground. " Calm down, I'll catch a taxi back to the house. You can get back in, I'm not feeling this anyways" Esihle said putting her hand on his shoulder. " What rubbi— we're joining the line" he said. " If you say so" esihle said sighing heavily.

.

" Girl that girl is hitting on your man" Priya said as they were looking at Salvatore talking to some blonde white girl. They were facing each other, and she was giggling at whatever joke he was telling her. " Let her hit, beat and bang on him. I don't care" the drunken Cora said. " Ohh, look at her moving her hand up and down his thigh...ohh she's moving it to his inner thigh. Holy matrimony she whispering something into his— " fuck this, I'm going over there" she standing up and walking towards Salvatore who was still sitting Infront of the bartender but Kevin

and the others were no longer there. " Excuse me" Cora said tapping the girl's shoulder. She turned around and faced her. " Yes" she said annoyed. " Do you know him?" She asked the girl. " We just met a few minutes ago, I know him now" she said rolling her eyes. " Well he's one of my ex's, i wouldn't want to see another woman suffering because of him. Let me tell you a short story about this guy you're hitting on" she said sitting down on the high chair next to the girl. And they had their back on the bartender who was attending to another customer's orders. Salvatore's turned her chair too. " What are you doing Cora" he asked, trying to look at her. The girl was sitting between them. " Shut up you devil's advocate" Cora said looking at the crowd. " I don't think I want to listen to the story" the girl said. " What's your name?" She asked. " Belinda" she said. " Now Belinda, you might want to listen to this one. You must know how evil this guy best you is..." She said seriously. " It was about 4months ago when we met at a friend's wedding. He was very hot, what you see today is nothing compared to what I saw. I made sure to have him for a one night stand, like you're

probably thinking right now. So we had the most freaking fucking awesome fucking. The thing is I was drunk, I woke up paralysed the next day. I couldn't walk, I was bleeding—..." That was probably your menstrual period" she said rolling her eyes. " No wait for it, I limped to the bathroom and by God's grace managed to take a shower, my pussy was torned apart." She said with so much emotion. " So?" She asked irritated. " Wait for it, apparently we were sleeping in a hotel. He was long gone when I woke up, I had to pay the hotel bill...then a few weeks later I found out that i was pregnant and HIV positive. Obviously I aborted the baby, I was in no position to be a single mother. I couldn't afford that" she said almost in tears. " Ohw, sorry to hear that" the girl said freaked out. " That's not the worst of it, we met again and I found out he was married to a 10 year older women then him. I told him about the things he had put me through but. You know what he said" she said blinking a few times. " What" the girl asked. " He said I did the right thing by aborting the baby, he wanted no illegitimate child. And he didn't want to die alone, he was spreading the disease to every

lose female. I cried myself to sleep for a week, a whole freaking week. I gradually got skinny, what you see today is nothing compared to what I used to be. I was such a chubby woman, I probably won't ever be able to have kids. I'll die lonely and sad" she said crying. " Now it's up to you if you want to go ahead and spread your legs widely for him, I did my part" she said standing up and leaving. " Excuse me, I need to use the ladies room" the girl said walking away from Salvatore. " Really now?" Salvatore asked unbelievably.

.

10 minutes later

" You are so despicable Cora" Amanda said as they were in the ladies room, Cora fixing her makeup. "You've been saying that for the past few minutes" Cora said laughing. " Geez, where did you get such an idea" Amanda asked unbelievably. " I have brains" she said applying her lipstick. " Let's go" she said putting her things back in the purse. They walked back to their table, Salvatore was sitting there with everybody. " Baby wami" she said sitting

on Salvatore's lap. " Don't you want to dance, I think we should all dance." Cora suggested so bubbly. " I think ill pass" Divya said, my feet are swollen. " Me too" someone else said and then one after another. " Come and dance with me" she said to sawho had his jaws clenched. " I'm tired Cora" he said. " Cool" she said walking towards the crowd.

.

A few minutes later she was dancing with some black nigga, who had his hands on her waist and her arms were on his shoulders. " Excuse me, could you keep your hands off my wife" she heard Salvatore's voice say from behind. " I see no metal on it" the guy said and they continued dancing. " Is this metal enough for you to get your filthy dirty hands off her" he said putting a gun on his torso side. Cora moved back a bit shaken. " Whoa, I was just joking my brother" the guy said with his hands raised up. " Well seems like the joke wasn't funny enough because I didn't catch it" Salvatore said angrily. The guy moved back and disappeaed into the crowd. " How did you smuggle that in here, we were thoroughly searched

before we entered. " She asked eyes popped out. " There's nothing that money can't buy you know" he said. " That's not entirely true" she said. " Right now we should be talking about the way you were brushing against that guys dick" he said angrily. " If that's crime then please handcuff me officer" Cora said sarcastically. " You think that this is funny, let's see how funny it is when i put a bullet through your thick skull" he shouted angrily dragging her outside the club. It was almost midnight, " leave my hand" she said as he was pulling her down the street, far away from the club. " Now, I can't hold you. Did he get to you that much" he asked fuming. " Ohh really, don't fucking play innocent with me. You were enjoying it when that blonde girl was giving you a boner and I can't rub against his dick, how hypocritic of you" she shouted angrily. He raised his hands up, almost slapped her when she cringed with her eyes closed. He ran his hand through his hair. " Just shut up" he shouted angrily. She opened her eyes slowly and carefully. " What, you're going to hit me. Go ahead, hit me. What's stopping you" she asked almost crying, she was scared but brave. " What the

fuck is with you, that women didn't give me any boner. He wouldn't be able to even if she tried harder." He said shaking his head. " I was just trying to get under your skin" he finally admitted. " Well I was also trying to make you feel jealous since you started it" she admitted looking down. He started giggling. " This is crazy, why are we even fighting" he asked chuckling. She shrugged her shoulders smiling and he attacked her with a kiss. " Do you want to get out of here" he asked looking down at her and they went to one of the hired limos and the driver drove off. Blind folds up.

.

Tiaxiang and Esihle ended up leaving the club, after a long time of waiting in the line. They were laying on the beach sand, looking up at the stars while having a good conversation.

Salvatore was on top of Cora fucking her mercilessly, it was more of a punishment. She was screaming helplessly, her pussy on fire. They had two more rounds when they got into the house.

.
Unedited
.

Please support this one, I was requested to advertise it. You can comment with your page link if you had asked me to advertise your page and i hadn't

https://free.facebook.com/Short-stories-JUST-for-FUN-242016813408541/?refid=17&_ft_=mf_story_key.242609846682571%3Atop_level_post_id.242609846682571%3Atl_objid.242609846682571%3Acontent_owner_id_new.242016813408541%3Athrowback_story_fbid.242609846682571%3Apage_id.242016813408541%3Astory_location.4%3Apage_insights.%7B%22242016813408541%22%3A%7B%22role%22%3A1%2C%22page_id%22%3A242016813408541%2C%22post_context%22%3A%7B%22story_fbid%22%3A242609846682571%2C%22publish_time%22%3A1550244378%2C%22story_name%22%3A%22EntStatusCreationStory%22%2C%22object_fbttype%22%3A266%7D%2C

%22actor_id%22%3A242016813408541%2C%22psn
%22%3A%22EntStatusCreationStory%22%2C%22sl%
22%3A4%2C%22dm%22%3A%7B%22isShare%22%3
A0%2C%22originalPostOwnerID%22%3A0%7D%2C%
22targets%22%3A%5B%7B%22page_id%22%3A2420
16813408541%2C%22actor_id%22%3A2420168134
08541%2C%22role%22%3A1%2C%22post_id%22%3
A242609846682571%2C%22share_id%22%3A0%7D
%5D%7D%7D%3Athid.242016813408541%3A30606
1129499414%3A2%3A0%3A1551427199%3A-
7378946860686421817&__tn__=C-R

[6/10, 13:20] Lynne: Page 52

Cora's POV

.

He opened up his eyes, I was staring at him while he was sleeping. I had showered wore his big white shirt and my black G-string. He smiled at me and I smiled back, " what are you staring at" he said flipping me on top of him. " What're you doing?" I asked giggling loudly..." Good morning my heart beat" he said so serious, looking into my eyes, his

hands on my bare ass, grabbing it tightly. He was in his underwear only. "Hi" I said running my hands in his messy hair. I then kissed his lips slightly, "I think I am in love with you" I said smiling. "You think?" He asked chuckling. "Saying I "think" does not make it seem so deep. So I'll opt for that" I said. "What scares you?" He asked tucking my hair behind my ear. "Loving you too much only for me to lose you" I said solemnly. "You're never going to lose me, you're my heart beat. If a heart loses its container then it will surely die, so is the container" he said. "That's some deep shit right there" I said frowning. "Then I guess I can feel free to say 'I AM IN LOVE WITH YOU AJ SALVATORE'. I love you" I screamed. "Are you trying to deafen me" he asked unbelievably. "I felt like screaming, telling the whole world" I said smiling. "I'm in love with you insane girl" he said smiling. "And I'm never going to let you go, you're stuck with me." He said squeezing my butts even more tighter. I could feel his bulge poking my tummy. "Even if we fall out of love?" I asked. "Even if we fall out of love, I'm never letting you go" he said. "Let me record this one, I want you to remember your words, say that

again" I said taking my phone under the pillow and recording it. " Even if we fall out of love, I'm never letting you go Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo. Never ever" he said then chilled. " Let's dress up and go out today, just you and me" I said. " I was hoping we could snack on each the whole day" he said getting his hands under the shirt and running it on my back. Thus giving me goosebumps and butterflies in my tummy.

" Ohh really?" I asked seductively. " Yeah, even the wheather is on our side" he said looking out the balcony. It was cloudy outside. " How about you start by getting into that shower and I'll getting us something to eat and then we can discuss further details about this snacking on each other thing" I suggested. " Make it quick" he said flipping me under and rushing to the bathroom. I giggled and went downstairs, the cook was done with breakfast. The time was 8am. I put each of everything in two plates and two glasses of pormagranate juice. Put it on a tray and carried it upstairs to our room. He was still in the shower. I put the tray on the carpet near the

bed. "Hurry up before I changed my mind." I called out closing and locking the door. He came out five minutes later with a towel wrapped around his waist and wiping his hands with the other one. He walked up to me, I was sitting on the edge of the bed. "Did you say something?" He asked. "Me?, No" I said unwrapping his towel. His dick still managed to make my swallow my saliva in shock and fear. It was semi-hard. "I've been meaning to ask you this, did you get a enlargement done on junior down here" I asked taking it in my hand, it hardly fitted. He chuckled, "it's not that big" he said. I started giving him a hand job. "It's huge, very very huge" I said moving my hand up and down his shaft. I finally took it into my mouth, he grabbed my head, eyes slightly closed. I kept on moving it in and out, deep at the end of my mouth until it was really hard. Kept my eyes on him. He was moaning a bit, he then took it out and kneeled down Infront of me. Kissed me while he was unbuttoning the shirt I was wearing. I took it off and my breasts were exposed to him.he pulled me closer to his body, got in between my thighs. We were kissing while he was caressing my

body especially my helpless waist. He moved back a bit, took one of my firm breasts into his big manly hands. Massaged and squeezed it, he then took it into his mouth and started sucking on it. Having no mercy on my nipple, he did the same with the other. "Mmh" a moan escaped my mouth. The bud in my valley of fire was throbbing in excitement. I was already halfway wet for him. He pushed me back, I layed on my back and he pulled my lower body closer to the edge of the bed, my legs were spread wide. The G-string I was wearing did no justice to my pussy. He pulled it up and the string went deep into my pussy, he was teasing me. He then pulled it aside, put one of my legs on his shoulder and started sucking on my valley of fire. My hand find it way to his head and the under grabbing the shirts. I raised my upper body a bit just to look at him, the fact that I looked at him got me dripping wetter than before. He would pulled my bud out with his pink lips, he kept on going on and on. I had my eyes closed, biting my lower lip In ecstasy. He then inserted his two fingers, started finger fucking me slowly while massaging my bud with his thumb. He replaced his

fingers with his actual long fat dick. " Fuck..." I exclaimed as he had put it all inside me, way deeper. He stood up with it in me, my ass was literally in the air. My legs around his waist. He started to move in and out slowly while he was holding my ass up. He moved in circular motions, he gradually increased his pace. " Ohh fuck.." I said through out my moans. He moved in and out faster and faster. He pulled out, told me to bend over so that he could tap it from behind. That there was my weakest sex position. He started teasing me with it, inserting it half way. His head play with my clitoris until I pleaded with him to fuck me. " Harder..." I said aggressively, warn me to never say that again. He got my valley of fire vandalised. He was spanking and fucking. " Fuck I'm Cumming " I said helplessly. " Not yet..." He said fucking destroying my pussy. " Shit.." he groaned. I released and he followed later on. Like hell my pussy was on fire, like lava it was.

.

2 hours later we walked downstairs, his arms around my shoulder. We were both wearing sneakers, jeans

vests and big jackets. I was wearing a white one while he wore a black one. His was unzipped, mine half zipped and my shoulder was out. He had hired a jeep, since it was a sports car and there were only limos there. It was dropped off an hour earlier. " Look who finally decided to grace us with their presence." Amanda said reading some magazine while sitting on the couch. She was sitting with Esihle and Divya there. " Good morning guys" I said trying to pull away from Salvatore but he pulled me back at to him. " Where are the others?" Salvatore asked. " Some are in town, others down the beach and some in their rooms." Esihle said. " We are going out for a short drive" I said. " Be back around 5, we will be playing . monopoly game" Amanda said. " And guys try to suppress your groaning and moaning while you're fucking. Some of us are single" Divya said. I was so embarrassing, face flashed Salvatore was just laughing. " We'll try to remember that the next timeD" he said saluting like a soldier and then we exited the house. " That was so embarrassing" I said chuckling unbelievably. " I found it hilarious" he said getting into his side of the Jeep while I got into

mine. " Where to" he asked. " You decide, I've never been to California before. Surprise me" I said. " I'm not good with surprised" he said. " I'ma take you to the mall, do some shopping or something" he said. " But I did that yesterday" I said. " I wasn't there, I'm sure you didn't get Jordan air Max sneakers you've been longing for but if shopping isn't what you want then. We will opt for some water slides, it's an hour away from the city " he said shrugging his shoulders. " Let's start at the mall" I said. " Mmh" he said. " What?, Besides. I need a swimming costume" I said acting innocent. So we did just that. We had a lots of fun that day, best day of the vacation ever.

.

A week later

.

Amanda's POV

Cora and I were impatiently waiting for the pregnancy test to decide my fate. So after a week of receiving pregnancy comments from the other ladies, and the morning sickness and the increased

appetite and moodiness I finally mastered the courage to ask Cora to accompany me to town. And there we were inside the ladies room of some restaurant waiting. My heart was pounding heavily, "relax, if you've been taking your pregnancy prevention pills then you are on the safe side" she said but she was as much as scared as I was. . Five minutes later she picked it up. "What does it say?" I asked. She looked flashed, eyes popped out. "What?" I asked. "Let me see" I said taking it from her hands. "No, this must be a mistake, it's probably a mistake. I'll take another one" I said doing just that. There was pity in her eyes, like I was going crazy. I took another one and then another one but the two lines wouldn't change. I finally gave up and slide down the wall, "my life, my life Cora. It's ruined" I said . "Don't say that, everything will be OK. All you need to do is tell Michael and we'll take it from there" she said trying to comfort me but it was not working. I never wanted a baby. "I don't want a baby, baby's are a nuisance. What have I done. My life is ruined" I screamed in anger, tears running down my face. "I don't want this baby" I screamed hitting my tummy

so hard. " Stop it, stop it. what are you doing" she asked holding my hand. " I don't want a baby, a baby is the last thing in my life plan. I never dreamed of being a mother, I doubt Michael dreams of being a father too. We never discussed having babies. Even if we did, I don't want a baby" I shouted. " Just shut up, a baby is not a nuisance. Shut up, you don't know what you're saying" she shouted embracing me. Almost 15 minutes later I stopped crying, I stood up and walked towards the mirrors. Wiped away my tears." Why am I crying, it's not too late yet. My life is not ruined, I have an idea. I'm not going to get my life ruined" I said smiling. " You're not thinking of what I am thinking you're thinking, right?" She asked frowning. " I'm going to do it, get it done and then everything will get back to normal. I'm going to get my life back" I said smiling with hope. " No Amanda, no. You're not going to do this, I'm not going to let you commit such a sin." She said shaking her head in disagreement. " If you were ever my true friend, you're going to support me through this" I said she kept on shaking her head no. I got out of the bathroom and searched for the nearest clinic on

Google. She was following me around.

.

My phone has major issues, as you have noticed before some words are cut off. It's tough to type.

Commen and like

[6/10, 13:20] Lynne: Page 53

Narrated

.

Cora and Amanda were sitting in the waiting room of some private clinic. Amanda tapping her foot in impatience, Cora kept on looking at the door and her phone. She kept on saying a small prayer, " patient number 12" the nurse called out carrying a board of list. Amanda stood up and Cora followed, they were walking down the corridor when Michael called out for Amanda. She turned around and so did Cora, Cora sighed in relief. He was walking with Salvatore, " what is he doing here, you called him here?" Amanda asked looking at Cora with teary eyes. " I'm sorry" that all Cora said. " Sorry?, I trusted you and you betrayed me" she said shaking his head

unbelievably. " You wanted to kill my baby" Michael asked her shaking her body violently when he reached to her. She looked up at him, through her misty eyes. " Answer me dammit" he asked shouting with so much anger towards Amanda, for the first time she saw hatred in his eyes for her. " Yes, yes, I don't want this baby. It's a curse" she shouted angry. " Don't fucking call my baby a curse, how dare you" she shouted through his tears. He was holding her up with her tracksuits. But to Amanda death was just nothing near one of her fears. He let her go and kept on walking around while cursing. " I don't want this baby Michael, I don't want anybody's baby. What good could come out of a criminal's baby, you don't get along with your parents. I hardly see mine, I'm just eighteen years old.i don't want this baby, it's a curse. The biggest mistake of my life" she shouted. He charged for her and slapped her hard across the face, he was about to hit her again when Cora got in between them. Salvatore held Michael back. " We don't hit woman, trust me you don't want to be that kind of man" Salvatore said in his ear. He calmed down a bit, " you might as well kill me, kill me alone

with this stupid thing inside my womb, I despise you Michael. I despise the day I met you" she said crying with so much anger and resentment towards Michael. " Excuse me, would you please lower your voices" the nurse said. Michael walked out of the clinic fuming. " Let's go" Salvatore said pulling Amanda outside, Cora took both their bags and left. " Let go of me" Amanda shouted shrugging her shoulders in anger. " I'm not going to take that risk, get in the car" Salvatore said opening the door of the Jeep which was outside the clinic. He forcefully got her inside and got in the drivers side, Cora got in on the other side. Michael was not around, it was drizzling." What about Michael" Cora asked concerned about him. " He will be fine" he said. Amanda was crying at the back seat, she started to get hiccups.

.

Amanda was the first one to get out of the car when it stopped Infront of the house. She rushed upstairs into their room." Is she okay" Buhle asked. " Not now please" Cora said walking upstairs too. Everyone

was left in an awe when Salvatore walked upstairs too. " Weird " Mbutho commented. Cora walked in to Amanda's room. " She found her crying in the corner of the room, she had folded her body closely together. Cora walked up to her and set Infront of her. " You probably hate me right now, i can take that. Your hatred and anger but I'm never going to stop correcting you when you're wrong. Like an elder sister im going to play my part... If I allowed you to commit such a grave sin then I wouldn't have been your true friend at all. I didn't want you, I don't want you to wake up 20 years later and ask yourself ' what if?' what if you had kept that baby. I don't want you waking up 20 years later and be wondering how old he/she would have been. If she/he would have got his father's beautiful eyes or your blonde hair even maybe your smile. I don't want you waking up 20 years later and be wondering if the fact that you never conceived again was the course of that abortion, I want to see you happy. With no regrets, living your life to the fullest. Our friendship might break today because of my betrayal but know one thing if I had to, I'd do it again. I'd betray you again

just to save an innocent soul, to save your soul from burning in the pits of hell. And one more thing, I'll never stop being your sister. You might stop but I'd never, I'll always be there to correct you when you make a mistake" Cora said bravely. Amanda raised her head up and looked at her with so much abhorrence in her eyes. " Look who's here judging me, between you and I we both know that you are no saint Cora. You're the worst of the sinner's out there, the nerve you have to come here and preach to me. You sold your body to make a living, probably had a thousand abortions through out the whole process. I hate you Cora, if I was going to go to hell then so we're you " she said then clicked her tongue. Cora just smiled, " what are you smiling at" she asked. " I'm just smiling because I know that my best friend, my twin sister, my bitch, the one who used to call me Zee or Coh, the one I used to call Mandy or Mandison, my pal would never say those words you just uttered. She would never, she's probably in there being controlled by the stupid hormones. She'll come back to her senses and do the right thing, she'd never remind me of my sins because I know

them. I know my demons Mandy, they haunt me every now and then, they know my soul more than i do. I'd probably never have children Amanda, what do you think. That I'm happy?, No. My father got me pregnant and had me abort the baby. It would probably be six years old Right now, call me a mother, it'd be such a twisted situation because it would also have to call me a sister. Do you think I'm happy?, No. I was retrieved of my pride, my virginity and here you are whipping up over a baby that was made with so much love and passion. Do you know how much I was I could restore myself back to that 12 year old girl who was so naive and innocent, yes she was unhappy but at least her body and soul was pure. You're crying because you are 18years and pregnant, wow. Try to imagine being 13 and pregnant and then the only man who was supposed to protect you tells you the surgery that was performed on you was to remove the appendix, the excruciating pain and suffering, the dump pad I had to change now and then. If you think that that's worse try and get into the shoes of a girl who was sixteen and homeless the one who had to sleep with

different men with different dicks and personalities. There are many out there, probably hungry as I speak. being physical assaulted by their guardians as we speak, probably aborting their kids as we speak. Think about those women staying in abusive marriages for the sake of their children, the ones who are orphaned before they could even crawl, the ones sleeping under the cold unforgiving bridge, the ones who has and have been for years listening to their mother's cries as their fathers daily hit them to pulp, what about the ones who had to watch their parents die while lying under that bed. And yet here you are scared that maybe you'd turn out to be like your parents, the ones who left you alone at such a tender age. At least they're making some change out their, helping those who can't afford medical care. At least you get to chat with them, see them during every holiday. At least you know that they're there. What about me, I'd never ever see my mother again. Do you know how much I long for a mother's touch. You don't know the miserly and agonizing pain, I had to watch as other kids were being fetched by their mothers. Read myself to bed, I promised myself one

thing that I'd never ever be like my parents, my father. That I'd be the best parent ever, even to those kids whom I didn't carry for nine months. Im going to make a change, be that change. And here you are worrying that your kid might turn out to be like his/her father, a criminal right?. Yes he's a criminal I agree but he's a primal that loves you so much. You want something perfect?, Guess what there's nothing perfect in this world. Everything has it flaws, it's even hard to find true love. And here you are complaining while you have everything anyone could ever dream of...what ever you do please bring back my best friend. The one who is selfless and reasonable" she said wiping away her tears and standing up. Leaving Amanda sitting in the same position, tears running down her cheeks. She passed by Salvatore who was standing outside the door. Most likely to have heard their entire conversation.

.

Cora walked pass him and went into their room, she went to the bathroom and washed her red face on the basin, she wiped it looking herself in the mirror.

She put the towel back to where it was and went to the balcony. There was breezing wind enough to calm her down, she had her eyes closed. Just feeling the sea breeze hit her face gently. Listen to the sound of the waves as they hit the shore. She had foot steps coming closer, his Cologne gave him away. He stood next to her without exchange any words they stayed like that for almost what felt like eternity. " Do you want to go home" he finally broke the silence. She opened her eyes and looked at him for a moment, " yes" she said nodding. " I want to get out of here Joaquin" she said rushing into his warm arms. " I want to go home, I, I ..."...she couldn't talk any longer. " Shhh shhh it's okay. I'm going to book us the first flight out. Don't cry" he said brushing her hair. " This vacation turned out to be my worst nightmare." She said sobbing. " Shhh, it's fine. We are going to go home. It's going to be you, me and Lore. We are going to spend Christmas together Infront of the fire place with marshmallows. Forget about this, forget about Amanda she doesn't deserve you." He said, she backed up a bit and smiled at him through her tears. She looked horrible,

eyes swollen. Mucous drooling off her nose. He took out his handkerchief and wiped her face clean. "I'd like that" she said. "You're going to get just that, stop crying. You're ruining your pretty face" he said smiling, he had tears wailing in his eyes. "Maybe I should have just let her go ahead with the abortion, you know. Maybe then she wouldn't hate me so much, I've betrayed her for the second ti—..." Stop talking, whatever you did was right, you did it for her own good. She'll thank you later. Right now let's just pack our bags and get out of here" he said. She nodded, "let's do one thing, go and take a warm long shower and I'll pack our bags. You could use some" he said kissing her forehead. They did just that, he packed her bag and then his. 30 minutes later he was done, some of her clothes were packed in his suitcase because she had shopped like a shoppaholic the other day. She got out of the shower with a towel wrapped around her body. "Wear these" he said showing her some tracksuits and undergarments which was sitting along with her toiletry bag. "I'll go and tell the others that we'll be leaving with the next four hours. I've booked the

flight tickets online" he said walking towards the door. "Joaquin, thank you" she said stopping him on his tracks. He turned back to her, held her face from both sides. "I'd do anything for you, there's no need to get formal with me" he said. "All you have to do is smile for me" he said. But she started to get serious again, "what's wrong?" He asked. "I, I just wish we had met under different circumstances, You know. Maybe bump into each other in some sort of a library, no a restaurant yeah possible. Or we c—..."

Think about it this way, if your life was normal then I wouldn't have met you. We wouldn't have met, I love you along with your past and imperfections" he said then hugged her. "I see all this sad talk is because you're too lazy to get dressed. I'm going to help you get dressed" he said making her giggle. "No, I'll do it myself" she said giggling. "No, I'm not taking a no for an answer... come on" he said taking her channel body lotion. "Salvatore..." She said dragging her feet. "Come on" he said, dropped down her towel. He started moisturizing her body, arm to arm, the face and then the chest, tummy and waist" you're tickling me" she said giggling. "Come on spread your legs"

he said. She did just that, and she moisturized her feet up to her legs and then her thighs. She closed her eyes slightly when he was moisturizing her inner thighs. and then her ass, " are you OK?" He asked looking at her while she had her eyes closed. She nodded biting her lip. He took her panties and made her wear them and then then bra and then the trackpants, vest and Jersey, socks and sneakers. " Are you sure you're ok?" He asked zipping up her Jersey. " I think I need to pee" she said rushing to the bathroom, he just laughed and went downstairs.

.

" What do you mean you're leaving, why, What happened?" Tiaxiang asked. " Look it is not my place to explain, I was just letting you know. You guys enjoy the rest of your holidays. My girlfriend and I are going home" Salvatore said calmly. " What happened Kong?" Mbutho said sipping coffee his whiskey. " She's just not happy here, we're going home to spend Christmas with our son that's all. If you really want to know I think you should talk to Amanda and Michael. Our plan is departing within

the next 3hrs/30 minutes. We better get to the airport. I'm going to take a shower" he said looking at his wrist watch. " Bro, you're leaving. Just like that?" Siboniso asked saddened by the way things were going. A good holiday had turned into a disaster. " We're leaving Besides, you guys have only four days left. We'll see you on the 29th. ..yeah before I forget Mbutho please do me a favour and be here on the 28th during afternoon, I'll leave the Jeep's keys to you" he said. " Sure man " he said and they handshaked. He went upstairs and took a quick shower, Amanda was still in her room, undercovers. Michael was still not back . Salvatore and Cora came downstairs with theirs suitcases. " I'm going to miss you guys" Cora said as they group hugged with the girls. " I hate goodbyes" Esihle said trying to hold back her tears. " Sister inlaw" Cora said hugging her exclusively. " Don't cut the cake yet" she whispered into her ears. Esihle's eyed just popped out. " Let's go" Salvatore said as he was done saying good bye to the boys. " See you guys in SA" Cora said to the guys. " The house will be so quiet without you" Rajesh said and they all giggled. " I'll take that as a

compliment" she said smiling. " Sister inlaw"
Siboniso said walking towards her and hugging her. "
Okay, that's enough" Salvatore said pulling him away.
" See you soon guys and we will take care of your
kids" he said before they got out of the house, they
all just laughed, packed their bags in the boot got
inside the limo and the driver drove off to the airport.

.

Michael walked in to the dark room and turned on
the lights, Amanda was sitting on the edge of the
bed. It was almost midnight, she walked towards the
couch and set there. " I was 24 years old when my
two brothers died. I had just been promoted to
become a detective. I was good at what I was doing,
working with criminals has never been easy. I used
to receive threats now and then and then one day we
were just chilling at home. When there was a break
in, luckily our parents were away on vacation with
the younger twin. It was just me, my twin brother and
the elder brother. We were playing cards, they made
in seem like a robbery. My two brothers were shot
right Infront of me and I was tied in a chair to watch.

From their conversation I realized who they were working for, the notorious gang leader I had just arrested. They wanted him realized, wanted his docket and I was working on his case. That's how I met King Kong, he helped me get my revenge. For the first year I used to go home, but the look in my mother's eyes made me to take a decision to never come back home. I supported them financial, sometimes I'd pass by or go to see the twin at school. Since I had joined the gang it was never safe for them another reason why I had to stay away. I know that my mother blames me for their death, even though she had never said it but I know and I don't blame her. I resent myself too, I blame myself too for their death...I can't allow you to deprive me of this one chance to start a normal family, I understand if you don't want to have a kid with me. Just let it grow up and I'll take care of it. Please don't deny me of this one chance to be happy again. I'm begging you..." He said then kept quiet for a while. "I'm sorry for hitting you...I'm going to sleep in Salvatore's room" he said standing up and going to the closet, he packed his clothes and pulled the

suitcase to the main bedroom. Amanda was just sitting in the same position, tears running down her face. She really never wanted to be a mother. Not now not ever, what kind of mother was she going to be. She could hardly take care of herself, was she going to be just like her parents who left her all alone. With no relatives nothing. Just her and the caretaker, and then when she turned 17 it was just her alone, the driver who driver her to school. The part time care taker. Was she going to just provide the kid with money and hope for the best. What's the use of giving someone life is you'd fail to nurture them and show them the right path. She took a shower and came back to bed, slept naked cuddled up to the pillow.

.

Cora was woken up by the crying babies, not just one but many. They had arrived in SA around 2:00am and got home around three. They went straight to bed. "Mmh" Salvatore groaned closing her ears with a pillow. Cora got up rubbing her eyes and walked to the bathroom. Washed her face and mouth. She

walked downstairs, the house was filled with kids some crawling, some running around. So many toys. " Good grief, what happened here?" She asked. The time was 9am. " Good morning aunt Cora" Priya's 7 year old son said. He was playing with a remote controlled car. " Good morning Amit, where are the nannies" she asked astonished. " Our nappy is changing challu's diapers. Some are in the laundry room and kitchen. "He explained. " Okay, so where's Lorenzo" she asked. He's upstairs in his room." He said. " Okay, thanks... who's baby is that?" She asked upon seeing the crawling around baby. " Uncle Kevin's baby" the boy said. " My house has turned into a day care center" she said eyes popped out. She picked up the cute baby who had his father's eyes. " Hey you, ain't to supposed to be in your baby cot, sleeping?" She asked playfully. She walked with the baby upstairs. " Don't you just look cute?" She asked. She put the baby down as soon as she saw baby Lore. " Ohh, my cute boy. The cutest of them all" she said picking him up. Baby Lore just giggled as if he had just recognized her. Who knows maybe he did. "Who has been taking coffee you since aunt

Petunia is gone, huh" she asked spinning the baby around. She kissed him all over the face. " I missed you, gosh I didn't realize how much I missed you until now" she said. " Where do you think you're going Little k" she asked picking up Kevin's baby who was crawling towards the bathroom. She now carried both the kids. " You guys are heavy... ouch, stop pulling my hair" she said to Kevin's baby who was busy pulling her her hair. She carried both of them downstairs. She found some of the nannies there. " Hello guys" she said putting little k down. " Hi Cora" she had Petunia say. Walking in from the kitchen, " p, you're still here?" She asked. " Yeah, Mr Salvatore offered to pay me extra if I stayed till you guys made it back" she said. " And Nina!" Cora asked loudly. " She's still not reachable. I went by her apartment some other day but she was not there" she explained. " Where could she be, she can't just disappear out of nowhere. What kind of a moth— anyways. You can go home since I'm here I'll take care of Lorenzo" she said crying still puzzled by Nina's disappearance. " Thanks, you're so kind" she said. " It's fine, Lore is my baby too.. isn't that right

boy boy" she asked playing with the baby who kept on giggling. " Guys, if you could please take the kids to one of the guest rooms, or better yet Lorenzo's room. It's chaotic in here and the furniture is getting ruined with these little guys running around" she said to the nannies others agreed without any issues, some were giving her strange looks but that's just humans are.

.

" Papa is sleeping, isn't he just cute" she asked getting undercovers with Lorenzo. " Let us capture this moment" she said taking her phone out and making a video of the Three of them. " Let's pose a bit, a little bit of pouting won't kill you baby Lore. Why so serious" she said then tickled the baby who just bursted into laughter. " that's more like it" she said chuckling. " Let's see how Papa pouts" she said putting the baby on her thighs and pulling Salvatore's cheeks together while capturing the moment. " Cora stop" Salvatore said annoyed. " Wake up" she said kissing him all over the face. 3 minutes later he sat upright. " Geez you can be such a nag sometimes"

Salvatore said whining. "A nag that you are in love with, yeah" she said kissing her cheek. "Baby Lore is here" she said giving him the baby. "Isn't he just cute" she asked by pouting. "Enzo my body I hope when you grow up you don't get attracted to crazy woman like her" he said taking the baby. "Oh, you have gained some weight buddy" he said. "Let's take a family pic, say strawberries" she said. "He can't talk you know?" Salvatore said giggling. "You just shut and say strawberries" Cora said so controlling. "Geez.... strawberries" they said in unison. "It's a great video isn't it" she said looking at it. "I thought you were taking pictures" he said frowning. "No problem, we will get a picture out of it" she said pushing his face away. "You're such a bully" he complained. "Blah blah blah, I love you too" she said. he just smiled and shook his head. Seeing Lorenzo just lightened up her mood, he put a smile on her face.

.

Comment and like

[6/10, 13:21] Lynne: Page 54

Amanda's POV

.

I woke up feeling nauseous and sweaty. Considering the fact that I was naked I could say that the pregnancy got me hard. I rushed to the bathroom and did my business, I didn't notice Michael who was sitting on the couch till I made it back to my room. All of a sudden I didn't feel good in my own skin, " you've been sitting there the whole night?" I asked but he didn't answer . He kept on sipping on his coffee, I went back to the bathroom and got into the shower and showered with cold water. I got out, wrapped a towel around my body and used another one to dry my hair. " Cora and Salvatore went back home yesterday. Whatever you said to her didn't sit well with her" he said as I was going to the closet. My heart skipped a bit. I stopped on my tracks but continued, I picked out jeans and a white t-shirt. I tied the towel around my head, had no energy to blow dry my hair. I moisturized my body Infront of the mirror and wore my panties and clothes and then the sleepers. I fixed the bed , " did

you mean it?" He asked. " Mean what?" I asked. " That you despise me and the day you met me?" He asked. I look at him for a while then walked out to sit on one of the couches in the balcony. I put my feet up on the couch, just looking at the blue sea. And the mist, it was quite cold but who cared. He walked in a few minutes later with a tray of breakfast, he put it on the table and went back inside. Came back with a small blanket and covered me. " Have something to eat" he said walking away but I held his hand, he looked down at me and I looked up at him. " Please stay—" I said shortly. He set down Infront of me. I took the tray and started eating slowly, his piercing through my skin. I took the cup of tea after I was done eating, " you didn't have to watch over me the whole night, I'm not going to do something stupid or rather sinister" I said looking at him. He cringed a bit, " I can't take the risk" he said, so cold. But I did not blame him, I guessed the bond of trust was broken. It hurts, a lot. " I never saw myself becoming somebody's mother, I never had such a dream. Yes i have dreams about common things that others girls dream of...I have dreamed of getting married,

settling down, a loving husband, a beautiful house we could call home. Where we'd come back from work after long hours and finally be at peace, Friday night's dinner. But children was never a part of that, at the back of my mind I was hoping that I'd find myself someone who has the same mind set like me. A man who never dreamed of having a family, just me and him would be fine but then I met you. Fell stupidly in love, I guess destiny has it own personal agenda. I was taking my prevention pill regularly and thoroughly, I still don't get how I fell pregnant..." I couldn't go on anymore. If I did I was surely going to start crying again. " These pregnancy prevention methods aren't always accurate Amanda, there's that percentage that's left behind. Maybe we had sex before it got effective, I don't know ... But please just don't harm our baby. We could be a family, you, me and our little baby. " He said. " A family?, I feel like this accident is causing us, especially you inconvenience. Maybe I was never, not the type of woman you wanted to spend your life time with and now this...this is one of the reasons why I wanted to abort this baby. And my parents?, How do I tell them.

My mother, she'll be devastated by this. They had me in their 30s, with everything they had dreamed of. I bet I was not even in the list of things they want, probably the worst mistake of their lives." I said smiling, so disappointed in myself. " There's one thing you should know, I would never have dated with you for the whole past few months if I wasn't serious about us, about you. Before you I had a lot of women, I dropped all that and focussed on you. I love you Amanda Timber, yes you're irrational sometimes, maybe almost all of the time but I still love you. You are sometimes unapologetic, unappreciative, insecure, childish and stubborn but you're also the kind of girl who admits her mistakes once she spots them and you own up to them. You're kind-hearted, gorgeous. Lovely and smart. You're still young so it's understandable. And soon you're going to be the mother of my child, soon to be wife" he said walking towards me and kneeling down. " Amanda Timber would you do me the honors of being my wife?" He asked kneeling down, everything was happening so fast that I couldn't wrap my mind around it. " Mandy?... Mandy?" I had him call my

name faintly until I came back to planet earth. "

Mhh?" I said so jumpy. " Would you?" He asked. "

Look Michael, I don't want us to rush things and then end up regretting it. Let us wait a little bit more time... I need time to think. Everything is happening so fast, I don't want to be one of those people who get divorced within one month of marriage. " I said after sighing heavily. His eyes darted all over my face, " I hope you understand" I said. I must say, him getting closer to me kind of disgusted me. " If that's what you want then Im willing to wait, we will do this at your own pace" he said and I nodded. " It's what I want and I think we should book our flight tickets out. There's nothing to live for here" I said. " Yeah, this vacation turned out to be a disaster" he said standing up and walking towards the balcony railings. His Cologne hit my nose, " excuse me" I said standing up before it got me hard. I went downstairs and there was no one there, except for Buhle who was whipping in the kitchen. I had no time to entertain her, I set on the couch. Took the remote controller and wrapped myself in my blanket. A few minutes later I was joined by Esihle on the couch,

she pulled my blanket and covered herself. " What happened to your sister in law" I asked curiously. " Mxm haven't you heard" she asked throwing furious stares at Buhle. " Heard what?" I asked frowning. " That insolent woman cheated on my brother, she was caught last night. It's good that my brother gave her a good beating nxa ungrateful bitch" she said angrily." Seems like I'm not the only one who's burning, how did she get caught?" I asked chuckling. " This is not a laughing matter Mandy, my brother is devastated in that room and here you are chuckling." She said upset. " There are way more worse things than your brother's wife cheating on him at least she got a few beatings...we all have our own problems" I said seriously. " What happened between the four of you guys, Cora and Salvatore left in her hurry. Cora looked sad. " She asked." Let's just say I messed up, I'm going to SA to fix things. If not today then maybe tomorrow" I said looking anywhere but her. " Whatever you did broke Cora's heart, I wonder what she did to you. Alonzo was furious, one thing he hates for sure is to see Cora unhappy " she said scaring me even more. " Coming down here was

such a bad, I'm going to my room" I said standing up.

.

Cora's POV.

.

" Merry Christmas my love " I said looking into Salvatore's eyes. We were still sitting on bed, just the three of us. He looked at me seriously and then his eyes darted from my eyes to my lips. He drew his head closer to mine, I did the same too. Put my head at the back of his head and we kissed passionately that I was left breathless, I was looking for something in his eyes and there i found it. He wanted more just like I did, I smiled a bit. " I'm going to need a driver and your sub and your black card. I was requested by the parents to buy a few gifts for the kids, they'll repay you once they return. I'll take a few nannies with me " I said. " and the kids, who'll be left with the kids?" He asked eyes popped out. " A few nannies" I said casually. " What's a few, really?. There are five nannies here. Let's say you take three along, you call two a few?" He asked, acting so

smart with me. " Baby I kind of set Petunia free, since I'm back I'll take care of Lorenzo" I said eyes closed slightly. " You did what?, Do you know what this means?" He asked . I shook my head no. " This means that we're not going to have as much snacking on each other as we want. " He said. " Come on, Lore is such a humble baby... Where is her mother if I may ask?" I asked anyways. " Somewhere in Nigeria with her boyfriend. Her phone is unreachable, I'll just do one thing. I'll ask for his sole custody then she can finally be free" he said so angrily. " No, don't do that. She'll come around, everything will be fine. He has the right to be with his mother, don't deprive him of that" I said putting my head on his shoulder. " You always manage to see goodness in impure things, she doesn't deserve to be called a mother. She brought him to earth just so that she could trap me, she doesn't love my son. " He said so angrily. " Shhh... it's Christmas day, you haven't even wished me a merry Christmas but here you are busy wasting your energy on negative things. You're such a bad boyfriend" I said putting my finger on his lips. " Sorry, my blood just boils up when I,

anyways.... Merry Christmas il mio cuero batte" he said. I kissed his cheek, I'll go and take a shower. You take care of the baby" I said getting off bed. " I can't wait for next year" he said sighing heavily. I just giggled and got inside the bathroom, I took a quick shower. Wore my sandals and a dress, applied some make up. I looked just fine. " What are you guys watching?" I asked getting out of the closet with my handbag. " Some of the videos we recorded overseas... The card in in the wallet. Over there" he said pointing at the couch. " Are you sure, you should be watching those videos with a kid" I asked. " He's just 8 months old, relax. Besides his parents kissing is something he'll have to get used to" he said. " Mmh, don't be a bad papa while I am gone" I said exiting the room. so I had the list of things each and every parent asked me to buy for their kids. Divya and Rajesh had two kids a 4year old girl and a 7year old girl. Priya and Mbutu had only one so who was 7years old, the one i was talking with earlier on. Buhle and Sandile had two sons, 1&6months old one and the other one was 3years old. Kevin and siwe had a one year old baby boy and a four years old girl.

So I had 8 kids in the house, including Lorenzo. So you can just imagine the chaos. I took two nannies along with me, we bought the gift. I also bought a few things for Lorenzo and a Christmas tree. It took us five hours to finish shopping. We made it back to the house around 2pm. Wrapping the gifts would have been a waste of time so I opted for gift bags. I hoped that Salvatore cooked or else we were going to order pizza. Luckily for me he was preparing

a meal for Christmas, with Lorenzo on his chair right beside him. The kitchen was a total mess, kids were running around. "What happened in here" I asked walking in. I opened the refrigerator and took out a bottle of water, I was tired already. "Don't ask me, you left me with 8 kids Cora" he said turning around. He was a hot mess. "And two nannies" I said smiling. "Are you kidding me?, They could hardly control them" he said eyes popped out. "Come on, it's not that bad" I said walking up to him and kissing him slightly. "I think they should go back to their houses, I will not survive another day of this" he said. "The reason why their here is for security purposes,

something bad might happen if you send them back without their parents consent. I'll handle this" I said sighing. " The baby is drooling Salvatore, what have you been feeding him, he's dirty" I complained picking up the sleepy Lorenzo. " His porridge of course, he's been eating by himself" he said casually. " He's hardly 1 year old" I said unbelievably. " Relax, just wash him or something" he said. " Relax just wash him or something" I imitated him sarcastically.

.

" Listen here little soldiers, were are about to play a game, we're about to play what?" I asked. " A game ma'am" the kids said, standing in line line soldiers. The ones from 3 to above. The little ones were being washed by the nannies, including Lore. " Here are the rules for the game. 1 a soldier must be clean, say what" I asked walking around with hands on my back. " A soldier must be clean ma'am" they repeated after me like I told them to. " That's right, rule number 2. A soldier must stay put, no running around like chickens. 3 I soldier must not make noise. 4 no messing the house up. The soldier who will obey the

rules and regulations will win the best soldier of the day award. Am I clear" I asked speaking firmly. " Yes ma'am" they said saluting like soldiers. " Now, my little soldiers will go upstairs to the nannies, a good soldier always listens to the his superiors. I got cameras everywhere in this house, if any of you turns out to be a bad soldier then there will be no gift for him or her. Get that soldiers?" I asked. " Ma'am yes ma'am" they said standing straight and saluting. " Good soldiers work as a team, now go upstairs in formation. Remember i got my eyes on you" I said warningly. " Yes ma'am" they said walking y

Upstairs to take a bath. I noticed Salvatore standing on the kitchen door way as I turned around. " How did you do that?" He asked looking astonished and impressed at the same time. " Let's just say Kids like serious fun" I said fixing the pillows on the couch" what does that mean?" He asked frowning "I don't know, really" I said shrugging my shoulders, I found expired chips on the couch. I needed to to seriously cleaning. So I got the vacuum cleaner and other stuff, it took me an hour to finish cleaning up

the sitting room and the kitchen. After that I decorated the Christmas tree along with Salvatore. "It's so peaceful in here, finally" he said sighing. "Help me up so I can put the star on top" I said picking up the star in the box. He carried me up on his shoulder, I put the star up. "Let's see if this works", I said turning on the lights. And the tree's lights turned on. "Yey" I said kiddingly he chuckled. Now the gifts. I'll need your help there too, I said walking towards the dining room table where the plastics of gifts were. "I think Lore is enough as our only kid" he said whining. "Stop complaining, you and I are still going to make 7 babies more." I said. "In your dreams" that's all he said. "What do you mean, don't you want to have kids with me anymore" I asked sulking. "That's not going to work on me" he said not buying my sulking drama.

.

So it took us three hours in full to complete the Christmas day preparation. Around 6 pm we were all in our PJs, sitting around the twelve chaired table having dinner. It was such a lovely meal. Other two

nannies were feeding the small babies. My older soldiers quiet and having their food, some were sitting down on the carpet because they were too short for the table. It took us an hour to finish eating because I had to make sure that each and every kid has eaten their food. " Are you guys ready for dessert" I asked childishly excited. " Yes ma'am" they answered so serious. " Eauw" I said disappointed. Salvatore wouldn't stop laughing and the nannies were laughing too. Anyways they had their dessert which was just ice cream—bad move for a kid who was about to go to sleep. The energy they gained after that, " okay soldiers it's time for you to get your gifts" I said walking towards the Christmas tree. " Yay!" They exclaimed excited.

.

2 hours later. We were all sitting around the fire place, with a dish of marshmallows and some other snacks. Some were sitting on the couch, I was sitting on the carpet reading a bed time story to them. they had their toys in their hands, paying attention to every word I was saying. Salvatore was

feeding Lorenzo his formula, with baby Kevin laying his head on his lap. " From her hotel room Holly could see the waves on the ocean. She could see the people swimming in the water. she could see people sunbathing on the beach.

She could see people sitting under the big umbrellas at the restaurant. But Holly couldn't see Christmas

.

For Holly Christmas meant snow.

Pure, white snow.

Just perfect for sledding on with a new sled.

Just perfect for lying on to make a snow angels.

Just perfect for making a big snowman...but Holly knew that even though tomorrow would be December 25th, she wouldn't be able to see Christmas. holly was born on Christmas day.

Christmas was Holly's favorite time of the y. She loved having her birthday on Christmas. But this year's it was different. Holly and her parents had gone away for Christmas, far away from snow, far

away from the busy time, far away from Christmas. The trip to the sunny island was to be everyone's Christmas present. Now there would be no surprises, no presents to open, there would be no relatives dropping by to say merry Christmas, no Christmas cookies shaped like wreaths and Christmas stockings. Holly loved her parents she didn't tell them how she felt. She wanted them to be happy on Christmas day but there was no Christmas on Holly's heart. .

On Christmas morning, Holly opened her eyes

The sun was shining in the window

The air conditioner was humming

It was Christmas morning

It was also Holly's birthday.

She walked to the door leading to her parents' room. She knew there would no surprises but she was going to say merry Christmas and give her parents a big hug. She opened the door and stared. She saw a tiny Christmas tree in the corner by the window. A several presents all wrapped up sitting under the

tree. She saw a big sign hanging on the wall which said "happy birthday Holly". " Merry Christmas" said Holly's mother. " And happy birthday" said Holly's father. Holly looked at her parents smiling at her and knew that Christmas was being together. Holly saw Christmas all around her. The End!" I said the closed the book. Most of the kids were sleeping, some looking so sleepy. " Aunt Cora, where's the award" amit asked, lying on the carpet. " I'll announce the winner tomorrow, each and every one of you will get the award. How about we all go to sleep right now, wake me up tomorrow morning and you'll all get awarded for such a good behavior" I said smiling at him. " Good night aunt Cora" he said standing up. " Good night aunt..." The others said as they were leaving, the others needed to be carried to their beds.

.

30 minutes later ." Finally" I said throwing myself on bed after such a long day. Salvatore put Lore on his baby cot/chamber, he said he was too tired to walk out at night just to check on him so he carried his cot to our room. " Good night" he said kissing my

forehead. " Good night" I said sighing softly. He covered me up with the blankets. I can't remember when I fell asleep but I was woken up by the noise i heard coming from downstairs. It was 3am when I checked the time on the wall watch. I walked downstairs and found Salvatore shouting at some people who were standing outside. " Baby wami... what's going on. Who's there?" I asked tying up the gown. " It's nobody important, just go back to sleep" he said softly. I walked there anyways. Michael and Amanda were standing outside the door. " Why don't you guys come in... it's quite cold outside" I said after feeling the cold breeze hitting my face. " Are you sure...after all what she said?" Salvatore asked looking at me. I nodded " it's okay, you can let them in" I said and he opened the door widely for them to enter. " Can we talk?, In private?" Amanda asked avoiding my eyes." Come" I said walking towards the kitchen. I made two cups of green tea, " I'm so sorry Zee. I shouldn't have insulted you like that, it was very hard for you to open up to me and then like the bad friend I am. I used your past against you, all you were trying to do was help. I get that now, please

forgive me" she said. I had my back on her and when I turned around I found her kneeling down on the floor. "What are you doing?, Get up please" I said eyes popped out."I'm sorry" she said crying. " Have some tea" I said offering her a cup of tea and then sitting down. " Sit down" I said, she set down on one of the high chairs. " Couldn't you have come here later today, you're pregnant for goodness sake. You should get enough sleep and rest, is the baby OK?" I asked trying to read her facial expression. I saw what seemed like; surprise, fear, regret maybe?. I don't know, I wasn't so sure if I knew her very well, after the bad side she showed me the other day." I'm fine, the baby is still alive and well. I wouldn't have been able to get some sleep anyways. My words are haunting me, I needed to see you and apologies. I'm so sorry Cora, you're such a great friend, a great human being and I feel like I sometimes take advantage of the fact that you're good and you love me. I don't deserve to be called a friend, what I said was so cruel. Even your worst enemy wouldn't have said those hurtful words. If you could please give me just one, one more chance. I promise I'll be the best

friend ever, I'm begging for your forgiveness" she said tears streaming down her cheeks. " I forgave you a long time ago, and I hope you forgave me too for meddling into your business. Maybe I should have let you do your thing, learn a hard lesson...but that's all over now. Just promise me that you'll try to find it in your heart to love your kid with all you heart. Be the best mother ever, that's all I am asking for" I said seriously. " She stood up swiftly and hugged me. " Thanks, thank you.I love you, I'll try to be the best mother ever, I promise you that" she said smiling and crying. " Good, now get out of here, go and get some sleep" I said smiling a bit. " So soon, are you sure you've forgiven me.

?... Michael proposed. He wants us to be a family" she said steering her tea. " What did you say?" I asked. " Not now, we've just met. There's a lot that we don't know about each other. I don't want to get divorced at such a tender age. Who knows maybe we will end up not liking each other besides, I feel like puking whenever I smell his Cologne. I can't stand his sight but in the meantime I don't want him

too far away from me. I think I'm going crazy" she said sounding so emotional wrecked. " Everything will be fine...I'm sure it's just the hormones. It's a good thing that you decided to take your time, get to know each other better. No woman wants an inconvenience of a proposal unless you're those type of girls who lure and trap men... You know, like Nina" I whispered the last part. She giggled a bit. " Where are the others?" I asked curiously. " Probably sleeping in their homes" she said. " What?, What happened?" I asked surprised. " Buhle was caught cheating... it's a mess." She said sighing. " Whoa, what, how?" I asked fastly. " Apparently a man called on her phone and her husband answered. He is one of those stupid woman who keeps on talking without confirming if their speaking to the right person. Stupid fellow, he got the poor woman beaten up by her husband" she said sounding more disgusting by the stupid caller than the cheating woman. " Poor Sandile" I said feeling sorry for him. He was such a humble and gentle man, some women out there just knew how to turn men into monster. " Why are you feeling sorry for him, he wasn't the one who got

beaten up to pulp" she exclaimed unbelievably. " Should I be feeling sorry for the one who cheated then?, I'm not saying that he did the right thing by hitting a helpless women but she is no saint either. Besides I'm fond of him more than her" I said. " I never thought I'd hear you saying this, what happened to siding with the truth?" She asked. " Sometimes I am also forced to pick sides" I said shrugging my shoulders. Anyways we talked till five am and then they left, I was so happy she had decided to keep the baby even though she wasn't so sure about her decision.

[6/10, 13:21] Lynne: Page 55

Cora's POV

.

" Are you OK?" Salvatore asked me. " Yeah, yeah" I said fastly and jumpy. " You've been staring into space for the past 5 minutes. What's wrong?" He asked me looking so concerned. " I'm fine, it's just that there's a lot going on in my mind" I said faking a smile. " Like what?" He asked. " The house is so

quiet don't you think?" I asked looking around. The kids were long gone, their parents came around and took them. It was so great having so many little people around the house, now it was just the tree of us. Lorenzo was sleeping inside and we were sitting on the roof top, having some snacks and drinks. It was around 3pm, " are you in some way trying to ignore my question?" He asked tilting my head up so that I can look at him. He was sitting on a couch and I was sitting on his lap, the afternoon sun kissing our skins tenderly and soothingly. " No, I'm not" I said chuckling a bit. " So?, What are you thinking about" he insisted on the same question. " Random stuff, like how the sun feels so good on my skin. Stupid stuff like that" I said then kissed his forehead. " OK, if you say so" he said no buying my story. " Really, everything is fine. There's no need for you to worry." I added smiling faintly. There was still disbelief in his eyes. " I should go and get the guest rooms cleaned, check on Lorenzo so long. Should I order in for dinner or you'd rather warm up yesterday's meal?" I asked getting off him. He pulled me back to him, a swiftly set on his lap. " I think I like the fourth

suggestion" he said. " What fourth suggestion?" I asked frowning. " I prefer you stay here in my lap, it's been a long time since we spent some time together. Just stay" he said putting his hands on my waist and I was pulled closer to his body. My hand around his shoulders. I took off my sneakers and snuggled up to his body, I didn't say anything to that, just kept on running my fingers in his beautiful hair. " Tell me sweet something" I said planting a kiss on his forehead. "Like what?" He asked sighing softly, eyes closed. He must have been enjoying my touch. " I don't know, you think of something...

.

Amanda's POV

.

I rang the bell to my parent's house, one more time. They weren't expecting me and Michael. It was around 4pm, we waited for a few more seconds. My heart was pounding heavily, I held his hand and looked at him one more time. He nodded in assurance. The door opened " Amanda?" Mother

exclaimed frowning, I smiled a bit. She then attacked me with a hug. " Mom" I said wincing, he was squeezing me tightly. " You're back, how was your vacation" she said, eyes darted all over my body. " Could we maybe come in" I said holding Michael's hand one more time. She looked at our intertwined hands. " Sure come in" she said looking so disturb, we walked in with Michael pulling my suitcase. " Where's dad?" I asked looking around the house. " Let me go and call him, you can get sorted" she said signalling for us to go and sit down in the dining room. I pulled Michael's hand and we walked there and set down. My knees were wobbly, heart racing, palms sweaty, I was feeling hot. " Are you OK?" He asked putting his hand on my back. " I don't think I can do this" I said breathing heavily. " Relax, just take a deep breath in and out. In and out" he instructed me, it actually helped a bit. " Amanda?, My little girl" father said coming from upstairs. I couldn't he but rush into his arms and hug him. " Daddy" I said smiling, he kissed me all over the face. " How's my little girl doing" he asked looking into my eyes. " I'm fine, how are you" I said not so smiling. " Don't you

think she looks a little bit chubby" mother commented walking down the staircases. " Mom, Dad this is Michael Sullivan my boyfriend" I said moving towards Michael and sitting beside him. " Boyfriend?" Mom asked arms folded around her chest. " yes mother, my boyfriend" I said smiling faintly. " You didn't tell me you had a boyfriend, let alone the one who looks much more older than you" Dad said sitting down Infront of us, mom set next to him. " Dad please" I murmured softly. " Dominic calm down, we haven't even said hi to Michael over here... Hi I'm Mrs Timber, Amanda's mother" mom said extending her hand. Michael stood up and kissed it. " Nice to meet you ma'am" he said politely. " And this is my husband, Amanda's father. Dominic" she said looking at dad who extended his hand forward for a handshake, with a cold stare. They shook hands," how about I go and make you guys a cup of coffee while we chat."mom said standing up and walking towards the kitchen. " Boyfriend you day?...so how long have you been dating?" He asked. " We've been dating for six months sir" Michael said. " Only six months?, And then you decided to introduce him..."

He asked not really asking, he was more of shocked than asking. " Dad, there's nothing to be shocked about. I mean six months is a long time" I said trying to ease the tension. " Anyways, what do you do for a living Michael" Dad asked. " Dad is that necessary?" I asked, " Amanda, I'm talking to him. Let the man answer, unless he's ashamed of what he does" he said so coldly. " I work for a police department, as a detective sir" he said, so cool. " A police officer?, Really Amanda. Couldn't you have done better" Dad asked loudly like it was such a big deal. " There's no need for you to shout out to the heavens, he's a detective. So what?, It's not a big deal" I said angrily. " Watch your tongue young lady" he said warningly. " I'm sorry Dad" I said calming down. " Here's your coffee guys, here you go" Mom said offering us cups of coffee. She put the biscuits in the middle of the table. She took her cup from the tray and set down. " Haley, can you believe this. Your daughter here is dating a police officer. Unbelievable" Dad said so disappointed, " with all due respect sir, I love my job. I'm happy with it, it satisfies all of my needs. I'd appreciate it if you stopped criticizing me" Michael

said calmly but his jaws were clenched. " Ohh, he can talk —... " what's your problem Dad, this is why I never wanted to introduce you to them. They're so narrow minded and judgmental. Why did you even come back home, you should have stayed in Kenya" I shouted so angrily. " Young lady mind your tongue" mom said. " Oh I should mind mine, what about your husband over there. Do you excuse me to just calm down, be cool with it while you're busy bullying my boyfriend" I asked loudly. " Amanda..." Mom said crushing, she has always been like that, whenever it was time for him to say she'd just breakdown and cry. That broke my heart, I set down. " Amanda calm down, it's OK" Michael said holding my hand. " Mom...I'm sorry" I said after a long time of silence. " I have decided, you have to break up with him. I don't accept him Amanda" dad said solemnly. " What?" I asked unbelievably. " Amanda, there are more better boys out there for you, like Henry. You'll have to break up with him or else..." He said threatening me. I have been there before, " or else what, huh. You're going to disown me or cut down my allowance or get me grounded. Guess what,im not going to succumb

to your threat this time around dad. You can take your money and go to hell for all I care" I snapped standing up. " Guys please" mom said, " Amanda, calm down. This is not good for the baby" Michael blabbered standing up, trying to get me to sit down. " Baby?, What baby Amanda. Are you pregnant?" Mom asked standing up and looking me in the eyes. I couldn't answer, that was the worst way a parent could ever find out that her daughter is pregnant. " Ohh heavens, Amanda. You're pregnant, what have you done" mom said it like I had committed the worst of sins out there. " Yes,yes I am pregnant. I'm two months pregnant. So what?" I asked crying. " I want this bastard out of my house as soon as I get back" dad said clicking his tongue and exiting the sitting room and then the house, I heard his car ignition start. " I'm sorry Mom" I said walking towards her and holding her hand, she slapped me hard on the face. " What nonsense is this, you're just 18 Amanda, 18" she said angrily. " Mom, I'm sorry, I'm sorry. It was a mistake, please forgive me" I said crying. " Amanda I think we should leave" Michael said. " Shut up Michael, shut up. You did this to me,

you ruined my family" I said charging for him. I kept on hitting him on the chest. " You ruined my life, my parents would probably never forgive me" I screamed crying, he just pulled me in for a hug. " I think you should leave Michael" mom said wiping away her tears. " Leave before Dominic returns" she said trying to calm herself down. " Amanda is coming with me, I can not take the risk of leaving her with you after all what has happened" he said firmly. " No, I'll take care of my daughter, I promise. Just go" Mom insisted. " Okay, nothing should happen to Amanda and my baby. If something happens to them, I swear on my brother's grave I will kill someone" he said firmly and scary before leaving.

.

Salvatore's POV

.

I opened up my eyes, it was still pretty much dark outside. Cora was not in bed with me. " Cora?, Cora?" I called out checking the time. It was 6am, I guessed it must have been one of those cloudy days. I walked

out, checked everywhere in the house but she was not around, I tried calling her phone but it was not reachable. " Shit" I cursed after trying it for the 10nth time. " Damian, where's she?" I asked one of her bodyguards after calling them. " She got into a taxi to Durban say, we're on her tail as we speak. " Durban, what's she going to do there?" I asked. " We thought you knew sir, we also have no idea. " He said. " Just find out, call me when you have the right answer... when did she get into a taxi?" I asked. " About two hours ago sir" he said, I hunged up. I walked into the kitchen. There was a note pinned on the refrigerator, which said ' Lorenzo's food is inside here, I've bathed him, if it gets finished before I come back. Add four spoons of his powder milk and six spoon of his future life porridge." That all it said, nothing more. No details about her whereabouts,not time of returning. Nothing, and then Lorenzo had to go ahead and cry, I took out his formula from the refrigerator and rushed to his room. " Hey buddy" I said picking him up. " Seems like it's going to be just me and you today, no mommy. So behavior" I said trying to get him to calm down. " Shhh, it's OK. I'm

here now, you and I are going to go to the office together and get some work done" I said looking at the time on the wall of my room. While trying to feed him his formula. It took me a lot of time to get him to keep quiet. " Good, now dad needs to go and shower, be a good boy and keep quiet" I said putting him down on the floor, supporting his formula with his shawl. " Good, I'll be back" I said running to the bathroom. I took a quick shower, with a shower cap. I had no time to dry my hair. I moisturized my body and combed my hair, rushed to the closet and got dressed in a suit and formal shoes. No tie, the top two buttons unbuttoned. " Shit" I exclaimed as I found Lorenzo drenched with his formula, his outfit was ruined. I had to take change his clothes, I did just that and then packed his stuff I was going to need for the day, not forgetting his food. Just great, Robinson was on vacation too. I put his baby seat on the back seats and buckled him up. Put his bag next him and drove out. Worst day of my life, I had to ask Bianca, the receptionist to look after him while I was in a meeting. It was so messed up. I had to leave office Early, he was crying in the back as I drove. "

Ohh god... What would have Cora done in such a situation" I tried to think, packed the car near the road. I got out , opened the back door and got him out. " What is it...you hungry?, Maybe it's your first diaper. Let's see" I said laying him down on the seat. His diaper was full, thank God it was urine only. I changed it and fed him his food. He then started to drool, input him back in his seat and drove home.

.

Amanda's POV

.

I woke up feeling like puking, I rushed to the bathroom but nothing came out. I looked myself in the mirror, I looked absolutely horrible. Nothing like the Amanda I knew from a few days ago. The lively sessy rude bubbly Amanda, there was nothing there. Just a hallow shallow girl. I undressed myself and took a shower, it was so cold that day. I wiped my body, wore leggings and a sweater and some fluffy,spongy winter boots. Didn't bother fixing my hair. My suitcase was still there near the door.

Unpacked, I called my driver to come and pick me up. After Michael left last night, my mother rushed to her room and locked herself there. I wrote a small letter, I couldn't stay where I was not wanted. Maybe they needed space and time to digest things and I was giving them just that. I walked downstairs pulling my suitcase 20 minutes later. "Where are you going Amanda?" Mom asked as I was placing the Letter on the kitchen counter. "Dad didn't come back home last night, did she?" I asked turning around to face her, her silence said a lot. "I'm going to Cora's place. Here's the address, if you want to talk." I said. "Cora's place, you didn't tell me Cora has found a new apartment" she said frowning. "There's a lot you don't know mom, a lot of things I wanted to tell you but I couldn't. Some things are just not easy to talk about through FaceTime but it's OK. I'm leaving, send my regards to dad" I said walking towards the door as I could hear the sound of the car parking outside. "Cora, she has a bad influence on you." She said. "No, don't. Just don't. Don't try to put the blame on Cora, she has been nothing but good to me. She has been there for me through hell and back,

Goodbye mother" I said opening the door. She was left standing there, it took me two hours to get to Salvatore's mansion. The security opened the door for me as soon as they recognized me. The driver turned back out as soon as he dropped me off at the front door. I rang the bell, and stood there for what felt like eternity before Salvatore himself opened up for me. " Amanda?, What are you doing here" he asked huffing, like he has been working out. The time was 1:30 pm. " Is Cora here?" I asked chuckling a bit. " No, she's not. Come in" he said walking back inside. " Do you perhaps have any idea when she'll return back?" I asked walking in with my suitcase. " I have no idea, make yourself feel at home. I'll be back" he said disappearing somewhere in the house. I went over to the sitting room and turned on the television. I set there alone for almost two hours. " sorry for disappearing for so long, actually I was working out" he said, wiping the sweat with a white towel. " It's fine" I said. " So what brings you here?" He asked. " Actually, I was wondering if I could stay with you guys for some time until I fix somethings" I said smiling faintly. " Ohh, does Michael know about

this?..." He asked frowning, I shook my head no. " Ohhk, you'll have to speak to Cora about this. If it's fine by her then I guess you could stay ... For now, you could go and put your bag in one of the guests rooms. Excuse me, I need to take a shower before buddy wakes up" hr said then rushed upstairs.

.

Narrated

Around 22pm

.

Cora rang the bell to the house after walking from the gate to the house. The cab driver had dropped her there. She rang the bell one more time and waited for another five minutes, Salvatore opened up for her after turning on the lights. He turned back on his way upstairs after that, there was no need for Cora to ask if he was angry or not. She followed him upstairs slowly. He got undercovers but set on his butt, she walked straight to the bathroom. He watched her unbelievably. She came out 10 minutes later but walked to the closet, she came out dressed

in her Pyjama Short and vest. She got undercovers "Hi" she said looking at him." That's it, Hi?.hi?, I don't want your Hi Cora. I want to know where you went to and why you didn't tell me." he kind of snapped. "Please don't shout" she said sighing heavily. " Don't fucking tell me what to do and what not to. Just answer my damn question, do you know how much I've been worried. One more thing, if you knew you had to go somewhere then why did you send Petunia home. Do you know how hard the day was for me, I had an important meeting but I had to wrap up things fast because I was also the nanny for the day" he said, taking out his frustrations. " You had a meeting, I thought you were free for the entire week. If had known I would have..." she said but couldn't finish. " You should have told me about the meeting" she added. " Like you told me about the trip, right?" He said. " Why do you have to make this about you, you are his dad, it was your duty to take care of him. I've played my part, I'm tired of your whining. I'm going to sleep" she said angrily. That left him gagging unbelievably, " I'm sorry, I didn't mean that... it's just that I am tired Joaquin. I've had a long day,

all I've been thinking about all the way was to get into your embraced and find comfort." She said eyes closed. She was leaning towards the headboard. " I went home...after such a long time I missed home. After seeing your friends reuniting with their kids yesterday something inside me was triggered. Home never felt like home but I missed it, I forgave him. I forgave my father for everything he has put me through. But after pouring my heart out and crying, peace didn't return back to me. I know something deep inside has changed but it doesn't feel like much. I thought it would wipe away all memories of the past but it didn't, something good happened though. After such a long time I set around that small table with my family, we smiled upon reminiscing about the good memories of the past. I have always thought that there was no goodness in my past, the dark side that I kept in my heart somehow brainwashed me not to see the light. We had cookies along with laughter, it felt so good. I feel halfway down freedom" she said tears of joy streaming down her face. She finally opened up her eyes. " I felt so good to say the darn words' I forgive you'. I promised

to visit them more often" she said looking into his eyes. "I should have told you before leaving and for that I am sorry . I needed to do this on my own, I didn't want to stress you" she said holding his hand. He looked into her eyes for a few seconds, " I'm happy for you" he said hugging her. " But don't ever disappear on me, I was worried sick" he said solemnly. She smiled and nodded slowly.

[6/10, 13:21] Lynne: Page 56

.

Cora's POV

I woke up feeling around 7am, wore my jogging tracksuits and sneakers then took an hour's time jog. My muscles got strained a bit because it had been a long time since I had a jog, anyways I made it back to the house around 9am. It was going to be a hot day, I realized. I went upstairs to our room and found Alonzo playing with Lorenzo. " Hi guy" I said walking towards them, " Mommy is saying hi Enzo" Salvatore said. " I could have joined you if you woke me up" Salvatore said after we shared a kiss. " You looked

so peaceful, I didn't want to disturb your sleep" I said looking at Lorenzo. Who kept on moving his tiny legs and arms while smiling, he was lying on his back. " Go and get ready, we're going to eat out, I'll get this one here ready" he said picking baby Lore up. " You sure, do you know how to wash the baby?" I asked frowning. " It's about time I learned how to" he said walking out. That got to me a bit, might have been because what I said yesterday. Anyways I took a quick shower, wore white short, a vest and shirt-unbuttoned and then the white Nike vapor sneakers. Tied my hair into a straight up b bunny, applied my make up. I got done within an hour, Alonzo walked back in as I was about to go out. " It's my turn to shower too" he said handing over the baby. " Be quick, I'm starving" I said walking out. I went to his closet and took his pram, I put him inside while packing his stuff in his bag. I left the pram on the staircases way , picked him up along with his bag and went downstairs. Put him on his chair in the kitchen, while I washed his eating utensils and prepared fresh food for him. Well I asked Salvatore to bring his pram downstairs. " Where are you guys

going?" I heard Amanda's voice ask, I turned around frowning. " Mandy?" I exclaimed. " Mmh, let me guess. Mr Muscles didn't tell you I was here, did he?"I She asked, one eyebrow raised. I looked at Alonzo. " It slipped my mind" he said shrugging his shoulders." really Joaquin?" I asked eyes popped out. " What?, I had a lot in my mind. I'll leave you guys to talk" he said walking towards the garage with the pram. " Unbelievable!, Anyways what brings you here?, When did you get here?" I asked giggling slightly. " I believe I arrived yesterday around one pm, I told my parents I'm pregnant and that didn't work out so good. You know how they can get, anyways they're upset or rather disappointed in me. I needed a place to crash for a while until the university gets opened. I couldn't go to Michael's place for classified reasons" she said, " I also want to know those classified reasons" I said smiling curiously. " Forget it, where were you yesterday. Alonzo was furious and stressed out when I got here" she asked. " That's a long story you're asking for, have you showered yet?" I asked. She nodded frowning, " OK you're coming with us. You must be starving" I said

pulling her hand. *

" Wait, I don't want to spoil the family moment. Just bring me a take away, I'll have some cereal so long" she said refusing. " You're my family too, you're coming with us no arguing" I said pulling her. " My outfit looks horrible Coh" she screamed. " you're right, Go and change quickly" I said after checking her out. She came back a few minutes later wearing a short off shoulder lose dress and sandals. " Let's go" she said taking one of the bags I was carrying. I was carrying mine and Lore's bag plus him. " Mr Muscles, I hope four isn't a crowd" she said as we got into the back of the car. " They say three is a company, so you can guess what five is" Joaquin said sarcastically that I laughed a bit. " the last thing you want to do is upset a pregnant woman baby" i said giggling. " I can't believe this, you're ganging up against me" Amanda said whining. " I was just kidding, I'm on your side here" I said smiling while looking out the window. " I'll wipe off that smile with one hot slap" she said warningly. " Violence is not good for you" Salvatore Said giggling, he got slightly

punched on the shoulder. Anyways I told her the whole story on our way there. We had our breakfast while chatting, while kept on feeding Lorenzo. Who had a napkin around his neck. " What do you guys usually do for new year's Eve" Amanda asked, " I'm also curious, I can imagine since they celebrate their birthdays so grandly" I said curiously. " Nothing special, we do what others normally do" Salvatore said having his milkshake. " And what's that" Amanda asked. " We spend the night in church, praying" he said so solemnly that a stranger would have actually believe him. " You,church?. Jesus Christ would return the same day" I said laughing out loud thus attracting unwanted attention to our table. " What?, Can't I spend a night in church?" He asked acting so innocent. " Please, don't act all Holly here. You hate just a topic about church. I'd rather hang myself then believe what you just said" I said seriously.

.

" I was just kidding, there's no need for you to commit suicide. Such a major thing" he said shaking

his head, Amanda was laughing her ass out. " On a serious note though, what do you guys usually do" Amanda asked, wiping her tears. " Nothing really, we hit the club, maybe get together at someone's house, braai some meat. Light up the crickets. Pool party , go to some music concert and that's it" he said. " Before your friends, how did you celebrate new year's Eve" I asked seriously and curiously. He glanced up at me for a bit. " I used to stay indoors with my grandmother and grandfather. Catch a movie or she'd drag me to church" he said. " Mmh, seems like that's how I'm going to spend mine... indoors and sleeping. I need myself some serendipity" Amanda said sighing. " Michael is one lucky bastard... With all the girls that are going to be there. The best gift a man could ever ask for is being single" he said seriously. " Ohh really?, How about I join Amanda. Give you the best gift too" I asked, my insides burning up. " Thank you il mio cuero batte" he said looking at me with so much joy. " Go to hell... let's go. I'm done" I said standing up unbelievably. " But I am not done yet" Amanda said. " Well I'll go and Wait out the car" I said pushing Lorenzo out after

putting out bags in his pram. " Let me help you" I heard him say behind me as I was walking towards the car. " I'm doing just fine" I said angrily. " Okay" that's all he said. I put Lorenzo in his car seat as soon as he unlocked the door. I got in the back seats after he put the pram in the boot of the car. Amanda came rushing a few minutes later. Well we went home in silence, no he was rapping along with Eminem on our way home. I was also the first one to get out of the car when it stopped. I carried Lorenzo upstairs in his seat, Amanda followed behind with our bags. I put Lore in his cot as soon as got into his room, he was sleeping. I then went to our room. just one minute could ruin your whole day.

.

I went to the bathroom and washed my face. When I looked myself into the mirror he was standing behind me smiling. " You okay?" He asked looking so amused. " Is there any reason I shan't be" I asked eyebrows raised. " I don't know, your face looks so red" he said shrugging his shoulders. I looked at him for a long while then took the towel which was

hanging near by and used it to wipe my face, he held my waist. " Don't, don't fucking touch me" I cursed warningly. " Is this about the gift" he asked laughing out loud. " I was just joking" he said turning me around. " Tell you what, I didn't find it funny. Your joke was so lame, nxa" I said angrily. He just stared at me and smiled, " it's either my joke was lame or maybe it got you feeling jealous" he said it in a questioning manner. I was just frowning angrily, he attacked me with a knee weakening kiss. That was not fair, it kind of got a girl confused. I was battling between pushing him away or pulling him more closer to me. He was kissing my neck while unzipping my Shorts, moments later my short were down my feet along with my panties and I was bending over the, hands on the washing basin and he was fucking me hard. No foreplay nothing, he got me groaning like a woman in labour. 30 minutes later" are you still angry with me" he asked after Cumming inside me. I pulled up my panties in shame, he zipped his trousers. " Well?" He asked pinning me again the basin. Hands on my breasts. " Yes" I said in a husky voice. " I can't hear you" he said so firmly.

" No yes, just don't y

Say that again, unless you meant it" I said looking at him through the mirror. " You know, je te veux seulement (I want you only)" he said. His chin on my shoulder. Tu è l'unica regione per cui il mio cuore batte ancora nel petto(you're the only reason my heart beats within my chest)" he said, I couldn't help but smile. " Till death do us part?" I asked turning around. She looked into my eyes for what felt like eternity. " Till death" he said solemnly. " I love you like crazy" he said chuckling unbelievably. " I love you too" I said holding his face from both sides.

.

Amanda's POV

It was the 31st of December, around 9am when cora walked into my room. I was still in bed but awake. Just thinking about my complicated life, lately I've been ignoring Michael's calls. I needed to be alone, think things through. I wondered what the coming year had in hand for me, if things were going to get better or worse. " You have guests" she said without

even greeting me. She was wearing her favourite long white dress, an apron on top. Lorenzo on her back. She looked like somebody's wife. " Good morning to you too" I said smiling. " Ohh, Hi" she said hitting her head while chuckling. " You look busy, quite a mess" I commented. " Whatever Mandison, just wash your face and mouth. Come out quickly" she said then exited the room. " Wait...who are they" I murmured the last part because she was already gone.

.

Anyways I dragged myself to the bathroom, brushed my teeth and washed my face. I walked out the room and to my surprise found Michael, mom and Dad there. " What are you guys doing here?" I asked frowning, I was still upset with the two of them. " Could we maybe talk?" Mom asked, I walked up to them and set on the one of the couches. I noticed that Cora had served them with tea and cake. " Hi" Michael said, like we were stranger. " Hi" I said smiling a bit. " so?, What brings you here?" I asked looking at my parents. " How are you doing, how's

the baby" Mom asked looking so worried. " I'm fine and my baby is doing just fine, thank you for asking" I said putting my hand on my small tummy. "

Amanda look, we're not here to fight, we're are here to fix things" Dad said. " Good to hear" I said sarcastically. " Amanda!" Michael exclaimed. " Just hear them out, please" he added. I sighed then gave them all the attention in the world. " When I heard that you're pregnant my hopes got shatteredWhen your father and I got married we already knew that we wanted no child. We had planned to join the movement of medicine. Move around the whole Africa not just africa but the whole world infact. But then somehow I fell pregnant—..." The worst mistake of your life,right?" I asked feeling the wail if tear forming behind my eyes. " No, never. You are the best thing that has ever happened to us, we fell inlove with you the moment you were born. You looked so tiny and beautiful... Your father named you Amanda, an addition to little family. We decided to put our dreams to hold and raise you, we worked at the near by hospital. Came back home to you every night, but our hearts had that unfilled space. That's

why when you turned 14 we decided to begin our journey. Our purpose we believe." She told the story so beautifully that I felt my cheeks getting wet. " We missed you every second of the day... somehow we hoped that because we were meeting all your needs then you'd be just fine" dad added. " I missed you guys, so much. I thought that if I became a problem child then you'd come back home but you never did.but instead you kept on punishing me, grounding me and cutting my allowance...I guess I got the gene that never wanted a child from you guys, I almost aborted my child, our child... Thanks to Cora for stopping me" I said wiping off my tears. " I'm sorry Mandy" mom said walking towards me and sitting next to me, hugging me. Dad joined in, " I'm sorry princess, for everything. For what I said the other day, for not being there for you when you needed me the most" Dad said. " There's a lot I wanted to share with you guys, a lot. A couple of heart breaks and heart aches." I said crying. " We're so sorry, please forgive us" mom pleaded. " We've decided that we're going to come back home. We want to see our grandson growing" Dad said. " No, don't do that. I am doing

just fine, I forgive you but don't leave your calling just because of me. We're going to FaceTimeEveryday, you're going to see your grandson growing up. But don't be disheartened because I am sure he'll look exactly like his ugly father" I said smiling. " This means that he'll be handsome, with a good heart" Mom said, got me frowning. " You and Michael have our blessings" Dad said. " Really?" I asked looking at him with questioning eyes. " We had a good talk" he said answering my question.

.

Cora's POV

We had celebrated new year's Eve at Rajesh's crib. It was nothing grand, just a group of friends coming together with their families. The following year seemed to be promising, everything was set straight in time. Amanda and her parents and Michael's relationship was mended. Rajesh and his wife were planning to start therapy ASAP, Sandile and his wife were getting divorced. Not so good tgere. Tiaxiang got a few punches from Salvatore for dating with his little sister, he somehow broke a bro code but it was

all sweets and roses after that. We Salvatore and i, were just being us crazy and crazy about each other. Our little family was doing so fine but I was prepared for Nina to return from her baecation and start causing drama, acting like she gave a damn about Lore. I called Salvatore's grandma and grandpa to wish them a happy new year, not forgetting his papa lastly not forgetting my family.

.

Two years later.

.

Comment and like(unedited)

[6/10, 13:21] Lynne: Page 57

Cora's POV

So it had been two years, who ever said that love gradually decreases as time goes by has probably never met us, our love grew stronger each and every day. We had our differences and fights but we resolved them instantly, I like to think that we're each other's strength and weakness. Crazy right?. I was

doing my theoretical training/taking residency, I still had four years to go and then I had to take one year doing community service and then post graduate in specialisation as a gynaecologist. There were a lot of examination involved in between.

During the residency we cared for patients under supervision of senior physicians and we earned relative a salary of twenty thousand rands range.

During residency we had to keep clinical records in which we participated in. I worked on on-call hours, I finished around 7pm and started at 7am. Others

chose flexible hours, I stayed in the provided apartments which was a few houses from the hospital. There were two building, some for males and one for females. The apartments weren't that

spacious, There was a bedroom, bathroom and a study room only. There was a canteen on the first floor of the two buildings. so irritated. " Sorry sis' but

I can't, I have been telling you this for the past few months now. Address this issue with Michael or

better yet his mother. You can't keep on running

from your in-laws" I said seriously. " Argh fine, I'll ask someone else" she said then hung up on me. Well

she had a monster inlaw there and Michael loved his mother to bits. Amanda and her didn't really get along pretty well.

.

Siboniso and siwe all got married and they were expecting. Sandile and his wife seriously got divorced. Devyanka and Raj fixed their marriage and they were happily married with a 17 months old daughter. Others were still happily married too. Priya had a two week's old daughter, it was about time. They old son was 8years old for crying out loud. Tiaxiang and Esihle were taking a break, we got usewe got used to them doing that. I drove in as soon as the security opened the gate for me it was almost 9pm. The lights were still on, I opened the garage using the remote control. Took my bags and I went home on Friday evenings and came back on Sunday evenings, Salvatore was not happy with it. We hardly spent time together, study had become my daily meal. We'd sometimes fight on Sunday mornings because I'd want to go to church and he'd want me to stay indoors cuddled up against him.

Then there had to be this Nina character, to her surprise Lore calls me mommy while he calls her Nina. He'd sometimes cry at night asking for me and Salvatore would video call me or drive to the residency.

Lorenzo was going to be turning 3 years in two months, it was the 13th of February. He and his papa have the same month of birth which is April. Their birthdays are separated by just two weeks. It was Friday I had just got back from the hospital, I was busy packing my bag, I was going to drive myself home. Another thing I finally got my driver's license, Salvatore was breathing down my neck. I had failed a couple of times until I passed. I was driving one of his cars. It was an Audi RS coupe, silver in color. It was his birthday gift from his grandparents. It still looked pretty much new although it had a mileage of five years. My phone rang, it was Amanda ' Mrs Sullivan" I asked supporting it with my shoulder. " Ohh please" she said giggling. " What's up" I asked. Well Amanda and Michael finally got married and had their baby. Amanda named him Leonardo which means brave as a lion. He had his father's features all over him.

They moved in to his house after the wedding and I was his maid of honour. " Can't I just call my best twin sister ever without any suspicions" she asked. " Mmh, i see. You just wanted to say Hi. I'll hang up then cause it seems like you've done just that" I said. " Actually, I wanted to ask you for a favor" she said. " I knew it, what is it?" I asked curiously.. " Could you give my husband a call and request that I visit you, I really don't want to go to his parent's house. I swear I'd strangle his mother if I had to spend the entire weekend with her" she said soundingwent upstairs , " mommy" Lorenzo excitedly exclaimed running towards me, I put down my bags and then picked him up and spinned him around. He was watching cartoons on television, " I miss you mommy" he said playing with my hair. " I missed you too my baby" I said kissing him all over the face,he couldn't help but giggled like always. " What are you watching here" I asked walking towards the television. " You know" he said eyebrows raised. " No I don't" I protested. " Yes you do" he insisted. " No I don't" I protested against the fact. " Yes you do" he insisted. " Mmh ok, let me guess. Guitar and friends? " I said. " Mom!, But you

can see" he exclaimed pointing at the television. " What is this?, Tom and Jerry?" I asked. " No, I don't like Tom and Jerry" he said covering his face.

.

with his tiny hand. " It must be Masha and the Bear then" I said. He nodded childishly. " Where's your Papa?" I asked smiling. " He's working as always" he said sighing heavily and putting a hand on his cheek, he was a drama king that one. But he had his moments of scary silence, " mmh, workaholic. Let's go and get him out of his office" I said putting him down, at least trying to because he held on to my throat. " Ahh Lore, aren't you too old to be carried around?" I asked walking to Alonzo's office with him in my arms. He was busy shaking his head no. " Papa look who's here" he was the first one to say as I opened the door to Alonzo's office. " Cora?, I thought you said you'd be coming home tomorrow since you're tired" Joaquin asked surprised. " I changed my mind, I missed you guys" I said walking towards him. We met halfway and shared a slightly kiss. " Eauw God" Lore said closing his eyes. "Hey,

That's my line " I said glaring at him. " No, it's papa's line" he said. " Your Papa hardly ever use the word' God' Lorenzo. Since when did you become a liar" I asked seriously. " Okay, I am sorry for lying but I'll tell Papa, Mom" he said, " tell him what?" I asked frowning. " Why you say 'eww God'. You said it because he had a smelly mouth and then he kissed you" he sold me out. " Really?" Salvatore asked staring down at me. " No baby, don't tell me you believe this over talkative little devil's rascal. He's lying" I said shaking my head. " I'm telling the truth" lore said. " Go and watch your favorite shows, I'll deal with mommy here" Salvatore said putting him down. He walked a few steps and then turned around" Mom... What's a rascal like" he asked. " Handsome like you my boy" I said giggling, he nodded then left. " What is it with my mouth again?" He asked pulling me closer to him. " Your mouth? , I'm lost" I said acting so confused. " Really, you have a slow memory now?" He asked. " Ohh I remember now, there's nothing to feel ashamed of, it was still early in the morning and you kissed me with you unbrushed mouth. There it is I confessed" I said as

he put me on top of his desk. " Now you remember?" He said smiling. " Don't let the third party come in between us baby wami" I said putting my hands on his chest. He was standing in-between my thighs. " My boy is now the third party?" He asked chuckling casually. I couldn't help but laugh, " your words not mine" I said smiling. " How was your week" he asked seriously. " Tiresome and long... Even my feet hurts. How was yours?" I asked. " It was okay, I had no meetings. I'm going on a business trip to Durban on Monday, I want to check out the progress on the building" he said. " When will you be coming back?" I asked looking up at him. " I don't know really, It might take two to three weeks" he said. " Weeks?, Weeks Alonzo... you're kidding right?" I asked unbelievably. " Try to understand, it's business related. I got no choice, there's a lot of material i need to buy ppersonally. And work on the budget. Three weeks is not that long il mio cuero batte" he said holding my face from both sides and kissing me. "Three weeks is a long time Joaquin" I said sighing heavily. " You won't even realize that I'm not here, take this as an opportunity for you to focus on your

studies more" he said trying to calm me down." Of course I'll notice, even Lorenzo won't be there. I'm going to miss you guys" I said feeling so emotional. " How about Petunia bath Enzo tonight and i scrub your back and massage your body" he asked so seductively. " I'd like that but Lore will—..." Shhh, I'll take care of that. Go upstairs and get into that shower, I'll be there in a few minutes" he said putting his finger on my lips. I went upstairs while he talked with Lorenzo in the sitting room. I went to the bathroom, took off my clothes and shoes, and got under the shower. A few minutes later I felt his hands on my back. He took the scrubbing sponge , put a bubbly bathing soap on it and sponge , put a bubbly bathing soap on it and vb washed me. I had my eyes closed, just enjoy the tingling sensations on my body. His scrubbings stayed longer on my sensitive parts, noticed. I leaned back on his body. " Going to church on Sunday?" He asked casually. I shook my head no, " since you're leaving for such a long time I'm not going anywhere" I said slowly. " Is it?" He asked, not really asking. " Lorenzo doesn't want to go back to his mother's" he said, that topic

got me turning around to face him. " Why, what happened?" I asked. " He said some nasty things, I'm going to fix with Nina on Sunday. I want her to come and pick him up, we need to overlook our agreement" he said solemnly, " ain't you going to tell me?" I asked looking into his eyes. " Not today, I just want you to relax a bit. Let's just say he's cohabiting in my son's apartment" he said. I nodded slowly, I didn't want anything bad to happen to my Lorenzo. Nothing should happen to him, I loved him dearly.

.

He is my son, it doesn't matter if I didn't give birth to him. What matters is the bond and love we share. " Relax, you look so tense" Salvatore said kissing my forehead. " How can I not be tensed when the matter concerns Lore, nothing bad should happen to my son." I said feeling so agitated. " Shhh, come down will you?. Nothing bad happened, I'm not going to let anything bad happened as long as I'm still alive Enzo is safe" he said assuring me. I felt at ease, I knew he wasn't bluffing. Anyways I scrubbed his body too. An hour later we got out of the shower, he wiped his

body and moisturised it then wore his boxers. I wiped mine and moisturised it then wore my panties, he said that I must not dress up since he was going to give me a whole body massage. I was lying on my chest, on top of the white bed sheet covers and he was on top of me literally sitting on my butt while massaging my shoulders and back. It felt so good I must admit. An hour later he was massaging my feet and I was sitting upright, my body felt at ease. " A massaging parlour, really" I asked chuckling. " What? It's not such a bad idea. I'll get my interior designer to work on it ASAP" He said so serious about the idea of a home massaging parlour. " And who's going to give who a message, I'd like to know" I said frowning. " We're going to give each other, I have a gym and a cinema, so why not a massage parlor. I could actually hire someone if massage me would be a problem for you" he said, " and you think that I'm going to let another woman have access to your body, you've got to be kidding me" I said not so smiling anymore. " So you don't want other women touching this...I thought sharing is caring. Since you go to church every Sunday, you should know more

about the goodness of sharing" he said leaving my feet and moving up to my upper body. " I can share everything in this world but not just you. You're mine alone Alonzo" I said looking at him" oh, really?" He asked putting his hands on my bare waist, mind you I was still wearing my panties only. "Really" I said firmly. " Guess what, the feeling is mutual" he said caressing my breasts. " Whatever idea is running through that dirty mind of yours better stop. I need some peaceful sleep tonight, no funny business" I said removing his hands. " You sure?" He asked. I nodded" very" I said. " You sure" he said then unexpectedly took my nipple into his mouth. " What are you doing" I asked giggling. " Try to make you horny as much as I am" he said looking into my eyes. " Just one round and then you can get all the sleep you want" he said. " Just one" I said. He then attacked me with a kiss, no questions asked. He was caressing my whole body, I had my fingers at the back of his head. He slipped his hand under my panties, I opened up my legs widely and he was massaging the bud in my valley of fire. We were French kissing, it was getting hot in there when I

heard Lore's voice crying...

Outside the door, "mommy" he said. I pulled out from the kiss and listened up carefully. "Come on" Salvatore said annoyed. "Mommy I'm scared" he screamed outside, I rushed to the closet and got dressed up into my night dress. "What is it baby?" I asked opening the door for him, he just rushed in and hugged my leg. "What happened, are you scared again?" I asked. "There's a monster in my room. I want to sleep with you" he said crying. "Lorenzo, there's no monster inside your room. Just go back and sleep" Salvatore said impatiently. "Papa please I want to sleep here" he said crying even more. "Shhh... it's okay, you're going to sleep with us tonight and then we're going to go and search for the monster tomorrow morning. Come" I said picking him up. He was wearing his PJs while carrying his Teddy bear. "Really Cora?" Salvatore said unbelievably. "I'm sorry baby, I'm going to make it up to you tomorrow" I said helplessly. Stuck between a rock and a hard place. "Whatever...Good night" he said getting undercovers so irritated. I put Lore in

between us and we went to sleep. Lorenzo holding on to my dress.

.

Might continue later on.

[6/10, 13:22] Lynne: Page 58

Cora's POV

I woke up around 8am, I was alone in bed. I rubbed my eyes yawning, went to the bathroom and took a few minutes shower. Put back my PJs, sleepers and gown. It was kind of cold and my PJs were comfortable and warm. I walked downstairs and found Lorenzo and Salvatore having breakfast, it was cornflakes with crunches and fruits. Lorenzo had made a mess Infront of him. He could hardly hold the spoon." Good morning guys...here" I said giving him a tea spoon and taking the spoon. " Good morning mommy" he said looking up at me.

Salvatore just kept quiet. " Okay..." I murmured softly and frowning. I took out two eggs from the refrigerator, green yellow and red pepper, butter and milk. Made myself a scrambled egg, two slices of

toast. Fried too Viennas , a glass of orange juice. took out a few fruits, washed them and put them in a side plate. I went and set in the living room, opened channel 325.

.

" Go upstairs and brush your teeth" I said to Lorenzo who just joined me on the couch. " I don't want to" he whined. " Lorenzo go to your room and brush your teeth" I said firmly. " No, no, no" he protested shaking his head. " Okay, I'll just tell your Papa then, do you still remember the whipping he gave you the last time you pulled a stunt like this" I said warningly. " I'm going" he said fastly. Alonzo was already upstairs, he came down later, car keys in his hand. He was wearing a golf t-shirt along with the shorts and sneakers then a jersey tied around his neck, hanging down his back. " Where are you going?" I asked but he just ignored me. I walked behind him until I caught up with him, yanked the car keys from him. " I asked you a question" I said looking him in the eyes. " Cora give me back my car keys" he said, I couldn't read his facial expression. " I'm not giving

you these until you answer my question, where are you going Alonzo?" I asked firmly. " Isn't it obvious?,you know what. I'll just take another car, you can keep those keys" he said walking towards the door that leads to the garage. Where all the keys were hanging but I ran there and took all the cars' keys. " What are you doing, you do not want me to get physical with you now, do you?" He said solemnly, and looking all shades of pissed. " Try me" I said gulping down the lump in my throat. " Okay, let's play this game" he said walking towards me. ' what to do Cora' my inner voice asked shit scared. The next thing I knew I had all the keys in my panties. " Do not come anywhere near me or else I'll scream" I said pointing at him with my index finger. " Scream all you want sweetheart, give me my keys" he said hovering over me. " I asked you a simple question, just answer that and then we'll be through with this" I said folding my arms. " I don't see a reason why I should answer to you, why should I?. Are you my wife, my mother or maybe my father?" He asked seriously. " I'm not your wife, not yet. I'm your future wife" I said so confidently that he chuckled a bit. "

Really?" He asked so cold but I had no time to go there, I didn't want to put an issue on top of the other. I wanted to resolve last night's issue. " Yes, now are you ready to answer my question" I said looking up at him. " Just give me the damn keys and stop uttering nonsense" he said rough pulling me closer to him by my pants. " Help, somebody help!" I screamed loudly then I've ever screamed, he got shocked and let go of me. " He's trying to force himself on me, help!" I screamed, he covered my mouth with his huge hand. " Are you crazy" he asked eyes popped out. " Mmh mmh" I murmured softly trying to remove his hand from my mouth. "

Attempted rape is such a huge offense. You could get jailed for two or a year at least. Imagine what those ruthless inmates would do to a gorgeous man like you, nc nc nc" I said shaking my head. " What the fuck is wrong with you?, Just give me the keys I'm already late because of you" he said angrily. " Baby wami,where are you going?" I asked smiling and putting my hands around his neck. He looked down at me unbelievably. " I'm going to play golf course in a golf course just 30 minutes away from here. I'm

meeting up with some potential investors" he said sighing heavily, " you see, that wasn't so hard. Communication is the key to every successful relationship out there. So when are you coming back" I asked. " For really?" He asked eyes popped out. " I'm just kidding...how did you like my acting?" I said giggling, he chuckled in relief. " Before I give you your keys about yesterday I'm sorry. I could not just leave Lorenzo crying outside the door in the middle of the night. I'm not heartless like you, try to understand" I said seriously. " We've discussed this a zillion times before but you always end up doing the same thing, and I have to bear the heat. You always open the door for him, he's gotta learn to sleep alone. It's not called being heartless it's called tough love. Try it sometimes" he said seriously. " He's just a little kid" I said defensively. " Exactly, if you don't not show him the right path from now. He'll spiral out of control ad he grows up. Just try to understand" he said. " Okay, I understand and for the third time I'm sorry. I promise it will never happen again" I said. " Don't make promises you can't fulfill, just try to be firm with him. Maybe once in a while" he said and I

nodded. " Can I have my car keys back" he asked extending his hand. " Take 'em" I said smiling so naughtily. " You gotta be kidding me" he said sighing then got his hands in my panties. He took them one by one, " see you later" he said kissing my lips then walking down the garage. " And Cora, make sure to wash those keys even Robinson uses them" he said chuckling. " Fuck you" I shouted laughing.

.

Amanda's POV

" Look how skinny my grandson is" Grace said referring to Leo who was 18 months old. Her and I never got along, although our flights weren't always verbal but deep down in my heart I knew she disliked me and I started to reciprocate. I wasn't about to be the good daughter in-law who just let her mother in-law walk all over her. I had my own uncivilized head, although it was like that we tried to get civilized with each other for Michael and Leo's sake. My blood pressure always managed to rise whenever Michael would raise the topic of us visiting his parents. My parents are still out there providing medical help but

we talk almost every day. Back to grace, his son loves her to bits. Sometimes I wondered if it was always like that or maybe Michael was feeling guilty of his brothers' deaths. I was doing my third year in physiotherapy. Leo is the best thing that had ever happened to me and to think that I almost terminated him kills me Every single day, whenever I look at him I remember that day clearly. every single detail is printed on my mind. He's his father's copy, all he got of me was the nose and hands nothing more. " What are you saying, he's perfectly fine" I said defensively. We were sitting by the pool under the umbrella and she was carrying Leo while Michael and his siblings and father were swimming. " You know nothing about taking care of toddlers, I understand it's your first time after all. And the fact that you never wanted a child very says it all" she kept on criticizing me. " I'm never going to hear the end of this, am I grace?" I asked shaking my head unbelievably. " What did I say now..." She asked acting all innocent. " Oh please just drop the act, we both know that you've never liked me. Ever since I stepped my foot in this house you've always found a

way to drag me down, tell you what it's not working. Try harder mother in-law. Your son is mine you, get over it" I said angrily. " What are you saying Amanda?, I've done nothing but love you . I treat you like my own daughter and this is how you thank me?" She asked crying out loud. Thus drawing everybody's attention to us. " What's going on here, mom why are you crying" Michael asked getting out of the swimming pool. " Mom why are you crying?" Michael asked again looking at her. " Amanda what happened?" He asked once again, everybody was standing Infront of us. " Your wife is insulting me Mike, in my own home" she said so dramatically that a stranger would have believed her, but I guessed they all believed her because they turned their attention to me. " Amanda why did you insult my mom?" Michael asked so angrily. " Wow!..." I exclaimed eyes popped out. " Insult your mother?, You know what it's good that you asked. I think it's about time we talked about all the nonsense I had to bare." I snapped so upset. His question could have been like' Amanda is it true or better yet 'Amanda wouldn't do that mother.'

" What nonsense are you talking about?" He asked. " Your mother's nonsense" I shouted taking my son from Grace. " She has been breathing down my neck ever since you introduced me as your girlfriend. To think that I thought my parents were worse than Yours makes me feel so disgusted with myself. I thought that her opinion about me would change after Leo was born or when we got married. But things just got worse and I've had enough of it, she's always complaining about the way I dress, how skimpy my clothes are, how I cook. I know I am a bad cook but has she ever tried to teach me?, No right?. If it's not that then it's the way I'm not taking good care of you, like hell?. Am I your servant or wife. Should I feed you, change your diaper. Are you a kid, who took care of you before I came into your life. Whoever it is, was clearly doing a great job. Hire that person back because I am fed up of your mother's complaints. And then it has to be my son, I know I'm a very good mother to my son. I have no doubt about that, she has to comment on how skinny he looks. One last thing I am fucking tired of hearing about the abortion stuff, she's always reminding me that I

never wanted a child. Like hell I do not know that, who knows that story better than me?. And I have noticed Michael, I have been noticing how you just brush most of her criticism. Where else I Wait for your support, I'm human too. I have feelings and she has been hurting them for a long time now. I'm fed up, you should have asked first before accusing me of insulating your mother but I guess blood is thicker than water" I spoke my mind then Waltzed inside the house to pack my bags and Leo's bag. He was crying and I was crying too while packing. There was nothing much there to pack just a few clothes for the weekend. " Can we talk" Michael asked entering the room. I carried my bags and then my son, took the car keys in the TV stand. He was standing on the door way, " move!" I screamed at him. " I'm not going anywhere until we talk about this" he said so manly. " Michael i said move" I repeated warningly. " I think you and my mother should resolve this and... let's just say he was never ready for the slap that followed next. " You're not going anywhere with my son, you're in no state to drive. Just calm down and put the clothes back inside" he said so unshaken by

the slap i gave him. " I am in no state to drive?, Huh. You feel that I might get into a car accident while with your son, right?. If you're so concerned about your son then why don't you take him, maybe you and your mean mother would raise him up better than I am. Here take him" I said angrily shoving the baby at him. " Amanda, that's not what I meant and you know that" he said behind me as I was ascending down the stairs. " Mandy let's talk about this as a family" his father said as I took the gate and garage remote control. " Not now father" I said walking towards the garage. I opened it and got into the car then reversed outside. Opened the gate and then I was out of her suffocating home. Michael was busy calling after me the entire time. I wanted to just be alone, there is no better place than home for that.

.

Cora's POV

I made dinner last night, I was not good in cooking as much as my Salvatore is but it still tasted good. Over the past two years I've learned to prepare a few Italian dishes and others. I made Mutton stew and

pap and a few salads, it was OK. the four of us had dinner, Petunia included. She offered to wash the dishes afterwards and I Washed Lorenzo then read him a bedtime story. He didn't bother us last night so we snacked on each other until we got tired. I slept like a kid in such a long time. I was woken up by the loud voices coming from downstairs. I checked the time in my iPhone S5 which he bought for me during my birthday last year. It was 10am. Salvatore was not in bed, I Washed my face and mouth before going downstairs. I found Salvatore shouting at Nina. " You are going to sign this agreement Nina, like it or not. This should be easy for you. It's not like you love my son, you're just using him as a pawn to extract money from me" he shouted so angrily. " Hello nana, it's good that you're here. Try to talk some sense into his thick head" she said sarcastically. She never stopped calling me nana like I was a small kid. " What's going on here? " I asked. " Your boyfriend here is trying to get me to sign a contract that states that Mongezi spends ten days with me while he spends twenty with you. Now tell me, is that fair?" She asked arms folded around his chest. " I have no

idea what's fair or what's not but one thing I know for sure I'm going to be the first one to apply for Lore's sole custody in court. And then you're going to lose him, with your drugs problem I doubt that the judge is even going to give you a chance to speak. You disappear for weeks and then come back later, you're confusing the child. I doubt that you still have that nursing job. Just sign the damn contract, at least you still get to see your son" I said then yawning after that. " Tell your little bitch to shut up OK!. What does she—..." What did you just say?" Alonzo asked walking towards her and she was walking in reverse. " Joaquin, there's no need for that. She's Lorenzo's mom" I said standing up and getting in between them. " I don't care if she's Lorenzo's mom or grandma, she has no right to insult you like that" he said fuming. " I've got used to her saying that, it doesn't affect me at all. Think of her as a mad woman, it gets easier that way" I said putting my hands on his chest. " What?, A mad woman." She asked chuckling. " You're definitely right, she's crazy. Just sign the fucking agreement Nina. One last thing, I don't want you stupid boyfriend anywhere near my

son's apartment. If I ever see him again, I swear I'll put a bullet through his black skull" he said through gritted teeth. " Try doing that and you'll know what the cops are for" she said not backing down. " If you think that I'm scared of the cops then you clearly don't know who I am. I own the damn cops sweetheart" he said so scary. His facial expression was of that when I chased him out of my apartment a few years ago. " Can I have my son back" she asked acting so bravely but I saw it in her eyes she was shut scared. " Petunia bring down Lorenzo " I called out, I wanted her to leave before shit went down. Petunia ascended down the stairs with Lorenzo who was busy talking. " let me go and get my bag" Petunia said putting Lorenzo down then walking towards her room. Which was down the stairs. " Mongezi come to mommy" Nina said spread her arms with a smile which looked so foreign to her. " No, I don't want to go" Lorenzo protested holding on to my leg. " Go with her, papa will come a get you next week. Okay?, He'll buy you that big car you've always wanted" I tried to have a nice baby talk with him but he just shook his head and Cried. " No, don't

want to go. Please don't let me go with her mommy" he cried shaking his head and clinging onto my neck. " Lorenzo, it's only for a couple of days. She's going to buy you sweets. Isn't it Nina" I asked looking at her after picking him up. " Yes, I'm going to buy you chocolates. Just come with me Mongezi" Nina said trying to be patient but she looked more impatient instead. " No, I don't want to go with Nina mom, I want to stay with my mom and Papa" he protested holding on tight to me. Yes he called her ' Nina mom' . Nina swiftly walked towards us and tried to take him forcefully, the kid was kicking and shrugging his whole body. " Papa, she's bad. Please don't let her take me" he cried out loud for his papa who was just walking up and down. " Mongezi, yeka lelwabishi oyenzayo" she cursed giving him a few slaps on his body and one across his face. My arm too got the slap. " Nina, stop it. You can't hit a kid like that" I said shielding Lorenzo away from her. " And who are you to tell me what to do, why don't you give birth to your own child and then you can start commenting on how I should treat mine. Give birth to your own child Nana and stop snatching away other people's kids.

My child even calls your little ass mommy, just imagine" she said trying to get hold of Mongezi. " Stop it" Salvatore shouted holding her holding her back from us. " Get your filthy hands off me" she screamed shrugging violently. "Shut up before I slap you" Salvatore shouted. " Do it, what's stopping you?" She shouted back. Actually almost received a slap, " stop it" I shouted. " Just stop OK, there's a child here" I added then walked upstairs with the crying Lore.

.

10 minutes later I had managed to calm him down. " Shhh, you're not going anywhere. She's not going to take you, I'm not going to let her. Okay" I said comforting him. He was lying on my thighs and I was sitting on bed, brushing his head. Salvatore walked in and set down on the edge of the bed. " She left, after she signed the agreement. I'm sorry you had to deal with that" he said, he had his back on us. " Is he okay?" He asked turning around. " He'll survive, I think a short drive to an ice cream store would make him feel better. Let me go and take a shower" I said

standing up . He was already sleeping. I was so upset that I didn't feel like talking. Nina must have got used to just slapping him, maybe that's why he refused to go with her.

[6/10, 13:22] Lynne: Page 59

Amanda's POV

.

" I'm going to ask you again, what are you still here" I asked Michael who God knows how he got into my house but I was startled by his presence as I woke up. He was sitting on the couch opposite to my bed " Can we talk?" he asked so chilled while I was grilling inside. " Talk?, No I don't think so but speak yes, you can speak" I said chuckling unbelievably. After such a long time he finally wanted to talk if he wasn't aware of his mother's behavior. Michael is such a smart man, I'm damn sure he noticed but just chose to ignore. " To say that I didn't notice how hostile my mother can be to you would be a lie, I just didn't think that it was that deep. You didn't seem that much affect by her behavior at—..." Wow, just wow. So if I

didn't burst out you would not have budged. You would have waited for the situation to 'affect' me. How funny, you're so hilarious" I said angrily and sarcastic. " I'm sorry Amanda, but please try to understand. Hear me out first...I didn't want to break my mother's heart, in the process of trying to avoid doing that I ended up breaking yours and I apologize for that. I just didn't want her to feel that I was drifting away from her, she sees me as her older son since my brothers passed away. I just wanted to be there for her, after what happened... it was all my fault, I feel obligated to meet each and every one of her wishes, make her happy. I know I've not been the best husband to you but I promise to change all that...I talked to mother, let's fix everything as a family. " He explained sincerely. " I don't know Michael, your mother has insulted me enough, I don't know if this could be fixed. I'll just stay away from her, you and Leo can go and visit them. I'll just stay behind, stay away. In that way there won't be anything arguing, there it is, problem solved. " I said looking, and fidgeting with my fingers. " Don't do that Mandy, running away from your problem does

not cut it, let's go home and fix things. She promised to be at her best behavior. You not being there ... it'll not feel like home. it's not a normal way of living...we will talk things out... If not for me then please do this for our son, Leon" he said, making me feel some sort of guilt, I reluctantly agreed. I'd do anything for Leo, anything.

.

Cora's POV

It has been two weeks since that Nina drama, Salvatore went to Durban as planned. Salvatore being Salvatore left with Lorenzo and there was nothing Nina could do about it. I recently found out, we talk but not that much. I haven't went home since that time, it was a Saturday and I was on my way there. I needed to get some laundry done. I got there around 10am, the securities opened up for me and I drove in. Parked in the garage and walked up. The house was spotless clean, all thanks to Mary. Salvatore's clothes ironed and hanged in the walk in closet perfectly. I changed into bum shorts and Salvatore's shirt. I did my laundry, it took me two

hours. I rested for a while and then ironed later on.

I prepared pasta and sauce, covered in extra cheese.

There wasn't that much food in the house, which reminded me to do some shopping. I ate while watching a nice movie, I felt so lonely. I decided to

call Mandy, " my bitch!" she screamed childishly. "

Are you trying to deafen me?" I asked startled. "

Sorry...so what's up?" She asked, she sounded so happy. While I was bored, I missed Salvatore.

Missed the old day, I didn't miss him because he has been away for two weeks but we haven't been

having so much fun. It was always school work with me and him the new hotel Paradisé being built in

Durban. Plus taking care of two restaurants, a bar and a hotel but constantly checking up on the NGO

and the orphanage wasn't that easy. Gosh I didn't realize how much trouble he had on his plate until I

mentioned it all. " Hey, I was wondering if you could

maybe help me with the grocery shopping tomorrow morning?" I asked with my fingers crossed. "

tomorrow morning?, I'll have to check with my

husband. But I highly doubt that I'd be able to make

it" she said, sounding so occupied. " Okay, it's okay... it's not a problem" I said so disappointed. " You know what, screw my husband. I'll be there around 7am. Be ready by then" she said all of a sudden. " Ohh OK, what made you change your mind?" I asked surprised. " I figured since we haven't been spending much time together you must be missing my fine ass" she said. " Euw that's so lesbian" I said . " I must be missing my ex girlfriend then" she said then laughed out loud, I couldn't help but laugh too. " Mike will kill you if he ever hear you say that" I said chuckling. " He wouldn't be able to...he has that tiny soft spot when it comes to me. If he does then he will end up committing suicide" she said playfully, " Mmh" that's all I said, a part of that made me think of my Joaquin. " So confide...look I'll talk to you later. There's an in coming call. Bye" I said then answered the call. " Joaquin" I said, half smiling. " Il mio cuero batte" he said so deeply. His voice still managed to make my heart skip a bit. " How are you doing today" he asked. " But you asked me that question earlier today" I said frowning. " And I am asking you now"he said a little bit firm but sweet. " I miss you" after

some time of silence. " When are you coming back home" he asked. " I miss you too" he said shortly. " We both miss you" he included Lorenzo in that, who must have been sleeping at that time because it was around 7pm. " I can't wait for the holidays so that we can spend as much time together without any disturbance" he said. " We should come there, spend some nights on the sea shore. Make love on top of the Jeep" I said. " And here I was thinking that you're missing me but instead you miss my giant cucumber" he said, almost making me shoke . " No, that's not true and you know it" I said smiling, but sounding so serious. " Ohh is it?" He asked. He must have been frowning." yeah" I said. " Really?.." he kept on pushing. " Okay, maybe I miss your dick too. So what?, It's still a part of you" I said, my cheeks must have turned crimson red. " Finally! She admits, what are you eating there" he asked. " Nothing, who told you I was eating" I asked. " Who are you trying to fool...I can hear your moans and the way you shoke" he said, " do you have to know me so well?" I asked rolling my eyes. " And now you must be rolling you tiny eyes" he said. " Damn you" I said kiddingly, he

chuckled a bit. We talked for hours, I even went to bed still talking to him. I can't remember hanging up, I must have fell asleep while we were still talking. I was woken up by the ringing doorbell. I was startled to the point where I fell off bed and hit my butt on the ground. " Ouch!" I exclaimed getting up. I put on my gown then rushed downstairs. I opened up and it was Amanda, who almost strangled me upon seeing me still in my PJs. " Sorry" I said. " Really?" She asked Walking towards me and I, walking backwards. " I must have missed the alarm" I said. " You're still here?, Talking?, Get your fat ass upstairs and get ready. I can't trust that nanny with my child" she said. " Good morning to you too" I said on my way upstairs. " Hurry up Coh" she exclaimed. The time was 9 am when we got into the mall. " Missing another Sunday service?" She asked frowning at me, as we were shopping at picknpay. " What?, I'm tired. This too is important" I said shrugging my shoulders. " You must be really tired" she said giggling. " No... what's on your mind, whatever is. You better drop it" I said warningly. " Come on it's OK to live a little... besides that I didn't say anything" she said, sealing her lips

with her thumbs. " I know you Amanda, I know what exactly is going on in that dirty mind of yours" I said. " I was just kidding..." She said laughing. " But Coh, tell me a bit more about Dr Francis" She said, nagging me. " Amanda stop it" I said shaking my head" I'd never cheat on Salvatore, never" I said solemnly. " Even if he cheats?" She asked. " I'd never do that to him, between the two of us. I think I love him more than i love myself" I said. " What happens if he dies?" she asked. " Don't say that!" I said fastly and warningly. " He's not the type to die" I added. " He wouldn't do that to me" I said feeling so emotional all of a sudden. " Relax, I was just testing you" she said patting my shoulder. " Yeah... let's finish shopping. I'm starving" I said taking the tin of coffee. We finished shopping for food around 1:30pm. And then went to fisher ways for brunch, ordered sea food. " Would you cheat on Michael" I asked as we were eating. " No, why would you ask me that. That man would bury me alive" she said eyes popped out. " Is it because you love him or because you fear him" I asked frowning. " I can't decide really" she said thoughtfully. " Amanda!" I

exclaimed. " I'm just kidding, OK look. My kind of love with Michael is not that Type of one with Romeo and Juliet or rose and Jack or Bonnie and Clyde or Cinderella and Prince charming or Alonzo and Cora...—" what?, No. You're crazy" I said chuckling unbelievably. " I'm serious here, I've seen you guys. How you look at each other, how you hold each other, how you sneak around just so you could sex each other. It's like you can't get enough" she said. " That's not false but —..." No but, let me finish... Michael and I have about 70%of that kind of fire, I know if I was asked to choose between him and our son it would be hard but I'd finally choose my son. He loves me enough to take a bullet for me but death?, I don't think so. The fact that he has not cheated on me yet says a lot, he's my true love. But we have had our selfish mistakes. I don't ever dream of cheating on him but I swear if he does, I'd take my revenge the same way. An eye for an eye." She said. " I'm crazy about him, heaven knows how much I love that ugly guy but I won't tolerate shit" she emphasized on that. " We all have some selfishness in us. It's OK to be selfish sometimes" I said smiling.

" Except you, I've never seen you being selfish Cora. You're so d

Good that I feel like slapping you sometimes" she said solemnly. " Why?" I asked frowning. " I just don't want to see you get hurt, that's all. Good people often gets hurt" she said looking me in the eyes. " I'm not that good you know, I have my share of mistakes... enough of this intense conversation. Let's finish up, I forgot to buy a few things" I said sighing heavily. " Cora!" She said whining. " My feet hurts" she complained. " Come on, it's just sanitary products and make up. Down at clicks" I said.

.

I was standing Infront of the shelves with makeup kits, undecided. There were some new stuffs I wanted to try out. " Starlight" I heard a voice say. But didn't budge and then it hit me, ' starlight?' prostitution. I turned around and saw a girl I didn't recognize. " Starlight, wow. You look so fabulous...we thought you died" she said hugging me. My eyes were just popped up. Palms sweaty, heart racing. " Sorry, do I know you" I asked. Amanda was

just frowning beside me. " I'm Wave, one of the Don's girl. You must not remember me, but I remember you. Code Number 05 of rank 5. I was in rank 4. How have you been holding up?" She asked looking so excited. " I felt so dizzy, my head spinning. I didn't recognize her but from what she said I could tell that she knew me very well, I was damned.' Think Cora think' my inner voice screamed helplessly. " There must be a misunderstanding here, I'm sure you'll find star what so ever. I'm not starlight, excuse me" I said waltzing to the exit like a mad woman. " Wait, wait" she was busy calling after me. Amanda was just right behind me. I got into the passengers seat and she got into the drivers seat. " What's wrong, What happened?" She asked after closing the door. " Drive, just drive. Get me out of here" I snapped angrily and scared. " OK OK, Geez" she said then Drove off, " stop the car" I said as we were just a few kilometers from home. She did just that. I got out quickly and puked on the side of the road, I was feeling so nauseous, it must've been because of my racing heart. " What happened Cora?" She asked offering me a bottle of water. I rinsed my mouth and washed

my face. " It's not safe here, let's talk at home" I said walking inside the car. 15 minutes later we were inside the house. She was helping me unpack the groceries. " Are you going to tell me or not" she asked holding my hand. I set down on the high chair and she joined me. " That woman who was hugging me knows me, she's one of the prostitutes. We worked for the same man. My life is in danger, I'm sure The Don will know that I am alive. Probably knows, he's a smart man, the escape plan wasn't full proof. I should have changed my looks, he will find me. Give me to the dogs or sell me." I explained, I didn't realize that I was crying until I felt my warm tears running down my neck. " let me call Salvatore and tell him about this" she said taking her phone from the table. " No, don't...I can't keep on running to Salvatore whenever I face a problem. I'll be fine, besides he has his bodyguards protecting me" I said wiping off my tears. " Cora, he's the only one who could help you out of this mess, you have to tell him. This man could kidnap you or worse kill you" she said looking more scared than I was. " No, Amanda please. I'll be just fine, I don't want to bother

Salvatore. He's already stressed with the back to back meetings plus Lorenzo being there. He can be naughty sometimes" I said smiling a bit. " Isn't Petunia with them?" She asked. " She is but that kid is unstoppable. He's persistent, just like his father... Tell you what, I'll tell him when he comes back. I'll tell him to tell his men to keep a close eye on me" I said holding her hand tightly. "Promise?", She asked worriedly. " I promise" I said " Go back home Amanda, I'll also be leaving in a few minutes" I said looking at the time it was almost five in the evening. " I'm scared Cora, what if I leave you alone and then something happens to you. I still think you should tell sa—..." Amanda we talked about this, go home. You husband must be furious. I'll be fine, I promise" I said. " Call me when you get to your apartment, okay" she said solemnly. " For the fifth time, I will. Go now, thanks again for the company and for helping me pack my bags" I said smiling. " be safe, we'll talk later" she said walking out of our bedroom. " See you next weekend" I said. She turned back and waved. Minutes later I followed her with my two suitcases of clothes. I put them in my car. And then went back in

and took the plastics of goodies I had bought for myself. I took my handbag and phone. Locked the door after closing all the windows and then got into my car, my phone rang just when I was reversing out of the garage. " Cora I've been calling You for the past three hours, why aren't you picking up my calls?" He asked sounding worried rather than angry. " I'm sorry, I just got back from the mall, and then I fell asleep on the couch. My phone was not with me" I explained , I lied and I hated it. " Is there something you must tell me?" He asked but it was as if he knew something. " No, why" I asked chuckling weirdly. I horned at the security after driving out. " Where are you driving to?" He asked." My apartment" I said. " Anyways, I might come back sooner than expected" he said. " Why, is everything OK?." I asked. " No, it's nothing. My man tells me you went for shopping with Amanda today" he said. " Yeah I did—" I said but then there was silence, like he was waiting for me to say something. " Ohh, Lorenzo wants to say Hi" he said, " hello?" Lorenzo said with a tiny voice." Hi my boy, is papa treating you well there?. Did he buy you ice-cream and sweet, what about chips and

oranges?" I asked all at once. We talked for a while. I hunged up when I joined the main road. I promised him that we'd talk later but I knew that he'd have long fallen asleep by the time I get to my apartment. I took a long body soothing shower as soon as I got there. Prepared a snack and then got started with my reports, I got Amanda's call around 10pm. Shit I had forgotten to call her, she scolded me a bit. We talked for about five minutes and then I went back to what I was doing. I was woken up by Salvatore's call, realized that I had fallen asleep while sitting on my study desk. " Il mio cuero batte" he said. I looked at the time, it was 2am. " Babe" I said walking towards the bed, I threw myself in bed. " Are you OK?" He asked. " Yes, I am fine." I said feeling so sleepy. " Why do you ask" I added. " You promised Lorenzo that you'd call but you didn't. You usually call, what happened?. Are you okay" he asked once again. " Alonzo, I'm fine. I promise you, I'm just tired. I need to get some sleep if you don't mind" I said yawning. " ohhk, will see you soon. Take care of yourself" he said sounding a bit hurt. " Joaquin?...I love you" I said . " I love you, go to sleep" he said then hung up

on me. I set up an alarm then drifted off to sleep. I woke up around 6 am and got ready for the hospital. I wore my black Adidas tracksuits and comfy sneakers, spending twelve hours working wasn't an easy thing. I had to make sure that I wore comfortable clothes and my diet was balanced. That I had my breakfast, I made myself a bowl of oats crunches filled with slices of various types of fruits. I went to the hospital, it was hard to concentrate there but I tried my best. We had examinations coming up, I had to study even harder. Finally it was seven pm, time for me to leave.

.

I got there within 10 minutes. Unlocked the door and walked in. Closed the door behind me and locked. " Shit!...what are you doing here." I asked, my heart thundering. " Hi" he said smiling and walking towards me. " You almost gave me a heart attack" I said shaking my head. He pulled me in for a hug. " You were serious about coming back earlier than anticipated" I stated, inhaling his intoxicated Cologne. " I missed you" I said. He hasn't said a word,

I pulled back and looked at him. " Aren't you going to say something?" I asked frowning. " Let's go and take a shower together, you must be tired. I just want to hold you tightly until I fall asleep" he said holding my face from both sides. He was acting a bit strange or maybe it was me. We did just that, snuggled up against each other until we fell asleep.

.

He was looking at me when I opened up my eyes early in the morning. " Hi" he said, removing the strands of hair from my face. " Hi" i said smiling. " What time is it?" I asked taking my phone under the pillow. It was 5 am, I still had an hour to spare. " I know Cora" he said dead serious." you know what?" I asked, suddenly feeling hot. " This is the second time you've hid something from me. Do you sometimes feel that I'm a nuisance, a pest. Always on your business?" I asked looking up at the ceiling. " I just didn't want to stress you, that's all. You've done so much for me, im just tired of bothering you with my problems. " I said holding his hand while sitting upright like he was. " And no, I don't feel like that,

and you know it. There are just somethings I need to take of, myself. I'm sorry I didn't let you know. But I was going to tell you, somehow I knew that you knew already. You didn't need me telling you" I said looking at him while he was looking up. " I knew?, I wanted you to tell me. It would have been good to hear about it from you" he said, I couldn't read his facial expression, I guess his emotions. " I'm sorry Alonzo, you have a lot to deal with. I don't want to add up to that, try to understand..." I said." that's why I am here, to take care of your problems. You know I'd do absolutely anything for you, please don't ever hide things from me." He said looking at me. I nodded, " I've added two more bodyguards to look after you" he said. " And I've got a request to ask you" he said, tightening his grip on me. " What is it?" I asked. " On second thought, I'll let you know later. The security has been tightened up at home. You're going to need a passcode to unlock the door to the house. I'll walk you through the details later. You must get ready or else you'd be late" he said so fast that there are somethings I failed to understand. " What happened, has The Don called you or done

something?" I asked kneeling in bed, right Infront of him, so that I could see his face. " Not yet, I can't seat back and wait for him to make a move. Let's just say something big is coming and we must be one step ahead, be ready" he said smiling a bit. I was shit scared. " No need to get scared, I'm here" he said.

[6/10, 13:22] Lynne: Page 60

Cora's POV

.

I came back from the hospital around 7:20

Salvatore was not there but his bag was still there which meant he might come back, plus he said we needed to talk. To be honest with you, I was curious and impatient the whole day. I took a quick shower, wore my PJs. Went to the canteen and made myself some coffee, with two slices of brown bread buttered. Set down and ate, went back upstairs when I was done eating.

Got started with my studying, it was around 9pm when I heard a knock on the door. " Who's there?" I

asked walking towards the locked door. " It's me" I heard him say. " Who's me?" I asked purposefully just to get under his skin. " Are you serious?" He asked. " I'm going to ask you again, who are you?" I said giggling inside. " I could just break down this door and then you'll see. He said. I unlocked the door and opened up, " introduce yourself" I said giggling. " Fuck you" he said walking inside and locking the door. " Using a foul language on a lady is Considered rude where I come from" I said folding my arms around my chest. He was carrying two brown bags, he put them on my study desk. The only table there, " but it's OK for the lady to use it, don't you think that's gender stereotyping?" he asked walking towards me. I was leaning on the wall. " Show some respect and stop whimpering like a kid" I said rolling my eyes. He held my waist, " would you just stop talking and kiss your man. I missed you" he said making me blush. I pulled him over and we kissed, he lifted me up. Hands under my ass, my arms around his neck. He walked with me towards the bed, threw me on the bed. Everything was happening so fast, must be because we haven't had any sexual intercourse for a

long time. My PJs and panties were somewhere on the floor along with his clothes. He was on top of me, my heart thundering under his flesh. He was caressing my body. His muscles have become more thick I noticed. He had his usual hairy chest waxed, it was strange seeing his bare chest but it turned me on even harder. My hands were running all over his strong shoulders and back. He paused and looked at me for a few. "What?" I murmured softly. "I love you Cora" he said then started to kiss me again. Not giving me a chance to respond, he was suck my nipples so hard that it actually become a little bit painful but damn it felt so good. He was wild that night, he planted wet kisses all over my body like I was some goddess and he was the devotee. I Washed as he went down with the kisses, tenderising and slowly kissing my inner thigh until he kissed the mould of my valley of fire. Good thing that it was recently shaved. He unwarningly inserted his finger. I gasped a bit, my eyes popped out. He started to lick me good with his mouth, teasing my soft bud with his tongue. Go my back arching when he pulled my but into his mouth and held it in a bit. I

was holding on tightly to the sheets. I could feel the blood rush to my brain, right there and then it became unfunctional. My hand grabbed on to his hair tightly, he came back up and kissed me so that I could taste myself. He yet again unwarningly inserted his giant cucumber into my valley of fire. I gasped and moved up, he pulled me back in. Even today, his dick still spreads my walls widely. He thrust in and out, my hand rubbing my own bud. It was shit hot, he increased his pace, like a stallion. I was vulnerable under him. I could feel my juices building up, my body started to shake violently and then I came. He fucked me through that and then came after a long time. My pussy was burning up, the second session was under the shower and then another one on the floor. We finally rested around 1:30 am. I was laying on his chest, we were lying on the carpet, naked. " That was insane" I said smiling. " I hope our sex life stays like that for years and years to come" I added, looking at him in the eyes. " We'll see" he said. " You Had a request to make" I stated. " Ohh that" he said. " What is it?" I asked frowning." How do I say this... just try not to get upset with me.

I have no choice but to do this" he said weirdly. " Ohkay...what is it" I asked. " I have realized that my son and his mother are not safe living in that location. I don't want anything to happen to them especially Lorenzo, I know that this may sound crazy to you but I have to make sure that Nina is also safe. For Enzo's sake, I don't want him growing up without his mother. Or end up blaming me for her death, a war has begun so I was wondering if we could let Nina stay with us" he said, I could hear him but I couldn't fathom. " You're kidding right?, Nina? In our house. No, there's no way I am going to let that women walk into my house. the answer is no!" I said firmly. " Cora, this is a matter of life and death. Try not to get your emotions involved in this. Think straight" he said imploding "So now I must just become a robot, emotionless?. After all that women has done to me, to us. You're still requesting me to welcome her into my house, isn't that just selfish of you?" I asked getting up and walking away from him. " I know Cora, I know OK. For Lorenzo's sake please let's do this, I don't want my son growing up without his mother like I did and I am sure you don't want

that too" he said, that felt like emotional blackmail to me but at some point he was right. I wanted the best for Lore, I'd do anything just to see him happy. " The reality will always find a way to hit me Salvatore isn't it, ain't I a good mother to your son. Haven't I been a good mother to Lorenzo?" I asked after wearing my short. My vest in my hands. " It's not that Cora, you know it's not. You're the best mother I could have asked for for our son. But I also think he deserves to grow up knowing his biological mother. Please try to understand, you won't even get to see Nina. She'll be living in the backyard guests house with the securities and drivers. She'll move back to her apartment once it's all over, I promise" he said holding my hands after throwing away my vest. I nodded slowly, my heart was busy telling me to refuse, a part of my brain saying' that's his house' some other part saying' brace yourself for the worst'. The most naïve, friendly angelic part of me which always tried to see goodness in everything saying' maybe It's about time you and Nina tried to get along for Lorenzo's sake besides she's not that bad'. I took my vest and dressed up, " if she tries any of her

tricks on you I swear I am going to kill her. And if I ever catch you staring at her the way you stare at me then I'ma cut your balls off" I said fixing the bed, more like changing the covers. " Is that a yes" he asked. " YES, You can bring your drama queen into our home but if anything should happen. The blame is on you" I said getting undercovers.

He wore his boxers and got undercovers, I had my back on him. " Good night" I said. " I'm sorry to disturb your peace, but I promise you won't even see her face" he said. " don't make promises you won't be able to keep Salvatore, we both know how Nina can be. I don't want any broken promises, now if you'd excuse me. I need to sleep" I said then set up an alarm. " Good night my heart beat" he said cuddled up to me. I would just turn around and strangle him if I could. He put me in such a compromising situation, to tell you the truth I sometimes wished I had never met him. The love I have for me, makes me do crazy things sometimes. I'd do absolutely anything for his sake, during our first meeting I remember myself saying that ' he

could ask me to hang myself and I'd do it happily'. If that's not insane then I don't know what would be. He was no longer there when my alarm clock rang. His presence was replaced by a written note that said " DON'T BOTHER LOOKING FOR ME BECAUSE YOU WON'T FIND ME" I smiled while looking at it. The same words I had written the first day we shared a bed. I took a quick shower, dressed up and grabbed breakfast in the canteen before driving to the hospital. I was feeling sleepy through out the whole day. " Hey Cora, wait up" Dawn called after me, I was walking towards the cafeteria. It was break time. " What's up?" I asked as She caught up with me, she was a gynaecology student just like me. " We're going out to party tonight, actually we were wondering if you would like to join us. It's Siddhartha's birthday" she said as we were walking. " Ohh, you guys enjoy. I have a lot of work to do. I need to finish the last syllabus in some of my books" I said as we were picking up the plates. " I thought you did that last night" she said as we were dishing. " No, actually something came up" I said. " Something came up or someone came up?" She said. " What do

you mean" frowning. " We saw Mr Salvatore's car last night" she said smiling knowingly. " ohh" that's all I said. " Speaking of Mr Salvatore, could you please ask him to give my cousin's CV a look. Actually she's a graduate student in hospitality and management but she has not been able to get a decent job ever since she graduated. So one day we were talking and your boyfriend's name happened to pop up and I told her I know you.. " she handed me the brown envelope she has been carrying the entire time. Kept on talking, "I think your cousin must submit her CV to one of Salvatore's restaurants. I doubt she's going to get any job, there are no job openings there." I said pushing the envelope to her as we had just set down. " Come on Cora, if you talk to him for sure he'll hire my cousin. Please" she said. " Look Dawn, I'm not that kind of girl. Your cousin must go out there and look for a lion for herself. " I said firmly. " OK but would you enlighten your man about her just a bit,even if it's a cleaning job. I've heard that the cleaners there get paid more than some other Restaurant's cooks" she said. " I'll see, what I can do" I said sighing heavily then ate my

food. Some people just liked things handed over to them in a silver platter while some of us have to work hard. I wasn't going to say shit to Salvatore. I said that just to get her off my back.

.

Friday evening, Salvatore and I were going on a dinner date. Actually he called me up told me I should get ready but he bought a new dress for me. So there we were, in the back of his limousine holding each other's hands. He was wearing a dark blue tuxedo, formally with a dark blue bow tie, black shoes and a crispy white shirt. And I was wearing a white long mid-leg tight dress, off shoulder. And dark blue glittering 6 inch stilettos. My hair neatly fixed into a pony tail, cherry red lipstick all in all we looked good. " Where are you taking me tonight" I asked glancing at him. " Hotel Paradisé" he said. " Owhhh" I said, a little bit disappointed I guess. " You're disappointed ain't you?." He asked Laughing. " No, it's just that. I've been there a million times before. I was hoping for something new... Hotel Paradisé if the greatest hotel I've ever been to but..."

I said sighing. " You'll love it tonight" he said smiling and holding my hand towards his mouth and kissing it. We got there within no time, parked underground. Robinson opened the door for us and we got out. The Asher welcomed us with a smile, we walked in and took the elevator up to his. Penthouse suite, he opened the door for me. The lights were dimmed, actually the whole house was changed a bit. There was more red in there. Red balloons on the floor petals on the white couches. The dining table cloth was white, a few red petals dropped on it. A table of various kinds of dishes on the side, a bottle of champagne on ice. I walked towards the bedroom, drawn by the candles lights, white bedcovers, a bouquet of red tulips on the corner of the bed. Red petals all over the bed. Candles almost kept on leading me to the bathroom. Where there was a filled with water bathingtub, white bubbles covering the top and yet another rose petals, candles around the bathingtub tub. " Is it Valentine's day again" I asked as I felt him breathing down my neck. Holding my tiny waist, actually his hands were somewhere on my pussy. " I thought you'd like this" he whispered

into my ear. " I love it, it's almost feels like heaven. It's beautiful" I said. " I'm glad you do after all I didn't sleep preparing all this" he said, I could tell that he was smiling even though I couldn't see his face. " You did all this?, For me?" I asked turning around to face him. He nodded," you didn't have to go through all this trouble, after all it's just dinner" I said looking around. " Let's go and eat" he said clearing his throat, actually he was acting weirdly that night. ' Am I missing something' my inner self asked frowning.

.

Narrated

.

He pulled out a chair for her and served her with dinner and then served her self. " Are you dying?" She asked worried. " What?, No. Why would you even think that?" He asked chuckling. " Nothing" she said. Then concentrated on his food. They had their dinner in silence, he was eating slowly. His heart thundering, palms sweaty. He poured two glasses of champagne and offered her one. " It's non alcoholic"

he said smiling. " Thanks, you look extra handsome tonight. I must say" she said. He smiled a bit, " Thank you, you don't look bad yourself" he said, she just chuckled. " We should toast to that... there to not looking so bad and to looking extra handsome" she said giggling. " To new beginnings" he said. " Cheers" she said, one eyebrow raised. They finished eating. " It's been a long time since we shared a dance... can I have this dance" he said playing music on his radio. Connected with Bluetooth to his phone. He played their song. " my pleasure" she said giggling and giving him her hand while standing up. They danced slowly, her head on his chest, one of his hands on her waist. One of her hands on his shoulder, the other hands intertwined together. She was listening to his heart beat reciprocating with hers. He was nervous about what he was about to do next, what if she refused totally. Anything was possible with Cora, " the closer I get to you

The more you make me see

By giving me all you've got(tell me more)

Your love has captured me the song kept on

playing. " Let's go and take a bath" he said looking down at her after a while of dancing. He was the one to undress her when they got into the bathroom, her dress dropped off to the floor, he unhooked her bra, dropped down her panties, took off her necklaces and earrings along with her watch. Her stiletto heels were long off. She did the same with her, took off his jacket unbuttoned his shirt and took it off. Took off his shoes and socks, then the pants and boxers. Lastly his wrist watch, which was a gift from her. Written " my life line". They got into the bathtub, facing each other. " This feels... like the last time..." She said confused. " The last time?" He asked. " Of us being together, like this. It's too much, it scares me" she said thoughtfully. " To me it feels like a start of something new and beautiful and better" he said. " Come here" he said. She got in-between his thighs and leaned her back on his chest. " Do you think that you love me enough to last for a lifetime?" He asked kissing her neck. " Even beyond that, I know for a fact that I'll love you even in the after life" she said. " Let's get married" he said holding her hand and looking at it. " Married?" She asked thoughtfully. "

Yes, let's get married. Start our own little family in our own little world." He said excitedly. " Are you proposing?" he asked. " YES, marry me Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo. Be my wife" he said. " Ain' you supposed to be kneeling down for that kind of Thing" she asked giggling " and where's the ring?" She asked fastly and happy. " Ohh... excuse me" he said then got out of the bathingtub. He he reached for the ring in his trousers and found it, he kneeled down, " would you make me the happiest man on earth by being my lovely wife" he asked kneeling down naked. It was a strange proposing scene. " You look so cute" she said with her puppy eyes. " Are you for real?, I have just asked you to marry me and you're commenting about how I look. Do you know how difficult this has been for me" he said unbelievably. " Serious though, you look cute and sexy. You should stay like that-naked" she said giggling. " Put the ring on my finger already" she said extending her hand. He took it and put the ring on her finger, it perfectly fit. " You haven't even said yes yet" he stated. She got out of the tube and helped him up. " Yes, I'll marry you" she said smiling happily.

" Do you know how long I've been waiting for this day, what took You so long... You're so slow sometimes" she said looking at her silver one piece ring, with a diamond crystal stone. He just shrugged his shoulders, " I was so afraid you might say no" he said embracing her. " That's why you've been sweating up the whole time" she stated laughing at him. " Don't laugh OK" he said. " I think we should go and register in the magistrate Court on Monday, have a small intimate wedding in our garden and then you could have your bizarre wedding you've ever dreamed of when we have more time on our side. Maybe on December holidays?" He suggested. " I'd like that, but don't you think that we're rushing things. I mean we just got engaged" she asked doubtful. " You're and I have been engaged way before this, this is just formality. I want to make you mine completely and legally" he said then kissed her, the kiss was focused on her upper lip. " I should inform my parents about this, it's a little bit of an inconvenience. What about your grandparents. I'm sure You Have other distant relatives, I want everyone to be present" she said pulling out of the kiss. " Let's worry

about that tomorrow morning, right now I want to make slow tormenting love to my fiancé. " He said kissing her over the face. " I gotta tell Amanda about this, I'm can't wait until tomorrow" she said trying to pull away but he held her tightly. " Salvatore please" she pleaded fighting him. " Cora..." He said softly, giving her that one look. She hasn't seen in a long time, that one look that makes her melt and helpless. " Yes" she murmured, " forget about the outside world, tonight is about you and I" he said. She nodded then stood on her toes and kissed him. He carried her into the bedroom and put her on bed gentle. The rest is history

.

Posts everyday?

[6/10, 13:22] Lynne: Page 61

Cora's POV

.

" Hi" I said as soon as I opened my eyes. " Good morning my fiancé" he said, so cheesy. Making me smile like a retard fool. "slept well?" he asked

removing the strands of hair from my face. I nodded, "what about you?" I asked. " Like a kid, let's me go and order us something to eat" he said getting out of bed. He was naked, I got out of bed too, made my way to the bathroom. I got into the shower, after wearing a shower cap. " Our breakfast will be within 30 minutes" he said joining me inside. " And oh, I called my grandmother and grandfather told them about our intimate wedding." He added. " That's not fair, I wanted to let them know first" I said turning around. " I'm also going to be getting married, can I also participate in this?" He asked eyebrows raised. " Fine, I don't want to fight today. I'll let it slide for today" I said. " Feisty little thing, you can be so bossy sometimes" he said chuckling unbelievably " you like bossing me around, don't you" he questioned me " if I do not boss you around then who would?" I asked smiling. " And you always have something to say, anyways. I think we should go and look for your wedding dress and my suit" he suggested. " I was thinking of something black instead of white and simple" i said. " Let's do this, I'll deal with the catering and decor while you deal with the guests"

he suggested. " Décor?catering?, Guests?. I thought we agreed on something small and intimate, remember?" She asked frowning at him. " I thought we were going to go to court and then come back have lunch with family and friends" she said. " Like a funeral service, with the kind of friends we have and family, intimacy is going to be an irony" he said, that was kind of true. " You cannot expect me to prepare for my dream wedding within just one day. If it's going to be a bomb then I gotta make sure it blasts to it's fullest. Postponing sounds like a plan, I'm already stressed out" I said agitated. " Relax, there's no postponing, I got you, I got this. Let's get out and talk over breakfast. Make a list" he said calming me down. I was getting emotional wrecked.

.

" So it's your black dress, pink roses, a single tulip instead of a bouquet, our roof top for a reception. Floating candles in the pool. Color of the day, should be red and black. And I'll hire two of my chefs to cater for us. The hotel team will do the decor, the pilot will fetch you parents today evening, Robinson

will get my grandparents from the airport tomorrow around 11 pm. And we're going shopping for our clothes right now, done. Simple, just the way you want it" said doing the list check one more time. " I almost forgot about the wine, I'll get it from hotel Paradisé ASAP" he said remembering. " Let's pray It's not going to be a disaster...and the priest, I need my priest. I'm damned, how are we going to get married without a priest?" I asked panicking. " Relax Cora, will you. Give me his contact Information and I'll make sure he's there tomorrow evening" he said so chilled. I inhaled and exhaled. Tried to calm down. " It's believed that if the groom sees the bride just before the wedding, it's bad omen" I said. " Stop it with this negativity , wear your dress and shoes. Let's Go" he said sighing softly kind of annoyed. I wore the dress I was wearing previously, luckily I had some of my undergarments there so I had no hustle there. I applied a little bit of makeup and fixed my hair. Both of us were busy making phone calls to different people. I called all my girlfriends and let them know and then my parents who were very shocked, I called Amanda's friends but they couldn't

make it. We got into the shopping mall around 9 am. He knew his way to this seemingly expensive dress maker's boutique. " Can I see Nicky" he asked one of the customer helpers. " Sorry sir, Nicky is with another customer in the office, quite busy" the girl said. " Tell him, Salvatore is here to see her" he Said and the girl disappeared somewhere behind the hundred of dresses. The boutique was huge and classy. I was busy looking around, " I think I might change my mind about the colour of the dress" I said thoughtfully, " temptation?" He asked chuckling charmingly. " If it isn't AJ the menace of my life" a loud woman screamed waltzing towards us, she jumped into Salvatore's arms and he spinned her around, while she was giggling. " Nikita" he said admiring her, he kissed both her hands. " Long time no see, I has been like. Four five years?" She asked. " Don't be like that, I've been busy. You've been busy, life is hectic Nick" he said giggling, I was watching on the side lines. It was like i didn't even exist, " the last time I saw you , you were going through some things with that cheap wife of yours, what's her name again?, Isabella and you used to call her Issah.

I heard you got divorced, what happened?" She kept on going on and on that I actually got pissed, was fuming inside." yeah stuff happened and we got divorced but that's not the reason why I am here, i want you to meet someone ' Cora come' I'm sure you are going to like her, everyone those" I walked to them, it was just four three steps. " Cora this is my childhood friend Nicky and Nikita meet my fiancé Cora" he introduced us. The lady pulled me in for a hug, to say I was shocked would be an understatement. " She's pretty and...young" she commented on how I looked like I wasn't there. " She's pretty isn't she, anyways we're getting married tomorrow evening, we're here to get a dress and a tuxede" he said smiling. " Congratulations pal, but I must say I'm very very disappointed. I thought it was just a friendly visit, for old times sake " she said dramatically pretending to be hurt. " Sorry pal but I can still compensate for your disappointed. I hope an invitation to the wedding will do" he said, invitation to my wedding?, Joking?. No he was serious or maybe i was overreacting " if it's fine by your fiancée here" she said looking at me. " It's cool"

I said shortly. " Okay let's start with your tuxedo first, are you still a size 32 she asked. ' Cora you're going to go home single here, man snatching?' my inner self screamed angrily. Well fifteen minutes later we were sitting Infront of the man's fitting room Salvatore was putting on the second suit in one of the she had picked for him. " So how did you two meet, I'm curious" she asked looking curious in deed. " It's a very interesting story actually, Salvatore tells it better than I. You should hear this from him, it's s hort but crazy" I lied through my teeth and gums. " Ohh, is it?... if you say so then" she said looking unconvinced. " How is this one?" He asked getting out of the fitting room. " It doesn't do any justice on Your muscles" I said first. " It still looks good though, unless you want something that'll tear up if you bend over " she said. After checking him out, " you're right but it's just Not my style, the design is too simple" he said after looking at the mirror image. " Go and try to other ones" she said. " This is insane, are you guys like eloping to get married or something?" She asked chuckling. " We really wouldn't have invited you if we

were eloping now, would we?" I asked so cold. " Ohh!" She exclaimed shocked. " I'm sorry, I'm not usually this hostile and rude. It's just that planning for the wedding within just a day wasn't a plan. I'm super stressed" I justified myself, 'damn you Cora for trying to justify yourself' my inner self screamed. "And there's nothing to worry about because there's nothing going on between AJ and I. We're just friends" she said out of nowhere. " Excuse me?" I said frowning. " You seem kind of pissed off with me, maybe it's the way we hugged. Sorry for th—. " I've decided on this one" he said getting out of the fitting room. He looked... glorious, " it's perfect" she commented first. " What do you think Cora?" He asked. " You look... like The groom, gorgeous" I said after examining every single expect of him. " It's decided then" he said then walked back inside. " I think, I've got just what you're looking for. Let me go and get your dress" she said getting up and walking away and disappearing from my site. Salvatore came out of the fitting room and one of the helpers helped him with the suits. " Should I wait i the car for you?" He asked sitting down next to me.

" No, it's not going to be a white wedding gown so I don't think it is going to be a problem. I might need your opinion" I said . Nikita came back carrying a covered up hanger. She handed it to me, " try this one out" she said. I took it and went to the women's fitting room. I unzipped it and then experienced love at first sight. It was black, , flare from mid- waist and glittering, off shoulder and long. I tried to put it on, " I need your help" I call out and she walked in. She walked in and helped me out.

.

" wow!" He finally managed to say after a long time of gagging unbelievably, " I can't wait to finally make you my wife" he said. Making me feel emotional, he didn't need to say ' you look beautiful, gorgeous, stunning' or any other words out there for me to get to know that I looked perfect, the look in his eyes said it all.

We bought shoes and rings and jewellery

.

" There's this thing of the groom gifting the bride

just before the wedding. What would you like" he asked me as we were on our way home, most of the girls were already there. Salvatore was going to take another car and make the catering and decor possible. I had nothing to worry about, " I could ask for anything I want" I asked solemnly. " Anything possible, I'm bound to give it to you" he said. " I could ask you to go and hang yourself/shoot Yourself/ buy me a Bentley" I said excitedly. " I've always known that you wanted me dead" he said chuckling unbelievably. " What would you like, I need to arrange for it today Before it's too late" he said seriously. " What am going to ask for might make you hate me a little bit but I'm going to ask you anyways. I'll ask for it tomorrow, after the wedding and do not try to refuse me" I said solemnly. " You're starting to scare me, could you maybe give me a clue" he asked curiously. " Patience" I said shortly.

.

" How long have you know your' friend' Nikita" I asked. " Since I can remember, her parents are one of my father's friends. Why do you ask" he asked

casually. " Nothing" I said shortly. " Well I don't think I like her, I didn't like the way she was swinging on you, the way she was checking You out and the way you were holding her. ' oh Nick I can compensate for that' inviting her to my way without my consent is strictly off" I said angrily, believe me I tried to hold it in but I couldn't. " Firstly it's our ' our wedding' secondly I didn't say it like that. There was no ' ohh Nicky' . She's one of my friends and she's going to attend our wedding. He said firmly, " but Salvatore i—..." No buts Cora. I've said my piece." He said then opened the door and got out. I didn't even realize that we were parked Infront of the house, Robinson opened the door for me. " Rob, you're going to fetch Cora's parents at the airport around 19pm sharp. You know the private jet." He said walking inside the house first. There was commotion inside, I was startled by Amanda's screams as I walked in. " My twin, congratulations" she screamed literally running toward me and attacking me with a hug, the other ladies joined in and we group hugged. Congratulations were thrown around the house. Divya, siwe2 and Esihle weren't around yet. The guys

and Salvatore went out, I heard a car driving out it was around 2pm

" Nakedly?" Amanda asked laughing infact they all laughed after I told them how he proposed. " Shut up, he looked so sexy and cute" I said defensively. " I'm sure he was cutely naked" siwe said naughtily. " You guys are impossible, I'm hungry" I said standing up They all followed me to the kitchen, " I miss Divya, at least she's not extra like you all are" I said after they told me she couldn't make it because her son was sick. " That drama queen, she could have left the baby with his nanny, how are we going to throw a bachelorette party without her" Amanda said. " And you must call Esihle and the other siwe" Siwe said. " I did, they're working, some of us have to work. unlike you lucky housewives" I said. " The privileges of marrying rich enough man" Priya said sipping on her juice. I was making myself a sandwich. " You can join us too if you like, join us to the Queendom of housewives Mrs Salvatore" Siwe said. " You've got to be kidding me, after working so hard?. There's no way I am going to be a housewife" I protested. "

Enough of this housewives shit some of us are still trying to get our degrees. Temptations aside, let's talk about what goes down tonight, the bachelorette party Ladies" Amanda said diverting the topic

.

" I don't want to get drunk guys, I want to wake up with a sober mind and see to it that everything goes as planned before the evening" I said sitting down on the high chair. " Come on, the wedding starts at 6pm, you'll be just fine let's hit the club" Priya said. " Or better yet, call in a male stripper" Amanda suggested biting her lip. "No fucking ways, hell goes down in those kind of parties besides my family will be here in no time, I want to be here when they come" I said seriously. " You're such a bore, it's your last day as a single woman and here you are talking like a long time ago married grandma" siwe said drained. " I've been living like one for almost four years now, sorry guys...but there's one thing we can do" I said trying to cheer' em up. " What's that?" Siwe asked. " Squeeze in a second bed in one of the guests rooms upstairs, get some booze and or catch

a movie with popcorn...better than nothing right" I said shrugging. " Sounds better than just sleeping then waking Up. Do you know how long it took for me to find an outfit for this inconvenient wedding. The least you could do is give me some fun back" Priya said. " Drama queen" I said taking a bite of my sandwich

.

To be continued

[6/10, 13:23] Lynne: Page 62

Cora's POV

.

We were all in our PJs, in one of the spare rooms with two beds. Just chatting, the time was 19:30 pm. Salvatore was out with the guys probably in some strip club out there. I was feeling agitated, just wondering what he must be doing. The decor and everything was to be done by tomorrow morning. Then the doorbell rang, " that must be my family, I'll go and get the door" I said getting out of bed. " I also want to meet your parents" Amanda said, a little bit

tipsy. They all followed me, I opened the door and the four of them were standing there. With their luggage, " should I take their bags in" Robinson asked fast. " I'll do that, thanks Rob" I said, " anything for you ma'am" he said before leaving. " Come in guys" I said opening the door widely. " I thought we got lost, you live here?" Connie said looking around. I just smiled, helped them with their luggage. " Hi, I'm Amanda. Cora's best friend" I Amanda said extending her hand towards aunt. " Nice to meet you" aunt Said smiling. " I'm Priya and this is Siwe, we're one of Cora's bitches. You know the one she calls when there's trouble in paradise... By trouble in paradise i mean when she finds Salvatore crying on top of another naked women, you know what I mean by that right?. Let me enlighten you, when she finds Salvatore fuck—..."Priya I think that's enough" I snapped, it was all alcohol talking. My aunt's eyes were popped out, " come, let me show you your room" I said. " Your friends are cool sis, I like them already" Charles said. " They are good and older than you, not to mention that their all married" I said warningly. " I was just saying" he said chuckling. "

Yeah and I saw the way you were looking at Amanda, you've got a death wish?" I said smiling faintly. "you're still the same stuck up and uptight" he said rolling his eyes. " You're still the same old childish kid" I said scornfully. " I'm 18 now, so not a kid" he said. " Charles stop bothering your sister, we haven't even said hi Yet and here you are, arguing" aunt said. " She started it" he said whining. " Are you crying, mama's boy" I said laughing. " Ma, did you hear that. She's mocking me" he said. " Stop being a Baby Charles" auntie said giggling. " Father and aunt, here's your room. Connie and Charles go straight the corridor , you'll find other guests rooms" I said as we stop in the first room. " You guys freshen up, I'll go and get you something to eat" I said walking out. " Cora, we've got a lot of things to catch up on. I'm joining you in your room tonight" Connie said. I just shook my head and left. " Cora, could we talk a bit" aunt called out after me as I had exited the room. " Yes of course" I said walking outside, it was just the Three of us father's head was tilted to the right. " What is it aunt" I asked sitting down on bed. " You know we've got other relatives right?" She asked, "

yes, even though I can't remember their faces and names correctly" I said frowning." I told them about the wedding, they also wanted to come but unfortunately they weren't invited. Mother in-law also wanted to see you off and your other aunts and uncles and cousins" she explained sitting down and holding my hand. " What has changed all of a sudden. They never wanted a thing to do with my mom or father, I doubt they even wanted me. I white girl marrying a black man is an abomination to them right. Well im the product of that relationship, what do they want now." I said irritated. " Cora, don't talk like that, peace was made. And I'm sure you remember visiting your grandparents, they welcomed you so lovingly. That hatchet was buried... anyways. They're confused as to how you're getting married without the bride price being paid, they're a lot of traditions before marriage. You're a Zulu woman, you should respect your customs. Your know how they say these things bring bad luck if we do not pay attention to them" she said, " look aunt, I don't want to go there, what do they want. Lobola?, I'll pay them that if it's what they want. I will not be

bought, my first salary will go to them. Right now I just want to enjoy my life and be happy. I can't even speak that Zulu to begin with, besides this is just some paper work. It's between me and my fiance, intimate. We will have the grand wedding on December, maybe then they'll be invited" I said sighing heavily. " Okay, if you say so...I just wanted to let you know. It's up to you what you do, I lost control over your life a long time ago" she said putting her hand on the right side of my head. " Don't say that aunt, you're like a mother to me. You are my mother" I said feeling so guilty. " So why Cora, why did you stop calling me mother. Why don't you come back home, do you know how much it breaks my heart not seeing you in the house. " She said getting so emotional, actually crying. " Don't..cry" I said hugging her. " From now on I'm going to call you ' Mom' stop crying. As for coming back home. I can't My life is here, I'm about to get married and start a family. I'm safer here, my future husband's life is here. I'm going to try and visit you guys more" I said putting out of the hug and wiping away her tears. " Are you sure you're ready for this, you want to do this.

Marriage comes with a lot of responsibilities and challenges and tears and disappointments not to mention pain and compromises. Cora you're too young to go through all that" she said eyes darting all over me. " I'm going to be fine Mom, I've been through hell and back. Salvatore loves me, we love each other. I'm a big girl now, don't worry about me" I said smiling. " I just don't want to see you get hurt" she said hugging me again. " Take care of yourself" I heard father say, I hardly ever hear him talk. Twenty words were enough for him for a day. " You have my blessings" he said. I stood up and hugged him. " Thank you...mom you should try father's positivity." I said smiling. " I'll bring you your food" I can said walking out. I warmed up the meal I had prepared earlier to and dished into four plates. I served my parents and then called Connie and Charles to come and eat. " So where's my brother in law" Connie asked as they were sitting on the high chairs and I was pouring them juice. " I wouldn't know really, probably enjoying his bachelor party while I'm stuck here with the two of you" I said. " I was wondering if he has any friends who are single?" she asked

looking anywhere but me. " and what will you do with that kind of information" I asked frowning." Nothing... Charlie is right you're still uptight. You should see the look on your face" she said rolling her eyes. " That's what old sister's are for" I said. " For what?, Making our lives miserable" Charles asked. " I'm so going to tell Mom" I said solemnly but laughing inside. " Andi bet she'll take your side" he said shaking his head. " That's because I am always right, see you tomorrow little fellas. I've got a party to attend" I said walking Out, " I'm joining you guys" Connie called after me. " Go to sleep kiddo, I'm sure you are tired" I screamed back at here. " I hate you Cora" she said sounding so angry. " I love you too sis" I screamed back at here laughing out loud. I found my girlfriends twerking and some jumping on bed. " Where's the alcohol, now I can drink" I said locking the door. The music was loud, " the bride is in the house" Esihle said coming from the bathroom " and when did you get here" I asked. They were both there, Siboniso's wife and my sister in law " that doesn't matter, what matters is that were finally here. And we're going to get you drunk" siwe said giving

me a glass of wine.

.

30 minutes later I was feeling light headed and twerking on bed and then my phone had to ring in my gown pocket" shhh" I said putting my index finger on my lips. " Shhh it's Mr Salvatore" I said walking towards the bathroom and closing the door behind me. " Hello" I whispered with my index finger still on my lips. " Are You sleeping already?" He asked, I was sitting on the toilet seat. " I don't know, I must be sleeping" I whispered. " Cora, are you drunk?" He asked. I didn't answer that, " you must be drunk" he said a little bit louder. " What to do when you're out there getting a lap dance" I said whipping. " Don't tell me you're crying, and who told you I was in a strip club" he asked. " You must be, it's what you guys do before the wedding. if I find out that you cheated on me once again then I am going to cut you small dick" I said. He just laughed, " small dick you say...and when have I ever cheated on you?" He asked. " You did with Nina and then you gave her a beautiful son. That boy was supposed to be mine,

he's mine. I also want a small baby like here. Bring me a baby on your way home" I said, my head spinning. " You're crazy, you know that right?...and Nina happened before you" he said laughing at me. " Don't laugh, you cheater. You knew that your heart belonged to me but you still slept with another woman" I said crying like a woman suffering from pregnancy hormones. "I'm sorry my future wife, but it's all your fault damn. You were so hard to find, you got me going crazy" He said making me laugh. " And Cora, stop drinking and go to sleep. We've got a lot of work to do tomorrow" he said. " I'm so drunk Salvatore" I said feeling like puking. " Drink some water and go to sleep will you" he said firmly. " You don't really expect me to go to sleep while you're out there partying with your boys" I said kneeling down and turning to face the toilet seat. " I told you I'm not partying, I'm in the penthouse having beer and playing cards with the guys" he said. The fact that there was no noise in the back ground was his testimony. " OK, I'll...—and then I started puking. " Cora, Cora?... Are you OK,are you still there?" he kept on asking. " Yes...I'm here" I said wiping my lips with

my palm. " Walk towards the washing basin and wash your face and mouth" he ordered, with difficulty I did just that. After putting the phone on loud speaker. " Go to the kitchen and get a bottle of water" he commanded. " But I'm still partying" I said faintly. " Do as I say Cora if you do not want to wake up and get married looking like frog, you will listen to me" he said. " Ok, OK" I said then walked back to the room, where the girls were making noise. It was like it was somebody else's party. " I'm going to get us more wine" I lied. " Hurry up twin, we're running out" Mandy said... " Finish the whole bottle" he said on the phone as I was drinking water. He was now facetimeing me. I did just that, " now walk upstairs to our room, lock the door behind you and get undercovers" he said. " Are you for really, I can't let them down just like that" I said frowning. " I am your future husband, are you willing to let me down?" He asked. " You can be so controlling sometimes" I said irritated but I obeyed him. " Now what?" I asked as I got undercovers.

.

" Now we talk" he said smiling, I could tell that he wanted to laugh at me. " About what, aren't you tired. We've been talking for the past few years, don't you get bored" I asked angrily, I could hear the music playing faintly from the next room. " No, never. I don't think I'd ever get tired of talking with you. You know why?...with you there's always some new drama" he said chuckling. " Calling me a drama queen?" I asked ready to go to war. " You're my lovely future wife of a drama queen" he said, smiling..." What do you want to talk about?" I asked calmly. " The future... it's about time we had a serious talk about our future together" he said. " Mmh, the future...what about it?" I asked frowning a bit. " How many kids would you prefer to have?" he asked solemnly, no laughing or smiling game this time. " A dozen should do" I said. " I'm serious here" he said. " I'm also serious" I protested. " Cora!" he said firmly. " Three should be fine, including Lorenzo" I said seriously. " I want five" he said. " Then i here by give you the right to adopt" I said kiddingly. " I'm serious here" he said. " You like stressing me, couldn't we have talked about this after the wedding"

I asked sighing. " Right now is the best time, I don't want you saying I didn't warn you. You should be 100%into this. No regrets" he said. " Four then, that's it. Deal sealed, take it or leave it" I said. " It's decided then. I want three girls from you" he said smiling and o smiled back. "Only God knows that, it's beyond my control" I said. " The timing, I'm not getting any younger. I can't wait till you finish school for us to start a family. How about we start making babies this very year" he said, the look on his face making it sound so easy. It was going to take years for me to finally be a graduate student and be a gynaecologist. By then he'd be in his 40s, " I don't know Salvatore, can I think about it. I need more time, I'll let you know when I am ready. I promise you that I am not going to be selfish about it but right now I can not decide" I said thoughtfully. " okay, I understand. Take your time" he said gentle. " Where would you like to go for our honeymoon" he asked. " Wherever you'd take me, as long as you're there" I answered smiling. " I want you to decide, anywhere you'd like to go" he said. " I have decided" I said shortly. " Where would you like to go then" he asked. " Take me to the deepest pits

of your heart, bury me there. That would be the best honeymoon resorts ever" I said solemnly. For a moment there we paused and stared at each other. " I'll book us the first flight out by tomorrow, we don't need to wait for the coming holidays for me to take you there" he said smiling. We talked till 1 am.

.

I was woken up by the commotion outside, I checked the time. It was 9 am, it was my wedding day. I woken up with a broad full hearted smile, the sun was shining outside as I opened the balcony door. My eyes met with the guests house, where I knew Lorenzo and Nina were. I missed my little boy. I hoped that Salvatore was going to get him to attend our wedding, it was hard to tell since it was one of Nina's ten days. I Washed my face and brushed my teeth, wore my white long gown then got out of the room with my phone. There were a lot of people walking around inside the house. My nostrils caught the divine smell of food being prepared. All in all the house was loaded, I opened the door to the guest room where I found my girlfriends lying like

dead people, some on the floor. " Good morning guys" I screamed and they all set upright jumpy, " have mAh" Esihle cried holding her head. " You guys look like zombies, you need to get yourselves some hangover concoction" I said shaking my head before exiting the room. I went to the roof top to check out the progress. The white wooden chairs were set into two separate rows the, tied with red ribbons, the podium decorated with pink flowers, it was half done. They were still busy, Salvatore was not around. I walked back inside. Anyways there was somewhere i needed to be before the wedding Begin. I went down to the garage after taking my car keys. " Cora, where are you going" Connie asked upon seeing me get into the car. " tell everyone that I'll be back soon, I'm going to get my wedding gift" I screamed at her. She was just standing on the staircases frowning. I drove out.

.

Salvatore's POV

.

I was a new day, a page and a new chapter of my life. I was finally going to get married to the love of my life. The woman of my dreams, I looked at her picture on my phone on more time before getting out of bed. This may make me look like a hypocrite because I finally agreed on going to the club last night and we came back around 5am . I woke up around 12 pm, no splitting headache, I made sure to not drink too much. I went to the bathroom and took a shower. wore my white shorts and shirt and Salvatore. I found Michael gulping down some homemade hangover concoction. " You look horrible" I said patting his shoulder. " Where are the other's" I asked sitting down. " Raj took a taxi home. Mbutho probably puking somewhere around the house. Tiaxiang?, I don't know" I said holding his head with both hands. " Well I'm leaving, since we came in one car. I thought it would be 'doing the right thing' if I told you . " I'm coming with you, I need to get into my car and drive home. I need to get some sleep" he said. " Let's go then" I said taking my car keys." You were not planning on leaving us behind right?" Mbutho asked as they emerged from

the room. " No, never" I said laughing. " I was planning on waking you up guys" I said sarcastically. " You're so cruel " Tiaxiang murmured softly.

.

We got home around 1pm. It was filled with people moving around, I wanted to see Cora first. I parked outside and walked inside. The noise of too many different voices was sky high. I searched for her." Have you seen Cora" I asked Amanda who was walking downstairs. " She must be somewhere around the house" she said Without even looking at me. " Ohkay" I said frowning. " Mr Salvatore, Cora said she was going to get her wedding gift." I heard a voice say down the stairs. I was Connie, " wedding gift?" I asked walking back down. " I thought she was going to meet up with you" she said frowning. " Didn't she say where she was going?" I asked. She shook her head no. " You should try calling her, excuse me" she said then left. " I tried that but she wasn't picking up. As I was calling for the 15nth time she walked in, wearing her PJs. " Where have you been, I've been trying to call you" I said walking

towards her. " Hello to you too" she said smiling. " I was starting to get worried where have you been" I asked once again. " You'll know later on today, by the way I pumped into Mbutho. He's talking about you going to the club last night. Isn't that just great" she asked walking upstairs. " Ohh that, it's not like I lied. It was a last minute thing" I said shrugging. "If you say so my fiancée" she said As we got into our room, i closed the door behind me. She fixed the bed." What do you mean by that?" I asked, Hans in my Short's pockets" I mean just that, 'if you say so'. I'm going to take a shower, It's better if you go out there and check if everything is going well" she said taking off her clothes. Then walking into the bathroom. " Are we fighting before our wedding?" I asked following her inside,she was standing Infront of the mirror, tying up her hair. She then wore a shower cap. " No" she said turning around. Her face expressionless, " she wrapped her arms around my neck. Stood up on her toes and kissed me slightly, " good luck with your wedding vows" she said. I put my hands on her waist, " the same goes for you" I said holding her against my chest. " There's no need

for that, I'll just say what comes into my mind" she said smiling. Her nakedness was such a torment on me. " I think you should go now" she said pulling away from my grip. " One last kiss " I asked. " Save it for the ' you may kiss the bride' part. Go..." She said pushing me outside. I checked everything and it was in order. The cake I had bought had arrived, the music DJ and the piano man had arrived. The food was almost ready, the decor just needed a few touch ups. Everything was going to happen on the roof top. The exchanging of vows reception was set and the wedding reception was almost done. There were 4 tables there, each with ten chairs, with all the chaos I almost forgot about my grandparents, I searched for them. " Where's my daughter in-law" grandma asked as soon as I walked in to the guest room they were in. " You love her more than me now, so not fair!" I said arms folded. " I'm bound to, after all she's the one who's going to be giving me grandchildren" she said. " Grandma!..." I said. " Come here...how have you been" she said pulling me in for a hug" Im fine. Come sta grandpa " I said to him. He was busy unpacking his clothes . It was like i wasn't even there.

"Sto bene(I'm fine)" he said. " He has gone bananas" grandma said shaking her head.

.

Cora's POV

I put on my black panties and gown after I was done showering, the hair dresser and make up artist I had hired were already waiting for me in the room. " Let's get started with my hair" I said as I was sitting Infront of the mirror. It took her an hour to finish up with my hair, and then my makeup followed, they ended up doing my girlfriend's make up and hair too. Priya was helping me wear my dress. Around 5:30 pm I was done.

.

My hair was relaxed and tied into straight up bunny. Pinned on top, topped with a tiara, the baby hair line added and styled perfectly. I was wearing a cheery red lipstick. Eyeliner with a shade of red, all in all I looked perfect. I put on my something blue something borrowed which was bought on the last minute. Another 30 minutes later the piano started

playing. I was beyond nervous. I could feel my tummy getting shivers. " It's about time." Mom said walking inside the room

.

Narrated.

.

Salvatore was standing near the podium where the priest from Cora's church was standing. His guys standing in line to him. The girls on the opposite end, he was wearing his black suit, a White shirt and then a long cherry red tie, a flower on the pocket. The guys wear wearing black suit with no ties the last two buttons unbuttoned and the jackets were on their right hands carried neatly. The girls were wearing red dresses with different designs though and the shoe's were also different. There red carpet had white and pink petals dropped all over it. On the sides there were vases with pink roses. Floating candles in the pool and light around it. The small lights were everywhere possible, behind the priests there was a wall I white and red roses. On the other

end of the pool there were four table's each with a paraffin lamp on top and a mirror vase of flowers. Each table cloth red with few pink petals dropped on top and down the floor. Then a few candles there and there. A bottle of champagne on each and every table and then the white black and red plates getting bigger in sizes as you go from the top to down. Fork and knife each tied with a red ribbon on the sides of the plates. The main table was made of thick glass, red and white petals dropped on in a huge bouquet of pink and white roses in I basket on in and the two lamps on each side. A bottle of champagne and the three different colored plates for the bride and groom. A cake table on the left side, the cake was that of a white wedding gown. The moon and the Stars were looking down on them, shining so bright that it actually reflected on the pool of water. Lorenzo waked in wearing his black suit, red bowtie. Dropping red petals he was carrying with a small basket. Everybody was looking at him until he reached the front. He stood next to his father and then. The bride emerged from the door, her aunt/Mom holding her hand, she was to walk her

down the isle. In her beholders eyes she looked like an angel no infact a pure goddess. The piano man kept on hitting the low key harmonic music. " Is it too late to run back" Cora whispered into her aunt's ear. " You can still run or play dead" she said. Making her almost burst into laughter. They continued walking down the isle, her eyes on her fiance who had a smile on his beautiful face. She handed her over to Salvatore. " Keep her happy, always" she said softly and went to sit down after Salvatore nodded with a smile. The stood Infront of the priest.

.

" We're gathered here to witness the beautiful matrimony of Mr Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore and Miss Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo before I begin...if anyone has a reason why this ceremony shouldn't go on please stand up or forever hold your peace" the priest said.....

.

" ...I Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore vow to cherish, love iternally, respect and honor you for as long as I live,

to always be by your side in sickness and in health. To be your protector and to be faithful, to be the papa of our children Till death do us Part" Salvatore said his vows after the priest granted him the permission to...

" I Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo vow to always be by your side for as long as you need me there, I vow to be the mother of your kids, a companion, a shoulder to cry on, a friend if you need one and mother, a Faithful wife, I vow to be never stop being your girlfriend. I'ma be your mistress if need be. I vow to keep your heart in the safest of havens, I vow to try and keep you smiling even through your toughest days. I vow to take your family as mine. And lastly I vow to love you and love you only until death do us part" she said her vows, solemnly and from the heart.

" I now announce you husband and wife. You may kiss your Bride" the priest said and they kissed passionately.

.

A paragraph of a comment please

[6/10, 07:28] Lynne: Page 63

Narrated

.

One look in your eyes and there i see

Just what you mean to me

Here in my heart I believe

Your love is all I ever need

Holding you close through the night

I need you...heey

.

I look in your eyes and there i see

What happiness really means

The love that we share makes life

So sweet

Together we will always be

This pleasure of love feels so right

And ohh oh oh I need you...

.

(Chorus)

Here and now I promise to love faithfully(faithfully)

You're all I need

Here and I vow to be one with the..(you &me)

Your love is all I need

.

Say yey yey yey

When I look in your eyes

There I see all that our love should really be

And I need you more

And more is there

Nothing can take your love away

More than i try to dream...I need you

.

Chorus

.

Starting here, starting now, I believe in your love x2

So I'm glad to take the cow

.

Chorus

Salvatore and Cora were having a couple's dance. On the dance floor. His hands on her waist and hers around his neck, everybody had just finished having their dinner. " You look gorgeous tonight, this dress suits you perfectly" he said looking down at her. " And you've been saying that for the past two hours" she said smiling at him. " I can't help myself" he said making her blush. " Thanks" she said seriously. " For what?" He asked, frowning a bit. " For everything, for loving me so unconditionally and deeply. For looking beyond my flaws, for choosing me as your wife and lastly but not least for making Lore attend the wedding" she said. " I should be the one thanking you. For choosing me as your companion and long life partner, for loving me so tragically, for accepting and loving my son even though his mother has been nothing but cruel to you. Woman like you

are so rare, you're one in a trillion. Always remember that" he said. And then the song ended. They applauded for them All in all the wedding was such a grand event, they tried to keep it low key but it became a nuclear bomb. It was over around 10pm.they received a few gift. The biggest gift was two flights tickets to Paris plus a paid for hotel room from Alonzo's father. They thanked the guests for attending. The guests disappeared one by one, those who couldn't go back home went to the guest rooms. " Okay, see you next week guys" Cora said waving at Michael and Amanda who were the last couple to drive out. " Let's go to our room, I can't wait to . make you take off that dress" Salvatore said Carrying Cora in a bridal style. " Alonzo, people are watching" Cora screamed startled. Trying to get down, "let them watch" he said Carrying her upstairs to their room. He opened the door and turned on the lights, and then boom the surprise of his life. " What is she doing here?" He asked putting Cora down. Happiness turned into anger. Cora closed the door behind them. " She's is the gift that I want" she said Walking towards her mother in-law. " What, what do

you mean by that... What the hell is this woman doing in my room. Get out if here, the nerve. How did you even get here" he shouted walking towards his mother, who was looking so frightened by his rage. " Salvatore please, calm down. I called her here, She's here because of me" Cora said getting in-between them. " What?, You sneak this despicable excuse of a woman into my house?, How could you Cora. I trusted you, how could you do this to me. You know exactly what this woman did to me but still you brought her here" he shouted but was losing his voice on the way, the mixture of disbelief, pain and hatred in his eyes was in maskable. " I'm sorry OK, but I had to do this. For your sake, I did this for You" she said a little bit louder than intended, she couldn't find it in her to look at him. " Did I ask you to, the fuck you did this for me!" he shouted breaking the vase, Cora was starting to get scared. " Get out of my house!" He snapped walking towards the closet,he came back with a gun. His mother was crying hysterically. " I'm sorry Alonzo, please forgive me. I'm sorry" she kept on saying while crying. " Get your filthy ass off my bed and get out of my house"

he sternly and furiously said, hands shaking as he had his gun pointed out at her. Cora looked up and couldn't believe her eyes, they popped out. " Salvatore, what are you doing... she's your mother" she screamed waltzing and standing Infront of the pointed gun. " Cora get out of my way, Cora! Move" he said through gritted teeth. " No, no Salvatore. Try and talk things out. Hear her side of the story. Let her explain herself and then you can decide if you want to forgive her or not" she said acting so bravely but shaking inside. " Cora I said move or else I'll shoot, I'll shoot the two of you" he said through his tears. " Dying at your hands would be the best death ever, shoot if you want but I'm not moving. Kill your mother and wife on your wedding night and see if that brings you peace or eternal grief... All I am asking for is just a few minutes of your time. Listen to her just once, I am doing this for us. Our kids and grandkids to come, I want my kids to know their grandma... And you promised me Salvatore, you promised me. You promised to give me whatever gift I'd ask for, I'm not going to ask your to forgive her. Just listen once, you can't break your promise,

listen. What you decide to do next will be all up to you" she said, kept on walking closer and closer to him until she took his gun. His mother was shaking in her boots, she almost peed on herself when she saw a gun. The last time she saw a gun was when her sister was murdered by her own husband 40 years ago. " Talk" Alonzo said so coldly.

" I'm sorry Alonzo, I am sorry my son. I never meant to abandon you" she said. "Oh please I've heard that a million times before. Try another line, it's not working" he said angrily. " My husband, Mr Dlamini was a poor man. I was so blindly inlove with him, we got married and had our first baby together.

Sandile,the struggling increased even more. And then I decided to go and look for a job, that's how I met your father who was looking for a maid. I started working for him, he was a very kind man. I was smitten by his kindness and then before I knew it we started having an affair. My marriage with my husband started to fall apart but that didn't bother me, I —..." Typical of you, so self absorbed. You can't think of anyone else but you, you're a very cunning

wom—..." Salvatore please, let her finish first and then you can pass your judgement" Cora begged looking into his eyes. " ...I fell in love with your father, I hardly went back home. I had forgotten and abandoned Sandile and my husband. But whenever I'd go back home, Dlamini showered me with his love and kindness. It was off no use to me, I didn't love him no more, he loved me to bits. My affair with your father Carried on until one day I found I was pregnant. I was so scared and worried about what people might say. I was a married woman, I thought about my parents and my husband but your father assured me that everything was going to be fine. That he was going marry me and I was planning on leaving my husband for him when one day I found out that he was a gangster. I found a dead body in the basement of his house, well he tried to calm me down. Explain, I tried to understand but I couldn't. I decided that I was never going to marry a criminal, after all my sister died in hands of one. I had to watch as he beat her to death, I was not about to put my life on the line. Your father loved you so very much, before you were even born. So I decided that I

was going to leave you with him, I never wanted to see him again. One thing I knew for sure was that if I had left with you he would have haunted me down. I had no choice but to leave you with him. Besides that, you had no chance of surviving with me. I hardly had a job, if I was to go back with you to my marital home my husband wouldn't have accepted me back or forgave me. With your father i knew that you'd be well taken care of, get the best education and everything you'd ever desire. I had nothing Alonzo,nothing. I know that most of my decisions were selfish, i am a selfish person. I know that, for years I stayed with a man I didn't love. Try to find it in your heart to forgive me. I —..." Forgive you?, Wow!. How easy for you to ask. Forgiveness? You'll find my forgiveness on the entrance of hell because I am that's where you're going. Do you know how many people your selfishness has affected. Your son despises me because he feels that my father deprived him of a mother's love. My father can hardly keep a woman for a month, you know why because he still hopes that you might come back to him. He still loves you and Mr Dlamini, may his soul

rest in peace he died an unhappy man. After all what could be worse than spending the rest of your life with a person who doesn't love you back and your two other kids they never knew a mother's love, a full hearted mother's love because you were busy stuck up on memories of a man you left. Your daughter has trust issues, she never saw her parents looking at each other lovingly. And you want me to forgive that... never. I'm sorry Cora but this gift is beyond my ability.

" He said then left the room.

" Alonzo, Alonzo" Cora called after him but it was in vain

.

" I'm sorry about that...I thought that things between the two of you could get fixed" Cora said sitting down on bed. " It's OK, at least you tried.. for once he listened to my whole story. I never expected him to forgive me, my absence in his life has turned him into a bitter person. Even i wouldn't forgive myself. I see that your presence in his life has somehow

revealed his better side more, Take care of him for me " she said the stood up. " There are a lot of guest rooms, you can sleep over. It's too late to drive "She said. " no, i'll drive. I have no right to be here. Let me go before he comes back, I don't want to provoke him again. Good night and good luck with your marriage. It was such a beautiful ceremony, even though I was watch at the far end" she said. " Thanks, good night mother in law" Cora said. The woman smiled then left.

.

Cora's POV

I took off my wedding gown, wiped off my makeup and got into the bathtub. Two hours passed by but there was still no sign of Salvatore, I called his a thousand times but his phone lead me to voice mail. I left a lot of messages, asking him to come back home and apologising but still,nothing. I was finally conquered by sleep. Mind you I was sitting down leaning on the bed, I slept sitting upright. I was woken up by someone carrying me up, I opened my eyes and it was him. He was in his boxers. smelling

fresh, I looked at the time. It was four in the morning. I decided that I was to call in sick, my body felt so heavy. I was so tired, " I'm sorry" i said softly. " Just go to sleep Cora" he said putting me undercovers and getting undercovers too. He turned his back on me. " Salvatore I —...." I don't want to talk about it" he cut me off. I snuggled up on his back, he didn't fight my arm around him. I fell asleep once again. I was woken up by the feeling that someone was staring at me. I opened up my eyes and there he was. "Was it some sort of Vengeance...is it because I did the same thing with you and your family?. Is that why you called her here. Of course it must be, why am I even asking you" he said chuckling unbelievably, like he was going crazy. " What are you saying, how could you even think that... vengeance?. No!. You know me better than that" I said sitting upright. " Do I?, Do I know you?" He said so angrily. " What do you mean by that Salvatore, you know that I'd never hurt you on purpose. I told you why I did it" I said almost in tears. " You broke my trust, how could you do this to me. You know I hate that women, with Every inch of my body. You join forces with my enemies and

then expect me to forgive you?" He now snapped. "She's not your enemy, why is it so hard for you to forgive. Why do you like to complicate things that are not complicated" I said angrily. "I see where your problem lies, you tend to think that everybody else is like you. So easily forgiveness and Holly Holly, well you're mistaken. If you think that I'm going to forgive that woman than you've got another thing coming" he shouted, startling me, I jumped a bit. "Holly Holly?, Are implying that I am a fool because I easily forgive. Is that what you're saying?. Should I hold grudges for the rest of my life?. Salvatore you can not sit there and pretend as if you're a perfectionist, we both know that you have sinned a thousand times. Your sins are probably greater than hers, let he who has never sinned cast the first stone. The Bible says, to you I might seem like a fool for forgiving those who trespass against me but you know what. He who forgives is greater than he who asks for forgiveness. you see her as your enemy, I think you're your own enemy. Have a look at—..." Shut up!" he snapped off to the point where I got out of the bed scared. "Get out of here before I do

something I might regret" he said through gritted teeth. His arms folded into a tight fist, veins popping out of his forehead. I rushed to the bathroom and locked myself in there. If that didn't scare me then I don't know wh would. I decided to take a shower

.

I got out with a towel wrapped around my body. He was not around, thanks God. I have moisturized my body and wore my undergarments and my long black leather pencil skirt and a blouse tucked in and then my sleepers. I called in sick then went downstairs, there was a lot of communication in there. I found everyone sitting around the dining table. " Good morning" I said nervously. My family and his grandparents were still there. " Good morning my daughter in-law, I hope you slept well" grandma said. " Good morning Cora" mom said. " Cora, you're taking me out for shopping. Brother in law has already agreed on giving me his card" Connie said. " I'm also joining you" Charles said. " Ain't you supposed to be going to be magistrate Court today" grandpa asked. " Ask your grandson, I

don't know" I said sitting down. I served myself breakfast, Salvatore was just having his in silence. " Mommy, Mommy" I heard Lorenzo's voice coming from the outside. I rushed to the main door and found him standing there. " What?, What are you doing here Lore...how did you get here" I asked picking him up. He just shook his head childishly. " Where's Nina mom?" I asked walking with him toward the dining room. " Work, working in his..." He said thoughtfully. " She went to work in the hospital?" I asked smiling. He nodded, " and where's Petunia" I asked. " She's Washing, I run away" he said so happily , like he did something wonderful.

" I've been meaning to ask, who's son is he" mom asked frowning I put Lorenzo on the chair next to mine. " He looks a lot like Alonzo" she added smiling at Lorenzo. " That's because he is his father" I said looking at Lorenzo who was trying to stand up on the chair. " You didn't tell me you had a kid together" Mom said frowning. grandma cleared her throat. " That's because we don't, he is Nina's son" I said sighing heavily. " And how old is he" she asked, I was

drained. " He'll be fully three years old Next week Saturday." Salvatore answered. " And you've been dating for almost four years, this is amazing" Mom said unbelievably. " Mom please, it's not like that. He was conceived before we started dating" i said sighing heavily. " Mom, I'm hungry" Lore said in his tiny little voice. I gave him a Vienna. " What happened to his mother, he calls you mother" she asked, I could see pity in her eyes. " That's because I am his mother, it's complicated. Can we talk about something else" I said so annoyed. My day was turning out to be a disaster. I never thought or expected my first day as a married woman to be so disastrous. Right now I should be in a hotel room somewhere with my husband. Cuddled up or feeding each other strawberries with cream or better yet having a great morning glory. But there i was trying to defend our marriage, there he was looking so furious but trying his best to hide it. " Excuse me" he said standing up and going upstairs. " You fought, didn't you?" Grandma asked. " No" I lied through my teeth, " I'm not asking you, I'm telling you by the way I heard the noise. I bet everybody else did, whatever it

is go and fix it" she said. Why didn't she understand that that there was nothing to fix, he had made his mind about my character. A betrayer and miss Holly Holly, I continued eating my breakfast while feeding Lore. " Cora didn't you hear what I had just said" she said after five minutes later, " I'm still having my breakfast" I murmured softly. " Are you back chatting with me?...go upstairs and fix things with your husband" she said pointing up the staircases. I stood up, took Lorenzo into my arms. " Put my grandson down, infact give me the baby. I'll feed him...who fights on their wedding night?, Gee Kids" she said unbelievably. I gave Lorenzo to her and went upstairs. I found him sitting on bed video calling with who seemed like a business partners, telling for their convesartion . I passed by and went to the closet. A good opportunity for me to rearrange my closet. I did just that, but it consumed less time because I found him still on his lap top. ' cleaning up the bathroom wouldn't be be such a hideous idea. I went downstairs, making sure that nobody saw me and got the cleaning chemicals and a bucket and a mop. Started with my cleaning, it was pointless after

all. It still changed nothing, but at least I didn't have to talk to him. I finished with the bathroom then went to the balcony, he was now busy with some paper work. I finished up and went downstairs to put things in their rightful places after cleaning them. " Did you talk things out" mom asked as I was coming from the storeroom. " Yes we did, we did. It was just a minor misunderstanding after all" I said faintly smiling. " For 16 years I raised you, don't you think I'd know when you're lying" she asked frowning. " Well people change, I'm not that 16 years old go you knew anymore" I said "You know where you'll find me when you're ready to talk" she said then walked away. I walked out to the roof top after taking my unfinished breakfast. I ate up " you might want to forgive that sandwich you know" Connie said approaching me. " Leave me alone Con" I said irritated. " I'm not going anywhere" she said walking around. " You have such a beautiful enormous house, and the waterfall ,the lake view " she said. " Is that why you're here, I already know all the stuff you've mentioned. You can go now, thanks for reminding me" I said irritated. "Geez, no need to bite my head

off, I was just complimenting the grand house. That's all... and I am here regarding shopping. When are we going to go to the mall, I need to get ready" she said. " Was I there when you discussed about shopping?" I asked eyebrows raised. " No" she said looking so perplexed. " Was i there when you asked for his card, was I there when he agreed and suggested that I accompany you. Did I agree" I asked. " of Course not, if you were there you'd know, right?. Just get to the point" she said. " My point is that whatever you and Salvatore discussed and agreed on is non of my business. He can take you there and buy you million dollar clothes, I don't care. It doesn't concern me, so please stop involving me in your damn agreements." I snapped. " Ohh sorry, I'm sorry for asking you. I'll tell you what, you shouldn't take your frustrations out on people. If I knew it would be so much of an issue then believe me I wouldn't have disturbed your peace" she said, sounding so hurt. She then walked back " Con, I'm sorry..."I said but it was a little bit too late. She was already gone. From worse to worst, I went back inside. What was frustrating was the fact that I had

nothing to do. My Monday routine was disturbed, I went to the library. " Cora, your phone is ringing" Charles said walking inside the library. " Ohh thanks" I said taking it. " Mandy..." I answered the call " Mrs Salvatore, how does it feel like to finally be called Mrs him. " She asked so bubbly. " Amanda nothing has changed, I'm still me. Nothing has changed, I'm still the Cora you knew from yesterday" I said sighing softly. " Ohhk... anyways tell me about last night. You must have made sweet love till dawn" she said, " nothing happened Amanda, it's not like I was a virgin who felt so excited about her first time. We've had sex a million times before" i said rolling my eyes. " Ohokay, but even so. You must have t

had that glimpse of excitement" she said, not so forward any more. " I don't know, we are not on talking terms, nothing happened last night. We fought" I said. " Owhhh I'm sorry" she said. " yeah,look I gotta go. We'll chat later on today" I said. " Okay, I'll call you because I know you never call back whenever you promise to" she said. " bye" I said then hung up. The time was 10 am, I was

choosing out a book when Lore and Con entered. " Your husband said I must tell you to Get ready, you're leaving for court in an hour" she said looking at Lorenzo who was busy pulling her hair. " Can we talk?" I asked sitting down, she set down too. " What is it" she asked. " About I said earlier, I'm sorry" I said looking at her. " Ohh that, I'm over that. Just take me for shopping after court and you'll be fully forgiven" she said. " Really?" I asked and she nodded. " We used to get along, you and I. You don't need to act so elderly and old sister gaga on me, we used to be friends. I know that deep down inside there you're still childish as hell" she said looking at me, I just smiled. " It'll never happen again, I promise" I said. " Good cause I don't want to go to prison for stabbing your ass" she said. " Whoa, you might want to take It easy. I'll go and get ready" I said chuckling.

.

I was wearing a black tight short dress, with no sleeves and and black heels, gold wrist watch. I was the to put on my pearls when he helped me, my heart started pounding. I don't know Know if it was out of

fear or his closeness to me but but whatever it was I did not like it. " Thanks" I said walking away from him. He held my waist then twirled me around so that I face him. " I need to get my bag" I said looking anywhere but him. " I'm sorry for what I said earlier on" he said, I was still in his grip. " I should be the one apologising, I'm sorry. I shouldn't have tried to be the mending stitch between the two of you. I don't even know the depth of your pain. I'm sorry" I said, really regretting it. If I didn't do that we would have had a great time last night. " And I should not have doubts and questioned your interests and intentions. You were only trying to help" he said. " I won't interfere between you two no more and for preaching earlier on i apologise. I was out of my senses, I provoked you" I said looking down on the floor. " Let's bury the hatchet and move on" he said tilting my head up so that I could look at him. I nodded slowly, " but don't ever shout at me like that, you scared me" I said solemnly. " Did I?...I am sorry" he said kissing my forehead.

.

We did sign in community of property, my parents were my witness while his grandparents were his. And then Con and I went shopping with Salvatore's card while they went home in a limo. " That's it, we're done" I said sighing. " But Cora" she whined. " No buts, I am still going to start a family. You're wasting my husband's money" I said. " One more item?, Please" she pleaded, we were at Woolworths. " Just one" I said. She picked thigh high boots. We payed and went out. I did some grocery shopping and then we took a cab home. It was around 5pm. My feet were so sore, Con and Charles offloaded the groceries. I found Salvatore preparing dinner, Lorenzo was sleeping on the couch with the remote control in his hands. I covered him up with a shawl, took off my heels and walked on barefoot. " I should get going" I said hugging him from behind. " Do you really have to go" he asked turning around. " Yes, I'm going to take a quick shower then drive off" I said looking up at him. He brought his head closer and closer to mine and then we kissed, he was squeezing my but while I was leaning on the kitchen island. My hands found their way to the back of his

head. We were kissing passionately and with so much hunger when his grandpa walked in. " Get a grip over yourselves, good lord let us not eat umpire food" he exclaimed praying. It was such an embarrassing situation to be caught up in. " Grandpa!" Salvatore exclaimed laughing. " I'm going to go upstairs" I murmured softly and looking down. " You've embarrassed my wife" I heard Salvatore say. I took a quick shower then wore my PJs, " have dinner with us then I'll drive you there" Salvatore said as soon as I got out of the closet. " And what about my car?" I asked zipping my sleep over bag which had a few clothes and shoes. " The chauffeur will be driving behind us" he said

" Okay " I said taking my handbag and phone from the bed. " Can't you sleep over and then leave tomorrow morning?" He asked as we were exiting the room. "I wish I could but I can't" I said. And then there was a loud commotion downstairs, I heard Nina's voice. We hurried downstairs. " Where's she?" I heard her say. She was shouting out the door. I put my bags on the couch, " what's going on here?"

Salvatore asked walking towards the door. Grandma was standing in the middle of the door blocking her way. " Isn't it this crazy woman out here, she wants to whip the baby with the stick she's carrying in her hands" grandma said. " Who gave you the right to take my son, Cora huh." She asked ready to kill someone. " I took your son?" I asked frowning. " I had to tolerate your nonsense ever since yesterday. I want my son, where's he?" She shouted. " Nina, if you do not close that dirty mouth of yours then I'll be forced to help you close it" Salvatore said. " Let me talk to her" I said walking out. " I didn't take Lorenzo, he walked here all by himself, as for yesterday Salvatore did. I don't know why you have to get me involved in this" I explained calmly. " Your so called husband forcefully took away my son all because of you, for your sake. He can't think of anything else other than you, it always has to be about you. Cora this Cora that, I'm so fed up. If you so desperately want a baby why don't you make one for yourself and leave mine alone." She shouted. " I'd appreciate it if you kept your voice down a bit, Lorenzo is sleeping" I said. " Give me my baby" she said sighing.

I went back inside and took the sleeping Lorenzo and gave him to her. " Don't ever touch my baby" she said. " Can I get my shawl back" I asked. " Here's your stupid shawl" she said throwing it down. I picked it up and dusted off the dirt, went back inside. Everybody was standing near the door. " Let's go and have dinner" I said smiling at them. We set around the dining table and had dinner in silence. Let that old woman bully you" she said. " I will" I said. " I love you, call me if you need anything" she said, I nodded. " when are you going to go back home" I asked as we were walking upstairs. " I took a four days leave, we will go home tomorrow afternoon" she said. " Call me when you get home" I said. She nodded.

[6/10, 07:39] Lynne: Page 64

Cora's POV

.

Mom and I walked back upstairs, I pumped into Salvatore on. He had a jacket in his hands. " Let's go" he said looking at me. " Let me say goodbye to everyone" I said walking towards dining room. " I'm

leaving, I'll see you when I see you guys" I said to everyone. " Next time I come here I want to see great grandchildren running around" grandpa said. " You'll see just that" I said smiling. " We will call you before taking our flight " grandma said hugging me. " Dad I'll see you when I come home" I said squirting down in front of him. He put his hand on my head, " be happy" he said seriously. " Connie and Charles behave yourselves and take care of Mom and Dad" I said pulling them in for a hug. " I'll call you every night" Con said smiling. " Do visit us soon" Charles said. " Will do, bye every one" I said exiting the room. I found Salvatore already in the car. I got in and he drove in. Only music was playing on our way, he tried to make a conversation there and there. The security guard opened the gate for us, I also saw my car following behind. I got out and opened the back door, took my bags . He retrieved one of the two bags from my hand. " I'll walk you upstairs" he said and I said nothing to that. I unlocked the door and we walked in, " thanks" I said taking the bag from him. " Are you OK?" He asked. " Yeah, I'm good" I said faking a smile. " Hey, what's wrong" he said holding

both my hands. " I'm fine, I'm just tired" I said looking at him. He kissed me, hands under my vest. Moving in circular motion on waist. " Salvatore, not today" i said pulling out, I could feel his male rod getting hard. He look at me for a while, sighed then smiled. " I'll call you later" he said. I nodded, " goodnight" he added. " Good night" I said then he walked out. It was 20pm, I got started with my books. I went an extra mile whenever something was not well with me. I went to sleep around 2am, woke up at 6am and went to the hospital. In between studying to take the written certification examination I was busy planning for Lorenzo's birthday party. It has been a week since we got married and I was driving back home, it was a friday night. I was playing Luther vandross, it's true that the company we keep has an influence on us. I started liking the kind of music he loved, the kind of meals. I mean a lot of things. I parked in the garage and got out of the car with my handbag, took my suitcase from the boot. I had laundry that needed to be done. I walked to the first floor, the time was 21pm. The first thing I saw was Salvatore Infront of the television, whatever he was watching seemed to

be interested. He didn't even hear me walking in. The house was empty then the last time I left. Everybody was gone, it was just me, him and Lorenzo ohh and Petunia as well. " What are you watching" I asked dropping my bags down. " Ohh!" He said looking startled. " Don't tell me you're watching porn!" I said walking towards him. " you almost gave me a heart attack, I could have used a warning" he said holding his chest. " What are you watching?" I asked sitting on his lap. " See for yourself" he said pulling me closer to him. " A chick flick?" I asked giggling. " What?, you talked about it last week and I was clueless. So here I am" he said kissing my shoulder. " Mmh, aren't you just a perfect husband" I said putting my arm around his neck. " How are you doing my wife?" He asked making me giggling. " I am OK, how about you my husband?" I asked smiling. " I'm good, just that I've been missing you like crazy" he said grabbing my breasts. " Not more than me... How's Lore" I asked. " He's been doing good, he's fine... he's sleeping and yes I read to him." He said. " I'm thirsty, I'll go and get myself a glass of water" I said getting out of his grip. " You must be hungry,

there's food for you in the microwave" he said. " Thank you...I believe that you were born to be my guardian angel" I screamed as I was walking " more like a servant" he screamed back. I just laughed. Warmed up my food, it was just rice and chicken with Greek salad.i poured a glass of water and drank up and then a glass of cranberry juice. I came back and set next to him." " How's the building process going" I asked. " We're getting closer to the end point, by January next year. It will be finished" he said. It had been two years since the building of hotel Paradisé in Durban began. " You must be losing a lot of money, telling from the pictures you sent me. It's going to be bigger than the one in here" I said glancing at him. " Not really, the investors did me good. I'm coping. After this I'm going to be making more millions" he said. " you must teach me business, I also want to make mills" I said kiddingly. " And you'll teach me how to save lives" he said kissing my neck. " It's a fair deal then" I said laughing. " The investors are going to have shares in the hotel?" I asked. " Yeah" he said shortly 30 minutes later I was done eating, had washed the dishes and I

was laying my head his lap looking up at him. " Any plans for tomorrow" he asked. " I'll take a jog early, after that I want to lazy around the house. I've been pushing a lot these days" I said. " I was thinking that maybe we could take an ice-cream drive. The three of us?" he said. " I'd like that" I said smiling. We talked about a lot of stuff, until 23pm. " Let's go to bed" he said. " Carry me there" I said. " Please" I begged. " Next time, you're going to carry me." He said picking me up after switching off the television. " Remind me" I said laughing.

.

I was brushing my teeth, he was already undercovers. " I was thinking that maybe you could help me bake Lorenzo's cake" I said getting on top of him, he was laying on his back. " Are you asking or still thinking of asking" he said. " I'm asking for your help" I said taking off my vest. " Why can't we just order one" he asked. " I want to personally do it, something yo remember. We'll bake it with him. It'll be much fun" I said. " I think you've forgotten that you come back here on Fridays and his birthday

party is on Saturday" he said. " Well, I didn't think about that...but we can still do it this Sunday" I said bending over and kissing him. " Since you're asking so seductively I'm bound to say yes" he said holding my waist. He was only wearing his boxers. He flipped me under him, " Is it?" I asked biting my lower lip. " Ah ha" he said kissing my upper body, so tickling. " He took off my shorts along with my panties. He was caressing my body, kissing me all over, his hands feeling every inch of me. My breathing was hitched, eyes closed. He kissed my lower tummy then my mound, he separated my legs widely apart and started eating me down there. Got my toes curled up, " mhh.." I moaned tilting my head to the side. he nibbled my soft bud while finger fucking me. I was pushing his head down, encouraging him to keep on doing what he was doing. He took off his boxers and was left fully naked, he came back up and we shared a kiss. I could feel his head on my entrance. his giant cucumber was rod hard. He flipped me over and I was on top. I started giving him a hand job and then put his thing in my mouth, which still makes me gagging even

today. I was sucking on him like a lollipop, while moving my hand up and down. By the way he was grabbing my hair I could tell that he was enjoying every minute of it. I then squirted on top of him, teased myself with his cucumber. He held my waist and pulled me down, and it hit me hard that my eyes popped out and I gagged. It was too long to be fully in, I moved up a bit. And started moving up and down. Side to side, increased my pace. He was groaning like crazy. I bended over and we were kissing while I was fending. I couldn't take the hit anymore, I cum on top of him. He flipped me over and hit it from behind until he cum. He took off his boxers and was left fully naked, he came back up and we shared a kiss. I could feel his head on my entrance. his giant cucumber was rod hard. He flipped me over and I was on top. I started giving him a hand job and then put his thing in my mouth, which still makes me gagging even today. I was sucking on him like a lollipop, while moving my hand up and down. By the way he was grabbing my hair I could tell that he was enjoying every minute of it. I then squirted on top of him, teased myself with his

cucumber. He held my waist and pulled me down, and it hit me hard that my eyes popped out and I gagged. It was too long to be fully in, I moved up a bit. And started moving up and down. Side to side, increased my pace. He was groaning like crazy. I bended over and we were kissing while I was fending. I couldn't take the hit anymore, I cum on top of him. He flipped me over and hit it from behind until he cum. Morning jog was not an option, I was freaking tired. I slept till 8, well I was woken up by Lorenzo who came jumping on our bed. Alonzo was not around. " Mommy wake up!" She screamed jumping up and down. " Lorenzo..." I said whining. I was naked under the sheets. " Wakey Wakey" he said kneeling down, making me laugh because I was the one who used to say that to him when he wouldn't want to get out of bed. " You're such a naughty little rascal" I said looking at him. " I want breakfast" he said. "That's not a nice way to ask, say " mommy may you please make me breakfast'. Where's your Papa anyways" I asked. " I want breakfast" he said folding his arms and sulking. " Say please!" I insisted. " Angfuni" he screamed, " whoa, who taught you

that?" I asked eyes popped out. " Leave me alone!" He said walking out. " Lorenzo!" I called out following him while wrapping the sheet around my body. " He Lore... what's wrong with you" I asked grabbing him on his way downstairs. " Let me go" he yelled Geez that was first, I was so confused as to how I should react to to that. " I'm asking you a question, you better answer me" I snapped. He just cried, " what's wrong lore" I asked kneeling down. He cried even more, " I'm sorry, what's is it my boy" I asked wiping away his tears. " You don't love me mommy, you're going to leave me, you're not my mom" he said through his tears. " I am your mommy, who told you that I am going to leave you, huh?" I asked holding his shoulders. " I don't want you anymore" he screamed. " Don't say that!, I love you. I'm not going anywhere, you're my son" I said holding him in my arms. " Nina mom says you're going to leave me" he said crying. " Don't believe her, she doesn't know what she's saying. I'll always be here, I'm your mother lore and I'll always be here for you because I love you. Nina mom was just joking" I said crying myself. " She says you're going to have another baby

and leave me" I said. He started nodding, " I am not going anywhere, okay?". He nodded, he cappuccino face had turned red. " I love you so much, you're the best thing that has ever happened to me. I'm never going to leave you" I said. " Promise" he asked, he had hiccups. " I promise" I said kissing him all over the face. " I love you mommy" he said hugging me. " I love you more...go to the kitchen. I'll come and make you breakfast" I said smiling faintly. " Okay mommy" he said smiling. I went back to the room and wore my gown. Then went downstairs, I was preparing scrambled eggs when Salvatore walked in " hey buddy" he said to Lore, to my instinct he was kissing his head. " Good morning my heart beat" he said hugging me from behind. I nodded, " you've become a mute now" he said chuckling and turning me around. " Cora... you're crying, what's wrong. What happened" he asked looking so angry. " It's nothing, I'm fine" I said wiping off my tears. " What do you mean it's nothing, you're crying. What's wrong, is it something I did?, Talk to me il mio cuero batte" He said looking beyond worried, " you must be hungry, go and take a shower and come back in 5. Breakfast

will be ready by then" I said smiling faintly. " I am not going anywhere until you tell me what's wrong, Lore what happened to your mother?" He asked eyes darting between the two of us. " Salvatore please, don't involve a kid in this matter. Just go" I said. " Cora you—..." Not now Joaquin" I said sighing heavily. He nodded then left. I made scrambled eggs, fish fingers, bacon and toasted brown bread. Dished up for Lore and served him with a glass of juice. " Eat up, I'll be back. I'm going to take a shower OK" I said kissing his forehead. " Thanks Mom" he said already eating. I found Salvatore sitting on bed when I walked in, he had a towel wrapped around his body. Hair wet, " look i gotta go" he said hanging up on whom ever he was talking to. " We need to talk" He said as I closed the door. " I don't want to talk about it" I said walking towards the bathroom. " well I do" he said Walking towards me and grabbing my arm. " You've been doing this since that Sunday evening, you won't talk to me. You're pushing me away" he shouted. " What do you want me to say?" I asked crying. " You were there when your baby mama insulted me but you did nothing" I shouted back. "

And then today your three year old son looked me in the eye and told me that I am not his mother. What will you do about that, it is the truth isn't it." I said leaning towards the wall ." That evil woman instigated the child against me, I've gave so much to Lorenzo. All my heart, I gave myself. Tried to look at the bright side, I've done nothing but love her son but look what she has done. She's poisoning him" I screamed sliding down the wall. " There's nothing I didn't do, nothing I wouldn't do for Lore but his mother is so ungrateful. If I was another woman he would have probably slept hungry some days or worse. I even welcomed her into my home...who does this to their kids, what kind of a woman would want to instill hatred in to their kids...I can't deal with Nina anymore. I'm tired Salvatore, i am drained, I tried to be nice to her but I guess some people are just born bitter." I said crying, I was suffocating. He kneeled down on my side and embraced me. " I'm sorry, I'm going to fix this, my own way. The only way I know how." He said, I could feel anger and sadness in his voice. I looked up at him after a long time. " What are you going to to" I asked wiping away my

tears. " Nothing to worry about, just know that after this she'll respect you" he said, holding my face on both sides. " She'll only get to see Lorenzo when I am around. I'm not going to just sit back and watch while my son is being turned into a bitter human being. I don't want him to be like me. I'll get his sole custody" he said looking down at me but his brain was somewhere else

.

To be continued

[6/3, 14:57] Lynne: Continuing...

Cora's POV

.

Well I dressed up in my short pick jumpsuit and ankle length black leather boots and put his big biking jacket with a lot of badges on top. Him and lore were dressed in black long sleeve shirt and black jeans then timberland boots. We were going to

eat out, my phone was connected on Bluetooth, playing in the car. We were riding a jeep grand Cherokee. I was looking out the window, leaning on it. I have my feet up the seat, body snuggled up together. " Try to loosen up a bit, everything is going to be fine" he said putting his hand on the shoulder. I was startled a bit. " Mmh" I said turning to face him. " You look so tense" he said faking a smile. " I'm good...Lore are you good?" I asked looking at the back seats but to my surprise he was sound asleep. Salvatore just chuckled shaking his head. " Salvatore?, Don't do anything that would hurt Lore in anyway" I said looking at him. " Every one of us have got that one that matters to us, she might not love her Son but there's someone out there that she loves, I'ma use that person to get what I want" he said looking at the road. " What flavour should we get?" He asked diverting the topic, I was puzzled. " Flavour?" I asked frowning. " The cake..." He said. " Ohh that, he likes vanilla. So vanilla it is" I said chuckling a bit. " You've influenced my son, you're the one who likes vanilla and now look at him" he said. " What can I say, I'm the Queen of hearts" i said

a little bit cheesy. " Ohw yeah?" He asked. I couldn't help but laugh. " At last, she laughs" he said glaring at me, making me blush in the process. " Don't forget that you're driving" I said . " Ohh" he said concreting on the road. " You see, you're destructing me" he said. " What did I do?" I asked. " Stop looking so sexy!" He said. Ohh God he was such a flirt. " Ain't you just a flirt Mr Salvatore?" I asked giggling. " It runs in the family, its in our brains" he said giving me one of those smiles, that smile of his. That made fall inlove with him at first site. " Don't cry when our sons turn out to be just like this... expect many many grandchildren" he said making me laugh. " I'll be damned if I let them turn out to be like you" I said. " What?, Am I that bad...I thought you loved me like this. I'm the best you could ever find in the market babe" he said glancing at me. " You're perfect, but there can be only one Alonzo in this world. Isn't it?. " I said smiling thoughtfully. " What are you thinking about" he asked as we p as parked. " You want to know?" I asked getting out of the car. He got out to. He came to my side. " I'd like to know what's cooking up in that beautiful head of yours." He said looking at

me. Hands on his pocket. I pulled his head down, "I'm just thinking of how much I love you, I'm inlove with you Joaquin" I whispered into his ear. Then backed away, he just looked at me and smiled, I opened the door but he closed and swiftly turned me around before I knew it his lips hit mine. There was no breathing in between the kiss, it left me breathing but not breathing in between was not the main reason why my heart was racing and adrenaline rushing. "I could take you here" he said looking at me in that way he does when he wants to get it in my valley of fire. "We're in public" I said clearing my throat. He sighed heavily, I opened the door and woke up Lorenzo. Gave him to Salvatore who was still caught up in that kiss. I got bag "we will start by shopping and then eat later on, let's go" I said. "Cora, you might want to stay a little longer" he said looking so weird. "What, why?" I asked frowning. "Junior down there is awake" he said looking down. "Of course he is, Lore's awake because I woke him up. What's new in that?" I asked impatiently. "Cora I'm not talking about Enzo, I'm talking about your giant cucumber" he said, I looked and my eyes popped out.

" Ohh why didn't you just say so earlier" I asked still looking at it bulging over the jeans. " Papa I also want eat cucumber" Lorenzo said. I could not help but burst into laughter. " This is no laughing matter Cora" he said upset. " Ohh sorry, I just couldn't help myself" I said clearing my throat. " You're smiling,you did this to me" He said angrily. " What did I do, you kissed me first" I protested." That what happens when you whisper sweet something to a man, he gets turned on" he said. " Whoa language please, we've got a kid around... let's do this, you can stay in the car while Lorenzo and I go and get the grocery" I suggested. I made a list of things to be bought, " we will be back...try not to jerk off" I said. " I'll kill you Cora" he said through gritted teeth. " Yeah I love you too" I said blowing him a kiss. Carrying Lorenzo was such a...he was heavy. I put inside the trolley as soon as we got into the shop. " Mommy... I want that car" he said pointing at the toy car. " say please" I said. " Mom may I please have that car" he said figgitating with his fingers. " That's better...That wasn't so hard now wasn't it?" I said picking up the toy, he a dozen of remote controlled car, kids will

always be kids. " Cora is that you?" I heard someone in front of us ask. I looked up and it was Dr Francis. " Hi" I said weirdly smiling at him. " Small city isn't it?" He said walking towards us. " Not exactly, what are you doing here?" I asked, giving him a lip sealed smile. " Shopping just like you" he said. " Ohh obviously" I said, my brain was somewhere else. He was a handsome man in his late 20s, white and tall. His body said that he went to gym a couple of times in a few weeks. " I didn't know that you had a son" he said. " Hello little one" he said bending over towards Lore, who seemed more interested in the toy car he was carrying. " Mom let's go" he said ignoring Dr Francis. " Lore that's rude, apologize to Mr Francis" I said. " You can't expect my son to go around apologizing to strangers" his voice said from behind. I turned around and he was approaching us. " " what are you busy discussing with my wife, if I must know" he asked. Seeming so cool but I knew he was boiling inside. " Dr Francis meet my husband, Salvatore. You must have heard of him" I said introducing them to each other, he looked at Joaquin for a short time. " Ohh Mr Salvatore, the owner of

hotel Paradisé?. I've heard a lot about you, I must say it's a grand building you have there" he said extending his hand. " I don't go around shaking hands with pathetic loser" he said putting his hands in his jeans pocket. " Alonzo" I exclaimed. " Oh it's OK, I apologize if I may have offended you in some way. I didn't know that Cora is married" he said so calmly. " It's Mrs Salvatore to you, Cora let's Go" Salvatore said pushing the trolley. " What was that about?" I asked as we joined the cue to the cashier after getting everything we needed. He didn't answer my question, we paid then loaded the groceries into the car. He had Lorenzo in his shoulders as we walked into some restaurant." let's order take away, I don't want to get home hungry and then have to cook" I suggested looking at the menu. " Who's that guy?" He finally asked, I was waiting for that. " He's one of the residency students supervisor, he's a gynaecologist" I said. " Did I ask you about his occupation?" He said looking furious. " What's your question exactly" I asked frowning. " Does he always get personal with the students, every student or is it just you?" he asked. " I wouldn't know, I don't follow

him around all day to know that kind of information" I said bravely. " Don't try to fool me!" He half snapped. " Okay fine...he wants me, asked me out a couple of times, he has tried his luck with me" I said sighing. " And what was your response?" He asked. " Of course I turned him down" I said frowning. " I'm somebody's wife" I added. " What if you weren't?" He asked. " Before that I was somebody's girlfriend" I said looking at him. " Besides that I only want you, I love you only" I said holding Hand across the table. " Why didn't you let me know about this" he asked. " Salvatore...do I have to come back and report to you, every guy who wants me?. I'm sure you have a thousand of women throwing themselves at you, flirting with you. Do you tell me about them, no right?. Don't be ridiculous" I said chuckling a bit. " Now I am being ridiculous?, I saw the way he was looking at you and the fact that you felt uncomfortable around him makes me feel that there's something going on" he said. " Are you implying that I am cheating on you with him?, Even if I were to cheat on you he'd be the last person I'd consider doing it with. He's my supervisor, I just don't want to be rude with him. I

don't see him that way" I said firmly. " What kind of guy would you prefer cheating on me with then, I'd really like to know" he asked folding his arms around me. " Let's not do this here" I said sighing. I called the waitress and ordered a two take away meals and ice cream. One for me and one for LoreHe ordered too. " When are we going to do it then" he asked. " Don't let your jealousy cloud your judgement. There's nothing going on between us, you know that I love you" I said sighing. " Does he know?" He asked. " Yes, I've told him a couple of times...if you want i could let the whole world know" I said. " Would you?" He asked unbelievably but also daring me, " is that a dare?" I asked frowning, "what do think" he asked leaning back in a slump position. I stood up and got on top of the table, " what are you doing?" He asked through gritted teeth, he was the first one to feel embarrassed. " Can I have everybody's attention please..." I said and I got just that. " Thanks, this is my husband Alonzo. He just dared me to tell the whole world how much I love him. well here it is ' I love you Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore. No one else comes above you, no other man.' I love you only!" I

screamed in between. He had his head bowed down in embarrassment. " There you've got it" I said, he was Now looking at me, actually everybody clapped. I stepped down, " you're crazy" he said unbelievably. "Damn I haven't done such a crazy thing in a long time" I said giggling. " I hope that clears your doubts" I said huffing. " A bit" he said, " that's not fair!" I said sulking. He just laughed.

.

We ate then we took our order along with cupped ice creams, drove home. " Come on, open up" I said after scooping up his ice cream. He wasn't having it and it was melting. He shook his head. " Lore tell your Papa to open up" I said looking at the back seats. He was a little pretty mess, he T-shirt was covered in ice cream. " Open your mouth Papa" he said it so cutely. It was impossible not to fall inlove with her. " Open up, this thing is melting" I said, he did open his mouth. I was feeding him while having mine, we got home around 2pm. Offloaded the groceries and packed it. " No work today, we're going

to catch a movie" I said dragging him out of his office after Lorenzo and I took a bath It was around 4pm. " Cora I've got a lot of paperwork to fix" he said protesting. " I hardly spend time with you, please. I want to spend the whole weekend with my husband is that too much to ask for?." I asked sitting on his lap, he was sitting on his office chair behind the desk. I had my arms wrapped around his big neck, " this coming Tuesday is my deadline, I have to finish this" he said seriously and sighing. " OK fine, it's going to be me and lore alone then" I said standing up. " Cora don't be like that" he said grabbing my arm. " I said it's fine, work and I am going to watch a movie with Lorenzo" I said yanking my arm and walking out. Well I did just that, we watched an All rated movie, Lorenzo ended up falling asleep in his seat. I took him to bed and went to sleep myself. I was wearing my panties and vest, sleeping on top of the covers. " Are you asleep?" I heard him ask. I ignored him bluntly. He purposefully got on top of my back and layed on me. " Get off of me" I said Finding it hard to breath, he was heavy. " I thought you were sleeping" he said giggling. I set up straight after he got off me..

" are you angry with me?" he asked. " No...I was just apart but now I'm not. Can I go to sleep now?" I asked sighing softly. " Kiss me good night first" he said solemnly. " Good night Salvatore" I said rolling my eyes then lying down. I felt him stand up and then music started blasting up the roof. Geez are you for really?" I asked angrily. " You know what to do" he said coming back to bed. " Could you please lower down the volume" I pleaded. " Not before you kiss me good night" he said . I gave him a peck on the cheek, " good night" I said irritated. " Are we 13 year old teenagers, you call that a kiss" he asked unsatisfied. I sighed softly, he was tasting my patience. I held his head on both sides and gentle turned it around. I was in a kneeling position, I then kissed him slowly. My tongue invaded his mouth. He pulled in one leg and crossed it over his thighs, he was in-between my thighs and I was sitting on top of him. More closer to his torso. " Good night" I said pulling out. He was holding my waist and all wanted was to lie down. " Are you still angry" he asked looking up at me with a broad smile on his face. " no" I said shortly. " You behave so childish

sometimes but I like it, it's kind of cute" he said, I could see that he wanted to laugh at me. " That's probably because I am only 21, what do you expect?" I ask eyebrows raised. " And you have a smart mouth too" he said, " can I go to sleep now?" I asked. " Let's stay like this till morning" he said, eyes darting between mine as if he was searching for something. " Or we could have just have one round" he said looking at my lips. I didn't say a thing to that, he took off my vest. I took the remote and lowered down the volume. His play list was great, he was kissing my neck. His middle finger rubbing my bud gentle. I pulled down his boxers and his rod thing sprung Free. I gave it a hand job, I pulled my panties on the side and put it inside me, and started moving up and down slowly. The rest is history

.

I woke up around 7 am and he was not in bed. I went to the bathroom and took a shower, wore my undergarments after moisturizing my body. Then wore my jeans dungaree and a vest, then my sleepers. I went downstairs but only found Petunia

and Lorenzo. "Good morning guys, Have you seen Salvatore" I asked. " I haven't seen him, maybe he's in his office" Petunia said

.

Narrated

.

Nina was smoking in her room, she was to go to work around 5pm. Her shift started at 6pm. She was wearing nothing but a gown and then there was knock on her door. It was almost 8:30 in the morning. " Come in if you're handsome" she said feeling so high and then Salvatore walked in. " So much confidence" she said smiling. " What is it, is your wife's pussy boring you already" she asked giggling. The room had a mist of smoke, he opened up the windows. He had a brown bag in his hand " smoking will kill you someday" he said opening the windows. " I died the day you said " it's over" love killed me. Don't come here and act like you care" she said leaning on the headboard, eyes closed, smoke drawing out of her mouth slowly. " What do you

know about love Nina?" He asked sitting on the couch. " Just because you never gave me time chance to show you my good side doesn't mean that it's not there, I also have a heart Salvatore" she said looking at him, it was all games and fun until he walked out the door. She never knew that she was capable of loving another human beside her mother. Infact what she felt for him was more than that, closer to obsession it was. Just a mere sight of him pained her, she always knew that he was never hers to keep but the heart wanted what it wants. He looked at her with so much anger and resentment but kept her cool. " I got you something" he said standing up and giving her the paper bag. " You must be hungry" he said sitting back down." you poisoned this" she asked taking out the burger and chips. " If I wanted to kill you I would have done that a long time ago, that too with a gun" he said. " My soul will rest in peace if I die in your hands" she said taking the first bite. " What are you teaching Lorenzo, Nina?. You're brewing hatred in his head" he said looking at the burger she was eating. " This tastes so good" she said eating it like she has been hungry for days. "

And his name is Mongezi not Lorenzo, do you hate me so much that you had to allow your wife to name my child?" she asked looking at him. " I was civil with you, we had an understanding but then again you decided to ruin things like you always do" he said. " Remember that I told you about her on our first meeting, you pushed and nagged. We fuck, I told you that we could never be anything more than fuck friends. You caught emotions which I even doubt you did, a woman like you could never fall inlove. You're incapable of loving anyone else other than yourself, well your mother was lucky enough to get some part of your frozen. Which brings me to this question ' how does her flesh tastes like' is it good?" He asked. " What do you mean by that?" she asked frowning and frozen. " You've been eating up her thigh for the past few minutes now, how do you like your burger?" He asked. " What?, What have you done to my mom" she asked standing up, being high ended instantly. " You killed my mother?, What have you done to my mother. You monster" she asked grabbing him by her jacket. " You might want to let go of my jacket, you smell like shit." He said chilled

and she let go of him. " I didn't kill your mother, yes if it was the old Salvatore then he would have done just that. Do you know how much I hate to see my wife crying, I'll not sit back and watch selfish woman like you harm those I love. What are you teaching my son?. Don't worry about your mother, her wound will kill. Forgive me but this was the only way to get the message through Your thick skull. It was just a minor thigh cut, she'll be just fine. In a couple of weeks... Now I need you to sign these" he said handing her some papers and a pen. " You want to take my son away from me?" She asked crying after reading the papers. " Ohh please Nina, don't act like you care?. The only reason why you are calling is because your mother is lying in some hospital bed out there. Now don't waste my time, sign up. I can't stand the site of you" he said so heartlessly. She signed crying, " at least you'll get to see him. Under supervision, I'm doing this for Enzo. I don't want him to grow up and become the man I am today, I want him to get all the loving he could possibly get and that's impossible with you trying to poison his naïve mind. You're not good enough for him, if there was

ever any portion of your heart that has ever loved him you'll understand where I'm coming from. Now let me make one thing clear...if you ever hurt my wife again. I will be forced to bury your mother alive. Have a wonderful day" he said walking out. She searched for her phone and called her mother as soon as he closed the door. " Nina?" Her mother answered. " Mother?, Are you OK?. Are you hurt?" She asked fastly. " I'm fine Nina, I'm fine now" she said crying. " What happened mother, how is your thigh. Hold on, I'm coming to the hospital" she said pacing around. " Nina I'm fine, I'm not in the hospital" she said. " What, what happened then?" She asked frowning. " There were some man in here wearing black suits, they just left. They had guns Nina, what have you done now?" She asked crying. " You're hurt?" She asked. " Like I said I am fine, are you okay Nina" she asked. " Yeah I'm fine... looking I gotta go" she said than hung up. She realized that she has been tricked but the fact that Salvatore had plan B said a lot. Was he going to kill her family if she didn't sign?Cora's POV

.

I had opened a utube video on how to bake a cake. I was just getting started when Salvatore walked in. Well Lorenzo and I were breaking the eggs in to a bowl. " Getting started without me?" He asked hugging him from behind. "Where have you been?" She asked smiling. " Been around, I went to meet up with my lawyer regarding something" he said biting my ear. " Eauw God" Lorenzo exclaimed closing his eyes. We just laughed. Baked as a family, the kitchen was left in a mess due to playing with floor there and there.

.

" I promise I'll be back soon" he said kissing my forehead. " Bring dinner" i said. He was going to fix some crisis in one of his restaurants. " Wives cook you know" he said shaking his head while chuckling. " Well I am not just an ordinary wife, I'm Mr Salvatore's wife" she said giggling so cutely. He drove off, I was waving at him. " Let's go and attack some snacks" i said Carrying Lorenzo up and throwing him up. He was giggling, the time was 4pm. After that baking I cleaned up the kitchen while

Petunia bathed Lore and then took a quick shower too. We were just chilling in the couch, having some childish conversation that was going nowhere when I heard the doorbell ring. " Who might that be" I said standing up and walking towards the door which was quite a distance from the sitting room. " You?" I exclaimed, it was Nina standing at the door with a basket of clothes. " What can I do for you" I asked swallowing the lump in my throat. " Hi, can I come in" she asked looking behind me. " Sure" I said stepping aside. " Can I use your laundry machines, they are using the one that's in the guest house" she asked so politely. That was new, " sure, I'll show you the room" I said walking towards the laundry room which was down stairs. " He's like a magnet, you can't help but be pulled to him" she said. " Excuse me?" I asked lost. " Salvatore, I'm sure you fell inlove with him The first time you met and you were in denial. Before you Realized it you were into deep, there's no way out. Even if you try you wouldn't be able to get it out of your head. Then you'll know what pain is" she said putting in her white clothes. " What are you talking about" I asked frowning. " You might

think that you know what pain is right now but you actually don't. The day he walks out the door your whole world will be crushed. You will see no reason to hold on, but the glimpse of hope that he might just come back to you will keep you going. You'd want to die, he'd be long gone by then. You'd be forgotten about, having to see him will drown your soul. He feels so perfect, doesn't he? everything he does is immaculate. " She said smiling, that was the first time I saw her smile. But there was something deep behind the smile. " What are you talking about?" I asked still confused. " I just wanted to apologize for the way I treated you, one day you'll understand and forgive me. Thanks for allowing me to use your machine" she said sighing. " it's OK" I said walking away. I went back to sitting with Lore. " You've finished my favorite snack" I said whining. " It's my favorite snack" he said laughing. " But it was mine first" I said folding my arms. " It's mine too" he said laughing. " This is not fair" I said pretending to be crying. " Don't cry Mommy" he said patting my shoulder. " Gotcha" I said tickling him. He was giggling out loud. I had the feeling that someone

was staring at us and when I turned around I found Nina standing far away. I faintly smiled, she walked away.

.

" You OK?" Salvatore asked me as he was driving me to the residency apartment. " Yeah" I said. " Nina came into the house today" I said thoughtfully. " She insulted you didn't she" he said sighing heavily. " No, it's nothing like that... she actually apologized. Well in her kind of weird way, it's disturbing.what did you do to her" I asked. " What makes you think that i did something to her, we just talked. Whatever she said was all her, I'm sure What I did has nothing to do with it. Maybe she has realized her mistakes" he said. " Her words keep running in my mind, for the first time I saw her smile, she was smiling. For the first time she talked to me without shouting or cursing. " I said remembering the scene clearly. " She must be up to something" he said. " I don't think so, she looks so, so broken. I don't know, I actually feel sorry for her." I said sighing softly. " She's not to be trusted" he said shortly. " By the way I got her to sign the

papers that states that I'm the sole guardian of Lorenzo. She's going to only see him under supervision" he said. " Ohh, don't you think that you took it a little bit too far?" I asked. " I was not going to send my son to the Lions den, she's damaged. All I want is for my son to be raised in a good environment . Does that make me a bad person? " he asked sighing. " No... Just know that we all have got that cracked part of us. We're all damaged" I said. " Well her entire being is" he said.

.

" I'm sorry about what my husband said yesterday" I apologized to Dr Francis as we pumped into each other in the hospital corridor. " Good morning to you too Cora" he said smiling. " Ohh, good morning Dr Francis" I said chuckling weirdly. " For the 500th time, please do call me Donato " he said, that was his name. " I like keep it professional" I said faking a smile. " OK fine...for how long have you guys been married." He asked. "Not so long, This is the third week of our marriage actually" I said casually. " Ohh is it?, Well congratulations. And why wasn't I invited"

he asked. I just frowned. " That was meant to be a joke but I understand, my jokes are lame" he said. " Ohh, sorry. Next time I'll laugh" I said chuckling. " Good that there's going to be a next time" he said. " Have a good day Dr Francis" I said walking away, ignoring that. I checked on my patients, did my reports and was done for the day. I drove to the apartment building, took a quick shower then studied I was going to be writing on the following Monday, it was just going to be one long examination. Regarding the residency, one step way to my post graduate degree.

.

" Happy birthday to you, happy birthday to you, happy birthday to dear Lorenzo happy birthday to you. How old are you now, how old are you now, how old are you now... All the close family and friends were around. Except for the grandparents, grandma had flue. " Make a wish" I said after he blew off the candles. He closed his eyes and did, " can we have the cake now aunt" Rajesh's chubby daughter asked" mish!" Divya exclaimed .We just laughed, they came

with a lot of gifts, his room was overloaded. Nina was there too, "what's she doing here?" I whispered into Salvatore's ear as I saw Nomusa , Salvatore's mother entering the house. " I invited her, I'll try to get civilized with her, get to know her. Maybe someday we'll get along and I might forgive her. I'll try to give you the gift you've asked for" he said looking at her. " Thank you" I said looking at him. He nodded hands in his pockets. " Lorenzo, look who's here. Your grandmother" I said pointing at her. " Nomusa" father in-law said in a greeting manner. " Ettore" she said. " mom you're here?" Esihle said walking towards her. " Your brother invited me" she said. His birthday party was nothing grand, I wanted to keep it that way. Personal, with a lot of good memories to cherish. Pictures were taken, I must admit I got a little bit jealous when Nina lore and Salvatore took one together. Who wouldn't?. We had food and cake, got separated late in the evening. I was left with a lot of cleaning, Esihle stayed back to help me. That was a relief.

.

" Good night" I said throwing myself on the bed. He was doing something In his laptop. "Good night Il mio cuero batte" he said kissing my head. On Sunday I went to church, apparently they missed me and they heard about my wedding. No surprise there, after all it was our priest who performed the ceremony.I came home around 1pm, found Lore on her aunt's laps. " Hi guys" I said taking off my heels and joining them on the couch. I leaned back and took a deep breath" mommy, you're back Lorenzo said moving from Esihle's thighs to mine. " You could use a massage" she said chuckling. " Yoh!, I've never been so tired...I thought you went to work?" I said looking at her. "A wise man once said that ' There are privileges in working at your brother's restaurant'. I asked for a pass out" she said. " Taking advantage, I see. Go girlfriend" I said chuckling unbelievably. " Don't blame me, after cleaning up your messy house I was bound to get tired. " Mhh...by the way where's your brother?" I asked. " You mean your husband?" She asked. " Ah ha, that guy . Where's he?" I asked. " He went out, didn't say where so don't ask me" she said. " Ohh let me call

him" I said opening my bag and taking my phone. It rang but was unanswered until it lead to voice mail. I called three times but still no answer." I'll go and change" I said putting Lore on the couch. He started crying, kids!. " I'll be right back OK?. Stay with aunt and watch cartoons" I said kissing his forehead. " Cora, what have you done. I've been watching cartoons all day long and when I finally get a break...you" she said whining. " Sorry" I said shrugging my shoulders. " Auntie, Masha and the Bear" I heard Lore say, I could not help but laugh. I changed into my long white dress and sleepers. " Let me start cooking and then browse through my books" I said coming downstairs, " I'll help you or rather let me Cook" she said walking towards the kitchen with me. " It's fine, I'll cook. You took a day off just to relax, go and sit down" I said. " No I insist, I can bare an hour of cooking other than watching the repeat of Masha and the Bear. I think I getting sick" she said sighing heavily. " Come, they're not that bad. I've watched cartoons a couple of times now. They're hilarious" I said giggling. " You're his mother that's why you tolerate every insane thing. I

don't understand how you bare this" she said huffing. " Come on it's nice, and when are you and Tiaxiang settling down?" I asked. " The day he'd stop doing fucked up things, I don't think I want to continue seeing him. He's crazy, who changes their looks like that?" She asked confusing me. " Does what?" I asked frowning. " Forget it anyways what are we preparing. I was thinking stiff pap, roasted chicken...

.

" I saw your missed call, sorry I couldn't call you back ASAP" that was the first thing he said as soon as he walked in to the library. It was around 5pm and I was studying. " You're back" I said standing up. " I was starting to get worried" I added walking towards him and hugging him. " Yeah I'm back" he said. " Where have you been" I asked looking at him. " I had to receive some merchandise and make sure it gets distributed accordingly" he said. " You mean cocaine" I said walking away. He didn't answer that. " We ate, your food is in the microwave" I said sighing softly and sitting down. " I'll eat later, let me take you to your apartment first" he said. " I'll drive myself" I

said. " Don't be like that Cora" he said putting his hands on my shoulders. " Being like what?" I asked taking a deep breath. " You know what I mean, I can't just wake up and decide to quit. It doesn't work like that. There are a lot of drug lords and gangsters involved...let me drive you there " he said. " OK" I said putting my hand on his. " Have you dinner first, you must be starving" I said. " I love you OKAY?" he said kissing my cheek. " I love you too" I said faintly smiling.

.

On Monday I drove to the university where the examination was going to be written. 4 hours of writing played with no man. I was hell tired when I finished, I was walking in the canteen when I noticed that a lot of eyes were on me. I was so puzzled, others start laughing. I needed to get out of there. I was walking towards my car. " Sies I hate prostitutes" I heard guys say as I passed by. " Hey Que, miss star is this way" another said following me. Others were watching God knew what in their phones. And then I was attacked by a group of

journalists. " Miss Maphumulo is it true that you're a prostitute?, What do you have to say about the leaked videos of you on the internet, How long have you been doing this dirty job?" They kept on asking and asking, I was pushing through the crowd. I could feel tears building up, I felt so weak. I couldn't even see where I was going. And then I heard what sounded like a gun shot, the crowd separated. Some layed down, some ran. I was just standing there dumbfounded and crying. " Let's go" I heard a guy say. It was like i was glued to the ground, " let's go Cora" he said pulling my hand, dragging me towards the SUV. He had a lot of bodyguards with him. " Let's go" I heard him say faintly when he managed to get me into the car. The bodyguards were holding the crowd back. There was a lot of commotion.

.

Paragraphs

[6/3, 14:57] Lynne: Page 65

Cora's POV

.

Somehow the driver managed to drive off, " are you OK ma'am" the guy asked. I could hear him but it was like he was so far away. Tears were blurring my vision, I didn't even realize that the car had parked Infront of the house. " Cora" I heard Salvatore's voice as he opened the door. I looked at him, his eyes were red. Like he had been crying or something. He looked furious too, " Come" he said taking my hand but I was still stuck in the same position. He carried me into his arms and walked inside the house. Put me down on the couch, I noticed later on that the house was a mess. All the vases around me were broken, including the television which was somehow down. " Il mio cuero batte" he said embracing me. " Where were you?" That's the first question I asked, I still remember it clearly like yesterday. " I'm sorry...I should have been there to protect you" he said. " When will you realize that you cannot protect me against the whole world, everyone knows?" I said smiling. " I will try, I will do anything to fix this" he said. " I want to see everything" I said wiping away my tears. " No, you don't need to see anything" he said. " Salvatore please" that's all I said. He nodded

then went into his room then came back with a laptop. He opened it on goggle, secluded from the Don's site. I thought I'd find it there. Somehow it was in line with the one Nina posted years ago, the one with me and Salvatore dancing in the club. There were more videos, with different guys. The ones I did to attract clients when I was still working for the Don. I browsed through other social networks too.

Salvatore's wife a prostitute, some news papers said on the cover page. From prostitute to homewrecker and to being married to the most honored business man. Is it luck or witchcraft? Some said. She must be banned from the university, we cannot go to same class with a prostitute. Some students commented. A lot of comments made me laugh in disbelief, most of the people who Had nasty things to say about me were woman, some perverted men dared to ask if I still sold. " I thought you took care of this, the videos and photos got deleted didn't they. How is this even possible, you promised me Salvatore" I said tears streaming down my face. " They were deleted but it seems like he had a back up plan" he said walking up and down. " Look at your

full proof plan, I'm ruined. My whole life is in vain now. What do I do?, I've got nothing to live for. I shouldn't have trusted you, if I continued working for him. My reputation would still be safe." I said wiping away my tears. I wasn't about to cry, I've cried enough to last for a lifetime. Have you ever had that dream where you keep on running but it's like your feet are digging into mud and whatever it is that's chasing you keeps on coming but actually never does. That's how my life has always been, my heart kept on racing, I was drained from all the ruining but fear kept me going. It probably doesn't make sense " Boss there's a phone call for you" one of the man in black suit came in ruining. " Who is it?" He ask. " King Kong, how do you like my late wedding gift?" I heard the caller say, it was him. The Don, the phone was on loud speaker. " Don, you did this didn't you?" He said through gritted teeth. " Isn't it obvious?...where are my manners?. Congratulations, when are you taking off for the honeymoon?" He asked so sarcastically. His voice only just managed to scar the crap out of me. " I will find you and kill you with my own bare hands" he threatened but The Don just laughed. "

Actually it's my turn now, you've had your chance but ruined it. I've got the Ace card, it won't be long before I say 'check mate'. " he said. " Why can't you just leave us alone" he snapped. " It doesn't work like that mate, you disrespected me the day you took what's mine. I've been watching you the entire time, falling inlove makes you seem so pathetic and weak. Nc nc nc, you should see yourself. I've got your entire life for the past four years. I must admit though you chose very well. One of my best Angels" he said, kept on going and going. " What do you want, I'll just pay you whatever. Leave my wife out of this" he said. " Now you're talking but unfortunately I am not there. This is about respect, There's one thing you can do for me though. Bring code 05 home, then you can live your life in peace. I'm sure a man of your statue will be able to score himself another good looking woman or better yet a decent one. I mean what do you see in a woman who has slept with a thousand of men—..." Shut up, just shut up...you don't get to talk about my wife like that" he screamed. " Calm down, what you saw was just a teaser. Remember one thing though, if I can't have her then you can't

eith—" and the the phone hit the wall, followed by a loud scream. " He's coming for me, isn't he?" I asked, feeling so scared. He looked at me without saying a word. " I am going to shower" I said standing up. The running shower water did a good job in washing down my tears, a thousand of thoughts and possibilities kept running in my head. I knew for sure that if that man found me, there was no way I was going to make it. I've heard nasty stories of what he does to girls who try to escape. If not auctioned and sold off to the highest bidder then I was surely going to be his man's daily sex slave till they get fed up and kill me. I got out of the shower, I was looking at myself in the mirror when I

Felt a wave of hatred and anger rush towards my brain, I felt like screaming out loud. Something said scream. " Aaahhhh!" I found myself screaming and hitting the mirror. I kept on going and going, until someone held me back. " What are you doing, stop it. Stop" I had Joaquin say. I was fighting him, wanting him to let me go. I kept on screaming and kicking until I felt tired. I slipped down and that's when I

realized that my hands were bleeding with huge cuts and some mirror glasses. " Il mio cuero batte" he said holding me down. Somehow the pain in my hands deemed the one I was feeling emotionally and mentally and spiritually. " What have you done" he asked crying. " Look what you've done to yourself" he said. I just broke down in his embrace. " I can't...I can't take this anymore. I can't Salvatore, I should just die. Maybe then I'll be at peace. it's too much" I said in my horsey dry voice. " Don't even think about it, don't even think about it. You can't leave me alone in this world" he said holding my head tight against his chest. We were both crying. " Come, you're wounded" he said pulling me up, I was naked. " I'll call the doctor" he said pulling his phone out of his pocket. " Let's go and get dressed before he gets here" he said after the call. Walked me to the closet, blood trails everywhere. He helped me into a gown and undergarments. Which caught some blood, "come and lie down" he said helping me get on bed. " The sheets" I whispered softly. " We can get another Thousands of white sheets. You're irreplaceable, relax. Would you like something to drink." He asked.

I shook my head no. I just needed to be alone, so alone but I didn't say that. He was worried and hurt enough, I didn't want to hurt him any further. The doctor came, took out the glasses, cleaned my bleeding scars and bandaged my hands. Gave me painkillers and antibiotics, I took the pills which drove me to sleep instantly. Salvatore was standing by the door the entire time, his image became blurry.

.

Salvatore's POV

.

" I suggest that you take her to see a therapist, she could do something worse than that" Dr Davis said as I was escorting him to his car. " Are you saying that my wife is suicidal" I asked arms folded around my chest. " I think so but I might be wrong. After all I'm not a phycologist or something. And take her to the hospital tomorrow for check up, just to make sure that the scars are healing fine." He said. " I'm going to ask you to come and check on her, for safety reasons" I said. " Okay, Your call" he said

getting into his car. Just then I saw our friends driving in. Including my father. " I don't think you guys should be here" i said walking back inside as soon as they got out of their cars. " Can I see my friend?" Amanda asked first. " I've been trying to call you but you've not been picking up?" Dad said. " Why wasn't I told about Cora's background?" Mbutu asked. "If you're all done with your enquiries please leave my compound" I said scanning them all. " How's Cora?" Divya asked. " She's sleeping, you guys just leave. She's in no state to see you" I said sighing. " Kong, forgive me. I thought I got it all covered" Kevin said looking down. " What are you talking about" Tiaxiang asked. " He asked me to delete all videos and pictures of Cora, I hacked into their system and did that. I just don't know how it surfaced." He said thinking about it so hard, I could see it from the way his veins were visible. " And you knew about Cora?" His wife asked. " I also did but who cares, what matters here is that Cora needs our support as a family. Stop arguing on something you can't change" Papa said. " Son, can I see my daughter in-law" he said already walking in. " Papa!...I

guess you could all get inside" I said sighing heavily. They all did, I followed behind. They invited themselves in to our room. " Could you please lower your voices" I said walking in. I covered her with a blanket. " What happened to my friend, what happened to her hands. How..." Amanda asked crying. She was kneeling down on the bed side. " She injured herself, it doesn't matter now. I just want to get The Don's head" I said sitting down on the corner of the bed. " We are going to help you get that " Raj said. " No, I don't want you to endanger your families. I'll do this on my own" I said." We're all a family, these are the times when royalty is questioned." Mbutu said. " Your grandparents are on their way here" father. " No!, Tell them to retreat. It's not safe for them to be here. You of all people should know this." I said standing up. " I tried but you know how your grandmother can get... they'll be staying with me, don't worry" he said. I really didn't need any more life to protect against death. " I've failed her, I should have been her protector. I vowed to protect her and now look at her...I wasn't even there when the paparazzi attacked her. " I said looking at her. " Kong

you don't have to beat yourself up about it, what's done is done all you can do now is plan your next move carefully" Michael said patting my shoulder. " I need a strong drink" I said exiting the room and walking to my liquor room downstairs. I picked up a bottle of whiskey, it was going to do the trick if not I was going to go crazy any minute. " I was sitting on the high chair Infront of the counter when the boys joined me. " All five of us are friends, aren't we?" Mbutho asked. " Yeah" I said casually, gulping down my whiskey. " So how come we do not know, know about Cora's past?. How come only he knows?" He asked pointing at Kevin...I kept quiet for a while. " Would you have told me if it was your wife, let's switch roles here. Say you were in my position, would you have went and told the whole world that the woman you're inlove used to be a prostitute or rather she is. No, right?. So please don't ever go there, I am not proud of my wife's past but you know what I love her still" I said feeling so mad, pouring myself another glass of whiskey. " he knows because he had to hack into the system other than that I would have kept everything to myself until...I

would have kept this secret to my grave" I said gulping down another glass. " I think we should focus more on the future than the past. What's the next move from here?" Michael asked. " We need to come up with a good strategic plan to bring down the west gang" Tiaxiang said having a bottle of water. " I don't know, I have no idea how to tackle this matter." I said so confused. " isn't obvious, Don must die. It's about time he died, you shouldn't have spared him that day you killed his father. I feel that the matter is more than him wanting Cora, he's avenging his father. How did you even get caught up in this issue, did you really have to fall for one of his girls" Rajesh snapped hitting the table. " Don't!, Don't call my wife' one of his girls' , I think you all should just leave. I need to focus more on my wife" I said angrily. " King Kong we're only —..." Mbutu please, I'll call you when I need your help, right now I need to be alone with my wife. She needs me" I said standing up. " We Will be back tomorrow morning" Michael said as they were exiting the room. That day I hated the bro code, we never leave each other. Even if you screamed and kicked, pointed out a gun.

We'd still keep on coming until things get sorted. There was no room for space or whatever. 30 minutes later I was sitting on the bed with her, they were all gone along with their wives. Father was somewhere in the room. It was almost 5 pm. Cora was just staring into space. " You must be hungry, I'm going to make you something quick to eat" I said standing up. " I'm not hungry" she whispered without looking at me. " Cora you must eat something, I'm going to get you fruits" I said walking towards the door." You know...this is all my father's fault" I heard her say. "Don't say that" I said coming back to sit down by her side. " No actually I am wrong, father was right. Mom should have aborted me, I was a curse from the beginning...I mean what kind of an infant kills her own mother. I must have been sent from hell, maybe God is punishing me. This is all mother's fault, father used to say that the doctors kept on warning her, warning and warning her but she wouldn't listen. She just wouldn't, why didn't she just listen. Just once, he used to say that I took after her. She was stubborn and used to smile even when things went west. she died smiling, I too should be

smiling Why can't I just smile and laugh, let it all go. Pretend as if it doesn't hurt like I've managed to do for the past 9 years. Why can't I smile anymore, why, why" she asked, tears cascading down her face. Veins popping out on of forehead. " Don't do this to yourself, stop it. You don't have to smile, cry all You want. Cry your lungs out if you feel like it. Cry and let it all out, I'm here. I'll take care of you, I'll fix everything" I said assuring her. " When will you wake up and realise that this can not be fix, even you can't fix this. How will you stop people from talking and laughing and insulting me. It's just the two of us against the world. You can't fight the whole world" she said chuckling weirdly. " I can't but I'll try, that's the best I could do. I'll die trying" I said standing up. " Excuse me" I said walking out. I needed to take a drive, think a bit. Come up with some sort of a solution. " Salvatore..." She called out my name. " Yes" I said turning around. " it's OK to lose or let go sometimes. Somethings are just bigger than us. They might say that God can never give us a burden bigger than our capabilities but I feel that he does sometimes, to test our faith in him. My. Faith just

died, it's OK to let go when there's no solution, move on to the next puzzle. Who knows it might be easier than the first one" she said smiling while tears kept on streaming down her face. Eyes swollen, " whatever you are saying, I'm not getting it. I'll be back shortly" I said after listening to her. " Good bye" I heard her say faintly. I walked down the stairs took my keys to my Ferrari F12, I just needed to play some music loudly. Open the windows and feel the turbo exhaust pipe screaming out loud. I did just that, her words played back in my head. ' she died smiling, I too should be smiling..' ' it's OK to lose or let go sometimes'...' move on'...' good bye"...'are you saying that my wife is suicidal'...' I think so...'. putting those words in the same Puzzle scared shit out of me. She wouldn't, would she?. Cora wouldn't leave me alone. I drove back into the house in full speed. My heart pumping out fast. Thought running fast in my head, she wouldn't be that selfish. She's anything but selfish. I didn't wait for the whole gate to open up, I drove in like a mad man. I'm sure my car got scratched somewhere. I parked Infront of the house and walked in after entering the darn code. " Cora!" I

called out running upstairs to our room where I found my worst nightmare. She was hanging on to fan. " Cora?, What have you done" I screamed. Pulling the near by couch and trying to lift her up. " Help, help!" I called out. Her body was cold. She wasn't moving." How could you do this to me Cora. I held her up with my one arm and took out the phone with another. Called the bodyguards outside. " Please don't do this Cora, don't leave me" I screamed crying out loud. She was heavy too, " don't you dare die on me" I shouted. Bodyguards walked in a few seconds later. They helped me untie her, then I rushed with her to my car. I didn't even check if her pulse was still there or not. What if I was carrying a corpse. I was driving like a maniac, hit a few robots. I was expecting a lot of tickets. I carried her out of the car and rushed with her inside the hospital. It usually takes an hour for me to get to the hospital from my house but that day it took half the time. " Help" I called out and the nurses rushed to us with stretcher bed.. " What happened?" The doctor asked. " She, she tried to kill herself. I found her hanging" I said. " I'm going to need you to stay here" he said as they

walked in some ward. I stood outside, they closed the blindfolds and I was left clueless. I didn't even get to know if she was alive or dead. I kept pacing up and down.

.

More likes please

[6/3, 14:58] Lynne: Page 66

Salvatore's POV

.

I've been sitting in the waiting room for two hours, I can't remember the number of times I had to call a doctor because of her, or when I had to wait in the waiting room or in a doctor's office. Our love somehow seemed to be cursed, ever since we've been together. The amount of pain we've

Experienced increased rapidly. Yes we've been happy, we had a lot of happy moments together but when the thunder of pain stroke it made sure to leave scars and permanent marks. Finally the doctor came in, I stood up. " She's alive, she was saved just

in time" the doctor said before I could even ask. " Can I go in and see her?" I asked. " Sure, she could wake up at anytime from now on" he said looking at her time. The nurses came out of the room, I walked in and set on the chair. Her neck was supported, that's what I noticed first. I didn't even know what to say to her. Whether to get angry and lash out on her or just keep my cool and wait for her to explain herself. I was at that point where I was feeling absolutely nothing, I was numb. People have the tendency of thinking that if they commit suicide, the ones left behind would be in peace. Free from their burden, she didn't even ask me if I wanted to carry that burden with her or not. She thought that just because I was the second person in this matter, I didn't feel as much pain as she was. I was ignoring phone calls from everybody, his parents had been calling for the past few hours and I wasn't picking up. And then the journalists, i don't even know where they got my number. I was so tired, I didn't want to face the outside world. I don't know when I fell asleep but I was woken up by her saying. " You shouldn't have saved me, you should have let me

die" she said, waking me up. I stood up, " you're awake" I said brushing her hair. " You should have just let me die" she said vb trying to move but seemed in pain. She stayed still, " how could you do this to me?" I asked looking down at her but she was avoiding my eyes. " How could you ever think of leaving me, forget about me. What about Lorenzo?, what about your family?, your friends?" I asked so angrily. " I never knew that you could be so selfish" I said looking at the ceiling. " I just wanted to be free" she said, I looked down at her and she was crying. " I want to be free of all this suffering, a part of me also did this for you. If I died you wouldn't have to fight the Don, you'd be free of all my burden. Maybe you, Nina and Lorenzo would be family" she said. " You're my family, I don't want anybody else but you. And I know that Lore feels the same way too. Don't you love me anymore?" I asked. " Of course I love you, more than anything or anyone else" she said. " Then why would you want to leave me just like that?, You promised me. Didn't you?, We promised each other that no matter what we're never going to let go. So why would you just give up so easily. You're stronger

than this, why would you break your promise?" I asked. " I'm sorry, I'm sorry OK but how do I face the world. I am scared, my image has been tarnished. Where to go from here?, I'll probably lose my scholarship and get banned from the university. My dreams will crumble down. " I told you, I'm here. I'll fix this... I've been thinking and I came up with an idea. You don't have to face the world alone, I'm here" I said smiling at her. " Don't tell me you're about to start a war with the Don, I don't want that. You might lose your life or get arrested. Let's just stay away from him, please. I —..." Will you let me finish first" I asked. " If you do not want me to go to war then I'm not going to...i was thinking that maybe we could go on national television show and address this " I said, her eyes darted between mine. " No, no... I can't, I just want to stay in my room. I don't want to see people, I don't want to. What will they think of me?. I'm not—..." Relax, calm down" she was agitated all of a sudden. " It's OK, relax. Take your time. Think about it" I said trying to calm her down. " I won't be able to, I won't" she said. " It's OK, just focus on your recovery. Let's focus on this, for now" I said kissing

her forehead. 2 hours later a nurse came by. "Visiting hours are over, you must let the patient rest now" she said. It was almost 22: 00 pm, I wondered what visiting hours she was talking about. " I'll see you tomorrow morning" I said kissing her forehead. She smiled but didn't say a thing. The Cora I know wouldn't have let me go so easily. She would have asked me to stay a little bit more. " Make sure she doesn't try anything stupid again" I said to Simian and Dumisani, her bodyguards. Who were standing outside. " Yes sir" they said. " Mr Salvatore?" That was doctor Davis calling me as I was walking in the hallway. I turned back, " I heard about your wife, there will be a private therapist provided for her. It's the hospital's rules and regulations. To make sure she doesn't commit suicide again" he said " she's not ready for that kind of talk, we have our own secluded therapist from the medical aid, I'll take her there once she's ready" I said. " Im sorry but it's an unshakable policy, she has to get the therapy sessions from here. If we do not do anything, she might try to do it again. She's a threat to herself, something has to be done ASAP" he insisted. " If you

so much insist then I request that the sessions take place at home. Besides des being a threat to herself, There are some people out there gunning for her life." I said sighing. " That can be arranged" he said. " And do me one more favour, tell her yourself" I said before leaving. I drove home, where I found my family sitting in the messed up sitting room. " Grandma, grandpa?" I exclaimed unbelievably walking towards them. " You really came?" I asked. " We had to, how is she?" Grandpa asked hugging me. " The bodyguards tell me she tried to commit suicide, I'm sorry. I was home but I couldn't look after her" Papa said. Standing up. " She's fine now, it isn't your fault, you wouldn't have known. Thank God I found her just in time, if anything should have happened to her I wouldn't have been able to forgive myself" I said sitting down. " I have to say, I'm very disappointed in you Alonzo...you knew about her being a prostitute but still went ahead and married her. I know that she's a great woman but still the fact remains" grandma said. " Can we not have this conversation right now?" I said sighing, she had every right to be made or disappointed in me. After

all no parent wants a former prostitute for a daughter in-law. " We're discussing this, right now" she snapped, I haven't heard her snap in years. " Why didn't you tell us this earlier" she asked. " Tell you?, Then what?. I knew you wouldn't have accepted her, you wouldn't have given her a chance. She has been through a lot in life, give her a break. You have no idea of what she has been through, so please don't stand there and act like a saint She loves me for who I am. I've killed a lot of people but she looked beyond that. If she's the bad guy here then that makes me a monster" I said before standing up. " Alonzo come back here, that's no way to talk to your grandmother" I heard father say but I ignored him. I took a quick shower then went to sleep. I was just tired, tired of everything. With all the beeping sounds and calls, I decided to switch off my phone.

.

I woke up around 6am, and hit the gym. I needed to rewind a bit, think a bit. It took me two hours, after that I went upstairs and showered. Wore my black Nike tracksuits and sneakers, took my gun under the

pillow and put it on my lower back. I needed breakfast, I found grandma in the kitchen as I walked in. " Good morning grandma" I said, she nodded. She was preparing breakfast, " grandma I'm sorry for what I said yesterday, you're older than me and I should have spoken with more respect. It's just that I've been stressed out a lot lately. I love Cora, I just lose it when something bad is said about her. I'm sorry" I said. " I taught you better manners than those Alonzo, I admit that I too was out of the line but that's no way to talk to your elder. I also apologize for talking bad about your wife, Cora is a good young woman. She's a sweetheart but after hearing the news. I'll not lie, my opinion changed about her. You can not expect me to just go with the flow, I had every right to question her character. You should see the things they wrote about her, it's bad Alonzo. I felt so disgusted. I couldn't even watch the video...I know how much you love each other, I'll just try to overlook her past somehow. You know I've never been a person who judge others but this is huge." She said . " Thanks" I said sighing softly. " Ettore tells us that we're going to be living with him?"

She asked frowning, waiting for an answer. " That's what we decided on, it's for the best. Please don't ask me why" I said taking out an apple and rinsing it under the tap. " can we at least get to see Cora?, We can all the way from France. It's only fair that we get to see her" she said. " She may get discharged today, but I don't think she's ready to see anyone right now." I said. " Let her decide, we'll be right here when you get back" she said. " OK, I'll see you later" I said before leaving.

.

I found the nurse feeding her porridge, she looked kinda angry. " How about I feed her" I said leaning on the door frame. " Ohh thank God you're here, your wife has been giving me a tough time" the nurse said sighing heavily. " Hey, I'm still here and don't be complaining like you don't get paid for this job. If you did your job properly then, there wouldn't be an issue between the two of us" she said angrily. " Sorry ma'am" the nurse said smiling before leaving. " What's going on here?" I asked sitting down on the bed side. " She was trying to choke me with the

overloaded spoon of porridge. She wants to bathe me?, Can you believe the nerve" she said angrily " so you haven't taken a bath since yesterday?" I asked feeding her. " She wanted to touch me, what if she tried something on me." She said. " Babe... she's a woman, have you noticed?" I asked chuckling on the inside. " She might be lesbian" she said. " Okay, have you seen the doctor?" I asked feeding her. " I was woken up by her, I want to get out of here" she said, looking so emotional wrecked. " Let's eat first, then I'll go and talk to her" I said. " They're arranging a therapist for me, is it that bad?" she asked after some time. " What could be worse than death" I asked clearing my throat. " Since it's not going to be your first time, this should be easy. It's for your own good" I added. " I miss my hands" she said raising them up, diverting from the topic of seeing a therapist. " You don't need to, I'll help you" I said.

.

" If you say so then, you can take her home this evening" the doctor said after I promised to take good care of her, besides had no serious injuries She

was going to be discharged at 4pm after the last check up was done.

.

" My grandparents are here in SA" I said, after a long time of silence. It was 12 pm. I had helped her take a bath, she was in the hospital gown. She didn't say anything, " I'd understand if you don't want to see them. I've already told them that you're not ready to" I said. " How about my family?" She asked. " They've been calling a lot, I haven't answered. I don't know what to say to them but I sent them a message yesterday, saying that you're fine" I said. " I don't want to see anybody else, how do I face them?. I can't, I won't be able to" she said. " I'm sure they'll understand" I said kissing her forehead. " I'm starving, let me order pizza" I said taking out my phone. " How's Lore?" She asked. " I asked Eshle to take him with her on the day of the incident, he's fine. I have my guys keeping an eye on him. I didn't want him to see anything that would trouble him, he's safer there" he said. " Tell her to Bring him home. He's not safe there, the security is tight at home" she

said, eyes darting between mine. " don't panic, he's fine... he'll be home before you get there but how are you going to look after him" he asked. " He has a nanny, doesn't he?" She asked." I asked her to go back home" I said. " You can ask her to come back now" she said. " That'd be inconvenient" I said. " What do we do then, I want my son by my side. If something should happen to him, it'll all be your fault" she said trying to sit upright. " Hey don't do that, relax. I'll call Petunia or be the nanny for two" I said looking up. " Serves you right" she said so coldly. "You've been so rude lately, so hostile and angry, so cold" I said solemnly. She just looked away, no apologies no nothing. The pizza got delivered and she got discharged earlier than expected, we went home around 3pm

And to her worst surprise, we found everybody. I mean everybody home. " What are they doing here?" She whispered. " I have no idea" I said smiling at them weirdly. " What are you guys doing here?" I asked. " We're here to see Cora" most of them said in unision. " Hi" Cora said faintly. She was holding on

to my arm. " Come, we made you guys dinner and cleaned the house" Amanda said pulling her towards the dining room. She looked at me but just shrugged my shoulders. " Sit down" she said pulling out a chair for her. " Come on guys" Priya said to everyone, we set around the table. " Where are my grandparents and Papa" I asked after sitting down. " We asked them to excuse us. They'll be eating out" Michael said. " Salvatore" Cora said showing me her bandage hands. " I'll have to feed her" I said standing up and serving her. " Let me do that, since I am sitting next to her" Amanda said, taking the plate from my me. " So what're you doing here" I asked. " We're here to see Cora of course" Mbutuho said. " Mmh and who cooked?" I asked. " We might have ordered In" Raj said, " I knew it, you aren't that kind and this tastes Just like one of the meals from my restaurant" I said eyebrows raised. " We really tried cooking but it turned out to be horrible...at least we tried" Priya said shrugging. " You should have prepared samosa and parathas and all those spicy Indian meals. I'm sure Cora would have loved it" I said. " Are you

making fun of Indians?" Mbutho asked first. " No I was just saying that—..." Well it's not funny" he cut me off. I couldn't help but laugh, infact every body did. We shared jokes until it was time for them to leave.

.

" How do you feel now" I asked after putting her undercovers. I had just bathe her, it was harder than I thought plus she was complaining. " Thanks, I just need to take my pills and sleep. I am tired" she said sighing softly. " I'm going to take a shower first and then you can take your medication" I said standing up. " But Alonzo—..." No buts, it'll only take 15minutes" I said before closing the bathroom door. I took a quick shower then wore my PJs after wiping and Moisturizing my body. " I am going to do it" she said as I was helping her take her pills. " Do what?" I asked. " The show thing, I want to have my life back Joaquin" she said. " I thought you said, you was not ready for this." I said that in a questioning manner. " I was not but after seeing our friends, my perceptive change. They didn't judge or let alone ask me about

it. Or my suicide, it's not just the two of us against the world. I have my friends too, I'm not alone." She said sounding so confident. " You know that this is not going to be an easy journey, right?" I asked. " There are still people out there who'll judge and criticise you. " I added. " I know, I just need to heal first then..." She said. " OK, I'm glad you're ready to claim your life back. That's my girl, the invincible, strong, brave one. We'll face the world together but for now let's go to sleep, I'm tired" I said getting undercovers after putting the medication on the dressing table. " I thought you said Lorenzo Is coming back home and where are your grandmother and grandfather?" I asked. " They'll come by tomorrow, Let's go to sleep now" I said kissing her forehead. " No more questioning me, sleep" I said putting my index finger on her lips. I could sense that she wanted to ask me something.

.

Cora's POV

.

" It stings, it hurts" I screamed eyes closed. Doctor Davis was cleaning my wounds. " I'm almost done" he said, I've been screaming and crying ever since he started. It felt like a decade of torture. He lubricated something and then bandaged my hands one by one. " There we go" he said standing up. " What about my neck" I asked. " We'll get that removed within a week's time, goodbye for now. " He said leaving the room. " Let me walk you out" Alonzo said giggling, seemed like he was amused by my pain. " Are you done crying?" he asked coming back. " I'll slap that smirk off your face Alonzo" I said warningly. " I'd like to see you try, with your crippled hands. I think you're the one who'd start crying" he said. " My hands are not crippled and do not make the mistake of mocking a wounded warrior. My hands might not be functioning right now but my legs are" I said glaring at him. He just laughed out loud. " have you seen yourself lately, you can't even move your head. You're more of a wounded statue than a warrior. Stop calling yourself a wounded warrior, you'll kill people with laughter Honey" he said laughing his ass out. Actually that hurt my feelings, It got to me. " You're

making fun of me?" I am tears streaming down my face. " Hey are you crying?, Are those real tears or crocodile's" he asked chuckling. " You're such a rude... I hate you," I said getting off the bed, crying out loud. " Hey, I was just kidding. You're seriously crying" he said walking towards me. " Don't come anywhere near me, I hate you" I said angrily but Salvatore being Salvatore didn't listen. Then I hit his face, hurting myself in the process and then the crying got even more louder." don't do that, you're hurting yourself. I was just joking" he said hugging me. " Look at me, I can't even get myself dressed. " I said in between the sobs. " Hey, worriers don't cry. Stop crying, It was meant to be a joke— you know a joke right?. The one that makes you laugh and not cry" he asked weirdly. I was giggling while crying. " I know what a joke is" I said smiling. " You do?, So why are you crying instead of laughing?" He asked rolling his eyes. " I didn't like your joke, you were mocking me. It didn't come out as a joke to me, besides that I don't like it when you make fun of me" i said . " Sorry, OK. Don't ever cry like that. It's scary" he whispered. I just giggled. " And why is it that every

time we fight you end up saying " I hate you Salvatore" . " He asked I just shrugged my shoulders. " I don't say it every time" I said. " Most of the time though" he said, I just kept quiet. And then there was a knock on the door. " Come in" he said. " Yes what is it" he said as soon as the bodyguard walked in. " Sir, the therapist is downstairs" he said. " Thoroughly checked?" He asked. " Yes Sir" he said. " Take her to the library, tell her Cora'll be there in a few minutes" he said. " Yes Sir" he said before leaving. " Let's clean up your face before I am accused of women abuse" he said going to the bathroom, he came back with my wet face towel and wiped away my tears. " I'm kind of scared" I said taking a deep breath. " No need to be scared, you've done this before." He said kissing me. " I love you and I'll be in the next room if you need anything" he said after the kiss. " Okay" I said sighing. " I'll help you down the stairs" he said walking me out the room. I was wearing jeans and t-shirt along with my sleepers. " I'll make you breakfast" he said leaving me on the library door. I walked in and set down on the couch opposite to the woman who was sitting there. She was blonde

haired and quite old. " Hi, my name is Laura and I am going to be your therapist for Whole two weeks. What's your name" she asked as if she didn't know already. " Cora" I said shortly. " Nice meeting you Cora, How would you describe yourself Cora?" She asked. " Really?" I asked chuckling but she was serious. " I'm 21 years old, turning 22 in three months to come. I'm married, I am a gynaecologist student" I said. " That's good but I meant on a personal level. Describe yourself on a personal level. Who would you say Cora is" she asked. " Cora?, Cora is a brave, kind, intelligent and loving woman" I said clearing my throat. " Is that how you see yourself or just the way people describe you?" She asked puzzling me. " What do you mean, i, I don't know" I said not so sure. " You know exactly what I mean, think about it... OK that's it for the day" she said standing up. " For really?. 10 minutes and that's just it" I asked unbelievably. " We're done for the day, it would have been 15 minutes if you didn't keep me waiting. I'll see you tomorrow, same time. Don't be late" she said walking out. I was left in an awe. I got out after 5 minutes. " That was fast" Salvatore said

as I walked into the kitchen. " Can you believe it?, She's...argh. I don't like her" I said frustrated. " Anyways, could you maybe give me Dr Davis' number. I want him to give me a written doctor's note that I won't be able to take residency for the next two weeks" I said sighing. " I've already told him, Robinson will drop it at the hospital tomorrow" he said. " Thanks, you're such a sweetheart but please tell him to give it directly to Dr Francis." I said. He nodded staring at me. " What?" I asked. " Nothing, I was just daydreaming. Here's your breakfast" he said dropping a plate of breakfast in front of me. " Thanks again" I said trying to pick up the fork. " Ohh sorry, let me help you with that" he said sitting down next to me. He fed me, " I have a few business calls to make, you can go and watch a movie in the theater or something" he said standing up with an empty plate. I went to the home cinema and struggled with the remote control until I got it in my hands. I chose to watch a romantic comedy movie, I was starting to get bored when Lorenzo walked in screaming. " Mommy" she called me, then got on my thighs, I could not even hold him. I was startled, "

how is my little boy doing" I asked smiling. " Mom you're back, Papa said you were in dunban " he said making me laugh. " It's Durban Lorenzo, not Dunban" I corrected him laughing. " Why did you not take me with you, I miss you" he said playing with my hair, he always did that. " I missed you too" I said kissing him all over the face, knowing exactly what he'd do next. He started giggling so cutely. " Where have you been?" I asked. " I was with aunt Esihle and that the old girl took me with her" he said, puzzling me. " Who's the old girl" I asked frowning. " The one who stays at grandpa's house" he said. " Ohh, that's your great grandma." I said. " I don't like her, she made me drink a lot of milk. I don't like milk mommy" he said. " But you have to—..." I suppose he's talking about me" I heard grandma say walking in. I couldn't even turn to look at her, I was feeling hot all of a sudden. " He says that you made her drink a lot of milk" I said chuckling. " He's exaggerating. It was just one full glass per meal. That makes it two glasses of milk" he said sitting down next to me. " He can be very very like his father sometimes" he said. " He may seem all tough now but back in the

days. Oh boy, a whipping stick came in handy" she said making me laugh. " Lorenzo, go and sit with your grandfather. I need to talk to your mother" she said smiling at him. Lore just shook his head no. " Go, I'm coming. I'll get you a lot of chocolates. Be a good boy" I said kissing his forehead. He walked out, but I could see that he didn't want to. Wherever he was going, he was going to get there crying " don't spoil him so much" grandma said. " I can't help myself but I'll try not to" I said smiling." How have you been?" She asked smiling. " I'm good, I'm alive" I said faking a smile. " Ettore, I mean your father in-law told me everything" she said but I didn't say anything to that. I wasn't even looking at her. " Why didn't you tell us your story?, I think we were friends. You and I" she said, I sighed. " If you were me, would you have done that?" I asked smiling faintly. " What would I have said Mrs S. Should I have went ahead and said ' Hi, my name is Cora and I've been working as a prostitute for the past two years?.'. Would you have accepted me then?. You wouldn't have, I know that for a fact. When I can't even accept myself most of the time, how do I expect others to accept me?" I

asked calmly. " You're right, I wouldn't have but we've spent so many years as a family. You should have let us know, we deserved to know. Finding out from the news was ...—" finding out from the news papers was unfair, I know." I completed her sentence. " And why in god's name would you try to kill yourself?" She asked a little bit louder. " I was tired of all the fighting. All the noise, you wouldn't understand. It's like I've been fighting against the world ever since I was conceived. It's one battle after another. " I said sighing heavily. " What your father did to you was so cruel. No woman in this world deserves to go through that." She said. We talked a lot.

.

" Excuse me ,I'm going to lie down a bit" I said after lunch. We had lunch together. It was me, lore, Joaquin, grandma,grandpa and father. " My chocolates mommy" Lore said. "Tell your father Lore" I said not feeling so good, my hands hurts a lot. I needed to take my pain killers. I walked upstairs and poured myself a glass of water from the jug

then drank down my pills. I put the pillows against the headboard and set down, leaned back with my eyes closed. " Are you OK?" Salvatore asked walking in. " Yes" I answered shortly. I felt his footsteps getting closer. He touched my forehead with his palm. " You have headache. Maybe you're coming down with flu. Let me get you pills for that" he said. " I took them already" I said opening my eyes. " My hands hurts. I don't know if I should raise them up or put them down" I said feeling so emotional wrecked. " Lie down, let me help you" he said. He helped me lie in the middle of the bed. One pillow on my left hand side and one on the other , my hands were on top of the pillows. And then another one under my head. " Feeling better?" He asked. " Yes, thank you" I said. " Go to sleep, you'll wake up feeling much better" he said then walked out. He was right when he said he was the best in the market, I couldn't have found a better companion than my Alonzo. He took care of me without complaining. I woke up around 4pm, i was having a bad dream. I poured myself a glass of water from the coffee table and drank up, I was using both my hands to hold up the glass. I then

went to the bathroom to pee. I went to the closet to search for my bag I needed my phone." you're awake, I brought you dinner" he said walking inside the room with a tray of dinner in his hands. I had offloaded everything that was in my bag on the bed. " Have you seen my phone?" I asked after not finding it among the stuff on bed. " I took, I don't think you need to have it" he said putting the tray on the coffee table. " Of course I need to have it, a lot of people must be calling me worriedly. I also need to call my parents" I said clearing the bed. " A lot of people including Donato Francis?" He asked chuckling unbelievably. " How is it that he has your number, he called not once not twice but a several times. ' just to check on you' . I hope I don't have to kill someone for what's rightfully mine" he said. " Is that why you were looking at me so weirdly early in the kitchen?" I asked. He didn't answer my question. " Come and have your food" he said, I walked towards him. I set down on the carpet, Infront of the small coffee table. He was sitting on the couch. " I want to try eating myself " I said pulling the tray towards me. " Can I please have my phone back?" I asked looking at him.

" I don't think so, just focus on your recovery. I don't want you browsing through social media. Focus on your physical well being, I'm going to take a bath" he said standing up. I ate slowly but surely. I was still eating when he came out of the bathroom 30 minutes later. He had a towel wrapped around his waist and drying up his hair using another one. " How are my parents doing" I asked. " Your mother called today, he wanted to talk to you but you were sleeping. I didn't want to disturb you, your father landed himself in hospital" he said so casually. " What do you mean ' landed himself in the hospital'. What happened to him?" I asked. " He's fine, he had trouble breathing after watching the news about you." He said. " He'll get discharged in no time" he added. " I wonder how he does it, how does he live with himself ?" He asked. " What do you mean by that?" I asked standing up and picking up the tray. " I'll go and put this in the kitchen" I said walking out. " I'll run you some bubbly bath" he called out after me. I put the tray down. I noticed that the television was replaced with a new one and the vases were replaced too. The sitting room was back in order. "

Mommy, Papa didn't give me my chocolate" Lorenzo said walking inside the kitchen. " He didn't?" I asked. He shook his head. " Let me check in the snacks' shelve" I said already checking out. " There's no PS in here" I said. " Let's see what we have in the refrigerator" i said opening the fridge. " We have chocolate cake, would you like some" I asked smiling at him. I knew that PS was irreplaceable to him. He nodded slowly. " I also want one, let's do this. We'll cut the biggest piece and put some fruits in a bowl and a couple of other snacks in another bowl. Sit Infront of the television and watch Masha and the Bear" I said and he jumped up and down . " Yey, yey" he screamed. .

" You thought about what I asked you too?" She asked. It was 9am and I was with my therapist. " I did" I said looking at her. " And?" She asked. " My answer still remains" I said." I'm going to need you to be true to yourself Mrs Salvatore" she said but I didn't say anything. " How would you describe your relationship with your family?" She asked. " What does my relationship with my family has to do with

me committing suicide. Shouldn't you be asking me why I did it" I asked so angrily. " Why exactly, why did you do it?" she asked smiling, like I had just shared an amusing story with her. " After the news about me being a former prostitute came out I felt so fed up with living. I felt that my life was ruined, after working so hard. After all the hardships I had gone through and then things had to come down crumbling" I said sighing softly. " What made you change your mind, I mean after waking up in the hospital?" She asked. " My husband changed my mind, he talked some sense into me.Gave me a few reasons to hold on. I have to be strong for him and our son" I said . " What about your family, don't you have a family?" She asked. " I do have a family, weren't that close. Don't get me wrong I love my family but not in the same way I love my husband and son" I said looking down. " And why is that?" She asked. " Sometimes I feel like my father made me suffer and they were there. We lived under the same roof but they did nothing. I might have forgiven him but I can't forget. That past will always be a huge part of me, whenever things go wrong i can't help but

look back" I said then took a deep breath. " Earlier on you said that your husband gave you a reason to hold on, what are those reasons. Didn't you see them before taking that rope, putting it around your neck. Pushing away that chair and attempting suicide" she asked, and then the pictures of the event came as fresh as they could in my mind. I was so angry, angry with myself and the whole world, angry with life itself. " To think of it, I did not see any reason why I should stay alive. I was angry with everyone and everything. I was angry with my husband, he promised to protect me. I felt that he failed to, I didn't even think of Lorenzo" I said taking a deep breath, I was in the verge of crying. " How does that make you feel like?" She asked. " Guilty" I answered shortly. " Why do you feel guilty Cora?" She asked. " I don't know, I feel guilty because Alonzo has been nothing but good to me, he looks after me without any complaints. I can be a nag sometimes but he just smiles and brush it off. And Lorenzo , I'm not his biological mother but he loves me like I am. He's such a sweet little boy, I love him to bits but I didn't even think about him that night... does that make me a selfish person. Am I a

bad person?" I asked. "Take this" she said offering me a box of tissue. I took the box and wiped away my tears, I didn't even realize that I was crying." I want you to think about what your father has done to you, if it's fair on your family. On your husband and child. All the people around you, how it's going to affect you. If you die, that's it for today" she said standing up and leaving.

.

"Are you okay?" Amanda asked me. I was in the terrace with all my girls. Including Esihle who was quite quiet for my liking. I hadn't seen her in 5 days. I had been four days since the news of my disgrace went around the world. The doctor unbandaged my hands in the morning, "yeah I'm fine" I said sighing heavily. "I'm just tired and feeling sleepy. Alonzo and I watched a movie till midnight" I said before sipping on my coffee. We were having beverages, "Esihle's love for me must have dropped down after she found out about my past. I bet you think I'm no good for your brother" I said looking at her across the table. "No, it's nothing like that. Of course not, you

make him happy. If he's happy than I'm happy. I hold no beef with you Cora" she said, coming back to planet earth. It was either she was lying or I was just imagining things. " Siboniso came to see me but I haven't seen Sandile" I said frowning. " He's been very busy lately, he works half a day" she said. " Ohkay" I said. " Tell him I said ' Hi'. And mother in-law too" I said smiling." I'll do that" she said returning the smile. " Anyways, the date of our interview has been decided. Salvatore will be accompanying me." I said diverting the topic. " Ohh that's good. I'm so fed up with having to listen to these lifeless bitches talking shit about you. Have you seen what they were saying about you?" Priya said sounding so relieved. " I wouldn't know, I have no phone. Salvatore is checking each and everyone of my moves. Wherever he has to go out, he makes sure to take the remote control with him. I am clueless" I said. " You mean, you don't know" she asked so loudly. I nodded, " anyways when is your interview ?" Divya asked. " This coming week Monday" I said casually" I think I need to see what people are saying about me before I go out there and get slaughtered" I said, my eyes

darting between All of them. " If your husband thinks that you shouldn't see these things then you shouldn't" siwe said. " Come on guys" I said looking at them. They shook their heads no. " Is it that bad?" I asked, heart beating up so fast. " Let me see" I said swiftly retrieving Priya's iPhone from her hands. " Cora don't—..." It's my life, I think I deserve to know more than anyone else in here" I said Google. " Cora it's not good for you to be reading about these awful things" Amanda said but it was already too late. There were a thousands of topics, shared videos, comments on the videos. I kept on reading, opening Facebook Twitter Instagram YouTube channels newspapers. " Here's your phone" I said sitting down an hour later. " Are you OK?" Divya asked. " Why wouldn't I be, I'm OK" I said faking a chuckle. " I need some more coffee, I'm going to make myself a cup of coffee" I said standing up and going inside the house. I warmed up the coffee in the coffee maker and poured myself a cup.

.

" Why are you crying, what happened?" Salvatore

asked in the middle of the night. I guess he might have heard my sobbing. He said the words and lights switched on. I had my back on him. " Il mio cuero batte, what happened?" He asked, trying to get me to face him. " Everybody thinks that I am a lose whore" I said. " Where did you get that from, who said that?" He asked sounding so angry. " I saw it on the internet, I saw it Salvatore." I said. " Don't stress about what other people think of you rather worry about what you think of yourself. They don't know you, people will always be people. They don't know when to get off, we'll clear everything soon. It'll blow off and they'll have another victim to gossip about. That's just how the world is, full of losers who find amusement in other people's pain. Don't let them get to you, OK?" He said. I was in his embrace. I nodded. " Now get some sleep, you've got better things to worry about other than stupid people's comments. Go to sleep" he said putting me back down. " Sleep" he said kissing my forehead. " Make love to me" I said holding his head. No questions were asked he started kissing me. I needed a distraction from all the nonsense.

.

Monday morning

.

" It is yet another day another morning talk show with me, your host— Cassie Cameron. We all have heard about the shocking news about Mr Salvatore's wife, if you do not know Salvatore well today you will. He's the founder and CEO of hotel Paradisé, the biggest hotel in South Africa. He has a few restaurants and few other businesses. All in all he's one of the richest young man. And today we have him with his wife Cora Maphumulo whom is recently famous for the porn videos of her shared around the country. Mr and Mrs Salvatore welcome to the show" the host said. It was Monday morning and thank God it was raining and cold. I was wearing a long grey overcoat. A knee length black dress and black heels along with black gloves. They did a good job in hiding my healing scars. Salvatore was wearing a black tuxedo, and shoes. My heart was pounding heavily. " Thank you Cassie for having us Cassie" Salvatore said. Cassandra was one of his celeb

friends. Who had a morning talk show. " I'm delighted to have you two as my guest. Now getting to business..." She had gave us a question book of what was going to be asked. I knew exactly what she was about to ask. The cameras were rolling, live. We were sitting on the opposite couch to her's. " How did you two meet?" She asked, starting with the easy question, just to get us settled and comfortable but there was nothing about our story that was settling or comfortable. Everything seemed extra and almost to the level of fiction. " My wife and I met a few years back, in my penthouse. It's a very interesting story actually, I'll let her tell it. She's the best at it, il mio cuero batte go ahead" he said smiling at me but I knew he was as much nervous as I was. I never saw that coming, I thought of a few possible scenarios where a girl meets a guy. But nothing came into my mind, so I opted for the truth. " It was on the 30th of June four years ago, I received a message from my rank manager saying. I had to meet up with a client. She gave me an address and I was shocked to find out that it was hotel Paradisé. I arrived there around 6 pm, one of the genators took me to his penthouse.

I was wearing a black mask, I remember him asking me if I was in one of those ballroom dancing parties. I lied and said yes. He left me at the door, I knocked and the voice inside said I must come in. I made myself comfortable on a couch. He came out 15 minutes later with a towel wrapped around his waist. I swear my heart skipped a bit, he was the most gorgeous man I've ever seen and his smile caught my eyes. Nothing like that has ever happened to me, I felt so not like myself. He excused himself once again, I heard him talking on a phone. I started to get angry, I just wanted him to get it over with. You know, what I was there for. So when he came back I asked him about his condom size in anger. He just chuckled and said 'trust me you don't want to know'. To cut it short he just wanted a stranger to talk to about the divorce he was going through. " I explained looking at the host. " So he never tried anything on you" the host asked frowning. " If you are asking if we had sexual intercourse then no, we didn't. We talked until we slept, that was new to me. He was still asleep when I woke up, so I wrote him a note. I don't know why but I did. I then left" I

explained. " What did the note say Mr Salvatore, I'm sure the people who are watching this show right now are as curious as I am to know" she said giggling a bit. " The note was written; you're a good man Mr Salvatore and don't bother trying to find me because you won't" Salvatore said chuckling unbelievably. And I was like' like hell I would' I got dressed and went to work" This sounds interesting, so how did you two meet again if she was so sure you wouldn't find her and you weren't interested in finding her either?" She asked. " Something bigger than me happened that night, she was the first woman who was able to make my heart skip after so many years. I might have been married to Isabella which I am sure you all know but she wasn't able to do that, we were more like friends that husband and wife. I cared for her and she reciprocated. With Cora I felt somethings I never felt before, so alive. She's one feisty woman if you must know. So I went in search of her after a week of feeling like something was missing. It took me a month to find her but I did and we started dating" he said. " Didn't it bother you that she was a prostitute?" She finally asked and I

knew we were getting down to business. " I won't lie and say it didn't, it did. I found myself paying to have her to myself for the whole two months. And when she had to go back to work we fought. I thought she would not go back there but she did and I didn't like it. Our lives have not been the easy ones. We had to make a plan for her to escape that life, I'd not disclose that with you though" he said. " OK, back to you Cora, how long have you worked as a prostitute and why. I'm sure that this is what you guys at home have been waiting for" she asked. I shifted on my sit a bit. " I started working as a prostitute 6 years ago. After I ran away from home, I lived under the bridge for a month. I had just been chosen by one of the best schools in SA which apparently happened to be his father's school. I used to live in Durban before taking the bus here. A woman offered me a job, I was so excited. So she took me with her, took care of me for one week and then introduced me to her Boss. Who happens to be the owner of all the prostitution ranks. They forced me to become a prostitute" I said taking a deep breath. " Do you think that your boss is the one who uploaded those videos

on YouTube and other Internet sites" she asked. " I know for a fact that he is the one. He's one dangerous men and I wish that all the women still working under him could be saved somehow. I know that he provides for ' his girls' very well but he doesn't offer a way out. There's no way out. It's either you die or he auction you to the highest bidder. The country must do something about this and the police my stop this unlawful department of prostitution" I said feeling so enraged. " OK guys, we will be back after a short break with some few questions from Twitter" she said and the director said " cut"

.

" We're are back, if you've just tuned in . You're watching a morning show with Cassie Cameron. Our guests for today are a married couple we all know by now, Mr and Mrs Salvatore. And it's time for five questions from my twitting friends. The first question is from Gabriel D.it says ' I personally would like to know why Mrs Salvatore left home, looking at her. She seems like a troublesome woman' what is

your answer to this tweet Cora?" the host asked. She had a tablet in her hands. " It's funny how people just look at somebody's outer shell and just judge that person. Anyways the reason why I left home is something I didn't want to share with the world but you asked me so judgmentally. I'll have to bring it up. Most of the people out there think that Street kids and other people living on the streets are just trouble makers who left home before of whatever bad reasons might be, or whatever bad things they might have done. For some of them it is like that but for most of them it's the opposite. As for I, I left home because I was constantly sexually abused by someone who was supposed to protect me against the cruel world but he ended up being cruel himself. He'd sneak in my room with every chance he got. For years I had to endure this. Ever since I turned 13 I became his sex toy. I'll not disclose his identity with you but he was someone I trusted even though our relationship has never been good but I still trusted him. He blamed me for something I wasn't capable of doing. But the good thing is I forgave him and I am trying everyday to forget about that part of my

past" I said she sighed. " From where I am sitting you sound like a kind and Strong woman. You've been through a lot it seems. The next question is from Queen lerato , ' what's the name of the department owner if there is one?" She asks. That's not a very nice question coming from another woman." She said shaking his head. " I might have an answer for lerato Cassie...if she doesn't have anything else to ask why doesn't she just keep quiet and listen. That's my answer to you lerato if you're watching" Salvatore said, sounding so cool but angry. " Well you heard it for yourself Queen lerato. The next question is from Mrs Zulu, it more of a statement than a question. She says' I personally know Cora and her husband. Although I thought she had died but after watching this show I now understand. She used to live across the street from my house, she's such a good human being. We went to church together I'd like to know what course she's doing. Since she went to school' what's your answer to Mrs Zulu/ former neighbor Cora" she asked. " It's nice hearing from you Mrs Zulu" I said smiling. " Well I'm taking a degree in gynaecology, I'm doing my third

year right now." I added. " Well isn't that just impressive people. I'd like to know how did you do it, juggling between your clients and school must've been very hard" Cassie ask. " The rank manager gave us halve the day to ourselves and I went to school while the others went to do their nails and hair and went to sleep. I used to sleep for like 4 hours our less. Some days were hard, I felt like giving up but kept on going. I knew I had to get out of the hell whole one way or the other" I said smiling. The questions kept on coming. It was not as bad as I thought it would be. " Well that's it, we've come to the end of the show. You've heard it from the horse's mouth, I hope you'd stop judging her now, since you've heard her side of the story. As woman, we must unit and fight together and not against each other. I hope the SACP catches the Lord of the prostitution department and he rots behind jail and the other women are saved too. We as South Africans must fight against these criminals, this is something closer to Human trafficking. Who ever is behind this vile ring must be stopped... Mr Salvatore any last words from you?" She asked after a lecture.

" I don't care what people think or say. I love my wife" he said squeezing my hand. " Well you've heard the man. For more tweet about the topic of today my Twitting address is on the screen. Thank you watching now I'd like to love and leave you. See you tomorrow morning on morning show with Cassie Cameron. Good morning South Africa" she said then blew a lot of kisses Infront of the camera.

.

My apologies guys

[6/3, 14:58] Lynne: I found the nurse feeding her porridge, she looked kinda angry. " How about I feed her" I said leaning on the door frame. " Ohh thank God you're here, your wife has been giving me a tough time" the nurse said sighing heavily. " Hey, I'm still here and don't be complaining like you don't get paid for this job. If you did your job properly then, there wouldn't be an issue between the two of us" she said angrily. " Sorry ma'am" the nurse said smiling before leaving. " What's going on here?" I asked sitting down on the bed side. " She was trying to choke me with the overloaded spoon of porridge.

She wants to bathe me?, Can you believe the nerve" she said angrily

" so you haven't taken a bath since yesterday?" I asked feeding her. " She wanted to touch me, what if she tried something on me." She said. " Babe... she's a woman, have you noticed?" I asked chuckling on the inside. " She might be lesbian" she said. " Okay, have you seen the doctor?" I asked feeding her. " I was woken up by her, I want to get out of here" she said, looking so emotional wrecked. " Let's eat first, then I'll go and talk to her" I said. " They're arranging a therapist for me, is it that bad?" she asked after some time. " What could be worse than death" I asked clearing my throat. " Since it's not going to be your first time, this should be easy. It's for your own good" I added. " I miss my hands" she said raising them up, diverting from the topic of seeing a therapist. " You don't need to, I'll help you" I said.

.

" If you say so then, you can take her home this evening" the doctor said after I promised to take good care of her, besides had no serious injuries She

was going to be discharged at 4pm after the last check up was done.

.

" My grandparents are here in SA" I said, after a long time of silence. It was 12 pm. I had helped her take a bath, she was in the hospital gown. She didn't say anything, " I'd understand if you don't want to see them. I've already told them that you're not ready to" I said. " How about my family?" She asked. " They've been calling a lot, I haven't answered. I don't know what to say to them but I sent them a message yesterday, saying that you're fine" I said. " I don't want to see anybody else, how do I face them?. I can't, I won't be able to" she said. " I'm sure they'll understand" I said kissing her forehead. " I'm starving, let me order pizza" I said taking out my phone. " How's Lore?" She asked. " I asked Eshle to take him with her on the day of the incident, he's fine. I have my guys keeping an eye on him. I didn't want him to see anything that would trouble him, he's safer there" he said. " Tell her to Bring him home. He's not safe there, the security is tight at home" she

said, eyes darting between mine. " don't panic, he's fine... he'll be home before you get there but how are you going to look after him" he asked. " He has a nanny, doesn't he?" She asked." I asked her to go back home" I said. " You can ask her to come back now" she said. " That'd be inconvenient" I said. " What do we do then, I want my son by my side. If something should happen to him, it'll all be your fault" she said trying to sit upright. " Hey don't do that, relax. I'll call Petunia or be the nanny for two" I said looking up. " Serves you right" she said so coldly. "You've been so rude lately, so hostile and angry, so cold" I said solemnly. She just looked away, no apologies no nothing. The pizza got delivered and she got discharged earlier than expected, we went home around 3pm

And to her worst surprise, we found everybody. I mean everybody home. " What are they doing here?" She whispered. " I have no idea" I said smiling at them weirdly. " What are you guys doing here?" I asked. " We're here to see Cora" most of them said in unision. " Hi" Cora said faintly. She was holding on

to my arm. " Come, we made you guys dinner and cleaned the house" Amanda said pulling her towards the dining room. She looked at me but just shrugged my shoulders. " Sit down" she said pulling out a chair for her. " Come on guys" Priya said to everyone, we set around the table. " Where are my grandparents and Papa" I asked after sitting down. " We asked them to excuse us. They'll be eating out" Michael said. " Salvatore" Cora said showing me her bandage hands. " I'll have to feed her" I said standing up and serving her. " Let me do that, since I am sitting next to her" Amanda said, taking the plate from my me. " So what're you doing here" I asked. " We're here to see Cora of course" Mbutuho said. " Mmh and who cooked?" I asked. " We might have ordered In" Raj said, " I knew it, you aren't that kind and this tastes Just like one of the meals from my restaurant" I said eyebrows raised. " We really tried cooking but it turned out to be horrible...at least we tried" Priya said shrugging. " You should have prepared samosa and parathas and all those spicy Indian meals. I'm sure Cora would have loved it" I said. " Are you

making fun of Indians?" Mbutho asked first. " No I was just saying that—..." Well it's not funny" he cut me off. I couldn't help but laugh, infact every body did. We shared jokes until it was time for them to leave.

.

" How do you feel now" I asked after putting her undercovers. I had just bathe her, it was harder than I thought plus she was complaining. " Thanks, I just need to take my pills and sleep. I am tired" she said sighing softly. " I'm going to take a shower first and then you can take your medication" I said standing up. " But Alonzo—..." No buts, it'll only take 15minutes" I said before closing the bathroom door. I took a quick shower then wore my PJs after wiping and Moisturizing my body. " I am going to do it" she said as I was helping her take her pills. " Do what?" I asked. " The show thing, I want to have my life back Joaquin" she said. " I thought you said, you was not ready for this." I said that in a questioning manner. " I was not but after seeing our friends, my perceptive change. They didn't judge or let alone ask me about

it. Or my suicide, it's not just the two of us against the world. I have my friends too, I'm not alone." She said sounding so confident. " You know that this is not going to be an easy journey, right?" I asked. " There are still people out there who'll judge and criticise you. " I added. " I know, I just need to heal first then..." She said. " OK, I'm glad you're ready to claim your life back. That's my girl, the invincible, strong, brave one. We'll face the world together but for now let's go to sleep, I'm tired" I said getting undercovers after putting the medication on the dressing table. " I thought you said Lorenzo Is coming back home and where are your grandmother and grandfather?" I asked. " They'll come by tomorrow, Let's go to sleep now" I said kissing her forehead. " No more questioning me, sleep" I said putting my index finger on her lips. I could sense that she wanted to ask me something.

.

[6/3, 14:58] Lynne: Cora's POV

.

" It stings, it hurts" I screamed eyes closed. Doctor Davis was cleaning my wounds. " I'm almost done" he said, I've been screaming and crying ever since he started. It felt like a decade of torture. He lubricated something and then bandaged my hands one by one. " There we go" he said standing up. " What about my neck" I asked. " We'll get that removed within a week's time, goodbye for now. " He said leaving the room. " Let me walk you out" Alonzo said giggling, seemed like he was amused by my pain. " Are you done crying?" he asked coming back. " I'll slap that smirk off your face Alonzo" I said warningly. " I'd like to see you try, with your crippled hands. I think you're the one who'd start crying" he said. " My hands are not crippled and do not make the mistake of mocking a wounded warrior. My hands might not be functioning right now but my legs are" I said glaring at him. He just laughed out loud. " have you seen yourself lately, you can't even move your head. You're more of a wounded statue than a warrior. Stop calling yourself a wounded warrior, you'll kill people with laughter Honey" he said laughing his ass out. Actually that hurt my feelings, It got to me. " You're

making fun of me?" I am tears streaming down my face. " Hey are you crying?, Are those real tears or crocodile's" he asked chuckling. " You're such a rude... I hate you," I said getting off the bed, crying out loud. " Hey, I was just kidding. You're seriously crying" he said walking towards me. " Don't come anywhere near me, I hate you" I said angrily but Salvatore being Salvatore didn't listen. Then I hit his face, hurting myself in the process and then the crying got even more louder." don't do that, you're hurting yourself. I was just joking" he said hugging me. " Look at me, I can't even get myself dressed. " I said in between the sobs. " Hey, worriers don't cry. Stop crying, It was meant to be a joke— you know a joke right?. The one that makes you laugh and not cry" he asked weirdly. I was giggling while crying. " I know what a joke is" I said smiling. " You do?, So why are you crying instead of laughing?" He asked rolling his eyes. " I didn't like your joke, you were mocking me. It didn't come out as a joke to me, besides that I don't like it when you make fun of me" i said . " Sorry, OK. Don't ever cry like that. It's scary" he whispered. I just giggled. " And why is it that every

time we fight you end up saying " I hate you Salvatore" . " He asked I just shrugged my shoulders. " I don't say it every time" I said. " Most of the time though" he said, I just kept quiet. And then there was a knock on the door. " Come in" he said. " Yes what is it" he said as soon as the bodyguard walked in. " Sir, the therapist is downstairs" he said. " Thoroughly checked?" He asked. " Yes Sir" he said. " Take her to the library, tell her Cora'll be there in a few minutes" he said. " Yes Sir" hr said before leaving. " Let's clean up your face before I am accused of women abuse" he said going to the bathroom, he came back with my wet face towel and wiped away my tears. " I'm kind of scared" I said taking a deep breath. " No need to be scared, you've done this before." He said kissing me. " I love you and I'll be in the next room if you need anything" he said after the kiss. " Okay" I said sighing. " I'll help you down the stairs" he said walking me out the room. I was wearing jeans and t-shirt along with my sleepers. " I'll make you breakfast" he said leaving me on the library door. I walked in and set down on the couch opposite to the woman who was sitting there. She was blonde

haired and quite old. " Hi, my name is Laura and I am going to be your therapist for Whole two weeks. What's your name" she asked as if she didn't know already. " Cora" I said shortly. " Nice meeting you Cora, How would you describe yourself Cora?" She asked. " Really?" I asked chuckling but she was serious. " I'm 21 years old, turning 22 in three months to come. I'm married, I am a gynaecologist student" I said. " That's good but I meant on a personal level. Describe yourself on a personal level. Who would you say Cora is" she asked. " Cora?, Cora is a brave, kind, intelligent and loving woman" I said clearing my throat. " Is that how you see yourself or just the way people describe you?" She asked puzzling me. " What do you mean, i, I don't know" I said not so sure. " You know exactly what I mean, think about it... OK that's it for the day" she said standing up. " For really?. 10 minutes and that's just it" I asked unbelievably. " We're done for the day, it would have been 15 minutes if you didn't keep me waiting. I'll see you tomorrow, same time. Don't be late" she said walking out. I was left in an awe. I got out after 5 minutes. " That was fast" Salvatore said

as I walked into the kitchen. " Can you believe it?, She's...argh. I don't like her" I said frustrated. " Anyways, could you maybe give me Dr Davis' number. I want him to give me a written doctor's note that I won't be able to take residency for the next two weeks" I said sighing. " I've already told him, Robinson will drop it at the hospital tomorrow" he said. " Thanks, you're such a sweetheart but please tell him to give it directly to Dr Francis." I said. He nodded staring at me. " What?" I asked. " Nothing, I was just daydreaming. Here's your breakfast" he said dropping a plate of breakfast Infront of me. " Thanks again" I said trying to pick up the fork. " Ohh sorry, let me help you with that" he said sitting down next to me. He fed me, " I have a few business calls to make, you can go and watch a movie in the theater or something" he said standing up with an empty plate. I went to the home cinema and struggled with the remote control until I got it in my hands. I chose to watch a romantic comedy movie, I was starting to get bored when Lorenzo walked in screaming. " Mommy" she called me, then got on my thighs, I could not even hold him. I was startled, "

how is my little boy doing" I asked smiling. " Mom you're back, Papa said you were in dunban " he said making me laugh. " It's Durban Lorenzo, not Dunban" I corrected him laughing. " Why did you not take me with you, I miss you" he said playing with my hair, he always did that. " I missed you too" I said kissing him all over the face, knowing exactly what he'd do next. He started giggling so cutely. " Where have you been?" I asked. " I was with aunt Esihle and that the old girl took me with her" he said, puzzling me. " Who's the old girl" I asked frowning. " The one who stays at grandpa's house" he said. " Ohh, that's your great grandma." I said. " I don't like her, she made me drink a lot of milk. I don't like milk mommy" he said. " But you have to—..." I suppose he's talking about me" I heard grandma say walking in. I couldn't even turn to look at her, I was feeling hot all of a sudden. " He says that you made her drink a lot of milk" I said chuckling. " He's exaggerating. It was just one full glass per meal. That makes it two glasses of milk" he said sitting down next to me. " He can be very very like his father sometimes" he said. " He may seem all tough now but back in the

days. Oh boy, a whipping stick came in handy" she said making me laugh. " Lorenzo, go and sit with your grandfather. I need to talk to your mother" she said smiling at him. Lore just shook his head no. " Go, I'm coming. I'll get you a lot of chocolates. Be a good boy" I said kissing his forehead. He walked out, but I could see that he didn't want to. Wherever he was going, he was going to get there crying " don't spoil him so much" grandma said. " I can't help myself but I'll try not to" I said smiling." How have you been?" She asked smiling. " I'm good, I'm alive" I said faking a smile. " Ettore, I mean your father in-law told me everything" she said but I didn't say anything to that. I wasn't even looking at her. " Why didn't you tell us your story?, I think we were friends. You and I" she said, I sighed. " If you were me, would you have done that?" I asked smiling faintly. " What would I have said Mrs S. Should I have went ahead and said ' Hi, my name is Cora and I've been working as a prostitute for the past two years?.'. Would you have accepted me then?. You wouldn't have, I know that for a fact. When I can't even accept myself most of the time, how do I expect others to accept me?" I

asked calmly. " You're right, I wouldn't have but we've spent so many years as a family. You should have let us know, we deserved to know. Finding out from the news was ...—" finding out from the news papers was unfair, I know." I completed her sentence. " And why in god's name would you try to kill yourself?" She asked a little bit louder. " I was tired of all the fighting. All the noise, you wouldn't understand. It's like I've been fighting against the world ever since I was conceived. It's one battle after another. " I said sighing heavily. " What your father did to you was so cruel. No woman in this world deserves to go through that." She said. We talked a lot.

.

" Excuse me ,I'm going to lie down a bit" I said after lunch. We had lunch together. It was me, lore, Joaquin, grandma,grandpa and father. " My chocolates mommy" Lore said. "Tell your father Lore" I said not feeling so good, my hands hurts a lot. I needed to take my pain killers. I walked upstairs and poured myself a glass of water from the jug

then drank down my pills. I put the pillows against the headboard and set down, leaned back with my eyes closed. " Are you OK?" Salvatore asked walking in. " Yes" I answered shortly. I felt his footsteps getting closer. He touched my forehead with his palm. " You have headache. Maybe you're coming down with flu. Let me get you pills for that" he said. " I took them already" I said opening my eyes. " My hands hurts. I don't know if I should raise them up or put them down" I said feeling so emotional wrecked. " Lie down, let me help you" he said. He helped me lie in the middle of the bed. One pillow on my left hand side and one on the other , my hands were on top of the pillows. And then another one under my head. " Feeling better?" He asked. " Yes, thank you" I said. " Go to sleep, you'll wake up feeling much better" he said then walked out. He was right when he said he was the best in the market, I couldn't have found a better companion than my Alonzo. He took care of me without complaining. I woke up around 4pm, i was having a bad dream. I poured myself a glass of water from the coffee table and drank up, I was using both my hands to hold up the glass. I then

went to the bathroom to pee. I went to the closet to search for my bag I needed my phone." you're awake, I brought you dinner" he said walking inside the room with a tray of dinner in his hands. I had offloaded everything that was in my bag on the bed. " Have you seen my phone?" I asked after not finding it among the stuff on bed. " I took, I don't think you need to have it" he said putting the tray on the coffee table. " Of course I need to have it, a lot of people must be calling me worriedly. I also need to call my parents" I said clearing the bed. " A lot of people including Donato Francis?" He asked chuckling unbelievably. " How is it that he has your number, he called not once not twice but a several times. ' just to check on you' . I hope I don't have to kill someone for what's rightfully mine" he said. " Is that why you were looking at me so weirdly early in the kitchen?" I asked. He didn't answer my question. " Come and have your food" he said, I walked towards him. I set down on the carpet, Infront of the small coffee table. He was sitting on the couch. " I want to try eating myself " I said pulling the tray towards me. " Can I please have my phone back?" I asked looking at him.

" I don't think so, just focus on your recovery. I don't want you browsing through social media. Focus on your physical well being, I'm going to take a bath" he said standing up. I ate slowly but surely. I was still eating when he came out of the bathroom 30 minutes later. He had a towel wrapped around his waist and drying up his hair using another one. " How are my parents doing" I asked. " Your mother called today, he wanted to talk to you but you were sleeping. I didn't want to disturb you, your father landed himself in hospital" he said so casually. " What do you mean ' landed himself in the hospital'. What happened to him?" I asked. " He's fine, he had trouble breathing after watching the news about you." He said. " He'll get discharged in no time" he added. " I wonder how he does it, how does he live with himself ?" He asked. " What do you mean by that?" I asked standing up and picking up the tray. " I'll go and put this in the kitchen" I said walking out. " I'll run you some bubbly bath" he called out after me. I put the tray down. I noticed that the television was replaced with a new one and the vases were replaced too. The sitting room was back in order. "

Mommy, Papa didn't give me my chocolate" Lorenzo said walking inside the kitchen. " He didn't?" I asked. He shook his head. " Let me check in the snacks' shelve" I said already checking out. " There's no PS in here" I said. " Let's see what we have in the refrigerator" i said opening the fridge. " We have chocolate cake, would you like some" I asked smiling at him. I knew that PS was irreplaceable to him. He nodded slowly. " I also want one, let's do this. We'll cut the biggest piece and put some fruits in a bowl and a couple of other snacks in another bowl. Sit Infront of the television and watch Masha and the Bear" I said and he jumped up and down ." Yey, yey" he screamed. .

" You thought about what I asked you too?" She asked. It was 9am and I was with my therapist. " I did" I said looking at her. " And?" She asked. " My answer still remains" I said." I'm going to need you to be true to yourself Mrs Salvatore" she said but I didn't say anything. " How would you describe your relationship with your family?" She asked. " What does my relationship with my family has to do with

me committing suicide. Shouldn't you be asking me why I did it" I asked so angrily. " Why exactly, why did you do it?" she asked smiling, like I had just shared an amusing story with her. " After the news about me being a former prostitute came out I felt so fed up with living. I felt that my life was ruined, after working so hard. After all the hardships I had gone through and then things had to come down crumbling" I said sighing softly. " What made you change your mind, I mean after waking up in the hospital?" She asked. " My husband changed my mind, he talked some sense into me.Gave me a few reasons to hold on. I have to be strong for him and our son" I said . " What about your family, don't you have a family?" She asked. " I do have a family, weren't that close. Don't get me wrong I love my family but not in the same way I love my husband and son" I said looking down. " And why is that?" She asked. " Sometimes I feel like my father made me suffer and they were there. We lived under the same roof but they did nothing. I might have forgiven him but I can't forget. That past will always be a huge part of me, whenever things go wrong i can't help but

look back" I said then took a deep breath. " Earlier on you said that your husband gave you a reason to hold on, what are those reasons. Didn't you see them before taking that rope, putting it around your neck. Pushing away that chair and attempting suicide" she asked, and then the pictures of the event came as fresh as they could in my mind. I was so angry, angry with myself and the whole world, angry with life itself. " To think of it, I did not see any reason why I should stay alive. I was angry with everyone and everything. I was angry with my husband, he promised to protect me. I felt that he failed to, I didn't even think of Lorenzo" I said taking a deep breath, I was in the verge of crying. " How does that make you feel like?" She asked. " Guilty" I answered shortly. " Why do you feel guilty Cora?" She asked. " I don't know, I feel guilty because Alonzo has been nothing but good to me, he looks after me without any complaints. I can be a nag sometimes but he just smiles and brush it off. And Lorenzo , I'm not his biological mother but he loves me like I am. He's such a sweet little boy, I love him to bits but I didn't even think about him that night... does that make me a selfish person. Am I a

bad person?" I asked. "Take this" she said offering me a box of tissue. I took the box and wiped away my tears, I didn't even realize that I was crying." I want you to think about what your father has done to you, if it's fair on your family. On your husband and child. All the people around you, how it's going to affect you. If you die, that's it for today" she said standing up and leaving.

[6/3, 14:59] Lynne: Are you okay?" Amanda asked me. I was in the terrace with all my girls. Including Esihle who was quite quiet for my liking. I hadn't seen her in 5 days. I had been four days since the news of my disgrace went around the world. The doctor unbandaged my hands in the morning, "yeah I'm fine" I said sighing heavily. "I'm just tired and feeling sleepy. Alonzo and I watched a movie till midnight" I said before sipping on my coffee. We were having beverages, "Esihle's love for me must have dropped down after she found out about my past. I bet you think I'm no good for your brother" I said looking at her across the table. "No, it's nothing like that. Of course not, you make him happy. If he's

happy than I'm happy. I hold no beef with you Cora" she said, coming back to planet earth. It was either she was lying or I was just imagining things. "

Siboniso came to see me but I haven't seen Sandile" I said frowning. " He's been very busy lately, he works half a day" she said. " Ohkay" I said. " Tell him I said ' Hi'. And mother in-law too" I said smiling." I'll do that" she said returning the smile. " Anyways, the date of our interview has been decided. Salvatore will be accompanying me." I said diverting the topic.

" Ohh that's good. I'm so fed up with having to listen to these lifeless bitches talking shit about you. Have you seen what they were saying about you?" Priya said sounding so relieved. " I wouldn't know, I have no phone. Salvatore is checking each and everyone of my moves. Wherever he has to go out, he makes sure to take the remote control with him. I am clueless" I said. " You mean, you don't know" she asked so loudly. I nodded, " anyways when is your interview ?" Divya asked. " This coming week Monday" I said casually" I think I need to see what people are saying about me before I go out there and get slaughtered" I said, my eyes darting between All

of them. " If your husband thinks that you shouldn't see these things then you shouldn't" siwe said. " Come on guys" I said looking at them. They shook their heads no. " Is it that bad?" I asked, heart beating up so fast. " Let me see" I said swiftly retrieving Priya's iPhone from her hands. " Cora don't—..." It's my life, I think I deserve to know more than anyone else in here" I said Google. " Cora it's not good for you to be reading about these awful things" Amanda said but it was already too late. There were a thousands of topics, shared videos, comments on the videos. I kept on reading, opening Facebook Twitter Instagram YouTube channels newspapers. " Here's your phone" I said sitting down an hour later. " Are you OK?" Divya asked. " Why wouldn't I be, I'm OK" I said faking a chuckle. " I need some more coffee, I'm going to make myself a cup of coffee" I said standing up and going inside the house. I warmed up the coffee in the coffee maker and poured myself a cup.

.

" Why are you crying, what happened?" Salvatore

asked in the middle of the night. I guess he might have heard my sobbing. He said the words and lights switched on. I had my back on him. " Il mio cuero batte, what happened?" He asked, trying to get me to face him. " Everybody thinks that I am a lose whore" I said. " Where did you get that from, who said that?" He asked sounding so angry. " I saw it on the internet, I saw it Salvatore." I said. " Don't stress about what other people think of you rather worry about what you think of yourself. They don't know you, people will always be people. They don't know when to get off, we'll clear everything soon. It'll blow off and they'll have another victim to gossip about. That's just how the world is, full of losers who find amusement in other people's pain. Don't let them get to you, OK?" He said. I was in his embrace. I nodded. " Now get some sleep, you've got better things to worry about other than stupid people's comments. Go to sleep" he said putting me back down. " Sleep" he said kissing my forehead. " Make love to me" I said holding his head. No questions were asked he started kissing me. I needed a distraction from all the nonsense

[6/3, 14:59] Lynne: Monday morning

.

" It is yet another day another morning talk show with me, your host— Cassie Cameron. We all have heard about the shocking news about Mr Salvatore's wife, if you do not know Salvatore well today you will. He's the founder and CEO of hotel Paradisé, the biggest hotel in South Africa. He has a few restaurants and few other businesses. All in all he's one of the richest young man. And today we have him with his wife Cora Maphumulo whom is recently famous for the porn videos of her shared around the country. Mr and Mrs Salvatore welcome to the show" the host said. It was Monday morning and thank God it was raining and cold. I was wearing a long grey overcoat. A knee length black dress and black heels along with black gloves. They did a good job in hiding my healing scars. Salvatore was wearing a black tuxedo, and shoes. My heart was pounding heavily. " Thank you Cassie for having us Cassie" Salvatore said. Cassandra was one of his celeb friends. Who had a morning talk show. " I'm

delighted to have you two as my guest. Now getting to business..." She had gave us a question book of what was going to be asked. I knew exactly what she was about to ask. The cameras were rolling, live. We were sitting on the opposite couch to her's. " How did you two meet?" She asked, starting with the easy question, just to get us settled and comfortable but there was nothing about our story that was settling or comfortable. Everything seemed extra and almost to the level of fiction. " My wife and I met a few years back, in my penthouse. It's a very interesting story actually, I'll let her tell it. She's the best at it, il mio cuero batte go ahead" he said smiling at me but I knew he was as much nervous as I was. I never saw that coming, I thought of a few possible scenarios where a girl meets a guy. But nothing came into my mind, so I opted for the truth. " It was on the 30th of June four years ago, I received a message from my rank manager saying. I had to meet up with a client. She gave me an address and I was shocked to find out that it was hotel Paradisé. I arrived there around 6 pm, one of the genators took me to his penthouse. I was wearing a black mask, I remember him asking

me if I was in one of those ballroom dancing parties. I lied and said yes. He left me at the door, I knocked and the voice inside said I must come in. I made myself comfortable on a couch. He came out 15 minutes later with a towel wrapped around his waist. I swear my heart skipped a bit, he was the most gorgeous man I've ever seen and his smile caught my eyes. Nothing like that has ever happened to me, I felt so not like myself. He excused himself once again, I heard him talking on a phone. I started to get angry, I just wanted him to get it over with. You know, what I was there for. So when he came back I asked him about his condom size in anger. He just chuckled and said 'trust me you don't want to know'. To cut it short he just wanted a stranger to talk to about the divorce he was going through. " I explained looking at the host. " So he never tried anything on you" the host asked frowning. " If you are asking if we had sexual intercourse then no, we didn't. We talked until we slept, that was new to me. He was still asleep when I woke up, so I wrote him a note. I don't know why but I did. I then left" I explained. " What did the note say Mr Salvatore, I'm

sure the people who are watching this show right now are as curious as I am to know" she said giggling a bit. " The note was written; you're a good man Mr Salvatore and don't bother trying to find me because you won't" Salvatore said chuckling unbelievably. And I was like' like hell I would' I got dressed and went to work" This sounds interesting, so how did you two meet again if she was so sure you wouldn't find her and you weren't interested in finding her either?" She asked. " Something bigger than me happened that night, she was the first woman who was able to make my heart skip after so many years. I might have been married to Isabella which I am sure you all know but she wasn't able to do that, we were more like friends that husband and wife. I cared for her and she reciprocated. With Cora I felt somethings I never felt before, so alive. She's one feisty woman if you must know. So I went in search of her after a week of feeling like something was missing. It took me a month to find her but I did and we started dating" he said. " Didn't it bother you that she was a prostitute?" She finally asked and I knew we were getting down to business. " I won't lie

and say it didn't, it did. I found myself paying to have her to myself for the whole two months. And when she had to go back to work we fought. I thought she would not go back there but she did and I didn't like it. Our lives have not been the easy ones. We had to make a plan for her to escape that life, I'd not disclose that with you though" he said. " OK, back to you Cora, how long have you worked as a prostitute and why. I'm sure that this is what you guys at home have been waiting for" she asked. I shifted on my sit a bit. " I started working as a prostitute 6 years ago. After I ran away from home, I lived under the bridge for a month. I had just been chosen by one of the best schools in SA which apparently happened to be his father's school. I used to live in Durban before taking the bus here. A woman offered me a job, I was so excited. So she took me with her, took care of me for one week and then introduced me to her Boss. Who happens to be the owner of all the prostitution ranks. They forced me to become a prostitute" I said taking a deep breath. " Do you think that your boss is the one who uploaded those videos on YouTube and other Internet sites" she asked. " I

know for a fact that he is the one. He's one dangerous man and I wish that all the women still working under him could be saved somehow. I know that he provides for ' his girls' very well but he doesn't offer a way out. There's no way out. It's either you die or he auction you to the highest bidder. The country must do something about this and the police my stop this unlawful department of prostitution" I said feeling so enraged. " OK guys, we will be back after a short break with some few questions from Twitter" she said and the director said " cut"

.

" We're are back, if you've just tuned in . You're watching a morning show with Cassie Cameron. Our guests for today are a married couple we all know by now, Mr and Mrs Salvatore. And it's time for five questions from my twitting friends. The first question is from Gabriel D.it says ' I personally would like to know why Mrs Salvatore left home, looking at her. She seems like a troublesome woman' what is your answer to this twit Cora?" the host asked. She

had a tablet in her hands. " It's funny how people just look at somebody's outer shell and just judge that person. Anyways the reason why I left home is something I didn't want to share with the world but you asked me so judgmentally. I'll have to bring it up. Most of the people out there thinks that Street kids and other people living on the streets are just trouble makers who left home before of whatever bad reasons might be, or whatever bad things they might have done. For some of them it is like that but for most of them it's the opposite. As for I, I left home because I was constantly sexually abused by someone who was supposed to protect me against the cruel world but he ended up being cruel himself. He'd sneak in my room with every chance he got. For years I had to endure this. Ever since I turned 13 I became his sex toy. I'll not disclose his identity with you but he was someone I trusted even though our relationship has never been good but I still trusted him. He blamed me for something I wasn't capable of doing. But the good thing is I forgave him and I am trying everyday to forget about that part of my past" I said she sighed. " From where I am sitting you

sound like a kind and Strong woman. You've been through a lot it seems. The next question is from Queen lerato , ' what's the name of the department owner if there is one?" She asks. That's not a very nice question coming from another woman." She said shaking his head. " I might have an answer for lerato Cassie...if she doesn't have anything else to ask why doesn't she just keep quiet and listen. That's my answer to you lerato if you're watching" Salvatore said, sounding so cool but angry. " Well you heard it for yourself Queen lerato. The next question is from Mrs Zulu, it more of a statement than a question. She says' I personally know Cora and her husband. Although I thought she had died but after watching this show I now understand. She used to live across the street from my house, she's such a good human being. We went to church together I'd like to know what course she's doing. Since she went to school' what's your answer to Mrs Zulu/ former neighbor Cora" she asked. " It's nice hearing from you Mrs Zulu" I said smiling. " Well I'm taking a degree in gynaecology, I'm doing my third year right now." I added. " Well isn't that just

impressive people. I'd like to know how did you do it, juggling between your clients and school must've been very hard" Cassie ask. " The rank manager gave us halve the day to ourselves and I went to school while the others went to do their nails and hair and went to sleep. I used to sleep for like 4 hours our less. Some days were hard, I felt like giving up but kept on going. I knew I had to get out of the hell whole one way or the other" I said smiling. The questions kept on coming. It was not as bad as I thought it would be. " Well that's it, we've come to the end of the show. You've heard it from the horse's mouth, I hope you'd stop judging her now, since you've heard her side of the story. As woman, we must unit and fight together and not against each other. I hope the SACP catches the Lord of the prostitution department and he rots behind jail and the other women are saved too. We as South Africans must fight against these criminals, this is something closer to Human trafficking. Who ever is behind this vile ring must be stopped... Mr Salvatore any last words from you?" She asked after a lecture. " I don't care what people think or say. I love my wife"

he said squeezing my hand. " Well you've heard the man. For more tweet about the topic of today my Twitting address is on the screen. Thank you watching now I'd like to love and leave you. See you tomorrow morning on morning show with Cassie Cameron. Good morning South Africa" she said then blew a lot of kisses Infront of the camera.

16 hrs · Public

[6/3, 14:59] Lynne: Page 67

Cora's pov

.

" you remember every single detail of our first meeting " he said as soon as Rob drove out of the building where our interview was. " of course i do. It hasn't been that long" i said smiling. " four years is a long time cora" he said holding my hand into his. " you mean that you don't remember?" I asked staring at him. " i do but i never thought you did and that too so exactly" he said. " shat was i wearing then?" I asked leaning on his shoulder. " a short red skirt, black thigh high boots, a skimpy top and an overcoat

which was" he said. " I'm going to spare you just this one time, you forgot the colour of my crop top and overcoat" i said snuggling closer to his shoulder. " I'm not getting any younger, my memory isn't as much as yours is" he said chuckling. " oh please, that's just an excuse." I said giggling. " it's a fact though" he said. " you look much much younger to me, you look 26-27" i said looking at him. " speaking of age and all what are the plans like for your 37th birthday?" I asked. " ohhh... i want something small or better yet nothing at all" he said thoughtfully. " since when do you like small things" i asked frowning. " since i realized the importance of family, it's nice to do something that's heartfelt and intimate. I want something like that we did for lorenzo" he said. " and how is this going to benefit the NGO and orphanage?" I asked. " I'm going to think of something" he said smiling. " we could throw a grand party every 24th of december where all the rich enough people would be invited." I suggested. " i was thinking of something like that too." He said looking outside the window. " you know that your bodyguards are going to start protecting you directly

from now on right?" He said. That was new, " why? They were doing just fine undercover. They protected me against the paparazzi that day so perfectly." I said. The idea of having people following me around didn't sit well with me. " please don't be like nina too"

[6/3, 15:00] Lynne: He said sighing heavily. " what do you mean by that?" I asked frowning. " she's also pulling a feat, she tried to dodge her bodyguards. She doesn't want them following her around" he said, i didn't even know that Nina had bodyguards. " ohh" i said sinking back in the seat. " did i say something wrong?" He asked. " not at all, so you assigned bodyguards to guard Nina and I'm only finding out about this now" i said looking at him. He sighed softly. " i get it. I should've told you about it. It's just that you had a lot in your plate, i didn't want to add up to that, sorry" he said then kissed my hand. " I'm your wife, before making any big decisions please let me know too. No matter how occupied i may seem." I said calmly.

.

Rob opened the door for us and we got out. It was still raining i rushed inside the house. " i could use a cup of hot chocolate " he said as we walked in side by side. " I'll make you some" i said walking inside the kitchen. I made two cups of hot chocolate, put biscuits on a plate and carried it upstairs where he was, i bumped into petunia on my way there. " good morning ma'am " she said. " from Cora to ma'am, we're upgrading hey?" I said chuckling. " Hi P and stop getting so formal with me. You're like the older sister i never had. Where's lorenzo by the way?" I asked smiling. " I've just put him to bed, he has been crying for you the entire morning " she said. " my poor child" i said feeling so emotional. " let me go and get the laundry done, excuse me " she said walking downstairs. " I'll see you around " i said walking upstairs. " i don't care just fix it, i CAN'T lose khanna too. He's my biggest investor" i found Salvatore snapping on the phone. " you're my lawyer George. Threaten to sue him or something" he said then hung up. " what's the matter" i asked putting the tray on the bed. " great, my chocolate is here" he said taking a cup and walking out to to balcony. " what's

the matter Joaquin " i asked hugging him from behind.

[6/3, 15:00] Lynne: He took a deep breath, i felt his chest rise and fall. " I've been losing clients ever since the scandal has been out and then one of my investors pulled out and now another big one wants to pull out. The share's value is decreasing daily. I don't know what to Cora" he said sounding so defeated. " I'm sorry...i wish i could fix your problem like you always fix mine but i have no clue about business" i said letting go of him. I walked back inside the room, i set down on be bed after taking off my overcoat. I had my hot chocolate and biscuits, trying to think things through. My therapy session was scheduled for 4pm that day. He came back in after a while. " I'll be back in a few hours" he said putting an empty cup on a tray. " where are you going?" I asked worried. " i need to fix a few things" he said then walked out of the room, i was left dumbfounded. I had my biscuits along with his. Changed into my comfortable tracksuits and went to put the tray downstairs. I decided to start preparing

for lunch It was 10am by the way. I was going to order pizza for dinner. Two hours later i was done, he wasn't back yet. " mommy " i heard lorenzo say as i was walking upstairs. " baby lore, you're finally awake" i said smiling and walking towards him. " i missed you boy boy" i said picking him up. " why did you leave me behind mommy" he said sulking. " you were still sleeping, i didn't want to disturb your sleep" i said pulling his cheek. " aunt P tells me that you've been crying for the morning " i said in a questioning manner. " she's lying, i wasn't not crying. I don't cry, I'm grown " he said. " i knew she was lying, you wouldn't cry now would you. It would be so embarrassing to find a grown man like you crying" i said kiddingly. I walked into my room, " sit right here, I'm going to take a shower. I'll be back in a few minutes okay" i said, he nodded. I freshned up and wore my tracksuit back on.

[6/3, 15:00] Lynne: We had lunch, it was just petunia and the two of us. By the way salvatore's grandparents went back to france two days ago. His mother only came to see me once ever since things

turned upside down. I was studying in the my therapist came by and we had our session which was not so intense as the first and the second and the third one. She was a straight talker and i didn't like her but i was feeling better emotionally day by day. I took two hours to spare for my books.

.

"One is me

Two is ears

Three is ABC

Four is arms and legs

Five is hands

Six is parents and grandparents

Seven is a week

Eight is a doh ray me fah soh lah te doh

Nine is the planets

Ten is fingers and toes

Eleven is my brother

Twelve is the months of the year

Thirteen is...i don't know

The end...good night" i said kissing his forehead after reading him a short bed time story. He wasn't asleep yet but getting there. " mommy..." he called out for me as i was on my way out. " mhhh" i said walking back to his bed side. " why is Papa not here tonight?" He asked. "Papa has a lot of businesses to take care of. Papa has to work. Go to sleep, he'll be here when you wake up " i said. " good night mommy " he said then closed his eyes. " good night baby" i said then walked out of his room.

[6/3, 15:00] Lynne: I went into my room and took quick shower. Wore my long night dress and panties then got undercovers. I fell asleep as soon as i hit the bed. I was woken up by something cold touching and thigh, when I opened up my eyes he was there raising up my night dress. " hey you're back" i said looking at him at him. He seemed so stressed and distant. I set up straight, he attacked me with a kiss. Holding my neck while his hand was busy trying to take off my night dress. He had a towel wrapped

around his waist. His hair damp, i guess he had just came out of the shower. I helped him take it off. He was sitting on the edge of the bed. I got out of bed and set ontop of him. After removing his towel. We started kissing, he was kind of rough that night. He pulled my panties on the side and started rubbing my bud while i was kissing his neck. He flipping me under and i was lying on my back ass on the edge of the bed. Without any warning he penetrated into my valley of fire. I winced in pain, i mean i wasn't wet enough for him to penetrate plus his dick is big. He started moving in and out until I got wet but it hurt. There was no foreplay that night. He fucked me hard, there was a mixture of pain and pleasure but the pain was greater. He had my leg on top of his shoulder. He made me bend over and tapped it from behind. My bud was throbbing. I had my orgasm, he wasn't there yet. He continued until he cum. He pulled out, i felt his juices flowing down my thighs. He took the towel wiped himself and then I. " good night" he said rhen went to his side of the bed and slept. I went into the bathroom took off my wet panties and peed. Something didn't feel right about

what just happened. I got under the shower and showered, wore my pyjamas and went to bed. I fell asleep after what seemed like eternity of staring at him. He was asleep when i came out of the bathroom.

.

I woke up around 8am but didn't get out of bed. He wasn't there when i woke up. I took my phone from the side stand

[6/3, 15:01] Lynne: And checked my the comments about about the interview, things were really turning around. People's opinions were changing. Some were apologizing for insulting me. Not everybody was on my side but most of the comments were good. Atleast i had something positive to look forward to. " i made you breakfast " he said walking inside the room with a tray of breakfast in his hands. " I'm going to take a shower " i said getting off the bed and rushing in the bathroom. I took a 30 minutes shower, wrapped a towel around my body. He was sitting on the couch when I walked back in the room. I went infront of the dressing table and

moisturised my body. " I'm sorry for hurting you last night" he said standing behind me. I got startled a bit, i must've been into deep in my thoughts. I continued moisturizing my body slowly while looking at him. " I'm sorry il mio cuore batte " he said putting his hands on my shoulders. I felt shivers running down my spine. He gave me goose bumps. I looked at him through the mirror, " you took out your frustration on me, i couldn't recognise you last night. Why would you do that, you made me wish i had a dick so that i could penetrate into your dry pussy" i said so upset. I heard him chuckle. " what's funny?" I asked turning around. " nothing...it's just that an image of you with a dick crossed my mind, i couldn't help myself." He said trying to hold in laughter. " it must be nice having a dick" i said walking towards the closet. " Cora it's nothing like that. I'm really sorry, i didn't mean to hurt you like that." He said following me around. " you didn't only hurt me physically but emotionally too. You hurt my feelings and now you're laughing about it. Do you know how cheap i felt when you wiped me and then said goodnight." I asked searching through my clothes until i found my

black jumpsuit. I dropped down the towel. " i didn't mean to hurt your feelings like that. I'm truly sorry" he said. " it's all good, I'm going to forgive you event..

[6/3, 15:01] Lynne: Eventually. So why not get it over and done with" i said putting on my undergarments and then my jumpsuit. " I'm really sorry, i shouldn't have taken out my frustrations on you. I promise you it won't ever happen again and i don't want you to forgive me for the sake of just doing it. I want you to forgive me because you feel like it" he said then walked out of the closet. I wore my new sleepers and got out of the closet. The tray of breakfast was still there on the bed. I notice that there was a note and a single red rose. " mi dispiase(I'm sorry)" the note was written. I picked up the tray and walked downstairs with it. I found him and lore having breakfast around the kitchen island. I opened up the dustbin and put stupid breakfast inside. Washed the glass of juice down the drain. He was watching me the entire time. I then made myself cornflakes. " eat with us mommy " lorenzo said smiling. " if i do that i might lose my appetite. There's something i can't

stand in this kitchen " i said looking at Salvatore. He stared back at me. " anyways...why don't you join me in the sitting room. We could watch cartoons there" i said smiling at lorenzo. " Papa may i go" he asked trying to get off the high chair. " Enzo finish your breakfast first and then you can go " he said so firmly. Lorenzo set back down sulking. " I'll be waiting for you" i said walking to the sitting room. I had my breakfast while watching the news and then then the doorbell rang. I walked towards the door and opened up. Two police officers were standing there. " we're are here to see mrs Salvatore " one of them said without wasting time. " that should be me" i said looking at him. " we have a few questions to ask you" he said. " sure come in" i said opening the door. I saw Salvatore standing behind me as soon as i turned around. " can i see your IDs officers " he said . They showed him. " we have a few questions to ask you regarding the interview that took place yesterday morning."

[6/3, 15:02] Lynne: One of the officers said. " my wife has got nothing to say" Salvatore said before i could

say something. " if you cooperate then we will be out of here in no time. By the way I'm detective Jones and this is officer simelane." He said extending his hands for a handshake. " i think we're going to need our lawyer." Salvatore said walk taking out his phone. " can i speak with my husband in private, excuse us" i said pulling Salvatore towards the kitchen. " what is it?" He asked frowning. " i think i should just tell them everything i know" i said . " that's not happening. Once he's caught then they'll put you on standing as a witness against him. He'll try to get his man to wipe you out. This will drag on and on" he said. " i want my justice salvatore. This is the only way he's ever gonna get out of our lives. We'll be free with him behind the bars." I said. " we could still do this my own way. Kill him once and for all" he said , i was against that idea. " and have another person's blood written in your hands. I don't want that, i don't like it when you go against the law. You know that, let's just do this the legal way." I said sighing heavily. " but promise me one thing...when they ask you about your death just deny deny deny" he said and i nodded. We walked back to the officers.

" you can start asking" i said faking a smile.

.

" i heard that but what's his name?" Officer simelane asked. It was 10 minutes later. And they had asked me a lot of questions. " like i said i do not know his name. All i know is that they call him The Don. " i said sighing softly. " do you happen to know what his face looks like?" Detective Jones asked. " yes i do" i answered shortly. I had told them everything i knew about the department. When and where everything goes down. " a few years ago the building where you used to live burnt down and there was a corpse found there. We assumed that it was you. What exactly happened there" officers jones asked.

[6/3, 15:02] Lynne: " i don't know what happened really. I went down there tp fetch some of my stuff and then i got back here. I was living with my husband at the moment. When i went back there a week later i found the building in ashes" i said looking at him at him at him at him in the eyes. " how did you get back home Mrs Salvatore?" Officer simelane asked. " i fetched her" salvatore answered

first. " that's interesting, how is it that no one ever spotted you around there" officer jones said sarcastically. " i don't care what you think but i was there" Salvatore said chuckling. " one of the neighbours told us that he saw you with cuts on your hands. Mind explaining that?" Jones asked. " cuts?, i don't see how that has to do with all the questions you're here for. Now if you'd excuse me i have a lot of things to do" i said standing up. " of course, here's my contact number. Call me if you something crosses you mind. Thank you for your cooperation " officer simelane said standing up. I nodded and then they left, " i hate surprises. I have to speak with the securities incharge about this " he said clenching his jaws. " There's nothing to worry about. Now that the Don has got police on his tail, he'll forget about us for a while" i said standing up and walking towards the kitchen. " this is going to end up badly" he said . " it's better this way Salvatore. I can't have you going to war and risking your life. I still need you and your son needs you, what if something happens to you" i said opening the refrigerator and taking out a bottle of juice. " say that again" he said holding me

from behind. I closed the refrigerator. " your son needs you" i said frowning. " no the other part" he said. " i need you?" I asked taking out a glass and pouring myself juice. He was kissing my back, " i haven't forgiven you for what you did. So keep your hands to yourself " i said walking away. He was left gagging.

[6/3, 15:02] Lynne: Page 68

Cora's POV

.

I had a session with my therapist around 4pm again. Salvatore was preparing dinner when I walked out of the library. I found Lorenzo in his room playing with his toys. " Hey buddy" I said sitting down on the carpet. " Only Dad calls me buddy" he said throwing himself on my lap. " Ouch, that hurts" I screamed whining. " Sorry mom" he said standing up and looking so guilty. " Ouch ouch ouch, I think you broke my thigh. Awe!" I screamed rolling on the floor. " Don't cry Mommy, I'm sorry" he said brushing my hair and shushing me. " Awe! I need a doctor.

Somebody call a doctor, I'm dying" I screamed, he started crying. " Sorry mommy, don't cry, please don't cry" he said, he ran outside the room before I knew it. " Lorenzo, I'm just kidding" I called out but he didn't return back. I couldn't help but laugh out loud. " What happened?" I heard Salvatore asked. I turned around to look at them. He looked like he had been running. " Mommy is crying, she's hurt Papa" Lorenzo said holding on to his father's leg. " Ouch! Ouch. Lore you broke my thigh" I started crying and rolling down. " Really now?" He asked arms folded around his chest. "Somebody call a doctor" I screamed, but he saw through my acting unlike the scared Lorenzo who was grabbing on tight to his father's leg. " Stop scaring the kid Cora, grow up marn" he said. " Whatever, my thigh was really broken though" I said rolling my eyes. " And now It's magical repaired?" He asked huffing. " Well, miracles do happen. You just have to believe, have a little faith in God. The Bible says that those who—..." Ohh please spare me the preaching. I think it's about time you went back to church. You're going crazy... it's OK Buddy. Your insane mother here was just pulling a

prank on you. She's not really hurt. She was pretending to be, just to scare you." He explained kneeling down. " So mommy was lying?" He asked and Salvatore nodded. " Elders don't lie Lorenzo, they twist the truth just a little. Teacher the kid some manners Salvatore" I said. " Oh shut up Cora. If my pots get burnt, I swear I am going to make you feel the heat" he said then rushed out. " Whatever, What kind of a chef gets his pots burnt anyways" I called. Lorenzo was still standing in the same position. " Hey boy boy, don't be so sad. I was just pulling your leg. It was a joke. I gotcha right" I said walking towards him. " I'm going to my Papa" he said folding his arms and leaving. " Hey Lorenzo, I'm sorry" I said sighing heavily. Bad joke I guess. And then my phone rang, " This is Mrs Salvatore, how can I help you?" I answered without looking at the caller ID. " Hey! Don't be forward with me" mother snapped on the other end. " Ohh Mom, I'm sorry. How have you been keeping up?" I asked clearing my throat. " Sounds like somebody is in a good mood today" she said ignoring my question. " Life's too short to be lived in sadness. A girl's gotta get up and pick up the pieces"

I said sighing softly. " I saw the news, seems the country has got something good to say about you. People are inspired by your struggles and thrives" she said. " Oh I haven't seen that" I said surprise. " It was just a highlight of tweets and Facebook comments on your story. " She said. " How are you keeping up with all this scandal boiling up" she asked. " I haven't really been on social media or watching the news lately. I guess I'm avoiding this. I'm still alive and trying to live, I'm fine beside being angry with Alonzo." I said taking a deep breath in. " What happened, what did you do?" She asked. " Am I that much of a trouble maker mom?. Why would you think that i did something?" I asked frowning. " You've always been a trouble maker Cora... whatever it is just fix it." She said. " Don't act all black on me. Getting married to a black man has turned your sense of mentality upside down." I said. " What do you mean?. And you don't get to talk to me in that manner. I'm still your mother" She said. " I mean exactly what you just did now. Anyways how are the twins" I asked sighing softly. " Those two hardly come home. University is driving them crazy. I

suspect that your sister has a boyfriend" she said making me laugh. " Are we really gossiping right now?" I asked chuckling unbelievably. " Look I gotta go, I have a mad patient to look after" she said then hung before I could say goodbye. I smiled looking at my phone. I was kinda of bored. I decided to take a walk in the garden outside while playing music on my headphones. Trust me that there is good therapy to get rid of any kind of boredom. It cleared my mind just good. I didn't even realize that I had spent an hour there just sitting on the bench and looking at all different kinds of flowers. The trees were perfectly trimmed the ground cleared up perfectly. The fountain running so beautifully. It was starting to get dark so I decided to go back inside. It was 6pm, I watched television. No body was around. Lorenzo must've been upstairs in our room with his dad. I was chatting with my friends while watching television or rather it was watching me. An hour later I went upstairs to take a bath, Alonzo was not in the room. I took a quick bath wrapped a towel around my body, as soon as I got out Lorenzo walked in with a black box tied with a red ribbon. " What's that?" I

asked walking towards him and kneeling down to his level. " It's your gift from my Papa" he said so cutely. I opened the box it was a little red dress, it looked exquisite. I picked it up and admired it then put back in. " Tell your Papa that I'll not be bought with expensive gifts. Take this back to him" I said closing the box. " Papa said that if you do not wear this, I also will not forgive you" he said, I swear my eyes open widely. " Is that so, will you not forgive your mother?. I thought we were passed that point by the way. I thought you forgave me" I said pulling his cheeks but he yanked my hands. " Forgive my Papa then I'll forgive you. Uncle Mbutho would say ' it's a fair deal'." he said. " Ain't you too smart for a three year old toddler?. I wonder if you take after your dumb father or me. He's acting smart with me these days" I said thinking out loud. " He's waiting for in on the roof. Good night mommy" he said, kissed my cheek then ran out. " Hey wait—" I called out but he was already gone. " Just great" I said sighing heavily and picking up the box. " What's he trying to do?" I was busy talking to myself. Anyway I wore the dress after putting on my red undergarments, fixed my hair

and put on some powder and lipgloss and red bottoms. 30 minutes later I was done. I walked to the roof top. He stood up as soon as I walked there. There was a romantic dinner set up for two. "What's up?" I asked standing up. "Please have a sit" he said opening a chair for me. "There are mosquitoes out here, I'm feeling sleepy and tired and hungry. What's all this" I said opening the corn curved glass which was covering my plate of food. "I'm starving" I said digging in. "Ain't you gonna eat" I asked eating, mind you I was using my own hands instead of a fork and knife that was in front of me. "You did that on our first meal together" he commented staring at me, he was smiling. "You should try it sometimes, it's fab" I said pouring myself a glass of juice. "I did, remember?. It was awful" he said smiling. That thousand dollar smile. "Cora" he said sounding so serious, I looked at him. "I'm sorry" he said. I just stared at him. "I'm going to be honest with you, I don't know how this is going to come out to you but I am going to say it anyways. A part of me blamed you for the issues I'm facing recently in my business. I tried so hard to ignore it, I had a little bit of alcohol

before I drove back home. I guess a portion of me wanted to make you pay. You don't deserve what I did and for that I am sorry" he said then sighed like he was relieved to have said that. " I think I forgave you the first time you apologised. When you put it like that, I think I would blame me too if I were you. It's entirely my fault" I said sighing heavily. " I forgive you and I hope you do too. You must be losing a lot of cash due to my disgrace" I said. " There's nothing to apologize for, I'm the one who should be apologizing. I'm a bad husband, I mean who does that to their wives" he said looking up. " There's no need to beat yourself up about it, everyone of us has that bad side. We just need to learn to control it, let it not overtake the good one...I forgive you but if you ever do that again then I'll be forced to cut off your dick and grill it. I swear I will, I will not be one of those women who gets abused and keep quiet about it. Over my dead body, I'll chop—..." OK, I got the message clear and precise. Can we eat now, the dick chopping thingy is kinda disgusting" he said raising his hands up. " I was just saying that your dick would look good in oven—..." Cora please stop" he said, I

just laughed. " Okay I'll stop but before that, how many people do you think would get a piece of you dick. I was thinking maybe 7 or 8" I asked solemnly. He just stared at me, eye brows raised. " OK fine, I'm stopping" I said laughing out loud. " I was thinking of going home for the next four days and coming back on Sunday morning" I said after a while of silence. " Are you asking me or telling me" he asked glaring at me. " Should I be asking you?" I asked eyebrows raised. " I don't know, Isn't that what married women do?" He asked frowning. " Ohkay, can I visit my parents for the next four day, my husband?" I asked slowly putting the glass down and looking at him. " That sounds more like it but I thought were were going to celebrate my birthday together. It's fine, you can go. I'll just cut the cake and eat it all alone." He said leaning back on his sit. " Ohh your birthday!...I almost forgot. Sorry, but I can go tomorrow morning and come back on Friday. Your birthday is on Saturday, so it's all good" I said, feeling so bad. Who forgets their husbands birthday?. I just wanted to get out of town for a little while and home seemed like a good place to do so. A breath of fresh air was what I

needed. " Hello! Hello!... I am talking to you" I heard him call out for me. " Oh sorry, what were you saying" I said coming back to earth. " What's on your mind" he asked looking so concerned. " I was just thinking, maybe I should take Lore along." I said sighing. " As long as the bodyguards will tag along. It's fine by me" he said sipping his wine. " Thank you" I said smiling faintly. " Don't lose my son over there. Always keep your eyes on you" he said solemnly. " It's our son, not 'mine 'but our" I said. " Got that" he said . " I could use a glass of wine" I said pouring myself a glass. " Cora, you know how you get once you're drunk" he said sighing heavily. " You can handle me" I said sipping. " I wonder what'll be written on my gift this year" he said. " Relax, I'm not getting you any gift this year"said chuckling. " No written watch?" He asked. I nodded. " Do you think that's fair?" He asked sounding so disappointed. And why I've never known, he knew I was going to gift him with a watch. Written a few words at the back. " What?, I thought you didn't like my watches. You hardly wear them" I said smiling inquisitively. " Something so special deserves to be kept as an

ornament. I don't want them to get old, you interpreted my not wearing them badly" he said. " If you're not going to get me anything then I'll also forget about purchasing the gift I had planned to purchase for you" he said. " Just because I'm not going to purchase anything for you doesn't mean that I'm not going to give you a gift" I said gulping down my wine. " I'm starting to get curious" he said. " And I'm starting to get drunk" I said standing up. " I'm going to bed" I said walking towards the exit. " Not so fast Mrs Salvatore" he said holding my waist from behind. " What?" I was, feeling the tingling sensation all over my body. " I want to make love to you under the moon light" he whispered into my ears. " My stomach is full, I don't think I can have another meal" I said trying to walk away but he held my waist so tightly.

[6/3, 15:02] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's POV

.

" Salvatore please" I whispered helplessly as he was

teasing me with his cucumber. I wanted it in already. I was lying on the couch and he was in between my thighs. We were both naked and breathless. He was uncontrol, " I thought you didn't want this Il mio cuero batte" he said smiling. " I want it now" I said holding his dick in place. " You want it?" He asked. I nodded, " I want to hear you say it" he said. " Yes, I want it. Please fuck me already" I said. He finally penetrated into my valley of fire. My back arched up, my toes had electric shocks my my nipples swollen, I was holding on to his back as he was rhythmically moving in and out. The pace increased constantly and the friction as well as the fire. He'd speed up and then slow down, speed up and slow down. Before I knew it, we were switched to the dog style. He was tapping it from behind, I couldn't help myself anymore. I came. My body Shaked like never before, muscles stiffened up. He was not done yetHe continued to fuck me through my orgasm until he cum inside me. His body shook violently and he was cursing. " Fuck...ohh fuck" and then he collided on top of my back. He layed like that, in silence. " Cora" he said kissing my back. " Love wami" I whispered

softly. " I love you... So much" he said. " I love you" I said smiling. I wished we could have layed like that, nakedly. With his giant cucumber inside me for eternity but he wanted another round. We had one in the bathtub and another one on the balcony table and then in bed. I dozed off feeling so tired.

.

Waking up was such a huge mission, I opened up my eyes. The sun was hitting the curtains. He was sleeping nakedly next to me. Lying on his back, his dick so visible under the sheets. I rushed to the bathroom, Washed my face and brushed my teeth and then peed. I came back in bad, he was sound asleep. I looked at the time, it was 7 am. I still had a lot of time before leaving, I could have still parked and showered. Looking at his dick aroused me like crazy, maybe I was getting addicted to it. Anyways I pulled down the sheets. I was wearing a white shirt only. I took it into my hands and kneeling down over it and I started licking it like a lollipop, my focus was on the head. He groaned softly and moved a bit but his eyes were still closed. I was moving my hand up

and down and in circular motions around it. I kept going on and on until it was hard. He released his juices in my mouth, I continued giving him a blow job. He opened up his eyes and looked down at me. I got on top of him and put it in, then started fending. Riding him like a horse. His eyes were red and slightly opened. I fucked him until he cursed, we cum at the same time that morning. I collapsed on top of him. " Good morning Mr Salvatore" I said giggling and kissing his shaved chest. " It's a good morning indeed. I could get used to this Mrs Salvatore" he said brushing my hair. I set up straight, he set up too. His dick was inside me He removed the strands of hair that were covering my face. He kissed my chin, " I should start packing" I said after a few minutes of silence. He was just staring at me without saying anything. " Maybe I should tag along" he said, thinking out loud. " That's not such a good idea, I'll call you every minute of every hour" I said smiling. " You can't expect me to let you go there alone after giving me such a mind blowing morning sex" he said, looking so serious. " Was i that good?" I asked giggling. " It's something beyond that...I can't explain

it. You're driving me insane, it was mind blowing" he said. " Well, you have to wait until I come back" I said smiling. It's not everyday that you get to get praised about performing good in bed. " Why can't I just tag along" he said. " I don't trust those Durban Boys" he said. " But you trust me right...besides I'll have bodyguards 24/7. You can relax, Let me go and pack so long" I said trying to pull out his dick which I found semi-hard.He flipped my under him before I knew it. " Salvatore..." I said whining. " You know that you want this too" he said seriously. That was an unarguably fact but I could resist him, maybe, sometimes. Okay, the thing is I didn't want to be late. We had another round. He offered to make me breakfast while I showered. I took 40 minutes because I also had to wax my private parts. Which stored about 10 pubic hair. Anyways I did that, wiped my body and moisturised it. Then wore my long red skin tight dress and sleepers, I needed to feel comfortable. I went to the closet, took out my suitcase and packed my clothes from undergarments to swimming costumes to Shorts and vest then sneakers and PJs, not forgetting my

sunglasses. That was it, I needed no dress or heels nor did I need the skirts and and trousers. I was planning on spending most of my time down the beach. I packed my toiletries and I was done. I pulled the suitcase outside the room then went to Lorenzo's room and packed his clothes I pulled the suitcases downstairs. " I hope I'm forgiven" I said kissing Lorenzo's cheek. " Good morning Mom" he said smiling. They were both having breakfast. " Your breakfast in in the microwave" Alonzo said. " Thanks" I said opening the microwave and taking out the plate if English breakfast. I poured myself a cup of coffee. " Did your conniving Papa tell you that we're going to Durban? " I asked. " We're going to Dunban?" He asked making us laugh. Baby language is so funny, I nodded. " Yey, yey... auntie P, we're going to Dunban" he screamed hopping down the chair. " Auntie P, I'm going to Dunban" he called out running around the house. " Don't fall on your face" I called out chuckling unbelievably. " I'm conniving?" He asked. " Yes you are, what was the need to involve Lore into our fight last night. You used him, doesn't that make you conniving" I asked, " I used to

think that whoever said that Kids makes the bond between parents strong was telling lies, or what was it again?' they bring parents closer together' . But last night I started to believe him. He worked in my favour, 'the mending stitch between us' you would have said" he said smiling. "Mmh" I moaned with my mouth full. " You'll be living with your parents?" He asked, " yeah, I'm visiting them after all ain't I?" I asked frowning. " Do you think you'd be able to sleep in the same room where...you know happened" he asked vaguely but I got the message. I haven't really thought about it, since we became a family again I've never slept over there. Never entered into that room. Whenever I would visit them I'd sleep in a hotel room. " I think it's best if I book a hotel room" I said after taking a deep breath. " Isn't there a spare room?" He asked. " It's a township house, there are only three bedrooms" I said. " I'll give you my card just Incase you want to book into a hotel" he said. " No, I'll be fine. I have money" I said. " I insist" hr said. " We are not going to argue about this again. I getPaid 20thousands. I have a lot of money in my account. I can manage" I said sighing. " I hardly get to buy you

anything these days" he said. " If it's much of a problem then let's buy open trust funds for our future kids " I suggested. " I'm going to take a shower, we can do that when you get back" he said standing up. He was a little bit upset it seemed. I didn't understand him sometimes, he still transferred 20thousands to my account every month and I earned 20 thousand. Monthly I used about 2k for snacks and gasoline if I was not going to purchase anything expensive like clothes. He still bought the groceries and other house necessities but still wanted to offer me his card. What was I supposed to do with my money then?. I had my breakfast, " I heard you guys are leaving" Petunia said coming inside the kitchen. " Ohh yeah, we will be leaving soon. How did you sleep?" I asked looking up at him. He was being followed by Lore. " I slept well, how about you?" she asked. " Like a baby, . would you do me a favour and take Lorenzo to his mother. Just to say goodbye" I said smiling. " Don't you think that it's best if you do that?" She asked. " I don't mean to get into your business but maybe you should talk to each other. She's not really a bad person once you

get to know her and I know that you ain't either. For Lorenzo's sake" she said smiling. She then left, I was lost in my thoughts. Lorenzo was trying to get onto the sit, " how about we go and say goodbye to Nina Mom" I said picking him up. " Okay" she said so childishly excited. We walked outside to the bedroom, there were a lot of bodyguards around the premises. We were having a silly conversation while walking there. " Good morning Robinson" I greeted him when we pumped into each at the door. He was wearing his chauffeur uniform. " Good morning ma'am" he said. " Is Nina in?" I asked. " Yes ma'am, she's in her room" he said. " Thanks" I said walking in. I knocked on her door, I've only been there three times " come in" she said loudly. " Hi" I said after opening the door. She was dressing up in her nursing white uniform. " Hi" she said startled. " Mongezi, how are you my baby" he said walking towards us and taking him into her arms. " Nina mom" he said clapping childishly. " You must be surprised to see me here" I said smiling faintly. " Very, come and sit down" she said removing clothes from the messy couch. " Oh no, I'm only here for a

few minutes" I said stopping her. " Ohh" she exclaimed. " What brings you here?" She asked frowning. " As Lorenzo's mom I thought it's only fair that I let you know about our trip to Durban. Lore and I are leaving for a short vacation, we'll be back on Friday evening" I said looking at her, her face sold no expressions out. " Ohh OK." That's all she said. Then there was silence, " I guess this is our goodbye then. I'll leave you two to talk a bit" I said turning on my feet. " There's no need for that, Mongezi and I don't get along that much. He'll start Crying and I'll end up slapping him which I do not want to do. You can take him" she said passing him over to me. " Ohh, OK" I said unbelievably. " I don't mean to meddle in your business but I think you should give him some time, he's not a bad kid. He needs his mother's love and I know that deep down inside you do love him. So why do you keep pushing him away?" I asked. " You don't know what you're talking about, please leave my room." She said pointing out. " Okay, Lorenzo say goodbye to mommy" I said to Lore who was busy playing with my hair. " Bye bye Nina mom" Lore said waving but Nina just walked away. I walked back to

the main house." Watch some cartoons, I'll be back" I said putting him on the couch and opening channel 302. I walked upstairs and found Salvatore dressing up Infront of the mirror. He was wearing golf t-shirt along with the shorts and sneakers. " Going somewhere" I asked hugging him from behind. " I'm meeting up with Mr Khanna and Sokhulu. The investors who pulled out" he said. " I took Lore to say goodbye to Nina" I said letting go of him and walked to the closet to take my hand bag. I came back and put the phone my phone and charger which was on the bedside. The bed was not fixed so I fixed it. " You did" he said after some while. " Yeah, she seems to be drawing herself away from Lore. It's like she's scared she's going to hurt him or something" I said fixing the bed. " I think it's good for her to stay far away. She's not good for him" he said helping me . " She's still his mother, something must have happened to her." I said. " My PI found out that her mother remarried and the new family never accepted her. That's why she was chased away after they found out she was pregnant. Other than that she used to sleep with one of her cousins." He said so

calmly. " And then she met you and you broke her heart" I added. " She was broken before I even got there, she was born bitter and there's nothing you can do to change that. No amount of Affection and love can change her. You gotta give up, somethings can not be fixed" he said. " So her family never accepted Lorenzo?" I asked and he nodded. " Her mother has only met Lore a few times" he said. " I guess I am not the only one you keep your eyes on" I said emotionless. " I should get going, we'll see you on Friday" I said taking my bag and kissing him on the cheek. " Not so fast " he said pulling my by my hand, our bodies collided, " what?" I asked. He answered that with a kiss which left my breathing hitched. " That's how newly weds say goodbye to each other" he said looking down at me. I had a broad silly smile on my face. " Good bye once again Mr Salvatore" I said smiling." I'll see you soon. Even though you're a bad girl who didn't finish her therapy. I still love you" he said making me laugh. " I don't need it anymore, I'm good" I said. " Let me have a word with your bodyguards" he said pushing me outside. He helped me with the suitcase. The

bodyguards loaded them in Trunk of the black AMG black car. When it arrived, I also don't know. One of them was going to drive. Lorenzo and I were sitting in the car while Salvatore was having a word with them. " One last kiss" he said opening the door. I gave him a peck on the lips, Samian and Dumisani are going to change shifts. It'll be Samian during the night and then Dumisani during the day. Call me if you need anything or if something strange happens" he said so formally. " Okay, I'll do that" I said nodding. " Buddy, I'll see you soon" he said and they fist bumped. " See you soon Buddy" Lorenzo said making me smile. He tilted my head around for yet another kiss," I love you" he said in-between the kiss. " I love you too" I said smiling. I could see that he didn't want to let me go. " OK Bye" I said pushing him away gentle and closing the door. " Take good care of my wife and kid " he said to the bodyguards. " Yes sir" they said in unision. " Drive before I change my mind" he said then gritted his teeth. I looked at him through the boot window, he was standing on the same position, with hands on his pockets. I looked until the car drove out the premises. The drive was

filled with silence, the bodyguards hardly ever said a word. Lorenzo and I were watching a movie on Netflix, three hours later he was lying on my lap. I searched for my earphones from my bag and played some music instead of listening to the boring news. I don't know how I fell asleep but when I woke up we were in the township of Kwamashu where Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo was Born and bred. Ma'am, were going to need an address" Samian said or maybe it was Dumisani I don't know. " Take left at the end of the main road" I said, I directed them until we parked Infront of the white painted house. With the most beautiful garden on the front. One of them opened the door and rang the bell after getting out. " Maphumulo home, how can I help you" I heard my dad's voice on the intercom. " Good evening sir, we are here with your daughter. Cora" he said. " What proof do you have?" He asked. He was an ex Cop so him talking like that didn't really surprise me. I walked out, " father, I'm here. Please open the gate" I said. " Ma'am I am going to have to ask you to get back in the car" the one who was speaking to my father said fastly after realizing that I had stepped

out of the vehicle. It was kind of scary, " OK, chill" I said going back in. The gate opened and he drove in. Lore was awake but looking all puzzled, I gotta out of the car and took Lore with me. He was parked Infront of the garage. " Please get me my bags" I said walking inside the house. " Nathi, I wasn't expecting you. What brings you here" Dad asked as soon as I got in. " Good evening to you too Father" I said smiling. " Can't I just come home without any reasons?, This is still my home isn't it?" I asked. " Of course it is, I'm glad you came" he said smiling. " Where's Mom?" I asked putting Lore on the couch. " Work as always" he said sighing

.

I still need comments bakwethu

[6/3, 15:03] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's POV

.

" and you're here alone?" I asked frowning. " You must be wondering how I manage since I am in this chair" he said as if he was reading my mind. " I

thought you had a helper" I said. " Used to, he resigned. Excuse me" he said wheeling himself to the hallway. " Where should we put these ma'am" the bodyguards asked. Leave them Right there, by the door. We might drive out to a near by motel very soon" I said. I walked to the kitchen and God it was a messy mess. The interior design of the kitchen was all white, so you can imagine how dirty it was. The sink was full of dirty dishes. The stove had spots of what seemed like a stew. Anyways I washed the dishes and cleaned. An hour later it was spotless. I then decided to go on and prepare dinner. I made fried rice and Greek salad and fried chicken, I was still cooking when Mom walked in. " Cora?" She called out, got me startled a bit. " Mom, you scared me" I said turning around, she was standing on the door way. " You didn't tell me you're coming" she said looking all shades of surprised but happy. " Good evening to you too Mom" I said smiling and walking towards her. I pulled her in for a hug. " I missed you" I said, she was holding me tightly. " Not more than i missed you...you look so skinny" she commented on my weight loss. I mean who wouldn't

lose weight. " I'm fine mommy, how was your day. You know what, go and take a shower and then come back, we have a lot to catch up on" I said. " Look who's all mature and helpful" she said raising her eyebrows and smiling. " We all have to grow up at some point" I said smiling. " I must say, Alonzo has a good impact on you. Who would have thought that the talkative little devil's rascal would know how to cook one day" she said shaking her head. " Mom, I used to cook back in the days" I said giggling. " Come on, you hardly ever got into the kitchen. The only thing you were good in was making me a nice cup of coffee and boil eggs and that's it" she said. I couldn't help but laugh I went to check on Lore and my phone. I found a lots of missed calls from Alonzo when I checked my phone, tried to call him but he wouldn't pick up. Finally decided to send him an apology text. " I've been meaning to ask you about the two man outside the door" mom said standing behind me. I turned around, " ohh I almost forgot, they're our bodyguards. Don't worry It's nothing serious, just minor safety reasons and to keep the paparazzi away" I said, it took a while for her face to

show that she was convinced. " Where's Dad, we should eat. I don't want to drive out too late" I said walking towards the kitchen to make her coffee. " Drive?, To where?. I thought you'd be staying with us" she said following me around. " There are no rooms here, I'll check in to a motel near by" I said plugging in the kettle. " The twins are not here, you can use Connie's room. After you disappeared we turned your room into Charles but there are still a lot of your stuff there. In the closet, maybe you'd want to check them out. All your teddies and Dolls are still there. I do not expect you to use that room, you'll sleep in Connie's room and that's finally" she said. " Mother I have two men with me, they also need a room to sleep and change. And Lore, don't forget about him" I said sighing. " They'll be sleeping in Charles' room. I'm not letting you go, you finally came home after such a long time" she said. " Okay, fine but I'm not staying for that long. We'll be leaving on Friday evening It's Salvatore's birthday on Saturday so we have to go back home" I said. " That's not a problem as long as you'll be staying here" she said. " And we're going down to the beach tomorrow morning

and on Friday morning" I said, " I guess I'll have to cook for dinner tomorrow" she said sighing so tiredly. " Speaking of that, why was the kitchen in such a mess?" I asked pouring five cups of coffee. " Don't ask me that... Ever since your father's helper left. My life feels like hell, I don't even want to go there." She said then looked up, as if she was trying to hold back tears. " Let's go and have dinner" I said smiling. " Thanks" she said after I gave her her cup of coffee. " There's one for Dad" I said after putting the other two in a small tray.

.

" I've been meaning to ask you this, who's who between the two of you" I asked offering the bodyguards coffee. " I'm Samian and he's Dumisani ma'am" he said. Samian was more taller than Dumisani but they were both tall and dark and hunky " OKAY, and I am Cora. I prefer being called Cora and I've got cups of coffee for you two." I said giving them, " thanks ma'am" Dumisani said but they weren't taking the cups. " Is that a way of you, refusing my coffee. Do you know how much energy

I've put into making these, wait and watch. I'll call my husband and let him know, I wonder what he'd say or do to you. After his wife slaved away and made you a cup of coffee, you refused them. You know I Hardly cook back home and here i was trying to be nice to you but you just bluntly refused me." I said a little bit louder. " We will take the cups ma'am. No need to call Sir" Samian said, swallowing a lump it seemed. " Good...I wasn't really going to call my husband you know. Loosen up a bit, you two look like robots and yeah you'll be sleeping in one of the rooms here. I'll serve you dinner in an hour. Don't try to refuse me" I said smiling, I then walked back inside. I found my parents and Lore already eating, " Lore, you're awake?" I asked sitting down. " I want my Papa, mommy" he said extending his arms for me to pick him up. I took him and put him on a sit next to me. He was sitting on my mother's lap, " you want to go back home?" I asked pouting. He nodded as if he wanted to cry. " We will go back home soon, you must have your dinner first" I said, he nodded. I dished up for the two of us in one plate. " Are you in some kind of trouble, why do you have two

bodyguards with you?" Father asked. " It's nothing serious"that's all I said. " Your husband must be rich to have hired bodyguards. What am I even saying, the house you live in speaks volumes" he said, I somehow didn't like his statement. I just faked a smile, " how many businesses does he own vele?" He asked. " If I had to go on and count them I'm sure my food would get cold. Let's just say many" I said. " By the way, what made your helper to resign. If I may ask" I asked anyways. " I never knew the exact reason but he once said that your father is rude and I personally don't blame the poor guy. Your father can be such a nuisance sometimes. No, not sometimes. I meant everyday, if I wasn't married to him. I would have resigned a long time ago." Mommy said, I laughed because I thought she was joking but the atmosphere around the table said otherwise. " Thula mongenanto ephusile ozoyisho" father said angrily. " Ohh please, you're such a nuisance of a man. Always complaining, I have to put food on the table and still take care of the house and then you. On top of that I have to listen to your whines, I'm tired Maphumulo. It's tiring and frustrating." She snapped, a few years

ago she wouldn't have done that. She would have got a tight slap by now, she would be on the floor right now. Crying and screaming for help, I would be in the corner of the room, shaking. Connie and Charles somewhere in the house. Watching them argue like that reminded me of that unforgettable past. " I'll be in the room" I said picking up Lore and the plate of food. " Cora I..." She had to say. " Nathi" father said, I walked to Connie's room which seemed to be more clean than the rest of the house. I put Lore on the small bed, It was much much smaller than the King size bed I had gotten used to. But it was going to fit us perfectly. " Mom... Why was your mother shouting at your Father?" Lore asked as we were eating. " They're not, that's the way they play. Don't mind them" I said faking a smile. " Have you ever been to the beach" I asked diverting the topic. " What's that Mom?" He asked. " You'll see, we will go there tomorrow. But we will start by buying a lots of chocolates and chips and then go down to the beach. We will have to go see the sharks too" I said. " A real shark" he asked and I nodded. " Yey, mom do you know Zig and sharko..." We kept on talking, him

asking me childish questions. I bathe him first after serving the bodyguards, I took a bath later on. " Papa called" he said as I got out of the bathroom. He was sitting on the bed, playing games on my phone. " I picked up, are you also playing the same game your mother and Papa are playing?" He asked. " What game?" I asked frowning. " The shouting game, Papa was also shouting" he said. " Ohh that game, I guess we are. Get undercovers and sleep. Your bed time is way over" I said. " Bed time story mommy" he said getting undercovers excitedly. " Ohh no, I forgot your books at home" I exclaimed remembering. " but Mom" he said, in verge of tears. " Grown ups don't cry, you're grown ain't you?" I asked and he nodded. " Good... I'll download it online and read it to you" I said moisturizing my body, I went to the bathroom and put on my PJs and gown. " Would you like the princess and her night and shining armor or the Stars tonight?" I asked after downloading two of one of his favourite short bedtime story books for kids. " The stars tonight" he said smiling. " Okay, once upon a time. There was once a Star guardian angel and... " I to him until he fell asleep. I went and peed in the

bathroom, came back and locked the door and got undercovers. I took my phone and called Alonzo, he picked up at first ring but said nothing. " Alonzo?... I'm sorry, I should have called you and told you, we arrived safely. It's just that I found the house so messed up mess and then I had to cook dinner. My cellphone was not with me the entire time. I'm sorry" I said. " What about an hour ago then?" He asked." I was in the bathroom that's why Lore answered and then I had to put him to sleep" I said. " Are you okay, I miss you already. How did your meeting go?" I asked All at once. " The meeting was a success, my investors are back on. It's fixed, that interview is doing wonders." He said, " thank God, I was really feeling guilty. We should celebrate when I come back. How about the shares and clients?" I asked. " We're getting there Cora, enough about business. How are you and how is my son?. Are they treating you well there?, If they're not then just say the word and I'll come running to get you back home" he said. " We're good, we had dinner and he's is sleeping. We're in bed, it's raining outside. Kind of cold" I said. " Are they treating you well?" He asked once again. "

Yeah, i guess so. It's strange to be sleeping here after so many years. I am kind of scared and reminded of some things I don't want to remember" I said, my brain rushing back to the earlier on argument." what happened, did he try anything on you. If he did, I swear I am not going to spare that son of a bitch" he said loudly enough to bring me back to planet earth. " No no, it's nothing like that. He wouldn't, it's just that they had a small quarrel which reminded me of the times when he used to beat her up and I'd be in the corner of my room, folded together. He was diagnosed with schizophrenia, he is fine now. Besides that, he's in the wheelchair. Totally harmless" I said sighing heavily. " You don't have to stay there you know, you could just come back home" he said sounding so worried. " That place holds many unpleasant memories for you, being there is like reliving them once again" he added. " Maybe that's what I need...to look back into my past. So that I can move forward freely. I need to face my fears and demons. I want to start afresh, with you. But for me to do that I'll have to look back. My therapist said that it's okay to be scared, she also

said that our past is what Mould our future and us. I'll take this as looking at myself" I said. " If that's what you want then go for it" he said. " The bed feels so cold and huge without you Mrs Me" he said, making me smile. " It hardly been one night and you're already crying" I said chuckling. " I can't spend a minute without you, let alone the whole night" he said. " I didn't know that I got married to such a charmer poetic man" I said giggling. " For you, I can be anything in this world" he said. " Stop being such a flirt, you're making it hard to me to not fall in love with you over and over again" I said blushing, he just laughed. " Look who's poetic now" he said. " I can't wait for you to come back home, we miss you here" he said. " Who's we?" I asked. " Me and your giant cucumber down there...just by hearing your giggles he has turned hard on" he said, " that's a flat lie" I said unbelievably. " I can snapshot it for you, just to give you proof" he said. " Ummh...I dare you to?" I said frowning" you asked for it, I'll hang up" he said then hung up before I could say a thing and then a message alerted. I checked it out, he wasn't lying after all. He called while I was looking at it. " Are you

by any chance trying to arouse me?" I asked. " How do you like you evidence" he asked chuckling. " It's umhh, It looks like I'll have to do some lab tests and confirm if this is really or Photoshopped" I said clearing my throat. He just laughed. " I need those lab results within the next two minutes Dr Salvatore" he said...we talked till, till I can't remember. He was the only kind of guy who could and would entertain my insanity and child like behavior. Every second spent with him was worth it. He made me laugh, blush, giggling, chuckle and smile. In my eyes, he was beyond perfect.

.

It'll be longer tomorrow, nyt

[6/3, 15:03] Lynne: Page 69

Cora's POV

.

I was woken up by Lore around 6am. " What is it?" I asked rubbing my eyes and yawning. " I want to wee mommy" he said. " I got out of bed and open the bathroom door, " go in" I said turning on the lights.

He ran in and peed. I threw myself back in bed. I was feeling so sleepy, Salvatore and I talked till the morning. " Mom I am hungry" Lore said after coming back from the bathroom. " Let's go and check there's any breakfast" I said dragging myself off the bed. I unlocked the door and got out, he was following me to the kitchen. I checked the shelves for any kind of cereal, anything fast but there was nothing in there. " Tell you what, we will go and eat out. Have this" I said offering him a plum. He took it but I could see that he didn't want it. " Let's go and have a bath" I said pulling him towards the room. The house was quite quiet, anyways I bathe Lore and dressed him up. I turned on

On the television for him while I took the bath. I finished up and wore my White short which was mid-thigh long, a white vest and white Nike sneakers. Then threw on my knitted light sweeter which was designed in an overcoat way, opened. It was just above my knees in length. I tied my hair Into a neat pony tail. No make up applied, I packed my Lorenzo's small bag, just in case he needed to

change. I put on my glasses and took the bags out. " Ohh you're awake" I said upon seeing mom on the hallway. " I've been up for almost two hours now, how did you sleep?" She asked tying up her gown. " We slept well even though I only slept for like 4 hours" I said as we were walking towards the kitchen. " What happened?...let me guess, you must've been talking to your husband" she said, I shrugged my shoulders. " I never thought that I'd witness the day where by you'd fallen so madly in love" she said. " Why was that, if I may ask" I asked. " You never liked boys" she said. " But I had a friend, who was a boy" I said frowning. " Forget it, I have no energy to argue with you" she said yawning. " Don't you have to be at work?" I asked checking time on my wrist watch. " I have a nightshift today" she said. " Oh OK, I'm taking my son out for breakfast since you guys don't have any breakfast in the house" I said. " I'll have to drive to the nearest spaza shop to buy some bread, your father has been nagging me for the past two hours. He's always hungry, all he does is eat and eat. I'm still surprised as to how he doesn't get fat from all the eating" she said looking so frustrated. " Take it

easy, he's still your husband and please try to keep your arguments more private. I don't want my son to witness all of this... whatever it is" I said solemnly. " How do you do it?" She asked, " " do what?" I asked so confused. " Never mind, Lorenzo must be starving. Go" she said smiling. I nodded weirdly. " Maybe you can join us after you're done with whatever you are doing. We could spend some proper time together, who knows maybe you'll end up telling me about Whatever it is that's frustrating you" I said smiling. " Maybe" she said. " OK, I love you bye" I said kissing her cheek. " Cora... I'll call you if I'd be able to make it" she added. I nodded. " Let's go, baby Lore" I said taking the bags and he followed me. The door was unlocked and the Samian was standing by the door as I opened up. They must have changed shifts around 5 Am. Dumisani must've gone to sleep " Good morning Sam, we're going to the mall. Do you mind driving us there" I asked smiling slightly. " Good morning ma'am, I'll take you wherever you want to go" he said. We walked to the car and he opened the door for us. I put the bags in first and then Lore and then I got out then remembered that the gate was

locked. " Shoot!, I'll go and get the remote control" I said opening the door. I did just that and we drove out. We went to the mall, I did a little bit of shopping. Okay maybe a lot, I bought groceries and snacks to eat at the beach. I packed those in a basket, bought a big umbrella and a blanket. " Take us to uShaka Marine world" I said as we got into the car after loading in the groceries." Yes ma'am" he said then drove off. We were going to have breakfast there in the boat and then go down to the beach. " Mom, are we going to see sharks" he asked excited. His white t-shirt had a stain of the juice he was drinking already. " Would you like that" I asked pulling his cheeks. He smiled and nodded. " We will go and see the sharks then" I said. We got there 30 minutes later. He parked in the parking lot and we got out. I took my handbag and Lore's bag and asked him to carry our basket and umbrella . Held Lorenzo's hand and we walked to the restaurant. " Join us for breakfast, I'm sure you are hungry" I said as we were occupying a table. " No thanks, I had tea earlier on" he said. " I insist" I said. " No thanks ma'am" he said. " OK, suite yourself" I said, we order full English

breakfast. Lorenzo was sitting opposite to me, I took out my phone " say good morning Papa" I said making a video. " Good morning Papa, I'm having breakfast. We're going to see sharko soon" he said waving and i sent the vid to Salvatore who called instantly. " You guys seem to be having the time of your lives" that's the first thing he said. " It's nothing, he's just excited to finally get to see the sharks. Good morning by the way" I said smiling. " Good morning Mrs AJ Salvatore" he said. " What are you doing there" I asked, " I'm in the office, doing some paper work" he said. " Which office" I asked. " Ohh, hotel Paradisé. I miss you" he said. " But we're talking" I said. " I'm miss your flesh and blood and bone" he said. " I wish I could say the same but nah I don't miss you one bit" I said, " ouch!, Ain't I loved anymore?" He asked. " You're more than just loved, just not missed yet" I said chuckling. " At least there's a YET" he said. " Look, I have another incoming call, let's talk a bit later" I said. " I love you" he said. " I know, Bye" I said then Hung up. I answered the call, it was mom. " Where do I find you?" She asked. " We're at uShaka Marine world, in

a restaurant in the old boat." I said. " Okay, I'll be there in an hour" she said then hung up on me. " Your grandmother is on his way here, isn't that just great?" I asked putting the phone on the table. His face had sauce on it. " She mustn't eat my sweets, I won't share my snacks with her" he said. " And why is that?" I asked smiling. " I don't like her, she doesn't give me any sweets. I like great grandma and Nina mom's mom. They give me a lot of chocolates" he said, " your teeth are gonna get spoiled, you like sweets way too much. We're going to have to cut the amount of sweets you eat." I said. " But Mom" he said, sulking. " No buts, you're going to thank me later. You don't want to lose your teeth now, do you?" I asked and he shook his no. " Good, I don't want you growing up toothless. Your friends are going to make fun of you. " I said, he looked so sad. " But we can compromise for today, you'll have as many sweets as you want and then we'll go and see the sharks down the boat. " I said, he smiled a bit and got excited once again. We were having dessert when Mom arrived. " I'm so fermished" she said sitting down like a person who has been tired for

days. " I figured I should order you breakfast. It'll be here any minute from now on, Lore can't wait any longer" I said. " I thought you'd come with Dad" I said frowning. " A wheelchair in here?" she said eyebrows raised. " Your order ma'am" the waitress said putting the plate Infront of me. I shifted it to mother and continued eating my Malva pudding. " I'd like to have a cup of cappuccino" Mom said, " coming right through ma'am" the waitress said." Don't you find it weird to have a person always following you around. These guys are scary and always quiet" she said digging in. " I'll get used to it, when are the twins coming back home" I asked. " Charles usually comes back every weekend, Connie used to be she suddenly stopped. Which makes me suspect that she's seeing someone." She said, " is it?, I would have loved to see them before I returned to Jo'burg. I guess I'll see them on June holidays because I'll be going to Paris for our honeymoon this Easter" I said. " At least you gonna get a break, rewind a bit. Some of us will always be stuck in here. I don't even get to eat in these Kinds of restaurants." She said, seemingly far away from planet earth. " What's going

on Mom?" I asked putting my hand on top of her's. " It's nothing serious, I don't want to bother you" she said faking a smile. " You're my mother, Sharing your problems with me won't be bothering me. Tell me, what happened?" I asked concerned. " It's just minor financial difficulties, I'll manage" she said. " I'm sure it's not just that, there's more to this than what you're saying. Tell me" I said, pushing. " Let's talk about this down the beach, I just want to have my scrumptious breakfast in peace" she said faking a smile once again. " OK" I said nodding slowly. Anyways, she finished her breakfast and we went to watch the sea animals in their tanks after buying the tickets. We even watched dolphins and penguins, seal and other animals. We took a lots of pictures and videos. Lorenzo was so happy but sometimes scared of other animals. We had a great time.

.

" So?, What's eating you up" I asked frowning. We were sitting under the huge umbrella I had bought. On top of the shawl Lorenzo was playing with the sand, he had headphones on. Listening to music on

my iPod. The basket was in-between us. I was lying on my back and mom was sitting upright. " I don't know where to start Cora" she said sighing. " Start from the beginning" up said smiling at her. " There's no beginning to this, that's the problem" she said, I was confused. " I hate my husband Cora" she said sighing. " I used to feel sorry for him over the years but somewhere. Deep down inside I knew it was coming. The hatred for him was building up and it finally took over. When ever I look at him I feel so disgusted, I could just strangle him to death. I sometimes slap him" she said sighing heavily. " Does that make me a bad person?" She asked. I was confused and clueless. I couldn't answer that. " Why, is it because he used to beat you up?" I asked sitting upright. " I could have taken that Cora, I took it like a strong woman. He ruined your life, who does that to their own daughter. You're constantly reminded of your past, you almost died. He's a monster" she said. " You've always known this fact, what Changed now" I asked. " After the news got out, after Salvatore told me that tried to kill yourself. I made a vow to my sister, your mother that I'd take good care of you and

I failed. Dismally and he's the reason for that. I guess I've finally exploded." she said. " Why don't you divorce him then" I asked. " I can't, no I guess I can but something inside me still want to see him suffer...besides that, where the divorce. What about Connie and Charles, they still need us. They need both their parents, his disability grant helps us get through the month. Even though they hardly talk to him. I think they hate him as much as I do" she said. " What good would hating him bring you?, It's like you're punishing yourself for somebody else's sins. I'm fine now, I forgave him and I think it's about time you did that too. Maybe you should see a psychiatrist and talk about this. You never got professional help regarding all the abuse he put you through. You should see one before it's too late, before you turn into your own worst enemy." I said holding her hand. She blinked a couple of times, trying to hold back the tears. " Am I a bad person?" She asked once again. " I don't blame you for hating your husband, he was a monster. Our worst nightmare But you gotta let it go now. You're a great human being Mom." I said. " If you managed to

forgive him so easily, why can't I. Your abuse was worse than mine" would I go after she said. " Just because I forgave him doesn't mean that I forgot, we're unique in our own special way. I easily forgive...I know that you'll eventually forgive him. Try to be happy, do it for yourself. Set yourself free, it won't be easy but trust me. It'll be worth it" I said smiling, she smiled a bit. " Don't the twins have a scholarship?" I asked frowning. " Connie does but Charles didn't get it, I pay for his fees plus I have to buy groceries and gasoline monthly. It's a lot to handle, we use his money to pay for the car's instalment. " She said then sighed softly. " Maybe I can send you money to buy groceries monthly... I'll do that" I said after thinking about it thoroughly. I could have asked Salvatore to finish the installment but I couldn't. I didn't want to be that kind of woman. I was going to use my own money to buy groceries for my parents. " I'd appreciate that, thank you" she said, I thought she'd refused. Things must've been really tough. " How did you manage to pay to pay for Father's caretaker?" I asked. " I cut the twins allowance into half." She said. " Ain't you going to

search for a new caretaker?" I asked frowning. " Since he left, the financial stress has been reduced a bit but then I have to get everything prepared for your father before going to work. Like today, I hardly get time off." She said. " How much did a caretaker cost?" I asked. " We paid him 4 thousand rands monthly" she said. " How about you search for a new caretaker, I'll pay for him" I suggested. " You buying us groceries is already too much. No I'll manage, we'll be fine" she said. " You're my parents, I insist. If I do this then it'll be easy for you to pay for the car and school fees. Maybe you could also buy yourself new clothes. Enjoy your hard earned money." I said. She didn't say anything about it, just smiled faintly. " I'm hungry, let's eat" I said opening the basket. We had our picnic, played with the sand, built sandcastles. It was great, I was happy to see Lore happy. Mom left a little early because she had to go to work, we passed by steers in town and had dinner, I finally managed to make Samian have something to eat. Hunger was playing games with him. Bought a takeaway for Dad and Dumisani then we went back home. Got there around noon, Dad was watching a

soccer game. " Look what we got you" I said waving the brown bag Infront of him. He smiled a bit. " Thank you" he said as I gave him the bag. " I bought you guys some grocery, I hope my sense of shopping is common with yours" I said as the bodyguards kept on coming in with groceries. " As long as there's wors, konke kuhamba kahle" he said. " There's a lot of meat" I said chuckling. " Lorenzo let's go and take a shower" I said picking him up. " Mom, I'm still watching football with your father" he said, trying to protest. " Since when do you watch football?" I asked eyebrows raised. " Papa and I watched football mom, when you are working" he said as we were walking in the hallway. " On week days?." I asked and he nodded. " Ohh, isn't it fancy of you to call it football. This is South Africa, it's called soccer" I said. " Dad said it's football" he said. " Call it whatever you like but you're going to take a bath right now" I said undressing him. " But mommy" he whined. " Do you want me to call your Papa and tell him that you don't want to take a bath?" I asked threatening him. " Good, now take off your trousers and I'll run water for you" i said after he shook his

head no. I bathe him and dressed him up in his warm PJs and then I took a shower, dressed up into my PJs too then put on my long white gown. It was 7:30, Lore went back to the sitting room to watch football as soon as I was done with dressing him up. I decided to video call my husband. He picked up after a few missed calls. " You call this calling me a bit later?" He asked, looking so angry. " Isn't it a bit later?" I asked, " don't fuck with me Cora" he said so angrily. " Who should I fuck with then if not you? I asked smiling at him. He just chuckled unbelievably, then he clenched his jaws. " OK I'm sorry, I lost track of time." I said but he just stared at me. " Baby wami, I'm sorry" I said pouting. " You seem to be too busy down there. That's why you couldn't even say ' I love you' back. Since when do you say ' I know' huh." He said, looking furious. " You can't be serious right now" I said. " I'm busy too, Bye" he said then hung up on me. " Ohh, really now?" I said to myself unbelievably. I chuckled a bit, I wasn't going to entertain that. I took my phone then went to join the soccer watcher. I found Lorenzo and his grandpa talking about the game, as if Lorenzo understood.

They were talking about free kicks, off sides and what not. I set on the smaller couch and WhatsApped with Amanda. I told her about Alonzo's drama and she told me about man's insecurities and possessions. She told me to call him back and apologise, I wasn't about to succumb to his drama. I had apologised already. What more did he want from me?. We went to sleep around 9pm. He had ordered the bodyguard to stand outside my door and Dumisani did just that. I woke up around 6 am went to the kitchen to make breakfast for everyone. Mom must've been tired after working a nightshift. I made scrambled eggs, fried some wors a beef. Toasted bread. I put the breakfast on the table and called everyone, including the bodyguards. We had breakfast together. " We're going to miss you Nathi" Dad said as we were eating. " I'll be leaving in the afternoon, save the speeches for later" I said smiling, he just laughed. " Mom, nightshift again?" I asked. She nodded, she had been quiet ever since she woke up. " Can't you stay a little longer?" She finally asked. " I can't, is that why you're so gloomy" I asked. " It's nice having you around" she said shrugging her

shoulder. " I'll visit some other time, and overstay my welcome until you kick me out" I said smiling. " You're just saying that to make me feel better" she said Looking so sad. " Okay maybe I did, but please stop looking so sad as if I'm dying. Dad please tell your wife to smile a bit. She's making my breakfast taste so bitter" I said smiling at her.

.

Lorenzo and I went down the beach again, I was wearing a swimming costume and he was wearing summer shorts. He was in my arms, so scared of the waves. I was standing in the water, the waves reached my waist. " Mommy, let's get out" he said, almost in tears. " Are you scared, a whole grown up man like you" I said giggling. " Mom the sharks will eat us" he said holding on to my neck, his eyes closed. " There are no sharks here, open up your eyes and look. It's beautiful" I said smiling, he just shook his head. " Ohh, here comes a shark" I screamed and he opened his eyes instantly and cried, screamed. " Mommy" he screamed looking around. He was seriously crying. " Don't cry, I was

kidding. There are no sharks here" I said walking out. He was holding on to me for his dear life. We went to sit under Our umbrella." Look, we're out now, you can relax" I said pulling him away from me. He looked around. " I'm going to tell my Papa" he said, catching a hiccup. " Ohh, I'm sorry baby. Here, drink up" I said wiping off his tears and giving him a bottle of juice. " Do you want your yogurt" I asked opening the basket. He nodded, " I'm sorry, you don't have to be scared now" I said smiling at him. " Zee, is that you?" I heard somebody ask. I didn't dare to look, there are many Zee's around the world. ' he must be referring to someone else' my inner self said. " Zabenathi Maphumulo is that you" he said once again, got my attention that time. I turned to look, " it's really you" he said. I looked at him for a while then recognized his face. " Senzo?" I asked standing up. he rushed to me, he was about to hug me but Samian pulled him away with such a swift. " Stay away Sir" he said. " What the fuck? Who are you?" He asked Angrily. " I'm not going to ask you again!" Samian said calmly. " Sam, it's okay. I know him. He's an old friend of mine" I said trying to walk towards him but Sam held

me back. " Ma'am Sir gave me directly instructions to not let you talk with strangers. He might be an accomplice" he said. " Senzo would never do that and I do not appreciate you holding me like that. Your Boss can not control who I get to talk with. I am a kid" I said angrily. " Ma'am I am only doing my Job" he said still standing in between us. " It's my life" I said angrily. He took out his phone walked a few steps back. " Who's that guy" he asked me. We were still standing apart. " You can talk but no touching" he said walking back. He must have been talking to Salvatore. I was so angry. I took a deep breath. " Mom, I'm hungry" Lore said holding my hand. " Come and join us" I said to senzo. We set under the umbrella, I gave Lore a piece of pizza we had bought on our way there. " How have you been holding up?" I asked senzo who was quiet all of a sudden. Detecting my every move. " You Have a kid?" He asked looking at Lore who was standing on the sand, dipping his feet in. " Yeah" I said looking at Lore and smiling. " And married too" I added. " I saw the news" he said, did he really have to say that. Senzo was my close friend, we became friends on the 8th grade.

Other than that we were good neighbors. Well I kind of friendzoned him, even though I liked him. He was my first crush, and I shared my first kiss with him when we were twelve years old. It was evening, we were watching a movie at his parent's house. It was a Sunday morning, our parents were at church and his mother had asked me to stay with him because he had flue. I missed my Sunday service and stayed him. We were watching a movie, being young and inquisitive we wondered how it felt like to kiss and we did it. My heart skipped a bit. " Ohh, you did" I said chuckling weirdly. " You look more beautiful than when you were sixteen" he said. " You don't look bad yourself" I said smiling, he was light skinned,His lower lip cherry red. He now had a six-pack. Though he was still slender built and tall. " I try" he said so cheesy. " What are you doing here?" He asked. " I'm taking a break" I said shrugging. " Trouble in paradise?" He asked. " Oh no, no. I just needed to get out the city. Plus I missed my parents" I said, eyes popped. " You don't know how trouble in your Paradisé would bring joy to me. Plus you still owe me a date" he said. " We were supposed to go

on a date the day after you disappeared" he said. " That was four years ago, I'm sure you found yourself a good girlfriend now" I said chuckling. " Not as good as you" he said so serious, and I saw hurt in his eyes as they drew me in. " You're still a flirt" I said after that weird moment. He cleared his throat, " gotcha, did I scare you" he said giggling, which somehow felt fake. " Thank God" I said holding my chest. " So you're doing your third year in gynaecology?" He asked, I nodded looking down. I knew that he knew already so..." at least you got to fulfill your dreams" he said smiling. " You must be doing your an engineer by now" I said, he looked away then looked back at me. " I'm a teacher now" he said. " Ohh, I'm sorry. What happened?" I asked. " A lot of things happened after you left Zee but I am not there. Teaching is not so bad after all, I teach in our high school" he said sighing softly. " At least you went to university" I said smiling. " I saw you married one of the richest man in the country" he said, " I hope he's treating you well, he makes you happy" he added. " He adores me and I adore him. We're happy" I said avoiding his gaze. " Anyways I am going back home,

I should get going" I said and then my phone rang. I took it out and answered. It was American Swiss. " Ma'am your order is ready, you can come and pick it up" a woman said on the other side. " OK thanks, I'll be there in an hour or two" I said then hung up. " Are you by any chance running away from me" he asked. " Of course not, we were about to leave anyways, I don't want to come home late. It's my husband's birthday tomorrow" I said putting on my long see through shirt. " Is it?" He asked unbelievably. " Yeah, I'm going to fetch his gift right now" I said putting my bags and basket aside. He stood up and I undusted the shawl. " I'm coming with you" he said. " No, I'll manage" I said fastly. " I'm coming with you, I haven't seen you for years and now that I finally do, you're running away from me" he said. " I'm not running away" I said folding the shawl and putting it inside the basket. " Give me your number then" he said. " You don't even have a phone with you" I said folding the umbrella. " Just say it, I have my head with me" he said. I gave it to him " Lore, Let's go" I said, he came to me and I picked him up. " Let me help you with that" he said taking the basket and

umbrella and my handbag. " You're still a pest Senzo" I said chuckling. " Not more than you though" he said. " I'm not like that anymore, People change" I said solemnly. " Not that much, I still see the things I used to see in you years ago" he said. I didn't bother asking what, the conversation was deep enough to give me a heart attack. " Thank you" I said after putting the stuff and Lore inside the car. The bodyguard was standing right next to me. " I'll be right behind you" he said, " that's my car" he added pointing out at a red convertible BMW. " Bye" I said getting inside the car. Samian closed the door for me and got into the drivers side. " Take me to the mall please and then to my parent's house after that" I said leaning backwards and closing my eyes. " Mom, why are you smiling" Lore asked. " I am not smiling" I said looking at him. " Yes you're" he insisted. " No I am not" I protested. " Yes you're" he insisted. " Did not" I said. " Did do" he said. " Did not" I said. " Did do" he said giggling. We kept on arguing until I laughed. " Okay you got me, you win. I smiled" I gave in. " Gotcha" he said pulling my cheek. " Ouch" I screamed whining, he laughed even more. I took

Lorenzo out and we walked to the shop, got my order. I did see Senzo anywhere around. Anyway Samian drove me home. I bathed Lore first and dressed him up in his white t-shirt along with his white jeans and sneakers. I then wore my white shorts and a vest and then my sleepers. Applied my make up thoroughly, packed our bags. Three hours later I was done. It was almost 4pm. Ever since the night before I received no call from Salvatore and it hurt a lot. I missed him. "Dad we're leaving. Tell Mom I said goodbye" I said hugging him. He was sitting on the couch. "Take care of yourself" he said. "If you do the same too, I will. I'll see you soon" I said pulling out of the hug. "Drive safely and call me when you get there" he said. "I will, and try not to fight with Mom. She's trying" I said seriously, he nodded. "Okay then, I'm gone" I said sighing. "Lorenzo let's go" I called out. She was somewhere in the house. "I'm coming mommy" he said then came out of the kitchen with chocolate bars. "Lorenzo!" I exclaimed smiling. "These are mine" he said, "how did you reach up?" I asked. "I climbed on the chair" he said I just shook my head.

.

" Where are we going exactly?" I asked upon seeing the car take a different route from which we came by.

" Mr Salvatore sent us to pick up something for him by the sea side" Sam said. " Try to drive a little bit faster then, I don't want to get home in the middle of the night" I said. " Yes ma'am" Dumisani said. He parked Infront of the Durban boat harbour. " Hurry up guys" I said looking at the time it was 5:30 pm, the sun was setting. " Ma'am, he said you must be the one to pick it up, you'll have to come with us" he said opening the door for me. " What new drama is this" I said getting out of the car. Lorenzo followed up, I picked him up. Dumisani lead the way while Samian followed behind after locking the door. He got into some white yacht and helped me up. We walked inside, taking a few steps down. It was beautiful inside, it looked like a house, I swear. " Where's the parcel?" I asked, kind of irritated. " You made it" Salvatore said suddenly emerging from one of the doors. " I thought you said, ohh I see. This was your idea" I said sighing after getting it. " You can get their

bags" he said to Sam and Dumi. They left, " Papa" Lore kept on saying while extending his hands. I put him down and he ran to Salvatore, who picked him up. " What's going on?" I asked walking around, checking out the yacht. There was a kitchen and a dining room. And a wine sailor, " he was following me around, I took the staircases which led me to another sitting room which unlike the top one had a huge television and a a glass in the center, I could see the fish. There were three bedrooms down there. Each with a bathroom, " it's amazing isn't it" he asked. I've never been there before, although he had talked about having a yacht but he never took me there. I looked at him, arms folded around my chest. " It's fine" I said looking at him, something was off. " What are we exactly doing here?" I asked. " Taking a family vacation" he said, as if everything was fine " ohhk, I'm going to change into my PJs and go to sleep" I said walking upstairs where I found our bags in the middle of the room. I took 'em and went downstairs. " I put Lorenzo's bags into on of the rooms and mine into what seemed like the main bedroom. I changed into my Pyjama shorts brushed

my teeth and washed off the makeup. I went take Lore's PJs, came back to the sitting room where they were watching television. Cartoons to be exact. " Come and change your clothes" I said to Lore, "Papa will change my clothes" he said leaning on his father's chest. " OK, here are your PJs. Make sure to brush up your teeth before going to sleep. Good night" I said. " Are you going to bed so early?" Salvatore asked. " I'm tired" I said walking away. He didn't say anything after that. I got undercovers, it was a little bit cold. I kept on turning and tossing around the bed. I couldn't sleep, I played a game on my phone. He came in two hours later, I noticed. He took off his clothes and went into the bathroom. He came out with a towel wrapped around his waist 15minutes later. He moisturized his body Infront of the wardroom mirror, took out his boxer. Dropped down the towel and dressed up. He came into bed and layed down. " Can we talk?" I said after I while of watching his every move. " I thought you wanted to go to sleep, ain't you tired anymore?" He asked still laying down, his back on me. " What's going on here?" I asked, " shouldn't I be asking you that" he

said. " At least look at me when you are talking to me" I said so frustrated. He set up right, " happy now?" He asked. I just chuckled angrily, " what's going on with you, why are you acting up so coldly." I asked. " The only thing that is going to get cold is the body of that boy you were flirting with on the beach. I hope he likes the mortuary" he said through gritted teeth. " What are you saying, what have you done to him?" I asked, really scared and worried. " I haven't killed him yet but trust me if I ever see you near him. I will be forced to give you his brain sample" he said, so coldly. " What's wrong with you, he's my friend." I said so upset. " He's your ex boyfriend or maybe I'm wrong" he said. " What are you implying here?. Whatever it is that you want to say, Just say it. Stop speaking in riddles. First you hang up on me, so angrily. And now this?" I said furious. " You expect me to smile about it? Who knows what else you did with that boy" he said. " That's it, I've heard enough." I said getting out of bed. " Where do you think you're going Cora?" He asked getting out of bed too. " I'm going to sleep in another room" I said walking towards the door but he got there first and locked in.

" Get back in bed, you said you wanted to talk. We will talk sweetheart" he said. " If you Know what's good for you, you will get under those covers" he said warningly. I went back in bed, he wasn't anywhere near kidding. " Now, I'm going to ask questions and you will answer each and every one of them" he said getting undercovers. " What relationship do you share with that boy" he asked. " Why are you asking me, since you already have the answers built-up in your head. what's the use of asking me" I said looking at me. " Are you going to answer my question or not?" he asked. " He's my long lost friend" I said shortly. " Is that it, anything else you want to add?" He asked. " You must have done a background check on him, what is it with the 21questions" I asked. " I want to hear the truth from you Cora" he snapped, hitting the bed. I was startled a bit. " Fine I'll tell you, he was more than just a friendly. We used to kiss whenever we got a chance. He was my first crush, he was the one I thought I'd end up with. Perfect in every possible way, I think I loved him at some Point. We were going to go on our first date the day following of my disappearance.

He was the only one who knew the truth about my father. Are you happy now?" I asked after snapping. "Do you still love him?" He asked after some time of total silence. "Of course not" I said. "You're lying to me" he said raising up my face using his index finger. "I don't love him, yes I like him but I don't love him. I only love you" I said looking him in the eyes. "Is he the reason why you wasn't picking up my calls and you called me later and you didn't say you love me back and you haven't called me the whole day" he asked. "What are you saying, I only met him a few hours ago. I didn't know that me saying 'I know' would be so much of an issue. And I've already apologized for calling you more later. I lost track of time while catching up with my mother." I said, he got closer to me and started kissing me. I didn't respond, he looked me and kissed me again. I kissed him back, we ended up making love. Even though it was strange.

.

"I got my gift" he said coming out of the yacht, to the yacht top where I was standing. Just looking

deep into the sea and other yachts and boats and cruises. I had left the box in the on the bed while he was taking a shower. " Happy birthday" I said turning around, he was still walking towards me. He picked me up and spinned me around, I couldn't help but giggled. " Are you sure you're ready" he said kissing me all over the face. I nodded, " we could start right away" he said. I just chuckled a bit. " We're going to make babies" he screamed holding me tightly. " I am sorry for what I said yesterday" he said holding my face on both sides. " Jealousy got the best of me, I'm sorry" he said once again. I nodded smiling. I gifted him with a watch written ' let's have babies'

[6/3, 15:03] Lynne: Page 70

Cora's POV

.

I've was sitting on the roof top since I can't remember, I was wearing my panties and his shirt. I was laying on one of the couches there under the shade, where the steering wheel was. Salvatore walked in and set on the couch over my head, I

wasn't looking but I felt his presence. His Cologne sold him away. We had cut the cake and sang for him, just the three of us. " You OK?" He asked putting my head on his lap, I moved to lie comfortably. " Yeah I'm good" I said opening my eyes. " You don't look OK to me" he said. " I can't help it if you don't believe me" I said sighing softly and closing my eyes once again. The last time I saw Lore was in the 2nd sitting room, playing a video game with his papa. " The police have arrested the Don's man, it's still undercover news but—..." And him?" I asked sitting upright fastly. " Somehow he fled, they're still investigating" he said. " He fled?, Where to. Is that even a good thing for us?. Are we safe?" I asked feeling so scared and agitated. " I don't have much answers yet, we'll just have to be ready. Retrieving a man of his livelihood is like poking a snake in it hole. He will come back and attack again, much stronger than before. That's why I can't keep any of you out my site. He'll probably stay low for a couple of weeks or months but I know for a fact that he'll attack back" he said, not so helping at all, he explained it so darkly but yet so clearly. He scared

me even more, " what about the girls, his department?" I asked. " They are under police custody, his man are being questioned. A lot of his criminal records are resurfacing" he said. " He should be in jail, SA police are so useless. I shouldn't have trusted them. My life is more in danger now" I said so frustrated. " Hey... I'm here, I'll protect you" he said holding my face on both sides. " I'll hungry" I said pulling away. " Cora" he said holding my hand. I had my back on him, something inside me just wanted to get away from him. He gentle pulled me back to him, his on leg was on the couch, I found myself kneeling in between his thighs. Our heads on the same level, he got even close to me. Our foreheads in contact, his eyes closed. We stayed in silence for a while, I was waiting him to say whatever he wanted to say. " I love you... So much, I'm afraid that I might lose you" he said, " since when are you scared of anything?" I asked, taking a deep breath. " I wasn't, I wasn't scared of anything until you came into my world. I can't bear the thought of losing you, I can't lose. You're the only thing that makes me feel like I am human, you make me feel so alive. I may

come out a mad man sometimes but please don't give up on me. I've lost so much in life, when you lose someone, it stays with you. Always reminding you how easy it is to get hurt...I can, I can still see the anger I saw last night in your eyes. You might have said you forgive me but something doesn't feel right, I've seen this reaction in you, a couple of few times before. I don't know how you're going to take this but I did something yesterday. I asked Samian to capture a video of you while you were talking to that boy." He said, my mood changed from calm to mad. " You did what?, How could you do that?. That's insane" I snapped getting away from him. I was pacing up and down. " So you watched me the entire time and then you had the nerve to shout at me last night, has our trust gone so weak Salvatore?." I snapped. He looked up at me, " have I ever given you any reason to question my royalty?" I asked sitting back down in the position I was in before. I wanted to look him in the eyes but he was avoiding my gaze. " Maybe I am going crazy" he said, those words got me so defeated. " I am weak, you make me feel weak. I want to always by my side, I want to know

each and every one of your moves. Does that make me twisted, I get jealous whenever I see another man talking to you. I becomes worse if he makes you smile, I want to be the only one who does that to you. Maybe my jealous is twisted, not cute but I can't help myself. I love you so much, that's my problem with love. When I love, I love way too much. It also similar to when I hate, that's just how I am. I become possessive most of the time, that's just how I am Cora." He said looking into my eyes, I could feel tears forming in my eyes. I felt so emotional, I found myself embracing him. " I love you too... and you know what. I'd rather have your crazy, insane and toxic love than to have nothing at all, than to have you not love me." I said looking at him, holding both sides of his head. " I don't want you to love me any less, yes it becomes too much sometimes but who cares. I want you following me around, get mad because I was giving other guys my attention. Whine because I was laughing at some other guy's unfunny jokes. Because you know what, only your jokes can make me laugh wholely" I said, then kissed his wet lips. He was just smiling, saying nothing at all.

.

We spent another the entire Saturday in the yacht, just lazying around. Having his fattening birthday cake. We played video games, just the three of us. I loved my family and I couldn't wait to put another addition to the family. I loved my crazy husband, he was really the best I could've found in the market. Like he always said, no one is perfect. He had his flaw and I had mine. We had our share of mistakes and problems but at the end of the day we got together and fixed them. That's what counts, I went back to the residency on Monday. Got a lot of bitter eyes looking my way but some of them were happy to have me back.

.

Three weeks later

.

" Welcome to Paris my love" he said as soon as we landed. We were on our honeymoon. Landed in the afternoon, on his and his father's private jet. Best honeymoon travel ever, " the city of love" I added

smiling. We took a cab to the hotel we were going to be staying in. It had a perfect view of the city and the beautiful tower of Paris." maybe we should check on Lorenzo?" I asked standing on the balcony, he was standing right behind me. Holding my waist, " let's forget about the outside world for the next two weeks and make this about us. Just me and you" he said kissing my neck, I tilted my head to the right and gave him full access to my neck. I had my hand on the back of his head. " Just the two of us?" I asked giggling. " Just us" he said putting the glass of wine he had in his one hand on the near by small table. The hotel room had large windows ever. You could literally see everything while outside. Well if the blindfolds were opened. He pushed me over to the rails. I was wearing a long black dress, " I want to make love to you here" he whispered so seductively but my mind couldn't shake off the feeling that it was out somebody could be watching. While my thoughts were running like that my dress was raised to my waist and he had his hands and my valley of fire brushing it on top of my panties." Salvatore, somebody could be watching" I said breathing so

heavily. My heart thundering. " I don't care, let them watch" he said separating my legs with his knee. I found myself brushing my ass against his crouch. He took down my white G-string panties, mind you I was wearing six inches stilettos. " Salvatore" I said gasping out of pleasure, he was rubbing my soft bud so good, I felt so weak in my knees. It didn't take that much for me to get wet, " bend over" he said backing away a bit. I did so, helplessly. I thought he was going to start running his big dick head on my pussy teasing me but he did the unexpected and kneeled down. He separately my legs even more widely, i felt my pussy walls spread apart, my clitoris throbbing. He put his hand on my mould, positioned it right to his mouth and started sucking me from behind, he would pull my inner folds in his mouth and hold them in for a while. He got me speaking in tongues and screaming Jesus's name. He sucked and nibbled me for what felt like forever and I didn't want him to stop. I felt electric waves rush in my brain. Before I knew it I was shaking uncontrollable, I must have peed a bit because I could see my juices flowing down my legs and the floor got wet. I felt so

weak and embarrassed. He helped me stand because my feet couldn't carry me any longer. " Look at me" he said after turning me around, he was busy brushing me all over. I couldn't look at him, it felt like the first time when he did things to me then left me hanging and I was helplessly begging him to continue. " There's nothing to be shy about, you must've liked that" he said smiling. " Did you like it" he asked, my chest was rising and falling so hard. I was weak under his touch and power. I nodded, " how did it feel like?" He asked. " I can't explain it" I said, wasn't it weird for the insane Cora to feel so shy and helplessly. I wanted more and more, I wanted his dick inside my drenching wet pussy. " Take off your free" he said. " What?" I asked as if I haven't heard him. " Take off your dress Il mio cuero batte" he said moving his hands from my waist to my pussy, he inserted his big long middle finger, I gagged a bit. I took off my dress and was left with my bra only. " And the bra too" he instructed. I did so without further delay. he cupped my breasts and kissed the both slightly. He kneeled down and put my leg on his shoulder, he wiped away my juices

using my dress. And started licking my valley of fire one more time, from there I started wondering if it was 'lick Cora's pussy day' or what. "Ye ah ah hah oh ye-s yes baby" I screamed and cried out helplessly. He was on another dimension that night, every single cell of my body felt his torturing touch. "You love this don't you" he said looking up at me. I nodded and put his head back to my valley, I cum and he licked me through my cum. He wiped my cleaning once again. "Go and sit on that couch" he said pointing at the small couch by the corner of the balcony I walked over there without questioning his command. He took off his clothes and his dick sprouted freely, it was hard. All veins popping out, it was so huge. "Put your legs up on the couch" he said. "Please fuck me already" I begged him. "Not yet, my heart beat" he said kneeling down Infront of me and spreading my legs widely apart, my clitoris throbbing in need and pain. I was in need of his dick, he inserted his two fingers inside. I leaned back and my eyes rolled back, I closed my eyes. "I want you to look at me" he commanded. I opened up my eyes and looked at him. "How many fingers do you think

you can take" he asked. " That's...two" I said. " Are you sure?" He asked inserting his third finger. " Ahhh" I screamed eyes popped out, he started finger fucking me. " Look at that" he said taking them out, they were dripping wet. " Your valley looks beautiful" he said pulling me to the edge of the couch. He inserted his tongue, it felt so good inside my wet pussy. He nibbled me and sucked me a bit. He stood up, bended over me and teased my with his pink huge head. I held it and put it in forcefully. He chuckled a bit. He started moving in and out, with my hands on top of my head where he held them in place. I was so frustrated because I wanted to touch and hold him. He fucked me until I couldn't take it anymore more. My pussy was on fire. " Bend over" he was. I stood up and bended over, holding on to the couch. He Mercilessy fuck me, roaming every undiscovered corner of my valley. " I love you Salvatore" I said cuming, he came later on. " Let's go inside" he said picking me up i couldn't walk. We had three more steamy rounds. He got me thinking' I want everyday to be Honeymoon's day'

.

To be continued later

[6/3, 15:04] Lynne: Continuing
Cora's POV

.

I've been reading books of old
The legends and the myths
Achilles and his gold
Hercules and his gifts
Spider man's control
And Batman and his fist
And clearly I don't see myself upon that list

.

But she said, where'd you wanna go?
How you wanna risk
I am not looking for somebody
With some superhuman gifts

Some superhero

Some fairytale bliss

Just something I can turn to

Somebody I can kiss

.

I want something just like this

Doo-doo-doo-doo-doo-doo x3

Oh, I want something just like this

Doo-doo-doo-doo-doo-doo x3

Oh, I want something just like this

I want something just like this

.

I've been reading books of old

The legends and the myths

The testaments they told

The moon and its eclipse

And Superman enrolls

A suit before he lifts

But I'm not that kind of person that it fits...I want something just like this...

.

I was woken up with by the sounds of that song, I lazily opened up my eyes while whining. And to my surprise he was clicking pictures of me, " you got a camera?" I asked covering my face with my hands. I was naked, " good morning my wife" he said removing my hands. " When did you get a camera?" I asked pulling up the sheets. " You look perfect" he said still clicking pictures. " Can I go back to sleep, please" i said turning away from him. " It's 8am" he said. " And I slept around 3 am, pretty please" I said putting a pillow on my head. " Ain't you excited to explore the city of Paris" he asked. And the music wouldn't stop playing. " You're not going to let me, are you?" I asked sitting up straight. " Not in a million years" he said, I gave him a tight punch on his chest. " I hate you Salvatore" I said getting out of the bed. " Look at that ass, you got ass for days. I'm actually making a video here" he said, I turned around and

gave him my middle finger. " That's a fair deal, I fuck you and you fuck me" he said giggling. " Argh!. I hate you a million times than before" I said so irritated. " At least you feel something for me" he said. I took a gown which was in the bathroom after remembering that my bags were back in the room. " Delete those pics and videos, I look horrible" I said taking my toiletry bag. " Why, you take videos and pictures of me while I am asleep. I never tell you to delete them, these... I'm going to keep." He said still pointing the camera at me. " If you're not going to delete them then I am going to put you on a pussy diet" I said. " Don't you just love sex, what has that got to do with this" he asked, my eyes popped out unbelievably. " You're unbelievable, I'm going to take a shower" I said walking back to the largest bathroom ever. I got under the shower and opened the taps, I was taking a body soothing shower when he was walked in the bathroom. " Can I by any chance join you" he asked already naked already opening the door. " I thought you already took a bath" I said turning around. He pulled me closer to him, " after seeing you naked like that a miracle happened to me. I felt the Voice

hailing from above. God is good, do you know what the voice said to me" he asked, I couldn't help but laugh. " What?" I asked. " It said ' Alonzo my son, Alonzo my son. This is the time, this is the perfect time to expand the nation'. I didn't get it a first but God was telling me to make love to you and produce Kids" he said. " Is it?" I asked laughing. He nodded so serious." If you say so then I can not disrespect the word of God" I said giggling. He started kissing me and we made love in the shower.

.

" And what's this" I asked looking at the breakfast he ordered. " Italian brunch torte, baked eggs and sauce, could eggs, mascarpone -mashroom frittata stack" he explained. " And we're going to eat all this" I asked eyes popped out. The table was full. " One thing my grandmother taught me is that we shouldn't starve woman. In any kind of way you know" he said winking at me. " You're trying to fatten me up" I said sitting down. " Ohh come on, you're one of those people who never gain weight no matter how much you eat. Well of course except for your

ass and boobs" he said checking me out. " Are you saying I am skinny?" I asked arms folded. " I'm saying you're perfect" he said. " Am I supposed to be flirted?" I asked. " I think you are, Mrs Salvatore. Look at you smiling" he said one eyebrow raised up. " No I'm not" I said, " you're doing right now" he said. " Okay fine, I'm starving" I said sitting down. We had breakfast and actually finished it. I couldn't help myself, it was so scrumptious. Well not all of it but it was mmh. " I don't think I'll be able to make it out of the door. I'm not going" I said brushing my full tummy, he just laughed. " I'll go alone then" he said taking the back pack and a camera. " Actually I changed my mind" I said standing up. " So fast" he said frowning. " It's just that you look extra hot today, I can't take the risk" I whispered into his ear. " Afraid that I might get myself a mistress" he said. " That's, that's not funny but yeah. You can never know, being in the city of love. It's dangerous to even blink, I got my eyes on you" I said pointing two finger at my eyes and then back to him. " You're still insane, let's go" he said holding my hand. " And why are you holding my hand?" I asked as we were in the elevator. There

were other people there too." I don't want you to get lost, after all you've only been in Durban, Jo'burg, Rome and California. That's just it" he said . I slightly punched his shoulder. " That's a lot of places if you ask me" I said. " Is it, are you sure that you're from planet earth. You call 4 a lot?" He asked. " Fine I've only been to a few cities but this is all your fault. You don't take me along when you're going on business trips" I said as we got out of the elevator. " Let's see, I asked you to come with me to Dubai and you refused. And then to Shanghai and you still refused, what about Nigeria. You still said no. I can go on and on" he said as we walked out of the hotel. The Weather was perfect for a stroll down the street. No to actually explore the city. By the way we were both wearing white. He was wearing a white shirt unbuttoned and a light blue vest inside along with white light fabric trousers which he folded up from the legs. And white Nike sneakers, I was wearing a white summer dress. Which was just above the knees , without a bra and white Nike sneakers. My hair naturally curled up into an afro, I wore simple make up and silver hoop earrings. "

Come on, you only asked me to come with you to Dubai because I had complained about you always going on business trips" I said rolling my eyes. " Okay I agree but what about Shanghai?" He asked. " I had examinations coming up in a week" I said. " You study like crazy, I'm sure you had already studied" he said. " Well I, I wanted to revise" I said stuttering a bit. " Let's forget that, what about Nigeria?" He asked. " I was on my menstrual period, you know that I get heavy cramps" I said. " Is that it?".He asked. " Well Nigerian is not one of my favorite countries in the world, don't get me wrong I love Nigerians but exploring another African country...Nah. I don't think so" I said. " You should see yourself, so sessy" he said, I just shrugged. " Where are we going exactly?" I asked after we've been walking for too long, we were just in the mist of hotels. " There's a mall down town, if I still remember correctly. I was thinking maybe you'd want to do some shopping" he said. " And we're going to walk there" I asked. " We'll catch big bus Paris Hop-on and hop-off tour" he said. " I don't even know what you are saying" I said frowning. " You'll see" he said. " How many times have you

been here?" I asked looking up at him." A couple of few times" he said, " how many women have you brought here and to that exact hotel" I asked getting my hand lose from him. I was walking in reverse while he was walking towards me. I wanted to look him in the eyes, " you really don't want to know that" he said. " No I want to know, tell me" I said feeling uneasy. " A couple of women" he said. " Oh come on Salvatore, don't patronise me. Tell me, I'll take it as it comes" I said, a little bit chuckling but burning up inside. " OK, first stop walking in reverse, you might hurt yourself. I'll tell you" he said. I walked normally, " so?" I asked. "There are 7" he said. " Seven?" I asked unbelievably. " Is that the number of women you've dated?" I asked holding him , stopping him actually. " Why are we exactly discussing this, please let's not ruin our perfect day" he said, my eyes darting between his. " You're right, I also don't want to ruin my day but you'll tell me later. I'm not Let this go, not so easily" I said smiling and sighing softly. " That's our bus" he said pulling my hand, we actually ran there and hopped in. It was actually written big bus Paris in bold. " Why did you do that?" I asked

catching my breath. I was holding on to the pole, It's fun" he said giggling. " And then you call me insane" I said shaking my head and smiling. " The bus is still not moving" I said. " It will in a few seconds" he said looking at his wrist watch. The one I bought him ' let's make this our signature' that one. the bus started moving, the city looked marvelous but not as it looked at night. " I love you" he said looking down at me, removing the strands of hair from my face. I was smiling like I retard fool. ' I love you too' I murmured, he read my lips. " I need to capture this" I said looking behind him. The Eiffel tower was even more closer. I took out his camera, by the way we had left our phones back in the hotel. Switched off, I captured a few pictures OK maybe a lot but I couldn't help myself. I ended up capturing his gorgeous face, which was so near by the camera eye. " Say strawberries" I said capturing a few more pics of us hopping off the bus. He covered his face with his hand,avoiding the flash light. " You're such a spoil my back on it. He was looking at me. " sport yazih. You bought this camera, handle it like a man" I said. " Only if I knew" he said. " here we are" he said looking

behind me. We were at the mall. It was written aerovile in bold. I found myself in beauty Paradisé hair and cosmetics, Hughes, kahler , parasol, Gucci, dolce and gabbana,calvin Klein, Prada, saint Laurent Paris. We spent hours and hours there, " I think I've had enough for the day" he said. It was 16:00pm. " I think we're going to need a cab" I said, looking at the bags we had. He was carrying about 10 shopping hands in his hands and I was carrying six. He also bought a few things, like sneakers and watch and two suits. " My feet hurts" I said. " This is the last time we're going shopping, if we continue like this we might end up homeless" he said. " But Salvatore, you promised me those pink sweaters" I said sulking. " It's not working... taxi, taxi" he called out and the driver pulled up. " Are you coming or not" he asked getting inside. I got in after giving him the bags. The cab taxi took us to our hotel. 10 minutes later we were in our room . Which was spotless clean once again

.

" So?" I asked after taking a shower and straining up

my hair. I was wearing a gown he was sitting on the balcony having wine. "What?" He said shrugging his shoulders. It was 6pm. We had dinner reservation in some restaurant around 20:00pm. "How many were they before me, what's their names?" I asked sitting down on the opposite chair. "I don't ask you about your exes so you basically have no right to ask me" he said. "That's probably because you find out everything about me before I could tell you, besides that I have no ex boyfriend. Just tell me already, you said you would" I said. "Okay, it that's what you want then. We'd probably be late for our reservation, let me go and take a shower and get dressed and then we could talk about this over dinner" he said. "Don't think that I'll let this one slide" I said following him inside the room. "This might a little" he said getting into the bathroom. I took out my dress out of the shopping bag. It was a red round neck buttoned scrappy dress which I was going to wear with red pencil heels. I did my make up first, which seemed to take forever because he even finished taking a shower. He was drying up his her while I was curling up my black dyed hair. I wore my red thong, no bra. I

then put on my dress. Making sure not to mess up my make up. I fix my hair and sprayed it. Put on my heels, we got finished at the same time. He was wearing maroon trouser, I white gold t-shirt, black formal shoes and a black jacket. " Wow" he said checking me out. " You don't look bad yourself" I said smiling" we can leave" I said taking my purse. " Let me undress you first" he said walking towards me. " No, I'm not having that" I said running for the door. " What about later then" he asking following me, while chuckling. " I'll give you a maybe for now" I said smiling. He closed and locked the door using the card.

.

" I can't remember all the women I've slept with, maybe 20 or 30 I don't know" he said over dinner. We've been there for 30 minutes, already eating. " For really?" I asked, eyes popped out. " I'm a man Cora" he said. " I don't feel like using foul language but I have to say this' that's bull over shit' ' I'm a man Cora' " I imitated him sarcastically. He just laughed, " how many have you brought here, to Paris, to that

specific restaurant, to that hotel" I asked. " This hotel and this restaurant, just one" he said. " Who's she?" I asked. " Cora" he said. " Paris?" I wasn't about to be flirted by his sweetness. " Seven, like I've said before... Kylie, Isabella, Merc, Angelica, Mariam, Melissa and you" he said. " If I knew I would have chosen another honeymoon destination" I said, eating my food angrily. " You couldn't have really refused father's gift"he said smiling. " Why are you smiling exactly" I asked him. " You look so cute when you are jealous" he said. " That's my line" he said. " Do you know what Alonzo thinks" he asked. I just shrugged my shoulders. " What?" I said with my mouth full. " He think that out of all those women you're the one he's crazy about you, you're his end game" he said. " Cora thinks that you're a womanizer" I said. " Ouch, Alonzo used to be a womanizer but not anymore. You came along and things changed" he said. " Who's most beautiful among those women" I asked. " They're all beautiful but there's this one specific one" he said. " Who's she?" I asked swallowing the lump in my throat. " Cora"he said once. " You're just impossible

Salvatore" I said defeated. He just chuckled. We had our dinner over a meaningless conversation, we had dessert after that. A few cocktails after that, he was just being his charming self and I was a little bit tipsy. We went back to the hotel, I don't know maybe around 23:00. I took a quick bath while he took a shower. " So, do you still want to undress me" I asked standing in the balcony, the fresh breeze hitting my skin, not it was actually cold to the very. " This is new but I like..." He said standing behind me. He had a towel wrapped around his waist and I was wearing a lingerie which was a see through, had a hole on my upper tummy and above my boobs. It was Lacey and backless, just two but strands of lacy laces holding it on my neck and lower back and heels. He held to my hips, " you look glorious, sexual appetising, goddessly stunning..." He kept going on and on while caressing my body. It was ticklish, the small fabric made his touch pleasingly tickling. He was kissing my neck, so sure to leave love bites. Every single touch of his felt like torture, leaving me wanting more. My bud throbbing already. Anyways we made slow tormenting love till morning, he left

no inch of mine untouched. With him every sexual session had something new, you never knew what would come next. The anticipation made my adrenaline rush. All in all the honeymoon was the best ever, we had sex with every chance we got, even in restaurants and water parks, kisses on the bus, under the tower. On the boat tours, in cabs, in the night clubs. Two weeks ended so fast, I didn't want it to stop.

.

Page 71 later

[6/3, 15:04] Lynne: Page 71

Cora's POV

.

Robinson drove inside the gate of our home, it was 11am, I was looking outside the window lost in my meaningless thoughts. The first thing I did when we got inside the house was hit the bed, I was so tired plus I had to go to the residency later on. The holidays were sadly over, it was back to reality. Lorenzo was at his grandpa's house, ever since we

left for Paris he has been there. I woke up around 3:40pm that too I was woken up by Salvatore. " Hey" he said, I set up right. " I made us something to eat, come and eat" he said kissing my shoulder. I got off the bed and washed my face and mouth in the bathroom. I then walked downstairs and found him him sitting on the highchair. " Are you okay?" He asked, " I'm fine, I just don't feel like going to the residency. I don't want to go to the hospital tomorrow. I'd have to face those bitter faces again" I said sitting down in a slump position. " I'm sure they've forgot about all that what happened, they're probably focused on another new drama. Everything has died die, you can relax" he said, " this will never die down, it'll always be a part of me. I'll always be remembered as that former prostitute" I said but he said nothing. We had our dinner?, I guess. " I thought Lorenzo would be here when I wake up" I said washing the dishes." Robinson got stuck in traffic but don't worry. I'll make sure you see him by tomorrow evening" he said walking out of the kitchen. I felt so numb, I went back upstairs and packed my bags then took a quick bath. Wore my

PJs, " I'm leaving, are you going to accompany me?" I asked putting my bags on the couch. He was watching the news,so focused. " I have a lot of work to catch up on, your bodyguards will drive you" he said standing up. " I'll see you tomorrow, take care of yourself" he said kissing me. " I will" I said smiling a bit. " Okay bye" I said taking my bags. That meant I wasn't going to use my car, well technically his car but I was the one using it so...Anyways I got to the residency around 7pm. There were a lot of people, well students and doctors. Everybody was catching up while I just wanted to be in my room alone, sleeping. I did just that, went to sleep again. I woke up around 23pm , nature call. " No,this can't be happening. No!" I screamed so angry and saddened by my blood red panties. I was on my menstrual period, " are you OK ma'am" Sam asked budging in the door. " Get out!" I snapped covering myself with a blanket. I was only wearing my panties and vest. I took another bath washed my underwear and wore a pad and black panties and PJs. I didn't realize that I was crying until I took a glance at the mirror. " Why are you crying, there's always another time right.

Maybe next month you'll fall pregnant" I said smiling smiling at my image and wiping off my tears. I took pills for the cramps then went back to bed after setting the alarm. I can't remember the time I fell asleep but I was woken up by loudly ringing alarm. I dragged myself into the bathroom and took a shower I wore my Nike tracksuits and sneakers, packed my handbag then went out. " Ma'am I am sorry about budging in just like that last night. It's just that I heard you scream. So I assumed that you might be in trouble" Sam said, he was alone there. I didn't even bother to ask, " please just keep quiet and get me to the hospital" I said so tiredly and irritated. My favorite sound at the moment was silence. I had a lot of questions running in my heard, how could I have not fallen pregnant. We had a thousand of sexual intercourse just a few weeks before my menstrual week. And Dr Davis assured me that after that laparoscopy surgery. ' since I am still young he said that I have higher chances of getting pregnant' my inner self screamed. " Ma'am we're here" I had Samian say. I came back to earth, we had reached the hospital. He was opening the

door for me, I got out and walked into the elevator. He was by my side side the entire time.

.

5 hours later I was sitting in the cafeteria dealing with some patient's files. Trying my best to focus, just to keep sane. " You must have a storm of a headache" Dr Francis said sitting on the table, he touched my forehead. " Good grief Cora, you're burning up" he said looking so shocked and worried. He walked somewhere, I didn't care to look. I touched my forehead and it felt like fire. Anyways I continued with what I was doing " take these" he said offering me tablets for headache and a glass of water. I took them and drank up. " How are you planning to take care of patients while you're sick yourself" he said sitting on the opposite chair. " I'm fine, it's not a big deal" I said focussing on the file Infront of me. " I could tell from across the room that you're not OK, what's up" he asked taking the file for me. " With all due respect sir I don't want to talk about it, it's my personal problems. Thanks for the pills. Now if you'd excuse me" I said standing up and

taking my files I went back into my apartment after the shift was over. " Ma'am, Sir called. He told me to tell you that you should pick up your phone. He's been trying to call you" Samian said as we were in the elevator. " Ohh, my phone" I said searching for it in my bag but it was not there. " I must've left it in my apartment" I said after not finding it in my bag. I walked in my apartment after unlocking, I turned on the lights. I found it on the messy bed, there were a lot of missed calls from a lot of people. " We're almost there" he said after picking up A then he hung up. I went into the bathroom to take a quick bath, " Cora, we're here" I had Salvatore say. " I'm coming" I said wrapping up what I was doing. I put on my panties and pad then wrapped up a towel around my body then went out, I found him fixing my bed. " Don't, don't do that. I'm going to sleep anyways" I said. " Mommy, I got you chocolates and ice-cream" Lorenzo said walking towards me with a plastic, he was actually dragging it On the ground. " I missed you" I said kneeling down and hugging him. " I miss you too Mom" he said, he always said that in a present tense. " So tell me, what trouble did you get

up to with grandpa?" I asked smiling faintly. Salvatore still continued to change the bed covers. I guess he saw the blood stains I had hidden under my white towel. " I didn't give grandpa any trouble mommy, me and Grandpa are big friends. We ride bicycles and cook together. It's fun" he said, happiness written all over his cute little face. " Mmh sounds like you had a lots of fun, what else did you two do?" I asked pulling his cheeks. " We watched football and eat ice-cream and he teaches me how to drive a car. He said he'll buy Mr my own car next year on my birthday. We had a lots of guests too, even mother's father came. Guess what mommy" he who the last part. " What" I whispered too. " Father's mother came too. She kissed grandpa, like you and Dad always do. Euw" he whispered into my ear but I am sure that Salvatore heard that too, I looked at him but he was so focused on the bed. " Lorenzo go outside to uncle Dumisani. I need to talk to your mother" he finally said after watching us having our silly conversation. " Dad" he said dragging his feet. " Go, you'll come back soon" I said pushing him outside and closing the door. " What's eating you up,

and don't tell me it's nothing. I've been watching you faking smiles with Lorenzo" he said. " So Your mother and father are back together?" I asked walking towards the couch where I had threw my PJs earlier on. " I am not interested to find out... what's wrong with you?" He asked walking towards me. I dressed up, " nothing" I said turning around and finding him so close to me. He frowned, " did your phone die" he asked arms folded around his huge chest. " No I forgot it here" I said walking towards my desk and taking my pills, I drew water from the sink and drank up my pills." Since when do you...is this about the blood stains I found on your bed covers. Did you miscarry, what happened?" He asked, I was just staring at him. " Goddammit Zabenathi say something" he shouted so frustrated. Bringing me back to earth. " If I was never pregnant how could I have had a miscarriage. What if the surgical procedure was in vein. What if I can not give you children, what then?" I said running my fingers through my hair. " What then...I should have fallen pregnant, we had sex at the right time... I'd understand if you want divorce" I said sitting down

on bed. " No,no, are you crazy. How could you give up so early, this is our first month of trying. You will fall pregnant, I trust Dr Davis. We just need to be patient, that's it" he said holding my hands. " What happens if I really can't give you children, we better separate now while it's still early. I don't want to give too much into this relationship only to be disappointed and I don't want that for you either." I said crying. " Cora stop it, we still have an IVF alternative. We haven't Consulted a qualified medical doctor, let's not rush into conclusion. Forget about the what ifs. We will have kids, you and I. I'm never going to let you go no matter what" he said kissing my hands. " What if the IVF declines. What then, will you stay by my side even though I am a barren woman?" I asked looking at him through teary eyes. " You gotta have faith, have faith. It'll work, it has to work" he said sounding so desperate? . " Besides that we have Lore, we have a child." He said. " That's not enough for me, Lore's not enough for me. I also want to know how it feels like to be pregnant, I want to feel the baby kicks inside my tummy,the morning sickness and all the things that comes with

pregnancy. I want my own biological children...I love Lore but he... I want to give you children, I want to feel complete as a woman." I screamed while grabbing on to the bed covers. He just embraced me until I calmed down. " Maybe the medication you used to take to prevent pregnancy is still in your system, we gotta be patient. You gotta be patient.

.

To be continued

[6/3, 15:04] Lynne: Continuing

.

" We should go to church sometimes" he said as we cuddling in bed. It's been three weeks since I had my menstrual periods. " What?" I asked turning around to look at him probably, just to check if sanity was still within him. " What?" He asked frowning. " What did you just say?" I asked, just to make sure that I heard him right. " We should go to church" he repeated. " You're drunk already?" I asked frowning. " No, why" he asked shrugging. " What did you just say' we should go to church sometimes' that's like

me saying, " hey Joaquin, we should rob a bank sometimes. Or do a heist" I said. " What?, You don't believe that I could actually walk through those church doors. Is it that hard to believe?" He asked sitting upright. " It almost sounds impossible to me" I said sitting upright myself. " Nothing is impossible, if you believe" he said. " That's like a movie line, where did you get that from" I asked. " I can't remember, it must be from that one of your romcom movies but that's not the point, the point is that you and I are going to church together. Believe it or not" he said. " Even if I do believe it, I can't. I don't feel like it" I said putting my head on his naked chest. He was wearing trousers only, it was just a normal day, Lorenzo was upstairs sleeping. He was coming down with flu, had been to a doctor. " Why, I can't remember the last time you went to church Cora, it's like you're slowly slipping away from God" he said. " Isn't it an irony, a man like you talking about God" I said standing up and leaving. He was left gagging, I went to the library and studied a bit even though it seemed impossible, even though I was angry. Mostly with myself, I shouldn't have said that. We were to

go to tiaxiang's house later on, it had been a long time since we got together as friends. The time was 2pm, I got out of the library around 4pm, we were supposed to get there around 6pm. I found Salvatore sitting in the kitchen, having some ice cream. " I am sorry" I said sitting down across the kitchen counter, " I said that out of anger, sometimes I just like God is failing me and right now I don't think he's the best resort or the comfort I need. I don't want to go to church for the sake of just going, I want to be whole heartedly there... And you were right, I'm drifting away from God, from Jesus Christ. I can feel it too but I can't face him right now, I don't want to be weak and break down and cry." I added, he was having his ice cream in between. " What changed this time Cora, you've always found comfort in God. Whenever things went wrong, you'd pray hard and God to church. I can't remember the last time I saw you praying. Things can't be that bad" he said closing his ice-cream container. " I don't know, it happens sometimes. It happens, even I am human. I have my breaking point and weak points. I can't explain it but I feel so angry with him, I feel like he

lets everything bad happen to me. He just sits there and watch while I have to fight with the wolves, I feel like I am fighting these battles all alone... I will get back to him when the time is right, right now I need healing. Away from him" I said feeling so emotional. " OK if you say so, but you've always told me that he can never give us a burden beyond our capabilities" he said opening the refrigerator, " can I have that" I asked pointing at the ice-cream container. He gave me the ice-cream container and spoon. " Maybe you should try going to church until you feel like it, it always makes you feel better when you're down" he said getting out of the kitchen, I had my delicious ice cream, scooped it to my mouth until it was finished.

.

" No, no, I'm not getting involved. The last time I played games with you I also got a heart attack" I said raising my hands up in surrender. " Come on, don't be a spoil sport. It's just simple karaoke" Amanda said. It was 7pm and we were chilling around the pool after having the braaid meat, we were having ciders well they were having Ciders and

I was having lime juice- doctor's orders, for some strange reason Esihle was drinking orange juice too. I didn't dare to ask though," come on babe" Salvatore said. " OK fine but where are the Lyrics" I asked frowning. I was wearing white skinny jeans, thigh high boots white, I small crop top inside and a pink jacket, which i had off my shoulders, " let me go and get the Data projector and laptop" Tiaxiang said, " I'll help you" Esihle said following him. " I don't think you should—..." Li please, I'm not sick" he said, sounding pissed off anyways they left. " so how does this work" Priya asked after the data projector was connected. " So this is how it goes, each couple is going to give write 10songs on their songs list and I'm going to download the beats along with the lyrics and each couple is going to sing What ever songs plays up. We're going to exchange songs in other words" Rajesh explained. " But that's not fair, I have my own type of music and Salvatore listens to to old school and what if it's a Zulu or Hindi or Korean song?" I asked, not really like the idea. " That's the funniest thing about this and stop criticizing my music, old school is the best" Salvatore said. " Get it

on with the list and stop arguing" Divya said. " Cora has a point though,i also don't like the idea. Korean songs. Imagine all the chings and Chong" mbutho said making us all laugh, well accepted for Tiaxiang. " I also have a complaint about Hindi and Zulu songs, what about that" he said, " hey don't involve Zulu songs in this" Esihle said, I couldn't help but laugh." Guys, lists please" Rajesh said. I went and set " so how many Luther vandross songs do you think we should write" I asked putting my hand around his neck. " The whole last album" he said solemnly, " forget that I ever asked that, let's make it a fair deal, five five" I said, " ain't we supposed to be working together, it's a couple's songs list not singles songs list" he said, " we're just not complementary when it comes to music, that's not my fault" I said shrugging. " Besides, you and I only will know, quickly write your top five and I'll tell you mine" I said. " Where?" He asked. " Your iPhone has note book" I said, " ohh" he said taking it out. We wrote our lists and gave them to Rajesh who quickly downloaded the music. " On second thought, if you're singing it horribly don't be surprised when I pass" he said, " that's not fair, I'm a

bad singer, and he's horrible" Esihle said whining. Raj just shrugged his shoulders. " I'm going to go first" he said, " that won't be fair, you know how the songs list goes so you'd probably choose what suits you" mbutho said. " So how is this going to work" Raj asked. " Let me be the DJ and I'm out of the game" I said raising my hand. " Let the music play on it's now but you're definitely not the one" Salvatore said. " Who's going to start Then?" Michael asked after a long time of keeping quiet. " Definitely not us" Esihle said. " Cora, let's do this" Salvatore said pulling my hand , we were sitting on a circle couches. The projector in Infront of us" Salvatore" I said trying to resist but It too late. Raj played the music. Lyrics got displayed on the screen, " are we Allowed to pass" Salvatore said after kwestas song played, African pop. They all just laughed, I ended up laughing. Served him right. " Just once" Raj said passing on to the next song. " These are definitely my songs, come on Kong. You're killing my vibe" Mbutho screamed, Salvatore looked so dumbfounded. Trying to let the beat kick in. " Baby girl you give joy and excitement. I promise I'd never get tired yeah, even

though I got a girl. You're my side chick, I call you my girl never my B, best of those...I used to go for girls who are light skinned, when you dropped it to the floor then I like it, I like your curly hair and your physique baby, you unique baby, you're do complete baby.... " He tried there and there, he was more of talking then singing. I swear I ended up on the floor, laughing. I was supposed to be helping him but I was busy laughing at him. " That's my baby, that's my baby, that's my baby girl, that's my baby girl " he went on and on pointing out at me while I was laughing on the floor. The song finally ended, my tummy hurt. " You're such a bad wife Cora" Esihle commented shaking her head unbelievably. " What?" I asked shrugging my shoulders. " You're mocking my brother, he was trying" she said, " he was funny" I said, Salvatore was already sitting on the couch. " I'm so not doing this again" he said. " You tried bozza, Kevin said patting his shoulder. " You did well" I said sitting on his lap, still laughing inside. " I'll get my lawyer to prepare for divorce papers" he said. " Is it?" I asked giggling. " We we're supposed to sing along but you were busy laughing your ass put on the

ground" he said, " I'm sorry, but please don't divorce me" I said still laughing.

" It's Kevin and Siwe now" Raj said. " I got you baby Daddy" Siwe said standing up first, excitedly. And then sketchy bongo's song played. " Yes" siwe said jumping up and down." Simplicity is what you bring to me when you love me in the dark, when the lights go out and the music fades it's when I need your lovex2 , coz everything around me is telling me what I need but all I need is you.o oh So Love me in the dark and they won't tear us apart- Siwe

.

I'm so tired, can we close our eyes. Block out the sunlight. Coz every now and then it gets hard to pretend that I don't need your love coz I need your love. And then don't see us fall they wanna bring us down. They can't break the love they don't know about, –kevin... " They sang till the end holding hands. It was beautiful, we all clapped after they were done. " Tiaxiang and Esihle, your turn" Raj said. " Help me God" Esihle said. West life played. " Thank God it's English" Tiaxiang said. They got the lyrics

but the voices Nah!, I couldn't help but laugh. " You guys are terrible Singers " Salvatore said. " At least we tried other than you two" Esihle said kinda angry. " Lil sister your voice sounds hor—" Salvatore insisted. But I closed his mouth with my hand. "Next please" I screamed. " Amanda and Michael, please grace us with your voices" Raj said. Then sanctuary love by Donald played, it was a worst nightmare singing along with Mbutho's favorite songs. I figured they were his because whenever a song would play he would stand up and dance a bit. " Next please" Michael said. " But—" Amanda tried to protest but it was already too late so, there they were trying to wrap their heads around the Hindi song that was playing. " Aansoun ne nazar main jagah banaayi zindagi ka hissa bani tanhaayi (2x) (tears have made a home in my eyes holiness has become a part of my life)

Poori hoke bhi poori na ho saki duaa...(Even upon completion, this prayer hasn't been accepted)... " They were just staring at the Hindi written confusing lyrics. " Is it possible to ask for next?" Michael said

giving up. " Come and sit down, next please" I said laughing at them. " This is all your fault, the first song was perfectly fine but not you had to go ahead and say' next please' next please" Amanda said so irritated while Michael tried to calm him down while the rest of us were busy laughing. " It's Priya and Mbutho's turn now" Divya said. James blunt's song played- you're beautiful. " I know this one baby" mbutho said holding his wife's waist. " My life is brilliantx2, my love is pure. I saw an angel, of that I'm sure. She smiled at me on a Subway. She was with another man, but I won't lose no sleep on that coz I've got a plan. You're beautiful x3 it's true. I saw your face in a crowded place and I don't know what to do coz I'll never be with you- Mbutho

.

Yes she caught my eye as she walked on by, she could see from my face that I was flying high and I don't think that I'ma see her again but we shared a moment that'll last to the end-priya" they sang while dancing

In each other's arms, slowly. " Wow, that was so

romantic" I said being forward. " It's our turn now"
Priya said standing up. Another Hindi song. Tum
mere ho, is pal mere ho. Kal shaayad ye aalam na
Rahe.(you're mine, in this moment, you are mine,
tomorrow, things may or may not remain the same)

Kuch aise ho tum , tum na raho

Kuch aisa ho hum , hum na raho(maybe something
would happen that you don't remain yourself, maybe
something would happen that I don't remain myself)
ya raasta alag no jaayein chapter cualte hum kho
jaayein(maybe our paths would diverge and we get
lost as we keep walking) main phir bi tumko
chaahunga x2(but I'll still love you) they sang it so
beautifully even though I couldn't understand what
they were saying but I got that it carried emotional
words. Divya ended up shedding a few tears while
smiling. " It's the Salvatore family's turn" Rajesh said
hugging his wife. Anyways they played the next song
even though the mood was quite quiet. Cyndi lauper
—time after time played. The oldest songs ever"
really?" I asked arms folded. " What?, It's beautiful
Amanda said" then I guessed it was her favorite, it

was not that bad after all. " Lying in my bed I hear
the clock tick and think of you, caught up in circles
confusing is nothing new. Flash backs, warm nights.
Almost left behind, suitcase of memories, time after.
Sometimes you picture me, I'm walking too far
ahead. You're calling to me, I can't hear what you've
said then you say go slow.i, fall behind. The second
hand unwinds- me

.

If you're lost you can look and you'll find me,t time
after time, if you fall I'll catch you. I'll be waiting, time
after time x 3 –both of us

.

After my picture fades and darkness has turned into
grey, watching through windows, you're Wondering if
I'm okay. Secrets don't live from deep inside. The
drums beats sounds of time.—him

.

If you're lost you can look and you'll find me,t time
after time, if you fall I'll catch you. I'll be

Waiting, Time after time. If you're lost you can look and you'll find me, time after time, if you fall I'll catch you. I'll be waiting time after time, time after time, time after time we sang till the end, while doing silly moves. It was much fun. " Whoo!" Amanda said while they clapped. " It's back to Kevin everyone," Raj said...

.

We continued with karaoke until midnight, well until all the songs were finished, we only found out later that Raj was making a video of us all along, it was crazy. We were going back home in his not usually used Bentley. There were bodyguards behind and Infront of our car. " I had so much fun today" I said opening the window and letting my hand out, to feel the cold morning breeze hit my skin. " You look so happy, I'm glad we went there but if you don't want to lose an arm it would be better if you close that window" he said. I got my arm back inside and closed the window.

We got into the house and took a shower together then went to bed, it was a Sunday 12am when we

went to bed, we were woken up by Lore jumping on bed early in the morning. " Hey, stop that" I said sitting upright and rubbing my eyes. " Is this a sign of you getting better" Alonzo asked waking up. " Bad sign, I tell you" I said getting out of bed. I took a shower, while Salvatore just brushed his teeth and went out. Anyways I wore one of my short skirt and off shoulder tops and flip flops then went downstairs. Where I found Alonzo wrapping up with making breakfast, I set down on the highchair. " Where's aunt P?" I asked Lorenzo. " She went to see Nina Mom" he said. " Ohh" that's all I said, we got served with scrambled eggs fried chips, sausages and toasted bread then juice or coffee. " We will go out and buy Ice cream Papa" Lorenzo said having his breakfast. " Not today buddy, I got stuff to take care of" Salvatore said, Lore looked so disappointed. " But I can still take you there" I said, " yey!" He said clapping childishly. So Salvatore went to the office after finishing up with breakfast and shower. Lorenzo and I were going to go get Ice cream around 2pm. It's not that ice cream was not around the house but it was all about the drive and singing

along with his child like silly songs. He loved that, "mom let's go" he said as I was watching television. "Let's go to aunt Petunia first" I said pulling her hand and we walked to the backyard guests house. We knocked on on Nina's door, "come in if you're handsome" she said, I opened up the door anyways. "Ohh you, what are you doing here?" She asked standing up from the bed. Petunia was sitting on the couch, reading some magazine. "Hi" I said, "I'm here to seek petunia's help" I added. "Ohh, what can I do for you Cora" Petunia said looking at up at me with a smile. "I was wondering if you could get some of my laundry done for me while I take Lore out for ice cream?" I asked "I'll pay you" I added. "It must be nice being married to a rich—" Nina was saying but then my phone rang. "Husband" I answered Still in her room. "Wife" he said making me chuckle a bit. "Hey I was wondering if you could get me the file i forget there, it's urgent" he added fastly. "Ohh OK but who's going to take Lore out then" I asked caught up in between. "You can go out some other time, I have a very important meeting within an hour, I could have asked Robinson to bring it but it's a very

confidential file. Please" he said. " OK, I'll bring it" I said. " Thank you, make it snappy" he said then hung up. " Ummh Lorenzo, I'm sorry but I can't take you out anymore" I said kneeling down Infront of him. " But Mom, you promised" he said then started crying. " I'm sorry, but I can't split myself into two. Your dad will take you there tomorrow" I said wiping away his tears. " I would have taken him out for Ice cream but my car is giving me problems lately and I hate being driven around by those stupid bodyguards. It's better if they follow me behind" Nina said looking at me, " you can take my car" I offered. " That's sounds like a plan, let me change first and I also don't have cash" she said walking into her closet. " I'll give you cash just as long as you're going to take Lore there" I said standing up. Just like that Lore ended up going with Nina and Samian and Dumisani drove me to club Paradisé.

.

72 up tomorrow later

[6/3, 15:04] Lynne: Page 72

.

" I tried calling you back but your phone was unreachable, is this the file?" I asked walking in his office, I had carried a few files with me but there was just this black one which stood out. " You're a lifesaver, thank you...my phone is switched off, I didn't want to be disturbed" he said taking the file from me. " You seem to be under a lot of pressure, What's up?" I asked. " I'm meeting up with these potential investors, I'm looking forward to reconstructing the club into something big. There are a lot of people who are after this deal, I need to nail my proposal perfectly" he said while busy rearranging files. " Okay, I'ma leave you to it, by the way Nina took Lore out. I hope that's fine" I said walking towards the door. " As long as he's fine" he said not really into what I'd just said. " I'll see you back at home then" I said, he didn't answer, he had a frown on his face. Trying to understand what was Infront of him, I got out of the club which had a lot of people. Considering the fact that it was a Sunday midday, I didn't expect that. Anyways my driver took

me home.

.

Salvatore's POV

.

The meeting went well, at least I saw it that way. They were going to decide then give me a call, I switched on my phone and saw a lot of missed calls from Emeka, one of Nina's bodyguards. I called him back immediately, " Sir please quick get to the white garden hospital your son and miss Nina has been involved in a car accident" he said so fast, his Nigerian accent confusing me a bit, or maybe i was just confused by the news. " What, what are you saying. How, how did this happen?" I asked already taking my car keys and rushing outside to the parking. " Sir, they got hit by a truck. Please hurry up" he said sounding so panicking, I felt dizzy a bit. If something happens to my son I wouldn't be able to live with myself. I drove to the hospital like a maniac. Crossed through red robots a few times. I was suddenly feeling hot, it didn't take me much time to

get there. " Where's my son?" I asked the receptionist as soon as the elevator opened. " Sir calm down, what's your son's name?" The receptionist asked me, for a moment there I swear I even forgot buddy's name. " Ummh Lorenzo, Lorenzo Mongezi Salvatore" I said after closing and opening my eyes. " Go straight down the corridor, he's in room 17b" she said, I took a few steps forward then turned back on my feet. " What about his mother, Nina khumalo?" I asked remembering that it was her driving. " She's in the theater right now" she said after going through her computer. I walked to room where she had instructed me. I budged in without knocking, I found a doctor checking on the unconscious Enzo. He had a bandage on his arms and head. " Sir, I'm going to have to ask you leave" he said turning around. " How's he?" I asked walking to the other side of the bed. " How are you related to the patient?" He asked, writing on the patient's information board. " I'm his father, how is my son. Is he going to be fine" I kind of snapped, he got under my skin. " I understand that you're worried but shouting won't help... Your son is unconscious as

you can see, he's on sedatives. The good news is that his injuries are external, and there are no fractured or broken bones. He should be awake within a few hours" he explained. " And, and the woman that was in the car, his mother. How is she, is she going to be fine?" I asked, really worried. We might not have gotten along but she was the mother of my child, deep down inside. I cared for her, " that I do not know but from what I saw. The chances of her surviving are very slim. The other doctors are operating on her in the theater... If you'd excuse me" he said leaving the ward. " Fuck!" I cursed through gritted teeth, " Boss, thank God you came" Emeka said walking inside the Ward with Edward. I charged towards him and punched him hard that he fell down and Edward too also got a punch. " I pay you to protect my family" I said running my Fingers through my hair. " Sorry Boss but there was nothing we could have done about it" Edward said massaging his jaw. " Don't fucking tell me that, look how badly my son is injured" I shouted pacing up and down. " Boss the colomenta truck driver deliberately ran into Miss Nina and then he ran away after that " Emeka said,

looking so frustrated. " Just get out of here before I kill " I said taking a deep breath. My phone on the other side kept on ringing. I checked the caller ID, It was Cora. I ignored it, I wasn't in the mood to talk to her. If I did answer that call I might have said somethings I'd regret. She called a couple of time. I put my phone on silent mode and called Telescope," King Kong" he answered. " Somebody tried to kill my family, I want you to track them down and bring them to me. Alive" I said without wasting any time. " Whoa, calm down. I am going to need more details" he said. " Right, hold...I'll get one of my guys on the phone" I said walking out, searching for for Edward and Emeka. I found them in the Waiting room. " Explain everything" I said giving the phone to Emeka, who took it looking so confused. " Yes" he said. " On the third junction of the high way....she was about to take a turn...I can't remember correctly but it was a white AMG truck. And then number plate wasn't available. And yes she was driving Mrs Salvatore's silver Audi RS 5 coupe. Sure" he answered Kevin's questions." I'm working on it, I'll have to go through the CCTV cameras. I'll get back to you" telescope

said. " Find him" I said then hung up " You say Nina was driving my wife's car?" I asked putting my phone in my pocket. " Yes, Mrs Salvatore borrowed her her car, since miss Nina's car has issues" she said. " Where exactly was Nina going with my son" I asked. " Ice cream, sir" he said frowning. My memory rushed back to the time where Cora told me that Nina was taking Lorenzo out for Ice cream. My head was so stuck up on the presentation that time that I couldn't Respond to her. " Damn it Cora, I told her to cancel the darn Ice cream thing" I said hitting the wall thus getting the attention of the other people in the Waiting room. I got out and called Samian. " Sir" he answered. " Where's is my wife?, You know what don't let her out of your site. Her life is in danger, she must stay in the house no matter what the cost" I ordered. " She's in the house Sir" he said. " Good, keep her there until you get further notice from me" I said then hung up. The fact that Nina got hit while driving Cora's car got me suspecting one men, Don. He was back and that too for my wife. " Mr Salvatore" I heard doctor Davis say behind me, I turned around. " You must get Cora here,

immediately. The patient keeps calling for her" he said, I was just frowning in confusion. " What, where's Nina. Isn't she supposed to be asleep, on sedatives or something" I asked. " The sedatives are wearing out of her system. She's in the ICU, She's talking in her sleep. We could have given her another dosage of the sedatives but her life would be in more danger. The intake is already beyond what her body could take. We've operated on her and drained the waste blood out of her, but there's a lot of damage done to her body. If she's lucky she'll survive... follow me" he said walking back from where he came from. We took an elevator to another floor. My head was pounding heavily, vision getting a bit blurry. We passed a few room before he opened a ward room number 267. He walked in and i followed him. She was lying on the white sheets, murmuring something. " She looks fine" I said looking at her. There was just a bandage on her face and arm, " that's what tricky about people who have been involved in car accidents. She looks fine on the exterior but the interior is bleeding uncontrollable, she lost a leg" he said unveiling her legs. Her lungs

can hardly function, as you can see we're using oxygen supplier. She lost a lot of blood, luckily we had her blood type in our store room. She got stabbed on the back by a sharp glass and her one kidney got damaged, we had to remove it, her spinal cord got crooked. Which is why she's wearing this, like I said She's going to survive if she's lucky. We tried our best, please get Cora here. It'll be best if she wakes up and find her." He said ... " The pain, did you give her anything for pain. She must be in a lot of pain" I said looking at her. " Don't worry, we injected her. She's numb as we speak" he said patting my shoulder and then he left. I looked at her for a while then called called up Samian. " Get Cora to the white gardens hospital immediately" I said slowly then hung up..." You might be a bad person, a bad mother I've seen but you don't deserve to die. You don't deserve this, just don't die. Hang in there, I know you're the stubbornness woman ever. Just fight with death, I'm sure that Lorenzo would want to meet or see you one day. I don't want him having unanswered questions. The pictures won't be enough. Just don't die yet, we might not have gotten

along so well. Well I might have hated you, you drove me mad sometimes. I just wanted you to change and be a good mother to our son. I hope you forgive me some day and see it from my point of view... Maybe I should call up your mother. Yes, let me do that" I said standing up. I called Mrs khumalo, it rang a few times and then she finally answered. " Hello" she said. " Hello Mrs khumalo, it's Salvatore" I said breathing in and out. " I told you to lose my number, whatever Nina did I wasn't part of it. Please spare my life" she said sounding so scared, was I that much of a bad person. " Look your daughter is in the hospital, I'm going to send you the address. You decide if you're going to come or not, it's a matter of life and death" I said. " Nina, what happened to my Baby, what happened to my Nina" she asked, sounded like she was crying or something. " She has been involved in a car crash, I'll send you the address right now" I said then hung up. I wasn't about to listen to a woman whip. I had a lot of stress as it was. I went back to my son's Ward room, he was still sleeping. I set down on the nearest couch and held her small hand. " Hey buddy... I'm sorry, I'm sorry I

couldn't protect you. I've ruined your handsome face" i said chuckling a bit, but I could feel the tears threatening to come. " I am sorry, you asked me to take you out for ice cream but Papa was just too busy chasing money. I should have taken you there, if i did then none of this would have happened. Now look at your handsome face...I love you. Just wake up...—..." Lore, baby Lore" I heard Cora's voice. I looked at the door and there she was, her bag already dropped down the floor. Shock written all over her face.

.

Cora's POV

.

I was getting my bags into the AMG when Samian told me that Salvatore gave them an order to keep me indoors, I was so frustrated. He was ignoring my calls and then he had the nerve to keep me locked in like a prisoner. on the other side I was worried about Lorenzo, my mind was running wild with things that his mother could have done to him already. It had

been hours since they left. They should have returned by then. It was almost 7pm. And then Dumisani walked in the sitting room where I was. "Ma'am, we must get to the white gardens hospital immediately. Sir's orders" he said. "Hospital, why what happened?" I asked standing up. "Sir didn't classify but it sounded like an emergency. We must leave now" he said. "Okay, let me get my jacket" I said walking upstairs, my bags were already in the car. It took us an hour to get there. My heart was thundering for no reason, on our way there I tried calling him but he wasn't answering my calls. We asked the receptionist for him and she told us to go to ward. 17b, the worst nightmare appeared in front of me as soon as I opened the door. Lorenzo was lying on the hospital bed, with a lot of drips inserted into his arms. A bandage on his face, well forehead but his face was tiny so it was almost all covered. Alonzo was sitting beside him, he had tears on his face. "What happened to Lore" I asked walking on the other side of the bed. "What happened to my Baby" I asked trying to touch his face but afraid I'd hurt him. I couldn't hold back my tears, they

streamed down like a waterfall. " Who did this to my son?" I asked looking at Salvatore through teary eyes. But he was just steering at me, " I'm talking to you!, What happened to Lorenzo?" I asked, well snapped angrily. " Ice cream happened, you did this to Enzo. I told you not to go but no you had to get him there, while you were safe and sound in the house. Look what you did to my son" he said through gritted teeth, all I could see in his face was hatred, hatred, hatred. I swallowed the large lump in my throat, " the mother of my son and my son, are this hospital because of you. All because of you, why did you have to borrow Nina your car. She got purposely hit by a truck, but that's not Reason why you're here, come and see the damage you've done. He said standing up and pulling me outside, I was busy asking him to stop. He was hurting my wrist, I got a break when we finally got into the elevator, thank God there weren't any people in there. " Come and see, what you've done" he said not pulling my hand anymore, I was following him around while massaging my wrist while trying to wipe away my tears but they wouldn't stop, they just, they just would not stop streaming

down my face. I followed him inside the Ward , there was a doctor in there. He moved and I saw Nina lying helplessly in bed, she had eyes darting all over the place. " Dr Davis, Cora is here" he said. " Good, Miss khumalo. Cora's finally here, you can say whatever you want to say. Please do let her talk too much, it'll waste her energy. " Dr Davis said and then left. Nina took off her oxygen supplier, but she started coughing heavily after that and then whizzing followed. Salvatore put in back in place She extended her hand towards me, I was suddenly scared to come any where near her. She removed the oxygen supplier again, " Cora" she called out, I walked towards her, she actually held my hand. " I'm sorry Nina, I should be the one lying in this hospital bed. I'm so sorry" I said crying, she faintly smiled" I'll leave you two to talk" Salvatore said exiting the room. " For-give m-e...plea-se , ta-ke ca-re o-f mong-ezi. Te-ell hi-m I'm so-rr-y. I coul-n-'t be the mo-th-er he needed, I co-uldn't love hi-m... He brou-ght me a l-ot o-f regre-ts and pa-in...te-ell yo-ur hus-ba—nd I for-give hi-...." She said through the cough and whizzing and the she started coughing blood, " Nina!, No please

don't die...help, somebody help" I screamed crying, she held on to my hand tightly. Salvatore walked in full speed. " Call the doctor!" I shouted looking at him. He rushed back out and came back with doctor Davis. Her eyes were rolling back, showing the White part, and then she started shaking violently. And then her whole body structure straightened up, freezing. Dr Davis, teared up the hospital dress she was wearing, and made a friction on the heart reviver shocks. he pressed on her chest, nurses started walking in, " leave the room" one nurses said harshly pushing us outside. We were watching through the blindfolds. The shocked her a couple of time, injected her Into the chest with the biggest injection ever. They finally gave up, " time of death 20: 23" Dr Davis said taking off his white coat, one nurse wrote down on the patient's information board." No, no, she can't be dead. She can't die, Nina please don't do this to me" I cried walking in, they tried to hold me back but I was suddenly powerful. I kneeled down on her bed side. " You can't just give up on her, please try reviving her again. She might make it, she can't die" I begged the doctor. " She's dead Mrs Salvatore,

there's nothing we can do about it. She's dead" Dr Davis said, I looked at him and then Nina, him And then Nina for a couple of times, I went down on my knees against. Said a little prayer. They covered the body, a heard a woman's cry, I raised my head and saw a splitting image of Nina, " Nina?" For a moment there I thought it was her, my eyes were deceiving me. I later on realized that she was older and a little bit wrinkled. Other than that i would have sworn she was Nina, if I believed in reincarnation. " My daughter, where's my daughter. What have you done to my Nina" she said removing the white sheets. " Nina!, Nina!" She screamed shaking her lifeless body. She kept on cry and cry, all the doctors and nurses had left. I stood up and walked to her, " if I could, I would take her place" I said, she looked up at me with teary eyes. " Who are you?" She asked. " One of the people she considered her enemy" I said then turned on my feet. I noticed Salvatore standing on the door way, crying silently. " I'm sorry" I said then left. He was just standing there like a statue. I was feeling so dizzy and nauseous, weak. I felt like puking. I held everything in until I got into one of the rest rooms. I

rushed to one booth and puked. I rinsed my mouth and washed my face and hands. I walked back to Lorenzo's room where I had left my bag. I picked it up... Kissed his forehead..." Take me to the residency" I said to my bodyguards after finding them in the Waiting room. " But sir said—..." Samian please, I'm tired" I said so emotional wrecked. " OK ma'am" he said and stood up.

[6/3, 15:05] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's POV

.

I cried myself to sleep, how could he?. How could he have said those things. It was like he was saying I should have died instead of Nina and summing it up, it made perfect sense to me. I cried until I ran out of tears, I can't remember the time I fell asleep but I was woken up by a knock on the door, I woke up feeling so confused. I checked the time it was 12 in the middle of the night, " who is it?" I asked getting out of the bed and walking towards the door, " it's

me ma'am" Samian said. I unlocked the door and opened, Salvatore was standing in the middle of the door. I pushed the door back, but his reflexes were faster than mine. He block the door and walked in forcefully. " I'm sorry" he said closing the door behind him. " You're sorry?" I asked looking straight in to his eyes. " I'm sorry" he repeated. " You shouldn't be, you shouldn't be sorry. At least now I know what you'd choose if you had a choice. You should be happy you poured your heart out, You know...anger and pain are my most favorite emotions. They make a person pour out what's in their hearts without sparing the other person. It's also the same as when you're drunk is drunk, out of mind" I said pouring myself a glass of water, I wasn't about to cry. Not Infront of him. I had cried enough already, I was fed up with my own tears. " I didn't mean all those things Cora, and as for choosing. You know I'd choose you without thinking twice. I shouldn't have said those things, I just wanted someone to blame and—..." And I was the perfect candidate for that part. What hurts the most here is the fact that I remember exactly how everything

happened. I remember you saying ' you can go out some other time' and then when I told you that Nina took Lore out you said ' as long as he's fine' I just don't know, I don't know which part... When did you tell me not to take Lore out. What's worse about all of this is the fact that I too feel that I should have been the one who died. I have this shallow guilt eating me up, I never used to believe that a person would die at the wrong time or for somebody else..." I said the drank my water. " Please forgive me, I'm sorry for breaking your heart. I'd do anything to have your forgiveness. I'm sorry" he said, the site of him disgusted me. " What's the point of all this, when you hate me so much. For the first time I saw hatred in your eyes, just tell me one thing. Did you love your baby mama so much, if you did then why wouldn't you just leave me alone and go back to her. I would have forgotten and forgiven you , she would be alive today. When I carry so much pain and sorrow within me why would you want to make me suffer more Salvatore?" I said. " You and I both know that I never loved Nina, I already had her when I searched for you. Why would I have searched for you then if I had

already found love?" He asked walking towards me. " I don't know, may lust got the best of you. Maybe you mistaken lust for love, who knows what's going on in that head of your" I said looking at him so frustrated. " I never loved Nina Cora!,yes I cared for her. She was the mother of my child" he shouted. " Don't you dare shout at me" I snapped pointing at him with my shaking finger. " I'm sorry" he said holding my shoulders, " don't, don't fucking touch me. I hate you Salvatore" I said angrily yanking his hands of my shoulders. " We both know that that's not true" he said, I started crying upon realising that he was right. I could never hate him, even if I prayed to God about it. " You always do this, you always hurt me and then you crawl back to apologize, you take my love for granted because you know that I'd forgive you... I'm human too Salvatore, you can't just play with my emotions. I'm not a doll, you can't just play with me and then put me back in the box. I just wish that someday I'd learn to hate you, you don't know how much I want to hurt you back. But I could never, I guess you're right about one thing. I can't and could never hate you...I don't ever want to see you ever

again. Get out of here and take your stupid bodyguards along with you." I shouted pushing him outside, he was unshakable." Get out Salvatore and don't ever come back here, I hate loving you" I shouted looking at him through teary eyes. " I'm leaving but the bodyguards as aren't going anywhere... I'll never give up trying. I love you" he said and that's when I slapped him. " You have no idea what love is, you hurt me so many times in the name of love. I hate you" I said, I was suddenly feeling light headed. I stumbled on my feet, he tried holding me. " Don't... please just leave. I'm begging you to leave" I begged putting my hands together. He finally left, I felt like puking and rushed to the bathroom...it was 1 am. I rinsed my mouth and face then went back to bed, I didn't sleep a wink. ' we both know that that's not true' his words kept ringing in my head. My heart was broken and bleeding, I could take any pain given to me but when it was him hurting me, my world just crumbled and shutter.

.

I was woken up by the ringing alarm, I dragged

myself to the bathroom and got ready for the hospital. My face was a bit swollen, mostly my eyes. I tried concealing everything with makeup, I wore jeans and a white t-shirt and fluffy indoors Boots. I combed my hair out, I look fine. Found four man on my door steps, they were all wearing suits. " Sir added another two bodyguards, meet Zakes and Conor" Samian said, i haven't even asked him a thing. And I didn't dare to, I walked down the corridor to the elevator with them by my side. You'd swear I was the country's president or his daughter, life couldn't get any worse. The other two were driving the other AMG black cars at the back and front of the car I was in. Every body had their eyes on us, the bodyguards would follow me everywhere i went. They'd check the inside of the bathroom before I even walked in. " Cora, these are for you" the receptionist said as I walked walked by. " Is it?" I asked faintly smiling. " Your husband is so romantic" she said giving me a box of chocolates and a bunch of red tulips. I read the note. " Please find it in your heart to forgive me" it said. " Who said these were from my husband?" I asked. " He personally

delivered them" the old woman said. " You can have both of these, throw the flowers away if you're allergic to them" I said then walked away. For the whole week, it was the same old shit, and my reaction was always the same. Then on Friday. I decided to go to Amanda's, funny enough the bodyguards weren't questioning my demands and commands. They drove me to Michael's mansion. I checked in with the security guards. They let us in after calling inside. I got out of the car, " please send in my bags" I said to Dumisani and Samian. " Finally, you remember that you had a friend called Amanda" Amanda said ascending from the staircases. She looked pissed off, had her arms folded around her chest. " I'm sorry, it's just that i—..." Hey what's wrong, did I offend you. I'm sorry, why are you crying" she asked holding my face on both sides. I hugged her, I just wanted someone to hold me tightly and tell me that everything was going to be fine. " Shhh... it's okay, don't cry" she said patting my back. I needed that, I needed a friend. A little bit of kindness and love. I pulled out after a while. " I'm sorry, I can be dramatic sometimes. That was unnecessary" I said

wiping away my tears and smiling faintly. " You're the least dramatic person i know, if you cry then definitely there's something up. Why are you crying, Lorenzo was discharged a day ago. He looked fine, don't tell me you're crying because of that dead witch Nina." She said, I didn't even know that Lore was released. " Ma'am, your bags" Dumisani and Samian said walking in with my suitcase, a sleep over bag and toiletry bag. " What's going on here, your bags. Did Salvatore kick you out, are you guys getting a divorce. What happened, is he the reason why you're crying, I'm going to kill that son of a bitch, just tell me" she kind of shouted. " Can I stay with you for a while, I'll move out when I find a flat in town" I asked. " Of course you can stay with us for as long as you want. You're my family, come" she said pulling me upstairs. " Nelly, Nelly" she called out and her maid came running. " Yes ma'am" she said in a respectful manner. " Follow us with my friend's bags" she said. " Yes ma'am" the woman said. " You must be tired, I'll run you a bubbly bath. Light up the candles and play you some nice piano music" she said already walking towards the bathroom. "

Amanda that won't be necessary and I'll doubt that it'll work" I said sighing heavily. " Trust me, it always works like magic" she said then walked in. She did just that, I got into the bathingtub full of Luke warm water and bubbles. " Where's your husband" I asked as she was lightining up the candles. " He's working on some important case, he comes home late these days" she said. " And Leo" I asked. " He's sleeping" she said. " Lie back" she said putting a towel to support my neck and the she played music on the small speak connected to her phone. " Try to relax, think of something beautiful and calm. A place of serendipity, a bed of roses. The Sea breeze hitting your skin beautifully" she said switching off the lights. " Imagine yourself floating in the middle of the Sea, the son rays kissing your Skin so tenderly and soothingly. Think of yourself wearing a beautiful white dress running in the middle of a garden of white Rose, freely and happy. Laughing..." She kept on saying softly until I fell asleep. For the first time in a while I slept well and soundly. I slept like a baby, had beautiful the most beautiful dream ever, funny enough it was about babies. I woke up feeling cold in

the morning, still in the bathtub. " I got out of the tube after washing my body thoroughly. I wasn't about to take a bath when I woke up in water already I wiped my body and moisturised it then wore my PJs and gown, I was planning on staying in door anyways. I was so hungry, like starving. I went downstairs, where I found Amanda and Michael kissing. " Good morning guys" I said folding my arms and Leaning on the door frame. " Ohh Cora, Mandy told me you're here" Michael said as if he was a kid caught stealing sugar, I just chuckled. " I hope you don't mind me staying here for a while" I said looking at him. " No, not at all. I have to go"he said then kissed Amanda on the forehead. " I'll see you later, I dig you" he said then walked out. " My hands and feet are wrinkled, you let me sleep in water?" I said walking inside the kitchen. " You seemed so peaceful, I didn't want to disturb you" she said. " Whatever you did last night, it worked and I am going to pay you to do it again" I said opening the refrigerator. " You're insane" she said chuckling. I took out chicken wings, baked chips, Burger, yoghurt and strawberries and then bread. " you're going to

eat all that?" She asked. " I'm starving, I haven't eaten anything for the past five days. " I said taking out the frying pan. " would you like a some" I asked looking at her as she set on the high chair. " No, I'm skipping breakfast. I'm on some diet, I'm sure Leo would appreciate some though. That kid can really eat" she said. " Good morning auntie Cora" Leo screamed waltzing inside the kitchen, I got startled a bit. " Whoa, good morning Buddy" I said turning around and pulling his cheeks. " Leo, I said no running around the house" Amanda said sternly, " sorry mommy" he said sulking and turning on his feet. " That was uncalled for" I said looking at Amanda, one eyebrow raised. " What, he almost broke a leg because of this running of his. He's so hyper" she said. " He's a kid" I said getting back to what I was doing. " You just have a soft spot for kids, he's fine. He'll get over it, you'll see him running in here 10 minutes later" she said, I chuckled softly." do you want to talk about it?" She asked, I knew exactly what she meant. " No infact, tell me everything. What happened?" She asked. " What's there to tell, I bet Salvatore already told you everything" I said sighing

heavily. " Your husband told us nothing, all he said was that Nina died and his son was in the hospital. That's all, I didn't even know that you guys aren't on ya terms. Maybe his told his boy friends" she said. " Can I finish preparing my breakfast first, we can talk about it over breakfast" I said turning around to look at her. She nodded, 30 minutes later I was done preparing my breakfast, I served Leo and I. Amanda searched for the hyperactive Leo and gave him his breakfast, which I even doubted he was going to eat. " What happened?" She asked closing the kitchen door. I was sitting on a high chair having my scrumptious breakfast. She set opposite to me. I explained everything to her, " I didn't even know that she was driving your car, this means that whoever was driving that stupid truck, wanted you dead" she said. " And Salvatore blames you for this... How could he, how was you supposed to know that such tragedy would struck" she asked angrily. " I don't...I don't blame him, I mean if I drove Lorenzo out for ice cream then Nina would still be alive today. I should have been the one to die, what's the point of living anyways. My life is meaningless, every time when I

start to believe that my happily ever after has come. Things like these starts to happen, my life is like a merry go round. I walk a thousand miles but always End up on square one" i said looking up, " Hey don't say that, things are not that bad. It was her time to meet the heavens, the fact that Salvatore called on the last minutes means that it wasn't your time to die yet, stop crying over spilt milk. You always say that, please don't cry on me. Or else I'll end up crying too, you have a lot of things to live and look forward to." She said making me smile a bit. " Things like What Amanda. I have nothing to live for, no reason at all" I said chuckling. " Hey!, There are a lot of reasons why you should hold on to life. You still have a degree to finish and then after that your honours, Lore is the reason why you should hold on. Don't you want to see him go to school, his first day at school. I'm sure you don't want to miss that, besides his mother asked you to look after him. You have a lots of lives to save, like you always wanted to. Make your Mama proud, forget about what hurts you. Just focus on the good things, the things that makes you happy." She said, " that's the thing Amanda, He

makes me happy. Salvatore makes me happy and right now I don't think I ever want to see his face and Lorenzo is his son. To spare the both of us, I'm staying away." I said, so frustrated. " You're hurt and angry right now. You need some time alone, to think. You're not thinking straight, you can't leave Lore alone. That kid is your son, I swear heavens brought him to earth just for you. Nina might have given birth to him but you're his mother. Right now you should be there taking care of him, he needs his mother. He's in a lot of pain right now, you should have seen the bandages. Such a small kid, he didn't deserve that. The entire time I was there, he kept on asking for you. He kept on asking for his mommy—..."

Excuse me" I said standing up and leaving, I didn't even finish my breakfast. " Cora? Where are you going" she called after me. I went to the guest room I was sleeping in and locked myself inside. I Cried my lungs out. Looking at Lorenzo's pictures. I thought of calling Petunia so that she could give Lore the phone but then I thought against the idea. I just wanted the pain to go away, I wanted to stay away, be alone. After hours, I heard a knock on my

door. "Who's there?" I asked getting out of bed. " It's Micheal" I heard him say. I opened up. " Can I come in?" He asked, " sure" i said opening the door widely. He was carrying a tray of dinner Standing up with a tray. " If it's going to be of any help to you, the truck driver is dead. Although he didn't reveal The Don's whereabouts, he confessed that he was working for him." He said then left, I decided to take a shower,then wore my long comfortable PJs and gown. It was winter and I was feeling a bit cold. I went downstairs, bumped into Amanda with a tray of tea in her hands. " You shouldn't have done that, I was going to make my own tea" I said taking the tray from her. " Your fucking husband asked us to take good care of you. Stupid ass, as if he cares. And I wonder what makes him thinks that I wouldn't take care of my own sister, dumbass. You and I have been through a lot together, the mother fucke—..." OK, I've heard enough. Please let's not talk about him." I said after she kept going on and on. " Sorry, my blood just boils. I hate it when you're hurting, nothing and know one should dare to hurt such a kind soul" she said as we were walking towards the

sitting room. "Do you have any idea what happened to my bodyguards" I asked really curious. They keep on changing shift, since you're here and the security is tight I guess he ordered them to do so. " OK, thank you for the tea" I said sitting down on the couch. " Is that your way of saying I should leave" she asked sitting down. " No, no at all. But shouldn't you be in bed with your husband" I whispered the last part, " what for, he's putting Leo to bed anyways. Leo is not that easy, I still have three or two hours to spare. He stole a chocolate bar earlier on, wait until you here Michael scream in frustration" she said. " Is it me or you really talk a lot more than before?" I asked frowning. "I'll pretend as if I didn't hear that, Let me go and make myself a cup of coffee and then we could watch a movie" she said standing up...we watched a movie while having tea. It did me some good talking to Amanda, it was refreshing. I went to bed around 22pm. Fell asleep as soon as I got undercovers. I was woken up by a knock on the door, I dragged myself there and opened up." Hey, sorry to wake you up so early. I just wanted to let you know that we're going to the funeral. Don't panic when you

don't see us around. I love you, Bye" Amanda said the kissed my cheek. She was wearing black, from head to toe. I shut the door and went back to bed. Even though I couldn't fall asleep, my phone?. The last time I saw my phone...it was somewhere in my handbag,switched off. I went to the closet where I found my bags, unpacked. I had laundry to do. I took my laptop which was in It's white back in my suitcase. Took my handbag and searched for my phone and charger. I charged both my phone and laptop, washed my face and mouth then went downstairs to do my laundry which was in my sleep over bag. It's was just a few white towels and tracksuits. Two hours later I was done, I decided to iron everything and packed them back into the bag, I went back upstairs. Bumped into Nelly who had a mop and bucket In her hands. " Good morning Mrs Salvatore" she greeted me. " Just Cora, could I maybe help you with the cleaning" I asked after taking a few more steps upstairs. " No ma'am, I can't allow you. Mrs Sullivan would fire me." She said seriously. " Come on she wouldn't know" I said smiling a bit. " Ma'am, I have four kids back at home

and—..." Okay I get it, forget that I even asked" I said feeling so embarrassed. " Mrs Salvatore, did you get your delivery" she asked. " What delivery?" I asked walking back down. " There are flowers in the kitchen, I guess there are two bunches now. One from yesterday evening and today morning" she said as we were walking towards the kitchen. There was yet again another apology card and white teddy bear and chocolates " You can keep the roses and give this to one of your kids" I said after tearing up the two cards. " Thank you" she said excitedly. I went upstairs and took a shower, I was looking at myself in the mirror when it hit me. I found myself wearingMy black leather pencil skirt, a black blouse and heels and watch. I put on a bit of makeup and left my hair loose. " Take me to the green lands cemetery, please" I said to the two bodyguards standing at the door way. " Yes ma'am" one of them said.

[6/3, 15:05] Lynne: Page 73

Narrated

.

There was a short service, which took place in the nearest church and then the corpse was driven to the green lands cemetery for burial. It was just close friends and Nina's mother there, there were two or three of Nina's friend. Salvatore saw it fit that Lore must be present there, to say goodbye to his mother. Even though the poor child was confused, he was confused as to why people were crying. Especially Nina mom's mother as he used to call her. Everybody was wearing black, Salvatore and Lore wearing similar suits. Lorenzo still had bandages on his body, the wounds were healing just fine. his father was wearing glasses, holding his tiny little hand. They were watching as the casket went down the the ground. Salvatore noticed Cora as he looked across the grave. She did her best to avoid looking at him, although she could feel his eyes on him. Lorenzo's small hand kept on slipping away from Alonzo's, Alonzo got the message loud and clear, he let go of Lore and he ran to his mother's side. He kept on screaming 'mommy'. " Mom, I missed you" he said reaching for Cora's hand. Cora picked him up, " I missed you too, but we mustn't make noise now.

Shhh" he said and the little kid was just happy and excited to finally see his mother. They said they good Byes to Nina khumalo, Cora silently shed a few tears. She walked away as the priest was saying his last prayer. " Mom, why are you crying. Even Dad was crying, he said that Nina mom is going to heaven. He said it's a happy place, she'll meet the Angels and God" he said, so childishly and naive. " I'm happy for her, that's why, that's why I am crying. These are tears of joy" Cora lied wiping away her tears. They went to sit in the car, while watching the grave digger covering the grave. " Dad says he misses you too, why didn't you come home this weekend?" Lorenzo asked looking up at his mother. " How are your wounds, are you still in pain?" Cora asked checking him out and also avoiding his question. " you know it used to hurt big, Papa said I shouldn't cry. I'm a big man, like you always say. I don't cry anymore, even if it hurts. He made me drink the sweetest juice in a little bottle. He says it for the pain, it makes me feel sleepy.. " He explained everything that was going on back home. Cora didn't say anything after that, she was just looking at the

bubbly Lorenzo. " Mom, are you coming home with me and Papa?" Lorenzo asked. " I think you should go back to your Papa now" Cora said, looking at the people approaching their cars. " I need to leave, I'll meet you some other time" Cora said. " Can I come with you, please?" He pleased with his cutest smile. " Pretty please" he added. " I can't, I can't take you along Lorenzo. I'm going to school tomorrow, go back to your Papa. I can't take you along with me" she said, so disheartened. Emotions splitting into two. " Mommy, please. I want to go with you" Lore pleaded, in verge of crying. He had that kind of face kids make when they're about to cry. " I'll take you with me, some other time. Right now I really can't, please don't cry. Try to understand my helplessness, I don't—..." You can't expect a three year old kid to understand" . She heard Salvatore say, she looked up and he was standing near the car. The window was opened. She just looked at him without saying anything. Her heart started pounding, it betrayed her so easily. Couldn't it understand that he was angry with that man. That she wanted not to see him, that he had broke it a couple of times before. Couldn't

her heart understand pain and heart. How was it that it gets broken but still manages to love so helplessly. She finally broke their locked eyes. " He's your son too, you can take her where you live. I'll fetch him later" he said, looking at her. If only she could give him one more chance, give them one more chance together. She looked at little bit thin than the last time she saw him, he wondered if she was eating or starving herself. " I'll go and get his medication in my car" he said then left. He came back a few minutes later, " I'll see you later buddy, take care of your mother" he said waving at them. " I love you Papa" Lore said happily." I love you too" Alonzo said but his eyes were on y, who wasn't looking at him but she zcould feel his eyes on her. " Let's go" she said to be bodyguards. They rolled up the windows and drove off.

.

Cora's POV

.

Leo, Lore and I were watching an animation in my

laptop, on bed while having snacks. Lying on our stomachs. " Is the shark going to eat her?" Leo asked, he was cute. Talked a lot. He kept on asking. " Argh, shut up Leo man" Lore said irritated. He was so concentrated on the movie. " Auntie, did you hear him. He's rude, I'll tell mom" Leo said sulking. " That was rude Lore, don't ever say that. Leo doesn't like it" I said calmly. " But mum, he's so loud. I want to listen" he said . " I get that, but that's no excuse for your rudeness. How about this, Leo you stop asking questions and listen to the movie and Lore, you stop being so rude to Leo. You guys are friends right?" I asked and they nodded. " Good friends don't fight with each other, let there be peace.... now let's watch the movie" I said. We watched the movie, well they ended up falling asleep, I took my bags from the closet. Left most of my clothes in the closet, I took the suitcase, laptop, toiletry bag and handbag. Leaving my sleeping over bag. It was 5pm, Nelly and Amanda were preparing dinner as I passed by. " You're leaving already?" Amanda wiping her hands and walking towards me. " Yeah, actually I have a lot of studying to do." I said. " But I've cooked a lot of

food, I thought you'd have dinner with us. And why are you always on your books, you're taking residency." She said, looking so disappointed and upset. " Amanda, you know how it is with medicine. There's really never a day off, there are a lot of prescribed books. I need to study, I've taken many off already. I need to be on my A game. I'd rather be way too ahead then slack behind. Beside, I gotta pass by Salvatore's house and drop Lore..I want to get to my apartment before 7pm" I explained gentle. " I get it, it's just that. I thought we were going to have dinner together before you leave..." She said sighing softly. " Maybe you could spare a few minutes of your time tomorrow and bring me lunch." I suggested. " We'll see, I'll see" she said then we hugged. " Tell your husband I said goodbye and he mustn't work so hard. He might end up losing you over some lesbian out there" I said, she just giggled. " Hey, Lethu was the first and last girl for me. I prefer a dick over a dildo" she said. " Euw, TMI dude" I said dramatically. I uploaded my bags and took Lore into the car. He was sleeping and the bodyguards drove us to Salvatore's house. Lorenzo woke up on our

way there. I got out with his medication bag and him, I rang the doorbell a few times before someone opened up. " Ohh Cora" Salvatore said emerging from the door. " You didn't come so I thought I should drop off Lore. Here are his medications" I said giving him the bag. " I was going to come, I didn't expect you to go back so early" he said glancing at his wrist watch. " Yeah, I have a lot of catching up to do... I'll see you soon. Ok" I said looking at Lore after putting him down. " Don't go mommy" Lore said. " I have to go, I'm working tomorrow and I also need to study. I'll see you next weekend, I'll call. We'll video chat." I said squinting down in front of him. "I actually prepared sea food, it's a little bit too much for two. So I was wondering if maybe you'd like to have dinner with us" Salvatore said, I looked up at him. He was actually wearing an apron and had a cloth on his shoulder. " Yes mom, have dinner with us" Lorenzo said before I could answer. " Lorenzo I ca—..." Pretty please mommy" he pleaded, I couldn't have said no to that facial expression. " Okay but then after that I'll leave" I said standing up." you'll leave" Salvatore said, " yey, yey" Lore screamed waltzing inside the house.

" Whatever your plan is, it's not going to work" I said pacing Salvatore by the door. He had a smirk on his face.

.

He was dishing up for the three of us, the food looked mouth watering. I started eating before he could even finish dishing up. " Mommy, stop it" Lore said giggling so happily. " What, I can't wait any longer" I said digging in. Alonzo was helping Lore with peeling off the skin of the prawns and stuff. " It's yum mommy" Lore asked looking at me. We were sitting on the high chairs around the kitchen counter island. " It's delightful and mouth watering" I said smiling at him. " I can tell from the way you're closing your eyes and moaning" Salvatore said looking at me across the counter. Our eyes locked, I looked away first but could still feel his eyes piercing through my skin. " Did you receive my cards" he asked, " I did and gave them away." I said looking at my food. " And?" He asked Eyebrows raised. " And... Can I have my dinner I peace. One of my favorite sounds these days is silence" I said glancing at him.

" OK then" he said sighing. We had our dinner in silence after that, I was the first one to finish my meal. " Shall I ?" Salvatore asked picking up the bowl. He was asking if he could dish up for me. "No, I'm full" I lied. " I insist" he said then dished up for me. I suddenly had this foreign appetite. I ate, " are you going to be staring at me the entire time" I asked after I caught him staring at me. " If staring at my beautiful wife is crime then please, somebody call the police" he said, I couldn't have missed the compliment there by I managed to ignore his flirting self. " Mom, I'm done eat. Come let's watch Masha and the Bear" Lore said getting off the chair and coming to my side. He pulled my hand. " Come mommy" he said pulling my hand, " Lorenzo" I whined following him. " I'll bring you guys dessert" Salvatore said behind us. Lore made me sit on the couch, covered both of us with a shawl. " It's cold" he said opening the cartoon channel.. " here you go" Salvatore said offering me a side plate of Duff cake with whip cream and strawberries. " Thanks" i said taking the plate and fork. " This one is for you buddy" he said giving Lore his, he put the tray on the table

and took his. He set down and pulled the shawl to cover his legs. " So what are we watching here" Salvatore asked sitting comfortably on the couch. We were all snuggled up together, Lore In between us. "Masha and the Bear Papa" Lore said excitedly. " Masha is always troubling bear, don't you think she's noisy and a little bit of a rascal" I asked Lore who just giggled. " She's a handsome rascal Mom" he said. " She's a girl, she's a pretty rascal" I said chuckling. We watched the cartoon while I kept on talking with Lore, my tummy was so full and I was feeling sleepy. Lorenzo fell asleep on my thigh, I was brushing his hair. My eyes suddenly feeling tired and worn out. " I'll take him to his room" Salvatore said picking him up. I watched as he walked away with him. I dragged my feet to the nearest room to use the bathroom.

.

" Hey, wake up" I heard somebody shake me. I pulled the covers over my head," leave me alone" I murmured. " You're going to be late, I'll get the blame for that. Get up Cora" the person said loudly. I set up

straight, " why did you have to shout" I asked, almost crying. I opened up my eyes and I was I'm my marital bed with Salvatore. " Shit, I slept here. How, you dragged my food didn't you. Don't tell me we, don't tell me you and I..." I said getting out of bed swiftly. " We didn't fuck if that's what you're asking, even if we did. We're married Cora. You're my wife" he said, I was looking around. I was wearing his white t-shirt. " Hold it right there, who gave you the right to undress me...you know I can get you arrested for invasion of privacy" I said. " Invasion of privacy?, Come on" he said chuckling unbelievably. " YES, invasion of privacy and trespassing" I said. " You're still crazy, if we fuck then yeah maybe we could talk about trespassing and right now you have 15 minutes to get ready if you don't want to be late" he said looking at the wall watch. " How did i exactly end up in your bed, if I remember correctly I had gone to the bathroom and then I was to go after finishing my business there" I said seriously . " I found you passed out on the toilet seat, I tried to wake you up but you were so stubborn so I picked you up and brought you to bed" he said. " Ohh how kind of you" I

said sarcastically smiling. " When you look at me, do you see a fool?. I'm sure you drugged me, let's say you didn't. If you did try to wake me up then I would have woken up. I bet you just picked me up and carried me to your bed and now I'm running late. I'll be questioned since I didn't check in, do you know how this residency program is strict?" I asked looking into his eyes. " Okay, you're right about one thing. I didn't try to wake you up. I just picked you up, you looked so tired. I didn't think that another road drive would do you any good. You looked so peaceful and i didn't want to disturb you" he said. I'm sorry if I —..." Spare me, I don't want to hear it. " I said walking into the bathroom. " Cora, stop doing this" I heard him say behind me. I took a quick shower, wiped my body and dressed up. My bags were still in the car I guessed. " So, what happened to my bodyguards?" I asked. " I gave them food and rooms to sleep in. They're probably waiting for you outside. " He said. I finished fixing my hair, no makeup. I Left the room, found my bag on the kitchen counter where I had left it. " Cora...I love you" he called out after me as I was walking towards the

door, I turned around to face him. He was standing on the staircases when he said those words. I looked at him for a few seconds then opened the door to leave. I wish I could have just swallowed my all the negative emotions I had against him and said those words back. Which I sometimes think that people utter them just for the sake of uttering them. But not him, he wasn't the one to write text messages Early in the morning saying I love you and then in the evening and then in the afternoon and then at night, whenever he said those three words there was always this unfathomable look in his eyes. So then why didn't I believe him sometimes or maybe i did, just that fear got the best of me. I had a lot of doubts in my mind. I had a lot of what ifs and whys . Everything felt so right and so really, it sometimes scared me. It was almost too good to be true, I got to the hospital just in time. That day I was help one patient give birth, another who had infection. Under supervision of course and with the help of qualified nurses. And then I ran through some few patient's files. I was a tiresome Monday , Amanda didn't make it but she promised to see me

on Tuesday. She had no classes then. I was in the co
joined library studying, my phone on silence. I had
two bars of PS by my side. Which I wanted so badly
badly but suddenly lost my appetite. Right then I
wanted vanilla ice cream. " Good evening Mrs
Salvatore" Dr Francis whispered joining me on the
table. It was almost 8:30pm. My bodyguards were
standing six feet away. " Hi "I said shortly. " Can I join
you" he asked. I signalled for him to sit down smiling
a bit, though it was forced. His perfume was
intoxicated me badly, I couldn't breath freely. That
felt strange because I'd been around Dr Francis
before and it never happened. " What are you
reading?" He asked. I showed him the cover page of
the book, he nodded. " How is your husband?" He
asked me, I looked at him. So annoyed, he was
disturbing my peace. Asking me rubbish, his
appearance disgusted me. " I wouldn't know, excuse
me. I was leaving anyways" I said packing my things
In my hand bag. I was wearing my winter PJs and
gown. I asked to check out with the book From the
bookkeeper... I was was in the elevator when my
phone vibrated. It was Salvatore when I checked the

caller ID. " YES" I answered, ready for war. "Whoa, your son wants to talk to you." He exclaimed. " Give him the phone then" I said rolling my eyes.i heard shuffling on the other side. " Mom" Lore said as if he had been crying. " What's wrong Baby?" I asked...we talked, he was crying because he didn't see me leave and I didn't saying goodbye, he wanted to come over but he father said it was late. Anyways we talked and I offered to read him a bedtime story through the phone. " He's sleeping, thanks" Salvatore said after an hour. " No need to thank me, I'm his mother too" I said sighing softly. " Can I ask you something?" He asked anyways. " Make it quick" I said calmly. " What did Nina say to you before, before she..." He asked. " She told me to tell you that she forgives you" I said. " That's all?" He asked. " That's all you need to know" I said. " Oh okay" he said. And then There was silence. " I gotta go, kiss Lore good night for me" I said. " What about me" he asked. " Good night Salvatore" I said then hung up.

.

Amanda called me, saying that she was in the

reception. Waiting for me, I gave her directions as to where I was..." So you're hiding in the ladies room because you're avoiding some unimportant nerd" Amanda asked after I told her about what transpired last night in the library. " Geez, keep your voice down, will you" I asked looking around. " Come on, no body is around. You can chill. Besides, I don't consider what you said offensive in any way. There's a restaurant across the street, I'm taking you there for lunch" she said pulling my hand. " Amanda, please" I pleaded, I really didn't want to face Dr Francis. " Cora, we're not in high school anymore. We're adult's now, please start behaving like one" she said firmly. " Okay fine but can I take these off first?" I asked. I was wearing hospital blue garments. " You look just fine, I'm starving let's go please" she said. " Argh, you're just impossible. Anyways we walked across the street, thank God I believe didn't bump into him. We placed are orders and while chatting over starters which was garlic bread and butter and cups of coffee. " For how long will you keep doing this?" She asked me. " Doing what?" I asked frowning. " Come on you know what I'm talking about...the run

and chase game that you're playing with your husband?" She asked. " He started this, I'm going to end it" I said. " What are you going to do, get a divorce?. We both know that you've already forgiven him so why not just let him know and end all of this" she said. " Look I get that he hurt you, not once but a several times before. He says mean things he doesn't mean, the poor guy is losing his mind here. " She added. " I thought you were on my side" I said. " I'm on your side that's what I am telling you this. You can't stay angry forever" she said." Says who?...he wanted to dead Amanda, Me... His wife. I wish I could hurt him harder than he hurt me" I said boiling up inside. " Trust me you already did, you're doing it right now. You'd find him looking into space sometimes. He mentions your name in every topic, I know that he's a jerk but he loves you and I doubt that a guy who'd do anything to save you would want you dead sometime. Just talk to him once and fix things, for the sake of the three of you" she said. Our order came and we ate, I ordered another cup of coffee. " That's what my Dad used to do to my aunt, he'd save her only to hit her again" I said, thinking out

loud" don't ever make the mistake of comparing your evil father with Alonzo, he'd never hurt you like that...Lorenzo needs both of his parents, together and I know that you're not ready to leave your husband. Just do me a favor, go back home" she said. " Not yet, he needs to feel the heat. If he has lost weight then he needs to lose more. " I said sipping on my coffee. " OK fine but take too long" she said." you eat a lot one of these days, are you sure you're not pregnant" she asked after I ordered a second plate of lunch. " Me, pregnant?. That's impossible, I've made peace with the fact that I'll never have kids" I said chuckling. " Is it?" She asked frowning. I looked at her frowning, " when was the last time you went on your menstrual periods then?" She asked and it hit me that the month before it didn't happen, " I, I, it was... even if I missed a month, so what. It used to happen before, It's nothing new" I said casually. " Only tests can really tell" she said. " Amanda please, let's not talk about this. I am not doing any tests, I few weeks ago I was so desperate...I just don't want to get my hopes up. My lunch break is over,i have to go" I said standing up. "

But Cora—..." I have to go, Bye. Thank you for lunch" I said standing up and leaving. Talking about pregnancy just got me upset. I finished working and went back to my apartment, so tired. I took a nap as soon as I got there

.

I was woken up by a my ringing phone, I took my bag and searched for it. " Amanda" I said answering. " I'm sorry if I offended you,i didn't mean to" she said. " It's fine, I guess I overreacted too" I said. " We good?" She asked. " Yeah, why wouldn't we be" I asked smiling. " You know I used to hate Michael's Cologne when I was carrying Leo, I also ate a lot, some people just disgusted me for no reason. There's no harm in taking a pregnancy test, I still think that you're pregnant" she said. " Not this again, Amanda. I told you I'm not pregnant, it's just not possible. I can't remember the last time I had sex, please just drop this" I said holding my calm. " Okay fine" she said. " Let's not talk about this topic, It's very..." I couldn't finish. " I get it, good night" she said. " Okay, goodnight. I love you" I said smiling. " I love you" she

said then hung up. I got out of bed and went to take a shower, I can rushing to the door when I heard a knock. I had a towel wrapped around my head and body. I opened the door only to find Salvatore standing outside. I turned on my feet and left him there, " can I come in" he asked. " If you want" I said taking my PJs from the wardrobe. I dressed up, he closed the door behind him and set on the bed. He had a plastic bag in his hand. " What's that?" I asked moisturizing my face and hands. I then wore my white socks and sleepers. " I brought you some food and vanilla ice cream" he said. " Vanilla ice cream, isn't too cold for ice cream" I asked frowning, how did he know that I wanted vanilla ice cream so badly. " Well you can keep it until summer time" he said shrugging. " I figured since it has been two week's without you having it, you must be really missing it. So..." He said. " Thanks, what brings you here" I asked opening the plastic bag from restaurant Paradisé. There were two takeaway of sea food and a container of ice-cream. The food was still warm, I went over to the small shelve near the sink to take out a plate. I offloaded the food from the plastic

containers to my plate. " Please come back home Cora, I can't take this anymore. I am going out of my mind, what must I do for you to see how sorry I am. I've apologized a couple of times already but you just wouldn't budge" he said standing up. " I was thinking of getting myself a flat, I mean Lore can come to see me on weekends and then go back to you on weekdays. It's a—..." You want to move out?, You can't do that to us Cora. What about our marriage, you can't just give up on us just like that" he said walking towards me. I was sitting on a couch around the sitting table. " I need a break Salvatore, I need a break from you. I think we both do, you definitely need one. Let's just take a time out " I said sighing. " I don't need any stupid time out, I don't need or want a break. I just need my wife back home" he kinda snapped. " You see what I mean, you get mad and lash everything out on me. I don't want that for myself, things could get worse then verbal abuse" I said looking at him. " ...verbal abuse?, When you look at me do you see a man who's capable of hitting a woman?" He asked looking so hurt. " You strangled Nina before once, so that's out of question" I said

looking anywhere but him. " Wow, I never thought I'd live to hear this from you" he said unbelievably. " Then maybe you're right, maybe we do need a break or maybe we need more than a break" he said then walked out. Hurting him should have eased my mind or gave me satisfaction of some sort but it didn't. It's just left me feeling guilty instead, feeling so bad. I just wanted to make him feel how it felt like to be hurt, like he always did with his words. Maybe I took things too far, I put my food in the refrigerator and had my ice cream instead. It made me a little bit better. I studied for two to three hours then went back to bed. Another week went by just like that and yes Salvatore stopped sending me flowers and I wasn't happy about it. I went back to Amanda's for the weekend again. I messaged Alonzo, asking him to send Lorenzo to Michael's place on Saturday. Him and I haven't talked ever since that night. He didn't reply to my message but at least he got it. " No, don't drink that. Women in your condition don't drink wine" Amanda exclaimed retrieving the bottle of wine from my hand, along with the glass. " What's wrong with Cora, is she sick. Are you dying, if you're dying then

Kong must know about it. You can't keep this information from him, cancer is a very dangerous disease" Michael said, almost panicking. " Have this" Amanda said offering me a glass of juice. " I'm not dying, what's wrong with you people. Your wife thinks that I'm pregnant and you think that i have Cancer. Geez, come on" I said throwing the napkin on the table and leaving. " Cora, come back and finish your food. For the baby's sake" Amanda called out after me. I was so angry with her, I went upstairs and took a shower. Wore my PJs and sleepers and gown. "I got you these." Amanda said walking into my room without knocking. " I get that this is your house but please do knock before walking in.i need my privacy, you could have found me in a really sticky situation" I said angrily. " Sticky situation like what, you banging with the coffee table or finger fucking yourself?" she asked giggling. I just stared at her, so crossed. " OK, sorry. Geez you're so moody these days. You can't even catch a joke" she said offloaded the plastic bag. And then boom a thousand pregnancy tests came out, " what is this?" I asked, getting really angry and tired. " Just pick one

and pee on it, I promise i'll be out of your business after that" she said. " Really?" I asked frowning. " Really" she said. " Right now I'd do anything to get you off my hair" I said taking one pregnancy test and walked in and bathroom. I peed on it, she was watching me the whole time. " Why do you so doubt that you'd ever get pregnant?" She asked while we waited for the pregnancy test to reveal the truth. " I had a long day, I'm tired. All I want to do is go to bed free hearted. Please, let's not talk about this" I said sighing. "This thing is taking too long, I'm going to bed." I said washing my hands and exiting the bathroom. She followed me a few minutes later, I was undercovers. She had her hands crossed around her chest. " I told you, I am not pregnant. I hope you're satisfied right now." I said then layed down. " Have a look at this" she said smiling. I set upright and took the pregnancy test. " I'm going to be an aunt, Cora. You're going to be a mother" she screamed. I looked at the pregnancy test one more time, it had two lines. " I'm going to be a mother?" I said holding my chest. " You're going to be a mother!" She screamed jumping up and down the

bed. " I'm going to be a mother!" I started screaming along with her. " what happened, Are you guys OK?" Michael asked walking in, " Cora is going to be a mother, she's pregnant. I told you didn't I" Amanda said excitedly. " Is it, congratulation, finally" Michael said and then walked out. " And stop screaming" he said peeping through the door. He then walked out and closed it again. " Salvatore should hear this, he'll be so happy" Amanda said taking out her phone. " Salvatore" I murmured sitting down. " Hey, what's wrong" Amanda said sitting down too. " I don't think he'd...I said so many hurtful things to him, we fought and he was so hurt. A lot was said...he mustn't find out, not now" I said stuttering all the way. " He has to know, he has the right. Even if you fought and wrestled the baby has got nothing to do with this. You must tell him, just mend things " she said way too loudly. And then the doorbell rang. " I don't think I want to be pregnant, not right now. I think that Salvatore wants to divorce me, he mustn't know. I don't want to hold him back, I don't want to trap him with this baby" I said, " stop talking nonsense and stop thinking so hard, you're stressing the baby man"

She said so angrily. " Cora, Lorenzo is here" I heard Michael call out for me. I went to wash my face in the bathroom then went downstairs with Mandy. " Mommy" Lore screamed running towards me. " Hey Pal, I thought you'd come here by tomorrow. Who brought you here so late at night" I asked picking him up while we walked towards the sitting room. " Papa did, aunt Mandy where's is Leo" he asked. " He's sleeping, shouldn't you be in bed right now" Mandy asked. " I was sleeping but Papa woke me up" he said. " So where's your father?" Mandy asked. " He's out side with uncle Michael" he said. We set on the couch, I had a lot going on in my head. It was starting to get hot. " Mandison" Salvatore said greeting Amanda. " Really Mr Muscles? , I thought we buried that Nick name" Mandy said eyebrows raised. " I guess I missed the funeral" he said, everyone laughed except for me. I was just looking at him the entire time they talked and laughed. Lorenzo was laughing too even though I doubt he caught the joke they were sharing. They set down and opened the television, watched a movie while talking. I was sitting there, hearing everything faintly.

" Excuse me" I said then rushed to the nearest room. I felt like vomiting, so dizzy. I rinsed my mouth. Then walked back to the sitting room, " are you OK?" Amanda asked looking at me so worried. " Yeah I'm fine, I just have an upset stomach." I said faking a smile. " I'll put Lore to bed. come" Amanda said picking up Lore. " You're so heavy, you joined a gym didn't you. Look at all the muscles" Amanda said to Lore, who kept on laughing until I couldn't hear or see him. " Let me go and make us all cups of hot chocolate, it's a bit chilly tonight" Michael said standing up. " I was actually planning on going to bed early tonight so good night. Tell Amanda I said good night" I said standing up. I was actually avoiding being alone with Alonzo. " Ohh, I thought we'd all watch a movie together" Michael said looking between us. " I'm not feeling well, I'll have to take a rain check" I said then walked away. I could feel Alonzo's eyes on me. Do you know that feeling that someone is watching you so you have to perfect your walk. I went into the bathroom as soon as I got into my room. I was brushing my teeth and moisturised my face and hands Infront of the

dressing table which was in the room. I took off the gown and put it on the couch. I found myself lifting my top and running my hand on top of my flat tummy. I was looking at it through the mirror, I couldn't believe that there was a little life inside my tummy. Actually growing in there, little ten toes and fingers, the hands and feet, a head and full body. Wait a minute, It was probably still an embryo " when were you planning on telling me" he asked walking inside, I quickly pulled down my top. Startled, " it's a little bit too late for that" he said closing the door behind him. " Tell you what?" I asked frowning. " Don't act so dumb with me, when were you going tell me that you're pregnant Cora" he asked angrily. " Who told you that?" I asked still looking at the mirror image, he was standing behind me. " That's not important, what's important is that you were planning on hiding my baby from me. How could you, I know that I am not one of your favorite people but I didn't know that you hate me so much" he said loudly. " Please stop shouting at me, don't shout. I was going to to tell you okay, I was just, I was just—..." You were just what Cora, you were just

what?" He asked Angrily but calmly. " I was just scared OK, you wanted divorce and I don't want to trap you with this child" I snapped. " Divorce?" He asked chuckling. " What makes you think that I'd ever divorce you?" He asked frowning. I looked up at him. " The other day you said we need more than just a break so I thought that you...and then you stop sending me flowers. " I said. " You said that you wanted space, so I gave you space. I stopped sending you flowers because you asked me to Stay away." He said. " I didn't ask you to stop sending me flowers" I didn't mean to say that loudly. All thanks to my blabbering mouth, I now seemed like a confused woman. " What do you really want Cora, because now I'm confused. You asked me to stay away and now you're hurt by that. Please make up your mind" he said smiling at me like i was crazy. " I need water" I said walking away from him. " I'll get you a glass of water" he said walking out. I went and set on the edge of the bed. " Here you go" he said offering me a glass of water. He was carrying a jug. I took the glass and drank a little, I wasn't really thirsty. I just wanted to get away from him a bit. " I'm sorry

about what I said the other day...I just wanted to hurt like you hurt me" I said looking up at him. He was standing up Infront of me. " Well you succeeded" he said, hands in his pocket. I picked up the glass and drank up. " I deserved that, everything single bit of it. I'm sorry Cora, I've looked back into our past and you were right. I do verbal abuse you. I'm willing to change all that, please just give our love one more chance." He said kneeling down Infront of me. " That's not true, you know that I didn't mean that. Verbal abuse is way more deeper than the shit you utter whenever you get angry or jealous. You'd never verbal abuse me, I know that. I said those things just to get back at you. I forgave you a long time ago, I just wanted to make you suffer" I said truthfully. " Don't ever doubt your character" I said smiling at him " you forgive me" he asked. I nodded, " just promise me that you'll never lash out on me whenever you are angry" I said. " I promise" he said crossing his heart, " can we go back home now?" He asked standing up and sighing heavily. " You can go, I'll come back tomorrow" i said getting undercovers. " There's no way that I am sleeping alone tonight" he

said taking off his sneakers and jersey. He was wearing a tracksuits. He switched off the main lights and got undercovers with me. The side lamps were still on. " If Amanda didn't mistakenly call me and I haven't heard your conversation. For how long were you planning on keeping me in the dark" he asked unveiling my tummy and putting his head on it while brushing it with his cold hand. " So that's how you found out?, And you heard everything?" I asked . " Definitely" he Said. " I only found out today that I am pregnant, I don't really have an answer to your question" I said. " We must go and see a doctor tomorrow" he said. " Lorenzo had a plastic surgery?" I asked diverting the topic. " Yeah, he had a lot of scars. " He said. " He looks good as new" I said. " He's a human being not an object. That's a bad expression" he said chuckling. And then there was silence after that," I'm going to be a father, how many of them do you think are in here" he asked. " One, what else?" I asked chuckling. " I think we're going to have twins or better yet triplets" he said. " Let's not go there, the scan will tell" I said smiling. " Can I cover up now, it's quite cold" I said. " You're

such a mood spoiler, I was still chatting with my kids" he said coming back up. I pulled up the blankets. " If I catch cold, ' your kids' will also get sick" I said turning on my side and facing him. " I hope you have been eating well" he said, I just shrugged and turned around. I switched off the side lamp. " Good night" I said giving him my back. " He got even more closer and we cuddled. His hand on my tummy,under my top. " Thank you for giving me such a beautiful gift" he said softly. " Thank you for making me the happiest man alive" he added. " I love you" he continued. My heart was beating out loudly, I'm sure even he could hear it. " I'm scared" i whispered, I finally admitted. " why ?" He asked shortly. " Whenever I get happy something bad always happens." I said. " You don't have to be scared, I'm here" he said. " Promettimi solo una cosa(just promise me one thing)" I said . " I'm listening" he said."Sarai al mio fianco ad ogni passo(you'll be by my side every step of the way)" I said. " Non devi essere speventato(you don't have to be scared), lo faremo insieme(we'll do this together) lo prometto (I promise)" he said kissing

my neck. " Te amo" I said smiling, I've never been that happy in my life. Everything felt so right and complete." I love you too, good night" he said holding my close to his body.

.

Unedited and sorry for the delay

[6/3, 18:50] Lynne: Page 74

Cora's POV

.

I woke up feeling nauseous, I rushed into the bathroom and puked. It was still dark outside, I kinda felt dizzy and tired. I rinsed my mouth and went back to bed, " did I wake you?" I asked Joaquin who was already sitting up straight. " Are you okay?" He asked and I nodded getting undercovers. I leaned back on the headboard, closed my eyes. " You don't seem fine to me" he said. " I said I am fine, I'm fine" I said firmly. " When was the last time you ate?" He asked. " Last night...but I didn't finish my dinner because Amanda was busy irritating me wit—..." Okay, I'm going to make you breakfast" he said. " It's 5am, I'm

not hungry... I'll probably puke once again" I said checking out the time on my cellphone. " What do you suggest we do then Cora, you seem like someone who's about to faint" he said kinda frustrated. " I could take in a few fruits" I said sighing heavily. He got out of bed and walked out, he came back with a tray which had a bowl of fruits. A glass and jug of juice, a side plate of croissant and cheese. " Thanks" I said as he put the tray on my thighs. He got back on his side of the bed. " You can go back to sleep" I said looking at him as he was waiting for me to eat. " I promise to finish all of this" I said smiling a bit. He looked so worried, " What" I asked taking a bite of the pear. " Nothing" he said removing the strands of hair from my face. " So why are you looking at me like that" I asked. " Like what?" He asked smiling faintly. " Like I am on my dying bed or something" I asked chuckling and blinking a lot. " You just seem too skinny, you haven't been eating well, have you?" He said. " I can't help but say the same about you" I said giggling but he was too serious, too serious for my liking. " Well I guess I forgot to eat, I wasn't really feeling hungry but I ate

there and there. You don't have to be so serious, it's not like I got anorexia nervosa" I said. " Stop being so serious, you might die of a heart attack" I said pushing him slightly. He eased up a bit and smiled. " I'm taking you out for breakfast after we see the Dr" he said. " But I am having my breakfast already" I said. " Consider this as starters, we will have the main course later and the dessert" he said. " You want to turn me into a balloon, I see" I said eyes popped out. " That's not such a bad idea too" he said. " Are you for really?" I asked chuckling. " What?, I think you'll look cut. All pumped up" he said. " That's such a mean compliment Mr Salvatore" I said laughing. He just shrugged his shoulders. I heard my breakfast, actually finished it with his help though. I couldn't have possible finished all that tray by myself..." Why are you locking the door, he's going to start crying and screaming and then I'd have to pacifying him" I said eyebrows raised. " I just want to spend time with my wife, I'm sure he's going to try to budge in when he wakes up. You're my wife before you're his mother, that man is going to have to understand. He's always crossing the border line" he

said, " that man is your three year old son, you're crazy" I said laughing. He came back to bed. " Let's just say I'm possessive when it comes to you" he said kissing my cheek. " You're such a bad father Salvatore, what do you think comes first really. A husband or a child?" I asked looking at him seriously. " Mmh, let me see. It should be a husband because without a husband there would be no child" he said. " That's quite logical in a biological sense but I mean it in a sense of choosing. Who do you think comes first, a husband or a child?" I asked. " What do you think?" He asked looking at me. " I asked you first?" I said. " Don't you think that, that question should be directed to women, since you have a question you must surely have an answer to it" he said. " It depends on how you're asking the question, is it general or personal?" I asked. " Let's start with general" he said. " General?, I'd say a child comes first" I said thoughtfully. " Is it, and why is that?. Forget about that, what about personal" he asked. " Between you and me?" I asked and he nodded. " I'd have to do research" I said getting out of bed. "Cora come back here, what's there to research about.

Don't think you can just dodge my question. Come back here" he said following me to the bathroom. " What?" I asked taking off my PJs and taking, I wanted to take a shower. " I'm still waiting for you to answer" he said arms folded. I got into the shower first. " Let me take a shower first" I said, he took off his clothes and got in too. Ummh, I saw his giant cucumber after such a long time. No matter what it never lose weight instead it got more and more bigger and longer. " You like what you see" he asked chuckling, bringing me back to planet earth. I swallowed up the hard lump in my throat. " Not exactly" I said turning my back on him. I started spreading soap on my towel. He took my towel and soap put them on the stand, held my hands. He actually pulled me closer to him, the shower still running. " Are you sure" he asked and I could feel his giant cucumber poking my ass. " YES, it doesn't look that much appetising lately" I said, " is it?" He asked turning off the taps. I nodded taking a deep breath, " so why are you breathing so heavily, I can hear your heart pounding" he said. I didn't answer that, i just inhaled and exhaled just to calm down my female

hormones. Which were going crazy because of his nakedness. " Anyways I am still waiting for my answer, are you going to answer me or not" he said turning on the table. The cold water got me jumping a bit. " I think it's only fair that you answer me since you brought up the question" he said. I took my towel and washed my body. While he used the scrubbing sponge, we finished showering. He actually got out first, and there i was... disappointed. I mean I thought that he would start kissing me and things would get hitted. He turned me on only for him to turn me off again. I went into the closet and pick out my huge boyfriends jeans and red Adidas sneakers and I pink tiny vest and a gold watch. I sprayed and combed my straightened hair down. Applied lipgloss, I looked just cute without makeup. " Mom, I'm hungry and Leo says that I'm not going to get any food because this is his house" Lore said as soon as he walked in, he was folding his arms while whining with a tilted head. " Leo said that?" I asked pouting. He nodded, " go and tell your Papa, I'm scared of Leo but your Papa has bug Muscles. He'll fix him, go hurry" I said. He ran out. " Don't fall!" I

screamed after him. Anyways I fixed the bed. Tied up the bathroom and packed my clothes. I went downstairs after I was finishing up. " Good morning Mandison, good morning Mike" I said as I found everybody in the kitchen. " I see somebody's in a good mood. You must have really gave it to her hard Mr Muscles" Amanda said demonstrating with her hands. " Amanda" Michael said but they were all laughing " unfortunately no, apparently he's allergic to my skinny body" I said sitting down. Michael was chuckling, Amanda was just frowning. Salvatore well I couldn't read his facial expression because he was busy preparing cornflakes for Lore and Leo. "

Anyways I was about to get started on preparing for breakfast. I'm going to need your help Cora" Amanda said breaking the silence. " I already had something to eat" I said. " And I didn't ask you, come on. You're not about to dodge one of my meals again. We're all going to have breakfast together, you guys can just get out, go play with toys or something" Amanda said to the boys, All four of them. " We're grown up man, we don't play with toys Manda" Michael said. " OHH!, That's a first, Manda" I screamed. " Shut up

Cora" she said pushing Michael out. " Don't tell me you want me to push you out too. Go and play with the sand, watch cartoons or something" she said to Salvatore. Who shook his head and left. " So what's for breakfast, Manda Manda " I asked folding my arms. " I don't care if you are pregnant or not. I'm so going to hit you with this pan" she said taking the frying pan and chasing me around. " Manda stop it" I screamed laughing. " Call me Manda one more time" she said still chasing me. I was running out of breath, I had to think of something. " Ouch" I screamed holding my tummy. " Oh come on, I know that prank" she said. " Ouch, aweh. Mhh" I screamed sliding down the floor. " Hey, you're starting to scar me now, what's wrong?" She asked kneeling down Infront of me. " My baby, it's- ahah" I groaned closing my eyes. " Hey, should I call an ambulance, I'll go and call Salvatore. Hold on tight" she said standing up, she was actually panicking. I held her leg. " How do you like my prank Manda" I asked looking up at her. " Shit, I hate you. Fuck, you're crazy" she said kneeling down. She slapped me slightly, " ouch, what was that for " I asked holding my cheek. " You're so twisted,

do you know how worried I was. You almost gave me a heart attack. Ohh God" she said holding her chest. " Breakfast is not going to prepare itself, come on" I said standing up. " Don't ever do that again, you scared the crap out of me" she said standing up. " Don't be such a baby Manda" I said chuckling. " Stop calling me that, geez I hate that Nick name." She said. " I'll do too if your husband does" I said chuckling. " Great, I might as well start accepting it. I've been asking him to stop for months now. " She said rolling her eyes. We prepared breakfast for less than 40 minutes. We put everything on the table. And called everyone to come and eat. We had our breakfast while sharing a meaningless conversation, well I didn't talk or eat that much I was just busy on my phone. We left two hours later, Salvatore wanted to change so we started at home. He went into our room while I went on the roof top Lorenzo went to his room, probably into his closet. Playing with his thousand toys.

.

" I figured I'd find you here" he said holding me from

behind. He scared me a bit, " I didn't see you coming" I said smiling at him. I was looking at him over my shoulder. " What are you thinking about" he asked holding my tummy, I put my hands on top of his. " Nothing" I said casually. " If you didn't hear my foot steps then there's definitely something" he said. " It's nothing, seriously. I was just enticed by this beautiful view" I said. " Come" he said pulling my hand. He set on a couch and made me sit on his lap. " What is it?" I asked after some time of silence. " Has anyone ever told you how beautiful you are?" He asked, " well not really" I said chuckling. " You're the most beautiful woman I've ever seen, not just the exterior but also the interior of your design" he said, making me blush. Although his compliment made me relate to a car or a house. " Well, now I know. Thanks, that was a very kind compliment I've ever heard. I bet no woman has ever been complimented in that particular way" I said smiling. " I didn't know that you were craving for my giant cucumber" he said all of a sudden. " Salvatore!" I screamed closing my eyes. " What?, You should have told me instead of embarrassing me Infront of the Sullivans. Did I

arouse you in that bathroom?" he said and asked. " Geez, I'm out of here" I said standing up and walking away. " Where do you think you are going" he asked holding my hand. " Aren't we supposed to go and see the Doctor" I asked looking anywhere but him. " The appointment is around 1pm, relax. As I was saying if you wanted some cucumber you should have asked instead of saying ' suddenly he's allergic to my skinny body' what was that about." He said. " Right now you're embarrassing me, please drop this" I said folding my arms. " It's only the two of us here, why are you embarrassed?" He asked. " Yeah, but you're here. You're embarrassing me Infront of you" I said. " I never heard that before" he said. " By the way there is no need to feel bad or insecure about the way you look, you look more sexier than before." He said, I couldn't take it anymore. I just closed my eyes while inhaling and exhaling. " You still got the Bigg finest ass out there, and boobs. The figure is curved in perfectly" he kept on saying while pulling me closer to him, he then grabbed my ass. That's when my eyes popped open. He smashed his lips into mine. He kissed me until I responded, I held his head on

both sides. His tongue exploring in my mouth, he moved his hands from ass to under my vest where he kept on brushing my waist. I had my legs pressed together, " What?" He asked after I pulled out. " Ummh, i, I need to use the bathroom" I said after feeling like vomiting. I rushed inside to the nearest bathroom. He was following me all the way there. I did my business then rinsed my mouth. " What happened?" He asked following me around as I was walking to our room. " How am I supposed to know" I asked frustrated. My mouth tasted so bitter. " You must know, you're the one who has been vomiting." He said equally frustrated. " I don't want to talk about it!" I shouted. " We're going to fucking talk about it" he shouted back. " Don't shout at me" I said almost crying. He sighed, well his tongue inside my mouth sort of disgusted me. I can't explain it, it just didn't. " I took out a new toothpaste and toothbrush then brushed my mouth so angry. " Are you done?, Can we go now" he said. I just passed him by I took my bag and phone which was on the bed. We then went downstairs, we were going to leave Lore with Petunia I guessed. We didn't even say goodbye,

maybe because he was going to start crying..." I am sorry for shouting at you" he said as we were on our way to the hospital for our first baby scan. " Yeah, me too" I said looking outside the window as I've been doing for the past 30 minutes. We had bodyguards following and leading our car. " Come on, I'm really sorry. For the sake of our kids let there be peace" he said putting his hand on my tummy. " Okay, cool but don't shout at me. I don't like it" I said. That was definitely insane, looking at it now. " I won't, I'll try not to" he said, I smiled a bit.

.

" It's seems like your wife here is carrying triplets" the doctor said running the scan on top of my tummy which was covered in a colorless cold liquid. my heart started to pound a little bit harder after I heard "three foetuses" " Yes we have three foetuses" she said smiling. Dr Osborne was going to be my gynecologist from then. " Is it boys or girls" Salvatore asked so excited. " Unfortunately we cannot tell the sex at this stage." She said, he got a little tiny small bit disappointed. We got the

scan copy. I was 5weeks pregnant, " are you okay" Salvatore asked on our way back home. I kept my mouth shut, he kept on trying until he gave up. I was the first one to get out of the car as soon as he parked in front of the house. I punched in the code and unlocked the door. " Cora, what's wrong. You've been quiet ever since we got out of that ward room" he said following me inside the kitchen. I took a glass of water and poured myself water, drank up but that didn't seem to calm me down. " Shit, fuck" I cursed angrily hitting my head on the kitchen counter. " Stop it" he shouted holding me back. " How could you do this to me Salvatore?" I asked looking at him with teary eyes. " What have I done now" he asked sighing heavily. " Don't give me that attitude, three kids. Three? How could you impregnate me with three kids " I screamed. " What's wrong with three kids, we've always wanted four kids. You should be happy, you're going to experience labor pains only just once" he said. " Shut up, you don't know what you're talking about. I'm going to get fat, my blood pressure is going to rise, my feet are going to get swollen, how am I supposed to

stand and work for 12 hours in that condition" I asked angrily. " And how am I going to take a shower in such a condition, I'm going to be a big fat disgusting balloon" I said crying while hitting my head on his chest. " I hate you" I said pushing him away and walking out.

" Cora, how was I supposed to know that three eggs were going to be fertilised" he asked following me upstairs. " The sperms were yours, weren't they?" I asked looking at him. " Yes but I—..." No but, you were supposed to know" I said angrily. " That's crazy, how was i—..." Crazy?, Did you just call me crazy Salvatore" I asked walking back down at him while he kept on backing down with a smile on his face. " I'm going to take a drive" he said walking away. " You're not going anywhere Salvatore, you can't get away with this. Come back here" I screamed after him but he didn't budge.

.

Salvatore's POV

.

I actually drove back to Michael's place after Cora went all crazy lunatic on me. " She has gone crazy, I'm telling you" I said to Michael who kept on laughing at me. " Every woman is like that man, Amanda used to throw away my Cologne because she couldn't stand it. One day she woke me up with a bucket of iced water because I was somehow snoring. Me, snoring?" He said chuckling. " Cora has gone way overboard, it's hardly been two months and she wants to strangle me already. She said that the sperms were mine so I was supposed to know, like what the hell?" I exclaimed unbelievably. " She said that?" He asked laughing. " It's not funny man, that women is going to kill me. I literally ran for my life" I said shaking my head. " Can I have access to your CCTV cameras, this sounds interesting" he said. " Fuck you man" I said punching his shoulder. " Salvatore!, What have you done to my friend?" Amanda came screaming. "God save me, What now?" I asked sighing tiredly. Michael laughed even more. " Cora is crying her lungs out, what have you done to my friend?. You call her crazy and then you run away, what kind of a husband are you. My friend

is craving for ice cream and you're busy having beer over here. Grow up man and go back to your wife" she shouted. " I thought you and I had an understanding. Please don't do this to me Amanda" I pleaded, she started laughing. " But seriously though go back to your wife. You can't fertilize three of her eggs and then dump her like that" she said folding her arms. " I'm leaving, what else did she say she wanted. Could you maybe ask her for me" I asked. " Go and find out for yourself, I'm not getting involved" she said raising her hands up. " If I die tomorrow just know that my pregnant wife did it" i said looking at both of them. " Should I include that in your obituary" Michael asked. I nodded slowly and helplessly. I took my keys. " Three kids, you're the man Mr Muscles" Amanda said behind me. " Fuck you Mandison" I shouted at her. " Go and fuck your wife man" Michael screamed at me.

.

Unedited was supposed to post last night but there was no network, sorry.

[6/3, 18:51] Lynne: Continuing

Salvatore's POV

.

Well I bought a few containers of vanilla Ice and other flavors, just in case. I was prepared to get slaughtered like a Lamb. I didn't find her anywhere downstairs, " where's is your Mom buddy?" I asked Lore who was busy playing with his remote controlled toy car. " I don't know Dad, I can't speak right now I am driving" he said making engine sounds with his mouth. " Mxm whatever rascal" I murmured softly then went upstairs to our room where I found her lying on bed. On her tummy, I set on the edge of the bed and put my hand on her back, she was cuddled up to the pillow. " Get your filthy hands off my back" she said slowly but firmly and surely fuming. " I'm sorry honey" I said smiling, if she could have seen my face I'm sure she would have slapped me. " Go back to wherever you came from Salvatore, I don't want to see your face, I don't want to hear you goat like voice" she snapped. " Please forgive your stupid husband, I am so stupid. I shouldn't have left Like that. That was so selfish of

me, I should have known better than to let my three stupid sperms to fertilize your eggs. I'm sorry" I said but she didn't budge. " I bought you vanilla ice cream" I added , seems like I got her attention because she set up straight. But said nothing, her face showed that she'd been crying hysterically. " It's in the deep freezer... I'm sorry my love, I'll never do that again. I'm never going to walk out on you" I said getting closer to her and putting her head on my chest. She started crying silently. " Don't cry now, shhh I'm so sorry" I said smiling. I wiped her tears and kissed her forehead. " Don't cry, you're stressing the babies" I said kissing her all over the face. She nodded, wiping her tears. " let's go and get that Ice cream I talked about" I said smiling at her, she am back. I picked her up in a bridal style, carried her to the kitchen. 8 more months to go, just 8 and then everything's going to get back to normal. Worry not Salvatore. " There we go" I said putting her on the highchair. I gave her vanilla flavored ice cream and a spoon. " Now, what would you like for dinner?" I asked. " I don't know, surprise me. Anything" she said shrugging her shoulder. " Come on, we don't

want you throwing it all out now, do we" I said sighing softly. " Umm, how about we order chicken and mushroom pizza with extra cheese or maybe pizza margherita" she said, really conflicted between the two. " We'll order both flavors. Would you like something else?" I asked. " I feel like having some cocktail" she said, my eyes popped out. " What?, There's a virgin cocktail" she said, I sighed in relief. " What else?" I asked. " Mild chicken wings" she said. " And don't forget to add green salad and garlic bread, just in case I wake up hungry" she said. " You do realize that, these things you're asking for can not be ordered in one place" I asked. " Don't make your problem mine, you're the one who kept on asking me" she said standing up and leaving. " You're just impossible" I murmured softly. I sent the list to Robinson and then called her to hurry. I searched for my wallet in my pocket and met him outside the house. " Let's go out on a date tomorrow morning, it's been a while since we went out" I said sitting on the couch with her. " Ummh, I was thinking of going to church tomorrow morning. So I'll have to pass, sorry" she said. " OHH" I said, really disappointed. "

But we can go out in the afternoon" she said snuggling closer to me. " Okay then, it's a date" I said putting my hand around her. She was leaning on my chest while having her Ice cream. " How about we have a family reunion or a get together party to announce the great news" I suggested. " Isn't it too early, could we maybe wait until I'm carrying for two to three months" she said. " Okay, what are you watching here. I have a football game to watch in three hours" I said taking the remote control. " You smell so good" she said taking a deep breath. I opened the NCAA news channel.

.

" Your birthday is in 5 weeks, do you have any plans?" I asked after an hour or so of silence. " Cora?" I called her name softly but she didn't answer me. I checked her and she was sleeping on my chest While holding the ice cream container. I put it on the floor and layed her comfortably on the couch, covered her with a shawl. I closed the container which was almost empty and put it on the refrigerator. That was my time to get some work

started but then again I had Lorenzo running around in my office. My day couldn't have gotten any worse, I watched the football game with buddy who was busy asking me questions. Robinson came back with the food, I put everything on the kitchen counter. Cora was still sleeping. " How about we go and take a shower, come back to eat and then go to sleep" I said picking buddy up. Throwing and catching him, he kept on screaming in fear which by the way woke up Cora. " Sorry, your pizza has arrived by the way" I said, she kept on yawning. I bathe Lorenzo and dressed him up in his PJs. Told him to go downstairs while I took a quick shower. 15 minutes later I walked downstairs and found the three of them having pizza, including Petunia. " I saved some for you, in the oven" Cora said, they were giggling about God knows what. " I'm going to be in my office if you need me" I said taking my plate, which had every ordered except for the green salad, I was not a fan after all. " Aren't you going to be eating with us?" Cora asked. " No, I gotta lot of work to do. I'll see you in bed" I said. " Ahw OK" she said. I left for work. I took a maximum of three hours, made a few phone

calls regarding the progress of the building in Durban. I was going to go there on Monday and make it back on Wednesday evening. I went to bed around 10pm, I found Cora busy on her laptop, in bed. She was wearing a black night dress. " What are you doing, I thought I'd find you sleeping" I said walking into the bathroom to brush my teeth. " Just typing some of my reports. I'm almost done though" she said, I brushed my teeth then got in bed. " I'm going to Durban tomorrow morning" I said taking off my PJs t-shirt. " If I was a house wife now that would be something to argue about" she said smiling. " Is it?" I asked putting my head on her shoulder. " Yeah I mean, I'd be left alone. Bored and wondering what you must be doing over there, calling you now and then. But because I'm a career oriented woman. I'm cool, I'll be in the chemicals stinking hospital. Working my ass out for quarter of a price I'd be earning in the next few years" she said. " What are you saying exactly?, Won't you miss me, all the cuddling and snuggling, my kisses, the great sex" I said kissing her Shoulder to neck. " Let's wait and find out" She said giggling. I shutdown her laptop. "

What are you doing, I'm still typing.." she said kinda angry. I put the laptop on the headboard stand, " I'm sexually starving here, ain't you?" I asked sliding my hand under Her night dress " I am not" she said. " Are you sure" I asked, she was about to answer when I shushed her with a kiss. I took off her night dress so that I could get access to her vulnerable waist, my touch there always left her shivering. Once I got access to it, I knew for sure that everything was under my control. I kept on moving my hands there, in circular motions while we kissed. She was holding my head on both sides, drawing me on. She was in her red panties only while I was in my boxers and sleeping pants. Her chest kept on rising and falling, I slid my hand into her panties. Till I found excess to the valley of fire. She slid down to lie on her back. "Do you have any plans for your birthday" I asked while shifting her tiny panties aside and rubbing her soft bud. She shook her head no while biting her lower lip. " Nothing at all?" I asked smiling, I could see that my talking was frustrating her. " Surprise me" she said then pulled my head in for a kiss. " With what though, I have thought of somethings but they

turned out to be total crap. Somethings you wouldn't like. " I said pulling out of the kiss. " I want nothing then, can we just fuck already. Stop talking" she said faking a smile. " Are you sure because the last —..." " Forget about this" she said getting out of bed and going to the bathroom, I couldn't help but giggle silently. I followed her there and found her staring at her mirror image. Which was on top of the washing basin. " What are you looking at?" I asked holding her waist, she didn't answer me, I slid her panties down. She was just standing there like a statue. " Did I upset you?" I asked caressing her whole body. " I was just teasing you, I'm sorry" I said raising her hands up and putting them behind my head. " You're such a jerk, God! why would you do that" she finally said. " Sorry, you just look cute when you're sexually frustrated. I like teasing you, especially now" I said cupping her full round breasts. She leaned on my chest. I massaged her pussy, then up to her waist. She squeezed her legs together while closing her eyes. I took off all that I was wearing and my dick came sprouting, she held it as soon as she felt it poking her ass. I got electrical shocks, adrenaline

rushing all over my head. I couldn't get enough of her, there was no boredom there. Every position was enticing, I'd always be anticipating her next move. She just knew how and where to tantalize and turn me on just like I did with her. She was giving me a hand job while I was massaging her soft bud, her look legs spread apart. My left hand on her right boob playing with the hard nipple. I bended her over, she held on to the basin. I separated her legs using my knee, her pink pussy fully exposed for me. She was already dripping wet, " please" she said breathing out loudly as I kept on teasing her with the head of my giant cucumber as she'd call it. penetrating inside her pussy slowly, so that she could feel every inch of my dick. Which fitted perfectly inside her. She was all mine, every single part of her sinfully made just for me. I started moving in gentle, to be honest a part of me feared that the babies might get hurt or something even though the doctor said that it's OK to have sex at that stage. " Fuck me harder" she screamed, I could see her knees wobbling already but she was a determined woman. I increased my pace and

decreased it, increase and decrease. I held her waist, my dick was hard on. It kept on sliding in and out, her walls expanding as I went in to deep. The fire that was building up was immensely torturing. The friction made her scream even more louder. She finally exploded, her whole body shaking helplessly. And then she became still " I love you" she murmured. I withdrew, took one of the white towels and wiped her and my self. I then carried her into bed. She so wanted to be on top but that was a dangerous position. It makes every man explode quickly and then it was all over. I wanted to be in charge made her lie down on her back, widely opened her beautiful legs to get access to her pink pussy which was neatly shaved. I started suckling her folds and nibbled them. Focusing more on the bud. Pulled out the folds slightly, using my lips. I could feel my dick throbbing in pain and suffering. She was biting her lips while holding my head down, encouraging me to go on. Instead of finger fucking her I put in the actual dick. She lift her upper body, supporting it with her elbows. Watching me penetrate inside her throbbing wet pussy. I saw

excitement in her eyes as she watched but then she gasped and ran out of breath as I put it all in, which almost seemed impossible. She she went back down and her back arched up, her breasts pushing up. I was moving in and out in slow motion " ohh Joaquin...yes baby" she whispered, a tear escaped her eye as we both exploded. She was grabbing on to the sheets while I was groaning and cursing. " Fuck, ahh Coh—" I collapsed on top of her. We stayed like that for a few minutes. I was still inside her. " I want you, moving inside me... again" she whispered into my ear. That's what drove me crazy about her, she had the same passion that I had. Sometimes she'd run to far and I'd be right behind her trying to catch up. She was different from the other women, she wasn't the submissive type of woman. I flipped her over, she took the towel and wiped the two of us before taking my giant cucumber into her tiny mouth, it Hardly fitted into her hand but she worked her magic around it. She kissed it all the way down to my balls, to the vein under them. " Mmh" a groan escaped my mouth. She went up again with the kisses, put the pink head into

her mouth. Made sure it reach her throat, almost shook. She kept her eyes on me. Maybe to get an idea of what drove me crazy, every sound and facial expression of mine encouraged her to put more effort on particular parts of my manhood. I was fully hard when she started riding me like a cow girl. Watching her Move on top of me drove me crazy, who wouldn't go crazy after watching such a beautiful body on top of him. Every single part of her body was immaculately created to drive a man insane....the rest is history

.

Cora's POV

.

" Il mio cuero batte, you're going to be late for church" he whispered into my ear. I pushed her face away with my hand. He kissed my hand instead, " I guess you're not going then" he said, I could imagine him smiling. I was so tired and my pussy was sore, reminded me of the first time when I walked like a chicken. I fell asleep once again...I woke up later on.

I went to the bathroom and took a quick bath, washed the tube and dressed up after moisturizing my body. I was wearing my short jean skirt. A powder blue vest and white sneakers. I was dealing with my messy hair when Joaquin walked in with a tray of breakfast. " Finally, somebody's awake" he said. He was walking barefoot wearing pants only. He looked super hot, " good morning to you too baby wami" I said Smiling as he was walking towards me, " good morning" he said after we shared a kiss. " I think I need to go to the salon, this is so frustrating" I said throwing down the comb. " Or You could just cut all down" he said. " Really now?" I asked rolling my eyes. " What? Your hair is too long any ways" he said. " I thought you said you like my hair" I said sitting down Infront of the dressing table. " I love your hair, all natural. Why do you always paint it black" he asked. " I like your Golden brown hair" he said standing me, his hands on my shoulders. I didn't answer that, " black hair suits me better than..." I said looking down. " I think it's a good thing that you got your mother's hair, they're beautiful. " He said patting my shoulder and then he walked back to bed.

" I was trying to be romantic by bringing you breakfast in bed but you ruined my plan" he said after a long time of silence. " I can still take off these clothes and get back to bed. Naked and you can serve me break fast in bed. " I said walking towards him. " That's not such a bad idea" he said charmingly. I just laughed and set down. " I'll take Lore along with me to the salon, his hairstyle needs some reviving" I said taking the strawberry into my mouth after passing it by the whipping cream. " But you have to take him to my salon, his hairstylist won't be happy if his hairline gets Messed up or something" he said. " I have a better idea, how about we all go to the salon. Yeah that's it, I can't walk to your salon and then mine. They're too far apart" I said. " Cora" he exclaimed. " It's out of discussion Joaquin" I said taking the tray into my thighs because he was having my breakfast too. He chuckled, " sharing is caring" he said. " Well, it seems like I don't care" I said. " You're such a bad wife, Let me go and change" he said walking towards the closet. I had my breakfast in peace, I didn't catch any morning sickness that morning. The three of us later on went

to the mall, we were going to shop for groceries after that and then have lunch together.

.

I got the dye washed off my hair and then plaited into Snoopy. I may have been a complicated person but I liked my hairstyles simpler. We met at food lovers market two hours later, they were already pushing the trolley when I got there. " Look at my hair mommy" Lore said first. " Wow, look at you—handsome rascal. You look perfect" I said checking him out, he actually blushed. " You too looks..." I said looking at Alonzo. " What" he asked. " Appetising" I whispered into his ear. " Well you can have me right now" he said squeezing my ass" Alonzo!" I exclaimed walking away from him. He giggled, we got a few people's eyes on us. There was this smiling old white grandma. I felt so shy, " I love your new hairstyle, you look beautiful" he said. " Thanks I said walking on the trolley side, Lorenzo was inside it, we shopped for groceries and other house necessities. " I'll put these in the car, I'll find you there" he said giving me directions to the

restaurant. " If we get lost, blame it all on your Papa" I said picking up Lore. Joaquin was going to upload the groceries into the car. Well we found the Italian restaurant, the waitress helped us settle down. We got served with starters. " How would you like having a little sister or brother?" I asked Lorenzo. " I don't want a little brother or sister mommy" he said, well I wasn't expecting that from him. " Why?" I asked. " Because mommy" he said. " Because?" I asked puzzled. " I just don't want" he said. " That's bad—" I was saying when I noticed Alonzo walking in with a female, they were giggling. She looked like one of those supermodels, slender and stunning. " Hannah meet my wife, Cora" he said, the woman extended her hands for a handshake. " Hi, I'm Hannah. AJ's long long lost friend" she said. I shook her hand. " I'm Cora" I said Shortly. " AJ has told me a whole lot about you, I must say. You look naturally beautiful, just the way he described you" she said occupying a sit, Alonzo set down too. She was way too forward for my liking, and joining us for lunch?, Calling my husband AJ. " Have you guys ordered?" Salvatore asked, like everything was perfectly fine. "Not yet,

We were just waiting for you" I said smiling faintly. " Well, let's order, I hope you don't mind Hannah joining us for lunch" he said signalling for the waitress to attend our table. " Not at all" I said looking into his eyes. With that boiling look only he could understand but he chose to ignore it. " So what do you do for a living Hannah" I asked after a long crappy time of listening to them talk about their collage years. " As you can see, I'm a supermodel. Actually I've just returned from Paris, from a runaway fashion show. I'm taking yet another flight to Namibia tomorrow morning. It's hectic" she said smiling. She had a fine smile. " So you went to a culinary school but ended up being a modeller" I said eating. " It's crazy, I know. Actually my parents wanted Or rather were always on my case ever since I can't remember. I had to choose a stable career. Worse years of my life—..." She said sighing heavily. Whatever that meant, I didn't get it at all. " Alonzo tells me that you're doing your third year in gynaecology." She said, it was like she was diverting the topic. Either way she was pretty good at it, " yeah, I've always wanted to save lives" I said shrugging my

shoulders. " I must say, I never thought that Alonzo would End up with a woman like you" she said. " What do you mean by that?" He asked, I was so anticipating to hear her answer. " Don't get me wrong... He used to be a play as I'm assuming you must know already. He never dated a girl for more than three months, but there's one thing I liked about him. He never cheated, he'd dump the first girl then jump to the next one in line. He used to roll with the type of crazy girls, if you know what I mean. Well, you look like... Serious and normal. You're still beautiful though" she said " that's not entirely true Hannah and you don't know my wife like I do, she can be crazy sometimes" Salvatore said. ". Excuse me" I said standing up and taking my bag. " Where are you going Cora?" He asked. I sighed softly. " To get myself ice cream. I'll be back" I said trying to act normal. " I hope I didn't offend you" Hannah said. " Not at all, I'm just craving for tin roof ice cream" I said. " Ohh, Aj told me that you're expecting. Congratulations" she said. " I bet he told you everything about me" I said before leaving. I was so mad, I went to Woolworths where I bought myself

Ice cream, I would have been damned if I went back to that restaurant. I opted to wait in the parking lot. It was kind of cold and cloudy. Like it wanted to pour down, I set on down on the pavement separating the cars and ate my ice cream in peace. Played music on my iPod, earphones on. An hour passed by and then 15 minutes too, I took off my earphones. After I saw them approaching the car's. They talked a bit and then he kissed her hand. She got into her sports car and they approached our car. "Whoa!, I thought you left already" he said, surprised to see me sitting down there. He opened the back door and put Lore inside the car along with the brown bag he was carrying. "Come on, let's go" he said opening the door for me. I just stared at him. "What is it now?" He asked squinting down. "What is it, if not for Lore I would have already also you. Forget about you, I would have strangled that bitch to death. How dare you bring your ex girlfriend into our dining table, that was supposed to be a family lunch. Family, not extended whore's. And what did she call me 'normal—boring right?. Natural beauty?' my left paralysed foot. And then you had to kiss her" I

snapped so angrily. " I will not have a woman shout at me, are you done?. Can we go home now" he asked through gritted teeth. He was fuming but I was furious. " You can go to hell for all I care. You disgust me, I don't want to see Your cheating face ever again" I murmured. " Suit yourself then, I'm not going to beg you." He said going to the drivers side. He got in and drove off. I watched as the Austin Martin drove off.

.

Salvatore's POV

.

" Shit, shit. Damn you Cora" I cursed angrily hitting the steering wheel. As it started raining, I couldn't really leave her there. All freezing. " Papa, mommy is going to get wet. She'll catch cold like I did, do you remember when I played in the rain" Lore said, I turned the car around, the rain got heavier than ever. She was still sitting on the same spot as I left he before, she was looking down all drenched. I could tell from the way her head was tilted that she was

crying. " Go away" she screamed pushing me away as I was trying to pick her up. " You don't love me anymore Salvatore, you don't love me anymore" she screamed pushing me away. " That's not true, you know that I love you and you alone. Let's get into the car. You'll catch cold" I said, she didn't respond. So I picked her up and put her in the car, got into the drivers side and drove off. I turned on the heater. Tears kept streaming down her face, I hate to see her cry. I shouldn't have left her like that, her hormones were all over the place. One mistake lead to the whole house turning upside down. I needed to be more understanding and calm. " I'm sorry" I said putting my hand on her thigh. She was quite all the way home, I kept on answering Lorenzo's questions which were directed to her. " Go inside Buddy" I said to Enzo who got out I rushed upstairs. We we were inside the garage. " I don't want to talk to you" she said opening the door and getting out. " Why" I asked holding her from behind , she was about to take steps upstairs. " Because, because I hate you?" She said, stuttering so not sure. " I shouldn't have asked Hannah join us, you were right about that and I am

sorry. I promise you, she's harmless. I was out of my mind, it's just that she'd be through a lot and I was there for her. She was there for me too. She's like a sister to me. And I didn't kiss her" I said. " You kissed her filthy hand" she said turning around. " It was just a hand" I said unbelievably. " Even if it was just her hair, any woman's hair for that matter. You're not supposed to kiss any of them." She kinda snapped. " Yes, OK I heard you" I said pinning her against the wall." you don't have to be so jealous my heart beat" I said looking down at her " How would you feel like if I bring my male friends on our dining table" she asked. " Exactly!, So please don't patronise me. Don't tell me not to get jealous, ohh she's harmless and all that shit" I imitated his voice. " So you're admitting that you're jealous?" I asked chuckling. " That's not the point, that's just out of the question. That skinny crap was rude to me, she called me ugly. Like hell?" She said all angry against. She was exaggerating the whole thing. To avoid further arguing I kept quiet and she kept on going on and on. " You look cute when you're jealous" I said then kissed her just to shush her. " And then she calls me normal?, Me normal?"

She said pulling out of the kiss. " There's nothing wrong with being normal" I said. " Who wants to be normal, do you also think that I'm normal?" She asked. " From where I am standing...ahha ah. The fact that your handsome husband busy trying to seduce you to my bed and you're still stuck up on what that stick sweet said proves that you're definitely not normal" I said kissing her neck. " I'm blabbering ain't I" she asked sighing. " Mmh not exactly" I said frowning. " And you left me to get wet in the rain" she said slapping me slightly. " Why are you so violent" I asked holding my cheek. " Because I can" she said looking up me. My focus was on her plummy wet boobs under the vest. " You're such a pervert" she exclaimed after seeing where my focus was. " I think I prefer you drenched by the rain" I said looking at her seductively. " It's not going to work" she said trying to walk away from me. " Just a quickie" I said holding her waist. " Please" I begged, " where" she asked pulling me for a hungry kiss I picked her up and put her on the bonnet of the car.

Cora's pov

.

After that naughty session we had on top of the bonnet we went upstairs. Petunia helped with the groceries, Salvatore and I went out on a date and he personally drove me to the residency after that. Having casual insane, anticipated sex intercourse like that was one of the things that kept our relationship sparkling and always exciting. You'd never know what would happen next. I went to the hospital and worked, got a call from my mom who was still in the dark about my pregnancy. And I wasn't planning on telling her anytime soon. We had asked Amanda and Michael not to tell anybody else until I got past my first trimester. I didn't want to jinx things, I chose to join the near by virgin active gym since I was surely going to get fat. I talked to my gynecologist about and she said it was healthy and good for the babies and me but I had to take things slow. Since I was a physically fit person I shouldn't be that much of a problem. I thought to myself. So the gym opened at 6am, I was just going to exercise

for 30 minutes in the morning then go back to my apartment and shower then rush to the hospital. And then take an hour of exercise in the evening. 5 days a week was going to do me good. Anyways i was going to start on Tuesday morning since i took the membership on monday. Salvatore opened a trustfund for the triplets, lorenzo's was already running smoothly. He was going to start RR the following year since he was going to be turning 4years old. He was so excited upon hearing the news. We had everything planned out perfectly.

And yeah Salvatore being Salvatore ended up being the one supporting my family financially, he found out somehow. I didn't like the idea at first but ended up going with the floor.

.

" and when were you planning on telling me about this?" He asked on the phone. I was studying on my desk table, wearing my PJs when i received his phone call. " i thought i told you to stop stalking me. Can't a women have some privacy, Geez!"

[6/3, 18:53] Lynne: I exclaimed rolling my eyes. " don't change the topic here Cora, and I'm not stalking you. I'm in Durban remember?" He said firmly. " whatever you call it Salvatore, stop calling my bodyguards and asking them about my moves. I get that you pay for them, but you have no right. This is so frustracting!" I said unbelievably. " you're are my pregnant wife, who's life is in danger. How can you expect me to just sit back not knowing your whereabouts " he said. " my life is in danger, this has to stop and I'm sick of all these four men following me around like I'm some kingpin or something " i said standing up. " or the president's wife, the first lady " he said giggling. " this is not funny" i said firmly. " or maybe some queen, how about a princess" he said laughing, i ended up laughing. " I'm serious here, don't laugh. We're still fighting" i said getting undercovers. It was almost 22:30 pm. " we can fight and still laugh. We're extraordinary people" he said. Then there was silence. " seriously though Cora, cancel that membership. You're going to strain yourself and my three inborn kids." He said. " they're not kids yet. And

no, I'm not going to do that. The doctor said it's perfectly fine and good for the four of us " i protested. " so you're going to take her word above mine?" He asked. " I'm going to do exactly that, Dr Osborne is a professional gynecologist. She knows what she's doing, you don't have to worry about this and you and I are going to join yoga classes for pregnant women within three months so brace yourself and stop complaining. I hope you read those books i emailed you about pregnancy and infants" i said. " you don't really expect me to read all these." He said sighing heavily. " stop whining and own up to your mistakes" i said. " what mistakes are you talking about?" He asked. " these three kids in my tummy" i said putting my hand on my tummy. " the last thing you wanna do is call my kids mistakes. Don't call my kids mistakes Cora" he said [6/3, 18:53] Lynne: Sounding so serious. " you can relax, i was just kidding" i said chuckling. " well i didn't catch the joke" he said so coldly. " awh!, okay. I won't let you ruin my mood though "i said taking a deep breath. " sorry, i just did-..." i get it, it was a bad

joke." I said calmly. " i didn't mean to be so cold though " he said. " mmh " i murmured. We talk for a few more minutes and then i went sleep. Like it had become my morning new routine, i woke up feeling nauseous and went into the bathroom to puke. I wore my jogging leggings and vest, then sneakers. On second thought i took clothes and my toiletries to change. I was going to change in the gym and then go to the hospital. I got there just in time, warmed up then hit the treadmill, showered, dressed up then went to the hospital. " good morning Mrs Logan" i said picking up the patient's information board which was hanging on the bed's end. " not you again" she said looking so frustrated. " good morning Mrs Logan, sorry I'm late" Dr Francis said walking in. " great, you're here. Please get this intern out of my ward and I want to see my baby" she said. She gave birth through c-section. Her baby was in the incubator, a six months old infant. " let her just check the progress of your stiches and she'll be out of here in no time " Dr Francis said. " just great" she said removing the covers. I checked her and ran the details through Dr Francis who confirmed them" the

nurses will come and help you out so that you can go and see your baby" he said. , i made my report " have a lovely day Mrs Logan " i said smiling " just go" he kinda snapped and then we moved on to the next patient. " she can be such a drama queen sometimes" he said as we got out. " are you o.k.?, you seem to be fatigue " he added. " I'm great, it's just that i started at the gym. It's be a long time since i exercised, plus i have to deal with patients like her. It's tiring" i said sighing and faking a smile even though his cologne was giving me a problem

[6/3, 18:54] Lynne: " i get it, in your condition. You're bound to get irritated" he said. " in my condition?. What are you talking about?" I asked frowning. " you're pregnant right?" He said frowning. " no, I'm not " i said firmly with a straight face. " i know for a fact, the mood swings and rushing to the bathroom now and then. You've also gained a little bit of weight. Odd isn't " he said. " how did you?...when, umh i mean who told you?" I asked swallowing the hard lump in my throat. " I'm a gynecologist, remember?"

He said. " i bet others have noticed the changes too." He added. " you know what this means regarding your scholarship right?" He asked. " i know right... since you already know then i think it's only fair that i also let you know that your cologne is suffocating me" i said sighing heavily. " owh, i didn't know that" he said kinda embarrassed and shocked. " yeah." I said then walked away. Getting pregnant had it disadvantages. I was surely going to lose my scholarship. It had it's terms and conditions and getting pregnant was way out. Anyways i finished up and passed by the gym which closed at eight. It took me 10 minutes to get there. So i exercised for about 40 minutes then went back to the residency so tired. I went to bed as soon as i got there, no showering. I was going to wake up later, shower and arrange my reports into order. According to the modules they fell under. Each and every term we had to submit the reports back to the university along with the supervisors comments. I had to arrange my files accordingly.

.

It was yet another day, i made it to the gym a few minutes late. My muscles were strained but not that much. " when you already have a hot body. What are you doing here" some lady asked me. Taking the 5kg lifting steel, " excuse me?" I said frowning. " i mean, you look perfect. Your have a body to die for, you're a perfect slender woman , i thought gym was for chubby people like us" she said. " ohh, thanks for the kind compliment. But if you...

[6/3, 18:55] Lynne: must know. White people don't consider this slender" i said smiling at her. She looked lovely, one of those people you just like at first site. " let me guess, you're dating a white man?" She said. " not exactly, i get confused too sometimes. I kinda forget that he's coloured" i said still confused. " you seem confused as we speak." She said chuckling. " its confusing really " i said giggling. " it's either you're black, brown, coloured or white. There's nothing to be confused about " she said chuckling. " you're only saying that because you haven't seen my husband " i said smiling so stupidly. " ohh, you're married too. How old are you again?"

She asked, so shocked. " old enough " i said smiling. " sorry for being so forward. It's just that you look so young. I thought you were 17 or something. You look like my little sister's age mate . She's doing matriculation this year" she said chuckling. " ohh, I'm pretty much older than that. And now i must get going " i said checking time on my wristwatch. " nice to see you" i said walking to the bathrooms. I took a quick shower, Thank God I had plaited my hair so i just moisturized my body then dressed up. No make up. My bodyguards got me the hospital just in time.

.

"Mom" i answered my phone smiling. We hadn't talked in a while. " when were you planning on telling me about my grandchildren" she said sounding so serious. " what? What are you talking about. What grandchildren?" I asked frowning. " the ones that are in you tummy, you dumbass" she said. " the ones that...whoa, who told you about this" i asked blinking a few times. " it doesn't matter who told me, what matters is the fact that you hid such great news from your own mother. " she said sounding so hurt. "

sorry mom, i just didn't want to jinx things. It's a miracle how i got pregnant. I want to take things slow until i reach the pregnancy matures" i said sighing. The receptionist signalled for me to walk up to her as i was passing by. " don't tell me

[6/3, 18:55] Lynne: me you believe in these black people's bad ohmens and stuff" she said. " unfortunately i do, and don't forget that I'm half Zulu. And you're married to one" i said chuckling. " this came in for you" the receptionist said. It was a brown bag along with a bunch of tulips. Which had a note written " i hope you've been feeding three marketeers." . I smiled to myself, " hello, Cora. Did you hear what i had just asked." Mom said on the phone. I was busy daydreaming. " thank you" i murmured to the receptionist. " sorry mom, i just got disturbed by some of my patient" i said taking the brown bag along with the flowers. " anyways, i asked you...when are you taking a leave?" She asked again. " mother, I'm still a student not a doctor. Under no circumstances am I allowed to take a leave." I said giggling. " you want to strain my

grandchildren Cora. Salvatore told me that you forcefully joined the gym" she said sounding so worried. " Salvatore said that, and now i know that he's the one who told you about my pregnancy. You tried to cover up for him but you're just a queen of blabber mom" i said sounding serious but laughing inside. " did i say Salvatore. It must have be a slip of my tongue. Forget that i even said that. The last time I saw him was months ago " she said Stuttering all the way to the end point. " and now i know for a fact that he was there" i said. " okay, right. You got me but please don't tell him i told you that. He told me that you agreed on letting us know after the first trimester is finished." She said. " you didn't exactly tell me so please don't ask me of anything. I guess he was dying to tell someone. And his stupidity let him choose you" i said giggling. " hey don't call my son in law stupid and what's wrong with me" she said defensivly. " you have a blabbering mouth mother" i said laughing while sitting down in the cafeteria. " I'm still your mother Cora so mind your tongue " she said warningly. " okay sorry but you know it's true " i said

[6/3, 18:55] Lynne: " you and I know that you blabber a little bit too much " i said laughing while getting the take away out of tge brown bag. It was sea food and ice cream. " you're such a disrespectful girl Cora. If you were here I'd smack you" she said. " and now you're starting to sound like dad" i said laughing. " ohh forget about your father, do me a favor and don't trouble my son inlwaw. He's such a kind soul. He bought us a lot of groceries, paid the car's installment" she said. " he did?" I asked suprised. " look at me blabbering again " she said chuckling. We talked for a short while before hanging up. I called up Salvatore. " did you get your lunch delivery?" He asked first. " hello to you too, how sweet of my big mouth of a husband to send me lunch" i said sarcastically. " really? After sending you lunch this is how you thank me?" He asked sighing heavily. " or should I say blabbering husband?" I said giggling. " you're being disrespectful now, i get that you're pregnant but that won't stop me from fucking you until you pass out" he said. " is that a threat because if it is then I'd like to see you try" i said daringly but smiling . " anyways

i just wanted to confirm if the lunch was from you. Now that i know i think i should also let you know that i know what you told my mother" i said eating my food. " well, i, i is that why you're calling blabbering husband?" He asked after stuttering, trying to divert the topic. " we had an agreement, you and I. Didn't we?" I asked. " we did but your mother asked me how you were so i told her everything " he said that really made me chuckle. " let me guess, she must have asked ' how is Cora ' and you were like ' she's perfectly fine ma'am. She gaining a lot of weight lately. You know why?, because she's been eating like a hippopotamus. Do you know what that means, it means that i bursted three of her egg. She's pregnant ma'am" i said sarcastically while imitating their voices. " almost got us but not exactly." He said

[6/3, 18:56] Lynne: "You're so pregnant and hilarious" he added. He was getting sarcastic with me. " mxm, you're so dead" i said through gritted teeth. " you started this " he said laughing. " fuck you " i said. " ohh i can't wait. In bed or on the couch?" He asked.

" you're such a jerk" i said unbelievably. " i love you too but now i gotta go. I'm in a meeting " he said then hung up. " i love you too jerkass" i said to myself while smiling. Anyways i worked for the rest of the left hours then hit the gym later on.

.

" we meet again" the lady from earlier on said joining me on the treadmill. The gym had a few people. " ohh, it's you again" i said startled. I was so sweaty from all the running. I pressed the buttons to slow down the speed of the treadmill. While she started hers. " my name is Ellen by the way, I'm new in town. I've just moved in with my brother " she said. " ohh nice to meet you again Ellen. I'm Cora " i said smiling. " so what made you decide to join the gym, you too look fine" i said. " that's so nice of you. I guess i want to score myself a race confusing husband just like you" she said. " mmh, rare birds" i said chuckling. We talked for a few minutes... " hey, wait up. Who are these guys" she asked following me as i was exiting. I was in between my bodyguards. " it's okay guys" i said to them, they gave us a little bit of space.

We took the elevator to the underground parking. It was just the six of us in there. " you have four bodyguards. Who are you?" She asked. " no body" i said shrugging. " now I'm even more curious to see your husband " she said. " maybe we should go out sometimes " she said. " that would be nice but i am always busy, i hope you understand ." I said as we got off the elevator. " ohh, you work during weekends too" she asked. " i spend my weekends with my son and husband or at church " i said. " we could go to church together" sge said. " sure why not, goodnight Ellen " i said getting in the car. She waved goodbye.

[6/3, 18:56] Lynne: I took a long warm shower as soon a got into into my apartment. Got out and wrapped a towel around my body body then put on my gown. I searched for my purse. " hey i was wondering if one of you could drive to the nearby nandos drive through to buy with a full chicken, mild with green salad and bunnies. I'm really starving " i said after opening the door. " yes ma'am dumisani said taking the 200rand note. " thank, i really

appreciate it. Also get yourselves something to eat, you must be hungry " i said before closing the door. I moisturized my body then dressed up. My tummy started rumbling, i thought of having cornflakes but just the idea of them upset my tummy. 15minutes later dumisani came back with my chicken. I ate up like I've been starving for days. I worked on my reports then went to sleep. Around 23pm. Just when i was falling asleep i got woken up by the knock on my door. " who is it" i asked walking towards it while yawning. " it's your other half " he said. " Salvatore?" I asked opening the door. He attacked me with a kiss while trying to undress me. " mmh wait...where are they" i asked referring to the bodyguards who were no long at the door. " i sent them home. They'll be here by tomorrow morning. Right now we should just get naked" he said scooping me up and throwing me on the bed while taking off his clothes.

.

Good night people. Until tomorrow, pieces are the only way to the end point of our story

[6/3, 18:56] Lynne: Page 76

Cora's pov

.

I woke up around 5:40, washed my face and brushed my teeth, i wore my gym tracksuit and sneakers. " hey" i said standing over salvatore's head while patting his chest. He opened his hazel blue eyes. " hey, I'm leaving. I'll see you on Friday" i said smiling. He looked so gorgeous and sleepy and confused. " so early" he said frowning. " the gym, remember?" I said smiling. " you're not going to quit, are you?" He asked. I sighed and set on the edge of the bed. " how about we go for a check up after two weeks just to make sure that my exercising doesn't affect the kids. That way you'll feel at ease" i said, my eyes darting between his. " it might be too late by then, we're going to the doctor this Sunday." He said sitting up straight. " okay then, I'll see you on Friday night. I love you, bye" i said standing up. He pulled me over for a kiss. " i love you, I'll see you later" he said, i frowned a bit but smiled anyways. I took my bags and exited the room. I found my bodyguards standing outside the room. " good morning ma'am "

they said in unison. " good morning guys" i said.
They helped me with my bags.

.

" Ellen, you're early today " i said as we walked in to the gym together. " what can i say, i get the motivation from you" she said shrugging. " are you always this nice?" i asked chuckling. " i take after my brother" she said smiling. " he must be a nice person " i said riding on the tricycle machine. She took another one next to me. " he's the nicest person I've ever know, you guys should meet sometimes " she said smiling. " aah aah, i don't think my husband would be pleased about that" i said shaking my head. " he's the overzealous type?" She asked. " let's just say he's a little bit overprotective. As you can see" i said looking at my bodyguards, riding the tricycle machine. " he sounds bossy or a little bit of obsessive " she commented. " he's nothing like that, he's such a sweetheart. Well when it comes to me " i said

[6/3, 18:57] Lynne: " you love him don't you" she said chuckling. " I'm crazy about him" i said smiling at

the thought of him. " i can't wait to see this overzealous guy" she said. " so...tell me more about you. What do you do for a living. How old are you. Where are you from " i asked. " well as you know, I'm Ellen. Ellen Francis by the way, I've just turned 24 and graduated from the university of KZN and I'm a grade R teacher. My family lives in durban. That's it " she said then shrugged her shoulders. " wow, sounds interesting. Moving from one city to another is such a big step. Weren't there any vacancies in Durban? Or maybe you're running away from something " I asked eyebrows raised up. I was starting to sweat up. " i think you already know the answer to that. I'll leave now, i gotta stop somewhere before going to work" she said stepping off the machine. " Ellen, you haven't done anything yet. Did i upset you. I'm sorry" i said but she just ignored me and went out. " what was that about?" I asked myself frowning. Anyways i continued with my exercising then freshened up and went to the hospital.

.

" Mrs Salvatore please report to the reception. There's an emergency " my name was called on the intercom. I hurried to the reception. " you called for me" i said to thereceptionist as i was walking towards him. " your husband is here" she said looking towards the couches, i turned my attention there. " Joaquin, what are you doing here ?" I asked as he was walking towards me. " I'm taking you out for lunch. You haven't had you breakfast, your lunch break started 10 minutes ago" he said. " I'm still fine, I'm not hungry." I said smiling. " let's go before i carry you there" he said seriously . " let me go and get my bag then" i said already walking towards the locker room. I took my bag then walked back to him. He took me too the the restuarent across the street and we ordered lunch. " let me guess you call my bodyguards and they told you that i haven't had anything to eat"

[6/3, 18:57] Lynne: I asked folding my arms and leaning back as the waitress was collecting the menus . " don't give me that look, you're supposed to be eating at least three times a day Cora but you

only eat once. But worry not because I've paid restaurant paradisè to deliver your daily meals. I paid for the next 10 months in advance. You're going to eat three times a day and I'm going to make sure of that. If I fail then my name would not be Alonzo Joaquin Salvatore " he said firmly and so serious. " you gotta be kidding me, that's too-..." I exclaimed. " you're good at complaining one of these days" he said angrily. I kept quiet for a while and then cleared up my throat before talking. " look I'm sorry I haven't been eating well lately but that's extreme. I promise to have my breakfast, lunch and dinner on time from now on. I promise" I said. " if you want me to upgrade to getting you your personal cook then I will" he said glaring at me. " delivery will be fine " I said fastly and jumpy. " what's wrong with you Cora. What's so hard about what I did. All you have to do is just eat. All I'm asking of you is to just eat, is that so hard to do?" He asked looking at me like I was some troublesome person or something, I don't know but I felt like that. " it would be so good to do some of the things for myself. What if I don't like the meal they'd deliver or if I'm not hungry" I murmured. " this is not

about you and your independence only. My unborn children are also at stake. Since you're failing to take care of yourself then I'm forced to step up" he said. " can we not argue about this anymore. I hate it when you're crossed at me" i said softly. " well don't make me" he said shortly. He wasn't gonna budge anytime soon. We had our breakfast in silence. He was watching my every move like a hawk, i felt like a little kid... " i didn't mean to upset you" he said as we were crossing the street going back to the hospital. " i just get worried, why do you hate eating so much...

[6/3, 18:57] Lynne: You're still the same as from 4 years ago. You used to eat sandwiches for the whole day. No, at least twice a day" he said sighing. " that's because i didn't know how to cook, these days it just slips my mind until I'm starving" i said smiling and holding his arm while i put my head on his shoulder. " you're crazy, who forgets to eat" he said chuckling. " I'm odd i know, i promise to eat on time as from today you don't have to stress. " i said seriously. " I'm holding you to that" he said. " and now i gotta go back to the office" he said stopping on her feet. We

were in the underground parking. The bodyguards were following us, " not now. Let's take the elevator upstairs and then you can leave" i said holding on tight to his arm. I didn't feel like letting him go. " okay okay, you don't have you break my arm" he said, i let loose of his arm a bit. " do you always smell so good " i asked snuggling closer to his broad chest. " we're not the only ones in this elevator" he whispered into my ear. I giggled. My eyes were closed, I was holding on to his weist. My arms under his suit jacket. " we're are here " he said as soon as the elevator opened. " my desk is this way, come and see" i said looking up at him. " i have a meeting within 50 minutes" he said looking at his wrist watch then back down at me. " pretty please " i said giving him my puppy eyes. " you're getting impossible right now. You got five 5 minutes" he said getting out and i was still holding on to him. He left ten minutes later, one minute I'm angry at him and then the next I'm all clingy.

.

I passed by the gym after work. I took a treadmill while playing music on my ipod. I didn't see Ellen

that night, to my apartment. Took a shower then worked on my files again. Then there was a knock on the door. " who's it" i asked sighing heavily. " there's a delivery for you ma'am " samian said from the outside. " bring it in" i said. He walked in with a brown bag. " thanks" i said taking it. It was my dinner.

[6/3, 18:58] Lynne: It was the same old routine on friday too. I grabbed three of my bags, my handbag, laptop, and gym bag with my clothes to change and toiletries. No site of Ellen once again, i was starting to think that she was imaginary and i was going crazy. Anyways i focused on my exercising, freshened up then went to the hospital. There wasn't that much to do, we helped one patient give birth. Well i wasn't doing that much but i was part of the team that helped her. After that i went to the cafeteria and dealt with my files. " hey Cora, what happened to us being your bitches." I heard a lot of commotion, i looked behind me and my friends were approaching me. All hell lot of them. I stood up, eyes popped out, " take your bags we are so taking

you out" priya said packing my files in my laptop bag along with it. " hey! What are you guys doing. I'm still busy here" i said protesting. A lot of people were looking at us. " we're not asking you Cora!" Divya said as they were dragging me out forcefully. " what's going on here, are you guys drunk" i asked pulling out of their grips. " you are in no position to get chicky with us. You're such a lie " Kevin's siwe said. Amanda and esihle were quiet. " what's all this, what are you talking about?" I asked frowning. " bitch why didn't you tell us that you'll be have three marketeers ruining around the house " sandile's siwe said. " where did you get that kind of information from?" I asked frowning and folding my arms. They all looked at Amanda. " Amanda!, you promised" i exclaimed unbelievably. " and i did keep my promise until they caught me talking with my husband. Believe me i did, they were eavesdropping" she said fidgeting with her fingers. " you're such a traitor" i huffed angrily. " I'm sorry" she said shrugging her shoulders " i really can't believe this, so you guys were really going to continue hiding this from us" priya asked folding her arms. We were in the

elevator going down. I sighed then drew in a deep breath.

[6/3, 18:58] Lynne: I took a deep breath, " look guys i was going to tell you. We were planning to let you all know after my first trimester. You know that pregnancy comes with it complications. I didn't want to rush things only to be disappointed in the end. Even amanda wasn't supposed to know-..." cora!" She exclaimed. " what, I'm being honest here" i said looking at her. " i thought you were my best friend" she said sounding so childish. " you're all my best friends " i said. " but you hid such a thing from us" Divya said. " I've explained it to you already. You were going to find out just like everybody else close to my heart" i huffed. " you have hyper hormones. Why are you getting so furious. We should be the ones fuming here" esihle said. " I'm suffocating in here" i said getting out of the elevator as it opened. " do these man have to follow you everywhere you go" siwe s asked. " each and everyone of them has got man following them arounf. It's just that they don't know about it" i said pointing at the wives. " no, i

don't " Amanda protested. The other three kept quiet.
" Micheal wouldn't do that to me" she said
processing the whole thing in her head. " I'm going to
kill someone today" she said taking out her phone
upon realising that everybody was avoiding her gaze.
" Micheal what rubbish is this" she said talking on
the phone. We left her behind while she screamed.
That got me laughing a bit. " it's good to know that
I'm not the only one who gets frustrated to not have
some privacy. A person can't even cheat. It's so
irritating" siwe k said making me laugh even more as
we were crossing the street. " i wanted to say that to.
It's like you read my mind. Well except for the '
cheating part'. Salvatore would strangle me to death"
i said laughing. We were all laughing," i wonder if T
has some creepy bodyguards following me around
because if he is the all hell will break loose. You don't
mess with a Dlamini wome and get away with it"
esihle said thinking out loud.

[6/3, 18:59] Lynne: She was so deep in her thought
that she didn't notice us staring at her. " why don't
you call him and ask him girlfriend?" I asked

chuckling. " no, i prefer looking into those tiny eyes of his while i pull his long hair." She said and you could tell that she had a perfect picture of what she meant. I laughed even more. " you guys got me angry but you just made my dull day" i said chuckling. We entered into the restuarent. " unbelievably, Mike just hung up on me" amanda said sitting down. They were so loud that we got ourselves some attention. " and wena Cora. How long have you know about this" Amanda asked. " drop the zulu language dude. It ain't cool" siwe s said. " it's creepy and weird" divya added. " ngikhuluma nawe Cora " she said angrily and on purpose. Now i noticed the advantages of dating that black jack who took her virginity then ran away. There she was all white but speaking my home language while i kinda struggled. Well struggled a little bit more. She looked like some badass chick from a movie. " i wouldn't say i knew exactly. I was just guessing " i said, twisted the truth a little bit. " you know that i know when you lie and you know that i know too" she said fastly. " damn that's a hell lot of knows" esihle said , we all laughed once again. " this is not a laughing matter guys.

Micheal has been lying to me for the past three year. What if i cheated on him, that man would have cut my throat in my sleep...i think i should go to church and thank God for saving my life countless times. Do you know how many times I've looked at some more hot guys than him. He knows everything i do, what if i gave in to my temptations" She said seriously but funny. She was super stressed and angry." Relax it happens to all of us, everybody gets tempted sometimes. It's normal" Divya said patting her back. " except for Salvatore's wife" i said raising my hand. " I'm trying to console mandy here. Shut up Coh" Divya huffed. " and stop lying, there are more hot guys..

[6/3, 18:59] Lynne: Out there then salvatore. I'm sure you've looked. It's just that you are denied to touch" she added. " i swear on my mother's grave i haven't seen a guy hotter than my husband. Sure I've looked but nah, they're that appetising. Maybe later on I'll get that feeling." I said solemnly. " you're such a liar Cora " siwe said. " I'm not lying. For really " i said smiling. " she's telling the truth " Amanda said." Even if you back her up. I still don't believe her. Let

me call the waitress. I'm starving, the service is so poor here. Why vele" siwe said.

.

" so when is the baby shower " siwe asked. " before that guys. I got something to tell you" esihle said looking down at her burger. " who died now, why the serious face" Amanda asked. " please don't judge me. I've been holding this in for a long time now. I don't know how you're going to take it-..." spit it out already, you're scaring me" i said impatiently. " I'm pregnant " she said fastly leaving is all in an awe. " whao, is it me or this day is just getting worse. Is it' tell the thruth day'?" Amanda asked. " shut up Amanda " all of us said in unison. Esihle seemed said and streesed. " doesn't your family know?. Your brothers?, your mother?" I asked holding her hand. " that's the thing, i haven't told them yet. They don't know, I'm afraid to tell them. Mom would be so angry.

[6/3, 18:59] Lynne: She still thinks that I'm a virgin. I don't want to disappoint her. We had a great life plan for me. It was kids after marriage, i was never

interested in guys until tiaxiang came along." She said then started crying. " calm down, just tell them. I'm sure they'll understand " i said. " you don't understand my mother Cora. That woman will kill me" she kinda snapped. " sorry" she said taking a deep breath. " esihle, you're a grown up woman. I'm sure your mom would understand. She doesn't seem that scary " priya said. " you don't know my mother guys. She detects my every move. She's more than just meet the eye. She's so controlling and bitter. She won't, she won't understand." She said getting all emotional again. " you and tiaxiang love each. Why don't you just get married and then tell your family " i suggested. " yeah, that sounds like a good idea" Amanda added. " tiaxiang doesn't believe or want to get married " she said sighing heavily. " ohhh that's, that's so selfish right there. I think you're too soft on him. Tomorrow morning we're ganging up on him. I didn't know that he was such an arse" siwe k said fuming. " you won't understand.... he has his share of problems too, its has something to do with his past. Besides that i don't want to force him to marry me" she said." Salvatore and i are planning

on having a family reunion. I think you should burst the bubbly right there. Your mother won't have the guts to lash out on you then." I said fastly. " what if she kicks me out of the house" she said thinking out loud. " then you can go and live with your boyfriend. Problem solved " sowe s said. " mother in law won't be happy about this." Siwe s blabbered. " i don't believe in cohabitation. I don't want to live with a men before marriage" she said. " relax esihle. You'll get yourself an apartment or something. You have brothers too. You can go and live with them." Divya said. " this matter is settled. Let's wait till the reunion" i said smiling at her.

[6/3, 18:59] Lynne: " i still got two question though. Before we close the topic, does tiaxiang know that you're pregnant and how far are you?" I asked as our order came back. " he knows, we both know. He was so thrilled when he found out, somehow he knew before i did. But i wasn't, i cried myself to sleep for the whole first two months. I was so frustrated...I'm 5 months pregnant" she said chuckling a bit. It was a sad chuckle. " whoa and your tummy looks that

small?" Amanda asked astonished. " that's because i use three corsets to hold it tight. I've wrecked up my wardrobe. I wear loose dresses if you've noticed" she said looking at the fashion disaster of a dress she was wearing. " tiaxiang has been supporting me in hiding the pregnancy." She said giggling. We consoled her, until she started getting better. We left them there because i had to get back to the hospital.

.

" hi" someone said tapping my shoulders. I was lifting the 5kg steel. " Ellen, i thought you died" i said smiling. She set down so serious. " unfortunately I'm still alive" she said sitting down on the bench. " look, i wanted to apologise for the way i behaved the other day" she said. " sure, it's no biggie" i said casually. We focused on exercising for a while. " actually i am running away from my abusive baby dad" she said out of nowhere. " ohhh" i exclaimed. " he used to beat me up to the pulp and I'd get back to him whenever he'd apologise. He's a little bit older than me, my parents disowned me. They got fed up

on constantly visiting the hospital because of me. My little sister would come and see me in secret. This time i couldn't take it anymore. I had a second miscarriage because of him but i know that if he'd come and apologise then that'd be it. I'd forgive him and we'd get back together. With the hope that things would be different. He becomes a saint for the first two four weeks and then the abuse begins all over again. I have a metal steel supporting my spinal cord because of him...

[6/3, 19:00] Lynne: I just can't stop loving him. It's like I've started enjoying his abusive ways. Kendra would be watching in the corner of the room as he hit me until i pass out. My little girl's voice would kept on echoing in my head until i can't hear anymore. My brother, Ettore kept telling me to get out. Everytime I'd call him crying he'd keeping saying the same thing. 'Get out Ellie, get out. You deserve more better than that bastard.' He'd say....he made me believe that i was worstless. Just a fat cheating useless women. He accused me of sleeping with my lectures, sometimes he'd bring women in our home.

All drunk and wasted. This time he did something that tore me apart. He ended up hitting my daughter in the process. I wanted to get out for my daughter, she's going through depression as we speak. She used to be so bubbly and lively, we've just come from a psychiatrist. She and I, I've lost her innocent smile" she said tears streaming down her face. I had stopped exercising a long time ago. " why haven't you arrested him yet?" I asked. I was in the verge of tears myself. " I did. I've done so for the past 6 years but I end up bailing him out or withdrawing the complaint" she said. " don't you think he's going to come looking for you. What happens if he finds you" I asked putting my arm around her. " I guess that'd be just it. The end of me, the last time I tried to run away with his daughter my spinal cord got croaked. " she said shrugging like a lamb ready to be sacrificed. " why are you telling me this Ellen?" I asked. "I don't know, you seem easy to talk to. I just felt like it, I wanted someone normal to talk to besides my psycho analysing shrink. You seem like a good listener" she said chuckling a bit. " how old is Kendra?" I asked smiling. " she recently turned 6

years old" she said with a broad smile." Kendra, it sounds like you got one hell of a beautiful daughter. I can already imagine her" i said smiling. " why don't you put a protection order against him?"...

[6/3, 19:00] Lynne: I asked. " i don't want him to know about my whereabouts. I don't want to have to fight for kendra's custody Cora " she kind of snapped. " shhh...it's okay i understand" i said calmy and softly. " the gym is about to close, how about we meet sometime tomorrow. Let's say maybe have lunch. You can bring Kendra along, I'll bring my three year old son." I suggested as the gym was closing. " you have a son?" She asked as we were standing up. " yep, i have a three year old handsome rascal. And three more on the way." I said wiping off the sweat. " wow, i wouldn't have guessed." She said smiling. " let me give you my contact numbers" i said. She searched for her phone on her seemingly messy bag then typed and saved it there. We parted ways. I passed by my apartment, i had a few staff i wanted to take home with.

.

By the time i got home most of the lights in the house were switched off. Put in the code then got in. I put my bags on the couch and went straight upstairs with my handbag. I found Salvatore on his laptop, right in bed. " hey" i said walking towards the closet. I took out my phone and charger then charged it. Put it on my lanp stand. " hi, are you okay" he asked walking towards me. " yeah, I'm good. Just tired, let me go and take a shower " i said turning around to face him. He kissed my forehead. " I'll warm up your dinner in the meantime " he said smiling down at me. I gave him a faint smile. " thanks" i said then walked into the bathroom. I took off my clothes then got into the shower. Wore my shower cap then washed my whole body. I got out 15 minutes later. Ellen's story kept running into my head. A part of it reminded me of my childhood, i could imagine what kendra must've been going through. How the whole thingwas going to have a mark on her whole life, the anger and trust issues. I wiped my body while looking into the mirror. My baby bump was getting there. It was still pretty much a normal tummy just getting a little bit bubbly.

I walked into

[6/3, 19:01] Lynne: And wore my night dress and panties along with my gown and sleeper. Salvatore came in with my dinner as soon as i got out of the closet. " that took so long then i expected. Were you putting a love portion in my food" i asked folding my arms. " don't you think it's a little bit too late to ask now?. When you've been consuming it for the past four years" he said. " is it?" I asked giggling. " i present you with your love portion ma'am " he said handing me the tray. " thank you " i said taking it and going to the bed with it.

.

A few minutes later

" okay, spit it out already " he said sighing heavily. " what"i asked shrugging my shoulders while chuckling. " you've been stealing glances at me for the past 15 minutes. What is it and don't tell me it's nothing " he said putting his laptop aside. " well...i have this friend of mine who has been in an abusive relationship for the past few years. She loves the

guys so she keeps on bouncing back to him after the scars heal but now she finally decided to run away with their 6 year old daughter. The guy might be out there looking for her. What if he finds her and tries to kill her or fight for the custody of the child?" I asked the sighed. " what are you asking me exactly?" He asked. " what alternatives does she have?. She's afraid to place a protection order against him because he might find her then." I added. " i think we both know the answer here." He said. " which is...?" I asked frowning. " it's easy, death is the answer. Tell your friend to kill tge guy, case closed" he said it so easily. " are you for really?" I asked unbelievably. " you asked for my opinion and i gave you one. A simple straight way solution." He said. " is that what you'd do?" I asked. " i think we both know the answer to that " he said. He was right i already knew, judt tgat i wanted not to believe it. " some of us are incapable of killing" i said. " well then she must prepare to die. Tell your friend to buy her own casket...and Cora,

[6/3, 19:01] Lynne: Stay away from that Ellen woman.

She's trouble from miles away. Her husband is a lunatic, we have got enough trouble as it is" he said warningly. " wait so you know her, you know ellen?" I asked frowning. " of course i do otherwise what's the point in paying people to look after you 24hrs a day if i end up being clueless about who you meet up with, what you eat and wear" he said it so casually. " unbelievable!" I exclaimed. " you watched me ask you like a fool while you knew all along...and Ellen said he's her baby daddy not husband " i said firmly. " my PI is never wrong if you must know. " he said so confidently. " tell me all what you know about ellen " i said seriously. He looked at me like i was crazy or something but then understood that i was serious. " food first and then Ellen " he said. I sighed then continued eating.

.

" so?" I said after gulping down the glass of orange juice and putting the tray on the side stand of the headboard.

" - full names: Ellen Diana Francis

-24 years of age

- married to Markham Cross for some unfathomable reason she never changed her ID book/ last name

- so Markham is 34 years of age

- a high school teacher who sleeps with almost all the staff members. Females of course

- they got a 7years of age daughter Kendra Cross who's going through depression and seeing a psychiatrists along with her mother.

- Ellen got disowned three years back.

- they got married after dating for what looks like two or three months.

- Markham grew up in an orphanage after his parents died in a car crash.

- rumour has it that they used to fight in front of him

- so now Ellen is a runaway wife as we both know " he said, " by the way Ellen is that stupid of a doctor's little sister" he added. I was still in shock. " which doctor?" I asked frowning. " Ettore Francis. The one man I'm looking forward to kill." He said solemnly. '

Ellen is Dr Francis' sister?" I asked so shocked and surprised. " don't get too excited about it" he said.

.

[6/3, 19:01] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's pov

.

" don't tell me you're still jealous over Dr Francis " i said chuckling a bit. " you'd be too if you see how you see the way he looks at you" he said. " that's literally impossible and weird, how does he look at me?. " i asked frowning. " you wouldn't understand, forget it" he said sighing unease. " Make me understand, he looks at me like he looks at everybody else. He's a good person. He's kind at heart" i said standing up. I wanted to take the tray to the kitchen. " don't Cora, don't do this to me" he said firmly. " i don't appreciate you complimenting another guy in front of me" he said. I sighed then got back in bed. I kneeled on his side. " look, you got nothing to worry about, i am not interested in any other guy out there other than you. Dr Francis should

be the least of your worries, he's a nerd, boring and all" i said. " don't underestimate the power of a good man" he said, " whatever that means, I'm not willing to find out " i said after blinking a few times trying to read his mind. " how about we go downstairs and watch a nice movie" i suggested taking the tray. " i forget to tell you...our wedding film came back" he said following me . " great, we should watch that then" i said walking down the longest staircases. " let me get the flash drive " he said going back upstairs. I washed the dishes, wiped and put them in their rightful place.

.

" I'm meeting up with Ellen tomorrow" i said leaning on his chest as then video started playing. " i thought i told you to stop talking to that women " he said sighing heavily. " there's nothing to worry about, samian and dumisani will be there." I said looking at him while he was looking at the television screen. " they won't be, because i gave them the weekend off. You'll be spending the weekend in doors" he said, no questions asked. I kept quiet but i wasn't going to

conform with his order. " let's watch this the film" i said smiling, i didn't want to fight. " whatever is going

[6/3, 19:02] Lynne: In that head of yours. You better not execute it" he said. " you should just say it if you want us to argue" i said leaning back on the couch. " why should we have to argue. Just drop this women Cora. We have enough enemies as it is" he said turning around to face me. " if i don't do something to help Ellen, my conscious won't let me rest in peace." I said looking into his eyes. " so tell me this, how are you going to help her?" He asked holding my hand. " how?" He asked once again. " i don't know, i don't know yet. But i believe that there's a reason why she came to me. I'll come up with a solution to her problem" i said so frustrated. " I'll convince her to go to the cops or something " i added. " then what?" He asked..." let me tell you what's going to happen, she's going to to the cops. If he does get arrested tgen he'll surely be released in the next 6 months. She's probably going to be the to bail him out.Which i doubt would happen because Ellen

doesn't have any evidence against him. It's her word against his. He's a very cunning man, just do me and yourself a favour. Stay away from that Ellen woman " he said. It made perfect sense. " look i understand that you want to help her so badly but there's absolutely nothing you can do about it" he said. I sighed then leaned back on his warm chest. " but that doesn't mean that you can't help her" i said after something crossed my mind. " how could I possibly help her?" He asked frowning and folding his arms. " i think we both know the answer to that " i said. "No you didn't...I'll pretend as if i haven't heard that. Since this television is watching itself. Let's go back to bed" he said. " Salvatore plea-..." please don't, i think this pregnancy has turned your way of thinking upside down. " he said switching off the television. " i want to sleep here in the couch " i said lying down. " let's not do this " he said sighing. " we're not doing anything, i just want to sleep on the couch while watching the TV

[6/3, 19:02] Lynne: " okay then, suit yourself" he said walking away. " hey husband, could you do me a

favor and get me my phone" i said after him..." good night " he said handing me my cellphone. " thanks " i said switching on the television and then pulling a shawl over. I searched for movie on box office. 5, 10,15 minutes later i stood up and went to the refrigerator and took ice cream then can back to the couch. I had my ice cream which froze my little fingers. I lied back down. After 15 more minutes. 5,10,15 that's was it. I called up Salvatore on his phone. " it's 23pm Cora " he snapped sounding so deep in his sleep. " I'm sorry " i said then there was silence. " it's cold down here" i said in verge of crying. " turn on the heater, i have an important meeting tomorrow morning. Good night " he said then hung up. I tood the remote control and turned on the heater. 5,10,15 " what now?" He asked impatiently as soon as he picked up the phone . " the heater isn't hot enough" i said blinking a few times "we all have a fire place which doesn't require much but just a press of button." He said then hung up. I found myself crying..." are you for really?" He asked chuckling behind me. I didn't see or hear him coming. I got startled a bit but continued crying. He

was carrying a blanket with him. " stop crying and make some space for me" he said joining me on the couch. " shh...let's just go back to sleep. Stop crying, I'm here now " he said pulling me back down. We cuddled up until i fell asleep.

.

I was woken up by a loud thunder slap on my ear. " ouch, ouch. What was that for?" I asked opening my eyes only to see lorenzo smiling at me. " good morning mom" he said smiling. " today you're going to get a whip. You don't get to slap me and then smile about it just like that" i said. " i was just playing mommy " he said running before i could even get my hands on him. " hey come back here" i screamed chasing him around the house. " mom stop it" he screamed giggling...

[6/3, 19:02] Lynne: Page 77

Cora's pov

.

Well when i woke up Salvatore was not there, " mom, Papa said you're going to buy a baby" lorenzo said

as i was bathing her. Well he was now playing with the duckling toy in water. While i was watching after him. " yes, we're going to buy you three little siblings." I said smiling. " but mommy, i told you that i don't want a little sister or brother" he said sulking. " why?" I asked. " because then I'm going to have to share my toys and sweets with them. I don't like kids. They make a lot of noise, they cry like uncle siboniso's baby. He's always crying. And they poo on their nappies. Kids are bad mommy, please don't buy them " he complained about babies as if he was a grown up. " how old are you again" i asked chuckling. " Lorenzo, you're still a baby. You still cry, you pee on yourself when you're sleeping." I said smiling " I'm grown mommy, I'm a man now. I go to gym with Papa. See" he said showing me the invisible muscles. " Nah...i see no muscles there. You still pee on yourself and petunia has to change your bed every morning" i said chuckling. " no i don't " he protested. " yes you do" i insisted. " no i don't " he protested. " you do" i insisted. " did not" he kept on protesting. " did do" i insisted-... " Cora your phone is ringing" petunia came running in with my

phone. " ohh thanks...hello " i said answering my phone. It was an unknown number. " may i speak to Cora?" A woman asked. " you're directly speaking to her. Who's this ?" I asked frowning while standing up. " ohh thank God. Cora this is Ellen, i was starting to think i got a wrong number " she said sounding so relieved. " ohh Ellie, what's up. How are you " i asked. " I'm good, how are you. I hope you got home safely last night" she said chuckling a bit. " yeah i did, how is Kendra and your brother?" I asked. " they're good actually, Kendra is getting better by day even though she doesn't talk that much. My brother just went to work" she explained. " that's...

[6/3, 19:02] Lynne: wonderful news. I'm glad she's getting better" i said smiling and a little bit relieved. No kid deserves to go through so much trauma and abuse. " how is your son mmmh, what's his name again?" She asked. " Lore, lorenzo is fine. He's in the bathingtube as we speak...splashing water all over the bath-..room, lorenzo stop it!" I exclaimed as he hit the water even more harder. The whole bathroom was getting wet, including me. "Stop splashing water

or else you're seriously going to get that whip!... ohh sorry Ellen. He can be very naughty sometimes" i said sighing. " i understand. Kendra can get like that too, hey i was wondering if we're still going to meet today...for lunch?" She asked and salvatore's words came rushing into my head.' Stop seeing that Ellen woman '. " Ellen, actually my husband mhm... my husband, you see. Umh he thinks that it'd be for everybody's best if we don't meet" i said biting my thumb. " ohh!... i, i understand. He's right, i also don't want to get you into trouble. I come with a lot of danger plus you have a little kid and the others on the way. It was so silly of me to even call you up...what was i thinking. No woman infact no human being would warm to be friends with me. I shouldn't have called, sorry for disturbing you. Bye" she kept on stuttering and then hung up as if she was about to cry or something. " Ellie..." i exclaimed but she was already go. I sighed then got lore out of the water. Wrapped him in his green towel. " let's get you dressed buddy and then i can also go and shower" i said picking him up and going to his closet. I moisturized his body then dressed him up in white

shorts and vest along with sandals. " you look super handsome " i said kissing him on the lips. " mommy " he said wiping his lips. " stop being forward. Go downstairs and watch cartoons while i clear up the messe you made in the bathroom. " I'm hungry mom. May i please have hot chocolate with mashrooms" he asked. " uyahlupa yaz" i said smiling.

[6/3, 19:03] Lynne: Mom what are you saying?. You're speaking just like Nina mom... when am I going to visit Nina mom in heaven " he asked excitedly. The mention of her name got me swallowing a hard lump in my throat. " wha--...go and ask aunt P to make you hot chocolates with marshmallows." I said putting him down. " but mommy i wa--..." just go lorenzo!" I snapped angrily. " mommy " he cried looking so scared. I took a deep breath closed my eyes..." I'm sorry baby, don't cry. Mommy didn't mean to shout at you. Sorry, don't cry. I'll make you that hot chocolate with marshmallows you asked for " i said picking him up. " I'm sorry, sorry" i said patting his back. I put him on the high chair then prepared two cups of hot chocolate with

marshmallows. " let's have biscuits while these cool down " i said taking out a box of orios. I put some in a side plate, and set down next to him. " look i don't want you to go to heaven and leave me alone. Let's do this, you'll visit heaven when you're much much more older with a lot of grandchildren and great grandchildren but for right now let's just stay here, okay" i said wiping away the trace of tears on his face. He nodded silently... we had our hot chocolate then i went upstairs and showered.i came out of the shower wrapped a towel around my body. I took my phone and called up Ellen. It ringed a couple of time before she picked up. " hello" a little voice said. " Hi, I'm Kendra mom is in the bathroom " she said. " ohh Kendra how are you. How do you like your new school?" I asked. " Mom said i shouldn't speak to strangers but i can take a message " she said. " tell your mother to call me, we need to talk. Actually i want us to meet" i said chuckling. She sounded way to clever for a 6 year old. " I'll tell her, bye" she said. " have a lovely day miss Kendra. And tell your mom that it was Cora who called. Bye" i said then hung up. I dressed up and went downstairs with my phone.

Salvatore wasn't back yet, " could you gether cleaning staff for

[6/3, 19:03] Lynne: me and put them in my room." I asked petunia . I wanted to clean the bathroom. " actual I've been wanting to talk to you" she said putting down the mopping bucket she was carrying. " ever since miss Nina's funeral her room go locked. I was wondering if i could maybe clean it and pack her stuff in boxes. Her mom and i talk, i think it would be good if we returned her clothes home" she said fidgeting with her fingers. " my day couldn't have gotten any worse" i murmured to myself. " how about i talk to Salvatore first and then I'll come back to you" i suggested sighing. " thank you" she said then picked up the bucket. " hey P, were you and Nina good friends?" I asked frowning. " i wouldn't say that but we were pretty much close. I got to know the side of her that she tried to hide from everyone " she said smiling. " what was she like, i mean what was that side like?" I asked following her to the laundry room where she washed the bucket and filled it with clean water then washed the mop. "

she had some goodness in her, she loved to laugh and smoke. Alcohol was her close friend on rainy days. She had a good sense of humour, a couple of heartbreaks. Maybe more than just a couple. She was heart broken woman... your, your husband wasn't the first one to break her heart and leave her. There were many more man before and after. Other than that she was bad at being a mother but she tried after all what can we expect from a woman who never had a good childhood " she said smiling and chuckling there and there. " did she really love my, my husband?" I asked sitting on one of the washing machines. " yeah i think so, i can not guarantee that but i think so... from the way her eyes glowed when she talked about him i think she loved him in her own way. We all love in our own different way right?" She said shrugging her shoulders. " how was she like when she was with Lorenzo, did they ever play or laugh together?" I asked. " umh most of the time...no but when they did it was ...

[6/3, 19:03] Lynne: great to watch. I know that deep down inside she loved her son even though he

reminded her so much of, of Mr Salvatore. I mean who wouldn't fall in love with Lorenzo. He's such a sweetheart " She said smiling a bit. " did she ever tell you why she hated me somuch?" I asked. " how would you react if the tables were turned. I mean you did not really expect her to love you--..." yes but i did nothing to her, i wasn't the one to make the choices. I, i..." i stuttered. " actually you're right, i would've also behaved the same way" i said sighing. " i can't get her out of my head, her death haunts me every single day." I added. " it shouldn't, It's all part of God's plan. I guess it was her time. It's not your fault " she said holding my hands... " excuse me, i have to put these upstairs " she said taking the two buckets. "P, thanks for the talk" i said. She nodded and left, my phone rang. " hey Ellen " i said getting off the washing machine. " Kendra tells me you called" she said getting straight to the point. " actually i was wondering if you could maybe come over to my house for lunch" i said. " what, you changed your mind " she asked. " you're a good person and i think you might need a friend right now. Someone to talk to, I'll text you my address. Okay bye" i said then

hung up before she could say anything. " Mom there's someone at the door" lorenzo screamed. I walked towards the door and and opened up. "Good morning ma'am sir said we must deliver these" a girl said handing me plastics from restuarent paradisè. " what's this?" I asked taking the plastic bags. " breakfast and lunch ma'am " she said. " ohh, okay thank you" i said then got back into the house. There were four plastics.

.

Good night

[6/3, 19:04] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's pov

.

I put tge plastics on the kitchen counter and unveiled them. Two plastics had lunch and the other two breakfast for three people max. " Lorenzo, petunia breakfast is here" i called out while taking my phone out to order pizza just in case Ellen came by. " Mom. I want noodles "lorenzo said trying to sit on the high chair whoch was impossible because he was short. "

we're all going to have this, you'll have noodles later
"i said. I helped him and then took out three plates to
serve us, i also took pomegranate juice. " you called
for me " P asked walking in the kitchen. " come and
have breakfast " i said pulling the lunch containers in
the refrigerator then took out lamb chops out of the
deep freezer and put them in warm water. I dished
up for into three plates. It was full english breakfast,
" can you get me those glasses " i said to petunia.
She stood up and did just that. We had our breakfast
then i boiled the lamb chops while i went upstairs to
clean the bathroom. Petunia had already cleaned
Lorenzo's bathroom, i went to check on my pot then
i organized the closet. The pizza guy delivered it in
an hour later, i paid him and then he left. " Lorenzo
take your toys to your play room please " i said
clearing up the sitting room. He stood up dragging
his feet. My phone rang on my jean pocket. " Ellie " i
answered my phone smiling. I put it in between my
ear and shoulder while i fixed the cushions, lorenzo
was quite handy. " Hi, I'm at the gate of some huge
mansion but the security won't let me in. Maybe I'm
lost " she said . " I'll check with the securities, hold

on " i said walking towards the telephone. I told the securities to let her in after i explained how she looks like. " Mom can i play games in your phone, I'm so bored" lorenzo said holding on to my leg. " but you have a computer game buddy" i said picking him up. " mom your phone has colour. My computer game is boring " he said pulling my plaits. You can have my phone

[6/3, 19:05] Lynne: For 30 minutes, agreed?" I asked, he nodded the i handed him my phone. " i love you mom" he said kissing my cheek. " your love costs a leg and an arm "i said smiling. I opened the door and found Ellen walking towards it holding a little white girls hand who had a teddy bear in her arm. " Thank goodness, i was beginning to think that i got lost " she said sighing in relief. " Hi guys, come on in" i said opening the door widely. They walked in, i don't know but the little girl kept looking around the house. I put Lorenzo down." You must be Kendra, right?" I said squirting down in front of her. She snuggled close to her mommie's skirt. " you don't have to be scared of me, i promise i don't bite. We talked on the phone

earlier on, Hi I'm Cora " i said extending my hand for a handshake. She looked up at her mom then my hand, " it's okay, say hi to aunt Cora" her mom said smiling. " Hi, I'm Kendra cro--Francis" she said shaking my hand but she was quite alarmed. " it's nice to finally meet you Kendra Francis. I like your hair, how do you keep it so shiny and long " i asked smiling. " i don't know, ask my mom. I think you have beautiful hair too" she said smiling a bit " but it's your hair...never mind. By the way you look gorgeous. Your eyes twinkle" i said chuckling. " come , i ordered some pizza especially for you guys. We can have tea and biscuits while we gossip though i must warn you I'm not familiar with the latest news about celebs or fashion world let alone the cars. But we can talk about child birth and STDs " i said standing up and Walking towards the kitchen. " is that your handsome rascal?" Ellen asked chuckling. " ohh i forgot to introduce you, baby Lore. Come here" i screamed giggling. We set on the high chair, they were both sitting opposite to me. " Mom, isn't 30 minutes a months" he asked hiding the phone behind him while giving me one of his flashy

begging smiles. " i didn't call you here for that i said chuckling. " meet Ellen and Kendra" i

[6/3, 19:05] Lynne: said. " Ellen this is my handsome rascal, Lorenzo " i said . " Hellow Lorenzo " Ellen said. " Mom which one is Ellen " he asked looking at them thoughtfully. " the older one is Ellen and ths younger one is Kendra " i said frowning. He walked up to them." Hello aunt Ellen" he said extending his hand for a handshake. Ellen gave him her hand for a handshake. " how are you doing Lorenzo " Ellen asked. " I'm fine " he said ." Hi Kendra " he said extending his hand out but Kendra just looked at him. " she's so mean, I'm leaving " he said storming out of kitchen. I couldn't help but laugh. " is he going to be alright. I hope he's not offended. Kendra doesn't really speak to strangers unless i instructed her to. She's quite reserved. I ----" it's okay, you don't have to worry about him. He'll get over it. He can be such a drama king sometimes " i said smiling. " let me warm up that pizza, tea or juice?" I asked standing up. " juice would be fine, thanks " she said. I warmed up the pizza then poured juice into three glasses. I

put the pizza box in the middle of the table. " i hope i didn't ruin your plans for today. I just thought that getting out of the house would do you and Kendra here some good. Other than going to work and back " i said sitting down. " i had no other plans other than to see you Cora and i must say i was really heart broken when you turned me down on the last minute" she said shrugging her shoulders. " I'm sorry about that too, It's just that me and my husband thought that it would be for the best if we don't meet anymore. We have our own share of problems and then you have yours. It's a really sticky situation " i said sighing. " so what changed your mind?" She asked. " i don't know maybe it's just that what you told me about Kendra reminded me of my childhood. If you watch the news you must have already know about me " i said shrugging her shoulders. " ohh is it, i never watch the news you. What happened?" She asked shortly.

[6/3, 19:05] Lynne: " that's a story for another day. I don't want to get sad today" i said chuckling a bit. "So Kendra what's teddy's name "i asked. She looked

at me then back at her teddy bear. " teddy doesn't have a name" she said with her tiny cute little voice. " how about we name teddy today?. Would you like that, wouldn't that be just great?" I asked smiling. " she nodded, " how about we name teddy Alex?" I asked. " teddy is pink, she's a girl. Alex is a name for boys aunt Cora " she said chuckling. " ohhw is it?. Forgive my cluelessness. But i used to have a girlfriend named alex, I'm confused right now. How about we name her Alexander then?" I asked blinking a few times. She just giggled shaking her head " no?" I asked dramatically sulking, she shook her head no. " what do you suggested we name her then?" I asked . She thought for a little while. " teddy is pink so her name is Pinky" she said. " wow, you're smart too, It's such a smart name ' pinky' . Give me a high five for that" i said and then we high fived. " i think you and i are going to be friends . So how many more teddies do you have?" I asked taking a piece of pizza. " i only have pinky, mommy said i must leave all my teddies back at home she said playing with her teddy bear. " ohh" i murmured looking at Ellen. " tell you what, I'm going to buy you one big blue teddy

and then we're going to name him Mr Blue "i said pulling her cheeks. " would you like that?" I asked ant then she nodded happily. " Mom you promised me noodles. The game is boring now...hey can i also have pizza?" lorenzo said walking in. He was a talker that one. " here's some pizzas how about you take Kendra to your playroom and play there " i said giving him a slice of pizza. " Mom!" Kendra said looking up at her mother. " it's okay go and play with Lorenzo " Ellen said smiling. " come on Kender" Lorenzo said pulling kendra's hand. " it's Kendra not kender" Kendra said firmly. They kept on arguing until they disappeared from our eyes. "

[6/3, 19:06] Lynne: " Kendra seems fine to me" i said pouring myself a glass of juice. " I've haven't seen her talk that much for days. Seems like you know your story when it comes to kids" she said seriously. " when you're with kids you just need to behave like one. That way you'll get along, i always try to be a friend. It's quite simple, you can do it too" i said chuckling a bit. " i don't know about that Cora, sometimes i just look at her and see a splitting

image of his father. She can be so stubborn sometimes, i end up losing my cool. The other day i would have slapped her if not for her uncle. She asked me about her father, how could she miss that bastard who hit her " She said sighing heavily. " ohh!... try not to be so hard on her. She's just a kid, she still naïve. She doesn't understand. I'm sure this is hard on you but try not to take out your frustration on Kendra. You don't want her to grow up messed up " i said holding her hand. " and it would be for everyone's best if you cooperate with your therapist. The first few days ain't always easy but you'll get there. It's frustrating but the end results are going to be worth it, trust me " i said smiling at her. " it's so hard Cora, I've started having noghimares about him. He haunts my dreams, sometimes i just think it would be better if I'd just die. Then i wouldn't have to feel all the pain. Most of the days i feel emotionally numb, what's the point of being alive if I'm not living?" She asked looking at the ceiling , i could see that she was trying to hold back the tears. " don't say that Ellen, you've got a lot of things to live for... i too used to say that. But a best friend of mine told me '

cora, you got a lot of things to live for. I'm sure you want want to see lorenzo on his first day at school, to finish your degree and then your honours. Make your mama proud.' She told me to focus on the things that planted a smile on my face, the things that makes me happy. And you Ellen have got a lot to look up to. Ellen needs you, you're the only thing that she got right now. If she loses you then the devil will win. Don't be selfish, pick yourself up and start living... for kendra's sake" i said holding her hands tightly. " promise me you you live, you won't do anything stupid " i said looking into her eyes. " i, i promise " she said in a questioning manner. " don't just say it for the sake of saying it. I want you to mean it. Telm you what, think about what I've said." I said firmly. She nodded.

[6/3, 19:06] Lynne: " do you know what i do when i feel that life is weighing down on me?" I said standing up. " it doesn't always work but it helps sometimes. I think of all the people in the world, the possible problems, pain and suffering thry go through. Imagine a helpless woman dying of cancer,

helplessy. She knows that she's about to leave her kids. The pain she must be going through. Not just physically but both emotionally and spiritualy. The feeling of helplessness, that woman has got no choice. She's just waiting for the last chapter to be closed and that's the end of the story, you still got a choice and a chance Ellen . Imagine a streetkid. Somewhere under the bridge, hungry and cold but you still get everyday meal with a roof over your head. Imagine one of those kids who get raped constantly, not just that but they're told to keep quiet about it because if not they'll be killed . Maybe along with they mothers, maybe even the mother knows but she's just trying to save her marriage by sacrificing with her only daughter. Maybe the kid told her mom but she just didn't want to believe her because you know why, the man provides for each and every need of theirs. It gets worse and worse, some people are suffering silently, depressed out there. Some find comfort in drugs, some find peace in cutting they arm wrists. There's a kid out there who's just only 14 but looking after her siblings. Imagine the sex slaves, the ones who are suffering

at their stepmothers hands. I've had a taste of few of the things myself but life is not so bad. Just hold on a little bit longer, there's always light at the end of the tunnel. At least you're an educated woman, you earn something at the end of the month." I said smiling but my insides weren't. She stood up and we hugged. " thank you " she said after a long time of hugging. " there's no need to thank me, I'm just being a friend, " i said smiling " i think a lot of people could use your words." She said seriously. " ohh please, I'm not a

[6/3, 19:06] Lynne: I'm not a shrink, okay" i said chuckling. " but you can be a motivational speaker" she said solemnly. I looked at her for a few seconds then shook my head chuckling. " no thanks, I'm fine with the profession I'm heading to. Now let me start preparing for dinner in peace " i said brushing it off. " think about it, I'm serious " she insisted. I took out my vegetables from the refrigerator. Put them in the washing basin and poured water. " i hope that your husband won't be offended by me being here" she said " I'll give him my point of view, I'll explain it to

him, he'll understand. After all he knew that he was marrying a stubborn woman when he went down on his knees" i said shrugging my shoulders. " a crazy one too" she added shaking her head. I set down a chopped my vegetables. " i gotta tell you something... I'm married too. I got married when i turned 18. He was my high school teacher, my first love. We were so inlove. At least i loved him. I was so stupid, i cut ties with a lot of people who tried to warn me against him. I thought they were jealous, he brain washed my me. I fought with my parents then eloped to get married. The beating started a few months after our marriage, i caught him cheating. I always wonder how i love him" she told her story. " i don't have an answer to that, i just need to know if you're not going to go back to him this time. You gotta use what's in your head not your chest. It's going to be hard i know but you gotta think of Kendra. She should be your priority. " i said firmly. " I'll try, my love for kendra is greater than anything. " she said shortly. We chatted while i cooked and we and had lunch with everyone.

.

Lorenzo and Kendra were running around the house. "papa, yey!" I heard Lorenzo scream excitedly. I swallowed the hard lump in my throat. "hey buddy, and who's your little frie---nd here" he said walking inside the kitchen, frowned upon seeing Ellen. He was Carrying lorenzo in his arms. "Hello " he said slowly

[6/3, 19:07] Lynne: " hey, you're back...umh. this is Ellen, Ellen meet my husband. Joaquin " i said walking towards him. He had a scary look, i held on to his arm. " remember Ellen?. I told you about her last night. I thought it would be nice to invite her for lunch. This is her daughter, Kendra. Isn't she just beautifully?" I kept on talking. To be quite honest i was shit scared of what he might do. " nice to finally meet you Ellen " he said suprisingly extending his hand for a handshake, i had already envisioned him kicking her out or shouting at me for inviting trouble into our home. . " Hi" Ellen said shaking his hand. " Cora has told me a lot about you" she said smiling. " all good i hope" he said frowning. " yes all good and

i must say i really didn't expect you to look this white" she said. " white?" He asked frowning. " don't mind her, she's crazy " i said laughing in relief. " we'll take our leave " Ellen said. " i hope you're not leaving because of me?" He said it in a questioning manner. " no, not at all. We were already on our way out as you came in" she said fastly. " I'll see you out" i said walking outside the kitchen. " it was nice to meet you sir" Ellen said. " you too Ellen " alonzo said putting Lorenzo down.

.

" he's so white, he looks nothing like coloured or whatever " Ellen said as soon as we walked outside. " shut up" i said chuckling..." i had a great time today, thanks " she said " me too, Kendra looks like she did too" i said smiling . We hugged and then she left

.

I went back into the house, well i was met by Joaquin's folded arms, no more smiling or anything. " i thought we talked about that" he said. "I know, i can explain" i said closing the door. " you don't listen,

do you. Why are you always like this, so stubborn and determined?" he asked tiredly. "let's talk somewhere more private" i said glancing at Lore and P who were watching television. "I'm going to take a shower, there's nothing to talk about." He said then sighed then walked upstairs. I followed him. "listen...i tried pushing her away okay. I tried, but i failed. My conscious wouldn't let me." I said closing the door behind us. He walked into the bathroom. "I'm not talking with you Cora." He said taking off his clothes. "so what?... are you just going to ignore me the whole day?" I asked loudly. He turned and looked at me. "I'm sorry, i didn't mean to scream" i said sighing. "it's just that i am trying to explain myself and you're not giving me a chance"

[6/3, 19:07] Lynne: I said taking a deep breath. "i knew you'd do this, from last night's tantrums and persistence. You like attracting trouble Cora, just once please think before you leap into your stupid decisions." He said holding both my shoulders. He explained it so gently but yet so firm. "you wouldn't understand Salvatore, you wouldn't understand how

it's like to grow up in a battlefield " i murmured then walked out. " then make me understand, you're right i don't understand. I don't understand how a wise women like you could risk her life for some stranger. You're pregnant for heaven's sake" he kinda snapped. " it's pointless talking to you about this, you don't know how life is like for kids like Kendra. You grew up in a safe home, where you were showered with nothing but love. You don't know how life is for women like Ellen." I said sitting down on the bed. " are you for really, so now i had a perfect childhood?" He asked looking at me with sadness in his eyes and disbelief. " that's not what i said, don't get me wrong. I know you've had your share of sorrows and i am not saying that your pain was any less but at least you saw a glimpse of love...do you know how it's like to feel the fear creeping in, where you just wait for another battle. Where you have both parents, a roof over your head but home doesn't feel like home. Do you know how it's like to hear the screams and breaking glasses while you're folded onto a corner somewhere begging everything to stop. Your hands covering your ears but unfortunately you still here

the sound. Whers you pray to get saved, pray for someone to save you but nobody. Nobody comes to your rescue, years pass by and you constantly have to llive with the same thing, it's like a horror movie on repeat. It keeps playing and playing, it never stops. Hatred fills your heart, you feel hopeless and done for... you pray about it, go down on your knee every evening and morning but things just don't change. They never change. And then you...

[6/3, 19:07] Lynne: Realise that maybe you're the only one who can save yourself from hell...you don't know how it's like Salvatore. To be scared, young and lonely. I couldn't be saved, i had to see each and every inch of hell. Every part of it, i had to experience each and every piercing and burning of my flash. I couldn't be rescued and saved... but i can make a change in somebody else's life. Change the story, no woman and no kid deserves to go through so much trauma and abuse. I believe that i can save someone, help them see the light. I don't want another kids to have to go to shrinks...What's the use after all because it never goes away. They may be able to

mend the torned up pieces but the mending stitches will always be there. Reminding you that you once got burnt. Each and every time you get hurt, it all come rushing back. Reminding you that you once was broken... and I'm not sorry for being so stubborn and determined, it's for a good course. I want to help, what's wrong in that. I believe that i can save lives...and i need your help in order to do that" i shouted at the end while wiping my tear with my arms. He pulled me in for a hug, shushed me silently. We stayed like that for minutes and minutes until i calmed down. But there was this lump in my throat. " what do you want me to do?" He asked pulling me away and looking into my eyes. " i don't know" i said sniffing. " he must go to jail, in order to do that we need loads of incriminating evidence and i know you're the right man for that job. You're the only one who can help me" i said, he smiled a bit. " what?" I asked blinking a few times. " I'm the right man for the job. Do you realise that you're asking me to commit crime?" He asked chuckling and shaking his head. I nodded slowly... " we're going to need Ellen's full cooperation in order to put him behind bars for

good. Without her full commitment, we won't be able to execute our mission. If she's not willing just promise me two things" he said seriously, no smiles.

[6/3, 19:08] Lynne: " what?" I asked. " promise me you that you're going to drop all this, including Ellen and this would be the last time you're ever going to ask me this" he said. I looked at him for a long time. " if she doesn't want to get help then i promise to drop this and this is the last time I'm ever going to ask you to do such an incriminating thing" i said solemnly. " I'll think of something, okay" he said holding both my cheeks. I nodded. " now stop crying " he said then stood up and walked towards the bathroom. " Joaquin..." i soft called out his name. He turned to look at me. I rushed to him and hugged him. " thank you" i said feeling so emotional. " you're so good to me, you're such an amazing husband, a friend and a lover. Not just that you're my soldier. You're just perfect, so good. I sometimes feel that i don't deserve you, you always tolerate my shit. I've been giving you nothing but shit lately but you...You're just so immaculate. I'll forever be

greatful for you. I love you so much but sometimes i think it's not enough. Why are you so good to me--
-..." You're crying again, this is not good for our babies neither is it good for you" he said holding me tightly." Sorry" i said pulling out and chuckling a bit. " you scare me sometimes " i said smiling at him. " scare you, how?" He asked frowning. " I mean, I'm afraid that one day I'd wake up and you'd be gone. I don't think I'd be able to survive without you. It's like I've known you before the universe was even created...does that even make sense" i asked chuckling a bit. He kissed my forehead. " i love you as much as you love me. And I'd never leave you" he said holding my face from both side. " well unless you ask me to...you're my home Cora and there's no place like home " he said. " i love you" he said once again. He was so perfect in every possible way, every aspect of him was made to the immaculate point. I could write a whole novel trying to explain him, it would take me years because each and every

[6/3, 19:08] Lynne: Second i discovered his beauty. His love was out of this planet. He made me believe

that there's love and then there's LOVE. " how about we take a shower together " he asked. " that would be great only if i didn't have cooking to finish and Lorenzo to bath later" i said smiling at him. " you're such a bad wife Cora " he said sighing heavily. " it's nothing new...dinner will be ready in a few minutes. Come downstairs " i said walking away. " bad wife" he screamed after me. We had dinner around 6pm then i bath Lorenzo and then took a shower myself and then we went to sleep.

.

The next day

Good night people

[6/3, 19:08] Lynne: Page 78

Salvatore's pov

.

I opened up my eyes, my body felt refreshed and ready for the new day ahead. Only heavens knew what it had in hand for us. Cora was not in the bed. I checked the time on the wall, it was 6am. I got out

off bed. Pressed the remote control to open the curtains, it was such a beautiful day outside even though there was no sun. I was wearing sleeping shorts, i washed my face and brushed my teeth, i took my phone then went downstairs. I walked to the kitchen where i found Cora dancing while making breakfast. She was more of twerking to be quite precise. She didn't notice me, she was in the shortest, skimpy white PJs. A short and vest. She looked appetising, i decided to capture a video of her. " God!" She exclaimed turning around. Startled, " you scared me" she said taking off her headsets. " carry on" i said giggling. " are you making a video" she asked walking towards me. " I'm so going to upload this on the internet " i said taking a few steps back. " no, stop it" she said chuckling. Trying to retrieve the phone from my hands. " why should i?. You look so beautiful. I want to savour this moment." I said running around the kitchen island" i haven't even taken a bath yet. I look horrible " she said , she was busy trying to catch me. "You look perfect i want to look at this want to look at this when you're all old and grey and be like ' Damn' " i said. " that's so

cheesy " she said smiling and finally giving up. She went back to her frying pan. " what are you cooking" i asked still capturing the video. I stood behind her, holding her waist. " you ruined breakfast in bed, but no problem I'll lut you back to bed" she said. " my little wife is so bossy, let me see... she's making scrambled eggs with veg and cheese, what's this?. Chopped Vienna." I said capturing the breakfast. " stop it" she said in her tiny cute little voice. " how are my babies down " i asked moving my hand to her tummy. " you ask them" she said sighing softly. " hey,

[6/3, 19:09] Lynne: What are you doing. I'm busy here " she exclaimed as i kneeled down and turned her around. " hey little musketeers" i said leaning on her tummy. " Salvatore " she said softly but impatiently. " did you hear that?" I asked looking up at her. " hear what?" She asked shrugging her shoulders. " don't tell me you didn't hear that, my musketeers just said ' buon giorno Papa (good morning Papa)" i said excitedly. " you're insane" she said laughing. " they said ' good morning ' that too in

Italian?" She asked laughing. " hey what's wrong with that?" I asked standing up. " when i cannot speak Italian that much, how would they besides that these three musketeers are going to speak my home language" she said arrogantly. " what's your home language Cora, when you can t even say one word without making me laugh. What's your home language?" I asked giggling. " are you somehow making fun of me, watch and see. These three are going to spean Isuzulu if they don't then my name wouldn't be Cora Zabenathi Maphumulo" she said daringly. " we shall see about that, why would my kids speak Isuzulu while they're the Salvatores? I asked. She turned back to her frying pan. " just to prove a point. And my Zulu will be so fluently enough within three years. Just give me three and you'll see" she said firmly. " okay Mrs Salvatore, it's a challenge " i said smiling.

.

" i left some breakfast for you and Lorenzo. Make sure he eats when he gets up" she said as we pumped into petunia who was going downstairs.

Cora was carrying a tray of our breakfast. " breakfast in bed as planned " she said putting the tray on the bench just on the feets of ths bed. I closed and locjed the door. " this doesn't look so appetising anymore " she said looking down at the tray full of different types of food. " excuse me " she said rushing towards the bathroom. I followed her, she was vomiting. "Are you okay?" I asked. she then flashed the toilet. " I'm fine" she said standing up. She brushed her

[6/3, 19:09] Lynne: teeth then wiped her hands. " I'm going to have to contact Osborne. When does this actually stops" i asked searching for her contacts on my phone. " it's normal Salvatore, I'm fine. Really, it differs with every woman. For some people it goes on until labour... let's go and have breakfast" she said smiling. " are you sure?" I asked frowning. She nodded, we went in bed and had breakfast there. She was feeding me, " this is ridiculous, i should be feeding you" i said sighing heavily. " why, because I'm pregnant?. I'm not sick, I'm just pregnant. Besides that if you want to feed me Mr. I think you

should prepare your own breakfast, this was prepared by me so i get to choose how you eat it." She said seriously. " i so wish to meet your mother " i said looking at her as she kept on talking and talking. " why?" she asked alarmed. " I've met your father and you're nothing like him. So you must've taken after your mother. Couldn't she spare me, you're so bossy and stubborn Cora " i said smiling at her. " well you can handle it" she said chuckling. " I'm just trying to spoil my husband, what's stubborn about that" she asked frowning. " you want to spoil me?" I asked with a smirk on my face. She nodded alarmed. " if you want to spoil me then it's easy. Let's just get naked" i said picking her up and walking towards the bathroom. " what about breakfast " she asked giggling. " breakfasts can wait" i said putting her down. We took out our clothes and got under the shower..." have you thought about baby names" she asked washing my chest with the sponge dipped in bubbly bath. " not exactly...what do you have in mind, isn't too early?" I asked looking down at her. " i don't know... I'm just asking. Would you prefer Italian, Zulu or English names" she asked drawing circles on

my chest. " maybe went should wait for the genders to be identified then we can talk but any names would do as long as there's a great meaning behind them." I said thoughtfully. " mmh, is it...

[6/3, 19:09] Lynne: I feel that, they should have ine name in Italian or English and then one in Zulu. Lorenzo does too and... when i think about it, I'm starting to love the name Nina gave him. It's beautiful" she said. " Mongezi?" I asked. " yeah, it's unique... and he's an addition to the family " she said. " mmh" i murmured softly. I pushed her back so that we could get under the shower abd wash the soup down our bodies. He plaited her was long wet, she was not wearing a shower cap. I switchex off the shower, she was looking up at me. I took her lips into mine. The kiss was filled sith breaks in between where I'd just look into her eyes. " i love you" i whispered softly. " i love you a thousand times more" she whispered back, smiling a bit. I picked her up, walked with her into the bedroom where i gently put her on the bed removed the tray and got ontop of her. Started kissing slowly, gradually got in between

her legs. Our heart racing to the same speed as we savour each and every tantalising touch. Our breathing escalating with every minute passing by, our bodies creasing rhythmically against each other as we made beautiful love. Our souls and heart intertwined to our little small beautiful world of bliss. We shut out the whole world, i was slowly thrusting inside her valley of fire, her back ached and fingers digging in to my masculine built back. Our eyes intertwined, all i could see in her eyes was love, love, love, love and it was all for me. My pace increased as i felt the pressure and pleasure building up. My male rod hardening like never before, i felt her legs tightening on my back and a tear escaped her eyes as we both cum. I collided on top of her, kissed her forehead which had perspiration. That was not the end of it we had two more sessions after that.

.

" i have a plan " i said as we were lying on the bed naked. I was holding her hand looking at it. " ah uh?" She said putting her head on my chest. " actually, no. We're going to discuss this with Ellen's presence"

[6/3, 19:10] Lynne: I said changing my mind. " what a bummer... so when are we meeting Ellen?" She asked a little bit disappointed. " tell her to meet us at the police station where Michael operates. You know it, i need to make sure of something before getting myself into trouble." I said seriously. She was lying on my chest, we were both naked, " sounds serious " she said looking at me. " not entirely...It's quite an easy task. Let's go and take a shower before lorenzo starts crying " i said, he had knocked a few times but we ignored him . She lied back on my chest. " you go, I'm tired" she said. " but you're lying on my chest" i said chuckling. " I'm inlove with your chest Mr Salvatore " she said chuckling. " i was thinking that since your birthday is in two weeks and everybody will be here... Why not announce the great news. My grandparents will be here too" i suggested. " sounds good... Even though you're hijacking my birthday party " she said. I was holding her hand brushing her ring with my thumb. " it will hardly take 5 minutes and then we'll celebrate your birthday till dawn" i said kissing her hand. " mmh...something is not fair by the way. Why does my birthday have to be

in the middle of the week while yours and Lorenzo's was on a Saturday. i have to party and then go to work the next day, so not fair" she whined. "ask God, that man has answers. Isn't that what you always say. 'God is my answer'. Let Salvatore take a shower while you're at it" i said getting off the bed and walking to the bathroom. "you're so on a pussy diet" she said following me. "why?" I asked chuckling. "ask God about" she said. "ohh...is it!" I exclaimed chuckling. Anyways we took a quick shower and then she called up Ellen to meet us at the police station within three hours. We spent some time with Lorenzo, watch all his favorite cartoons and then left around 1pm.

.

"a lie detector, for really. You must be kidding" she exclaimed as soon as i explained it to the both of them.

[6/3, 19:10] Lynne: "what's the big deal about this. I'm sure Ellen has got nothing to hide. Beside, it's just small basic questions" i said sighing heavily. "can you run the plan by me already" Ellen asked

looking a bit shaken. " I've explained everything already, what's there to explain. I just want to ask you a few questions. " i said irritated. " this way guys" Micheal said emerging from some room we followed him.

.

" how badly do you want Markham out of your lives" i asked. " Kong, you gotta ask straightforward questions. Questions that need a yes or a no" Michael advised. " do you want Markham out of your lives?" I refrained. " yes" she answered shortly. " I'd like to know if you're not going to bail him out this time because i cannot be wasting my resources and time for a stupid women " i said. " Salvatore!" Core exclaimed. " guys, make it snappy. We don't have much time. The first question is positive" Micheal said. Anyways i asked her a few more questions and they came out as positive... " so, what now?" Core asked as the three of us got out of the police station. " now we wait for Kevin to get hold of that video where he hits you in the shopping centre and you're going to press charges. Your law will be provided

with the evidence and I'll get two or three of the teachers he sleeps with to testify while at that something shocking will be planted in his car and the police will get a tip off. You need to go back to joburg. I'll get Gorge to work on your case. Ask for a protection order. I'll assign one bodyguard to look after you, you will need to also file for a sole custody which I'm sure you're going to get after he's arrested. That will be it, it was nice to meet you again Ellen " he said fastly that it took some time for me to catch up. He opened the door for me and then we drove home. I was still shocked. " what is it that you're going to plant in his car?" I asked on our way home. " that shouldn't bother you. You want him behind bars for years and he's

[6/3, 19:10] Lynne: going to go there. For many years at that" he said glancing at me then back at the road. We passed by Dr Osborne's office for a check up regarding my exercising which i had thought he forgot about but he didn't. The doctor reassured us that every was going perfectly and the exercising was actually good for the four of us.

.

Two weeks down the line, it was the day before my birthday. I had just come back from the gym and took a shower. I was looking at my mother's photos in such a long while. Ever since I couldn't go to her tombstone and put a single red rose and talk all I did was go through her photos throughout the years. She was such a beautiful woman. She had golden brown hair just like I did. And the light brown coloured eyes. "Hey mom..." I said running my finger through her pictures. "I know we haven't talked in a while...but yeah tomorrow I'd be spending the 22nd year without seeing your face. Life is not so bad as it used to be, these days I laugh more than I cry. In fact my husband, Salvatore. Doesn't give me a chance to cry. You must be wondering how he's treating your little girl...I still wonder if, if you were alive. Would you be calling me princess or munch, pumpkin or your little girl. Dad calls me Nathi...it's strange talking to you happily. I'm actually smiling as I look at your beautiful face...I'm also going to be a mother soon. A mother of three, imagine the chaos and

stress but don't worry. Salvatore promised me that he'll be here all the step of the way... he actually says I'm stubborn just like you. I think that's hilarious because he has never met you. And yes we already have a son. Remember him?... i told you about him before he was even born. His name is Lorenzo, he's like my own biological Son. Him and i share a lot in common...I'm also married. Aunt walked me down the isle. I wished you wers there to see me, help me get dressed in my wedding gown. But don't worry aunt us taking good care of me. She did her best, maybe I'm the woman you

[6/3, 19:10] Lynne: Would've wanted me to be. Tomorrow it's my birthday, all thanks to Salvatore I've started celebrating it. I know you would have wanted me to... i wish i could share all my happiness with you. And yes thanks for keeping me alive, i now don't hate your decision to keep me. All thanks to Salvatore for making me see the brighter side of the moon...i miss you mom, it's funny because i never met you... i love you" i talked to her photo until sleep took over. I was woken up by my vibrating phone

around 00:00 am.

" i wanted to be the first one to wish you a happy happy birthday. As your husband i have that much right. Happy birthday my heartbeat and happy many more to come. " the message said. It was from Salvatore, it was nothing much but it put a wide smile on my face. I said a " thank you " message back. Regarding Ellen's case her husband got arrested apparently they found a bag of drugs in the boot of his car, he was going to spend the next 30 years in prison. So Ellen was safe at last, at least for the next 30 years.

[6/3, 19:11] Lynne: Page 79

Cora's pov

.

I woke up around 5:40 and my four bodyguards accompanied me to the gym. I got messages and calls from every dimension, people were wishing me a happy birthday. It seemed like a promising day. Even though it was raining heavily. I met with Ellen at the gym who had just made it back in town. She

was planning on settling down in Johannesburg, finding herself a flat near her work place. For that moment she was still staying at her brothers place which by the way she didn't know that i knew. " really i don't know how i can thank you guys, what you've done for me... no one would have done that for me" she said as we were running on the treadmill. " ohh come on, anybody else would have done that. It's not like we shifted the whole planet for you. Have you found a place to stay?" I asked. " not yet, but I'm still looking, I'm sure I'm going to find something soon. I'm looking for something that's cheap but yet homely" she said. " I'm sure you're going find something" i said stepping off the machine. " I'll go and take a bath" i said taking my gym bag. " i brought clothes to change too, i thought what the hack, i always wasting time going back to the house to shower. I'm going to take a shower here" she said taking her bag. " you still have two hours, unlike me" i said chuckling. " i waste one hour driving home and then i still have to take a shower, it's hectic " she said sighing heavily while rolling her eyes. She seemed free and happy. " you seem different, i didn't

know that you could be this bubbly" i said shaking my unbelievably. " who wouldn't be happy, it's raining outside, it's such a lovely day" she said raising her hands out. " and then you call me insane" i said chuckling. " it's contagious" she said laughing. " anyways i feel safe now, at least i got 30 years as a free woman. I haven't felt so safe in a while. Now i could go to the malls without looking behind my back. I can unworriedly let my child play outside" she said. " well you deserve to be free, it's your right after all" i said smiling. Anyways i took a quick shower, wipe and moisturized my body then wore my pink Jordan tracksuits, sneakers and a cap along with my Gucci watch. Applied a little bit of makeup . I got to tge hospital just in time.

.

" is it me or you just look extra gorgeous today" the receptionist commented as i walked in. " I've noticed too" Dr Francis said walking by. " ohh please" i said chuckling. "Please make me 5 copies of these, i owe you one" Dr Francis said giving some file to the receptionist. " you should get an assistant Mr

Francis. You always owe me one." The old woman said shaking her head. "so what's the occasion?" He asked as we walked down the corridor. "can't a girl look beautiful without any reason?" I asked chuckling. "well... i wouldn't know. Happy birthday by the way, and i need to show you something in my office. Follow me" he said. "am I in trouble?" I asked following him. We walked into the elevator. "you're such an inquisitive woman. You'll see" he said well the elevator took us to the floor where his office was and we walked in there. He took out a bag and took out different types of male cologne. Put them on his desk. "if you're selling those, no thanks. My husband has enough in his closet and he doesn't use any of these colognes" i said browsing through all of them. "Can i please talk?" He asked sitting down on his chair. "are you going through some financial crisis, i don't get why a whole doctor would sell colognes on the side. Just take a loan or something" i said picking each and everyone up just to check. "can i speak now?" He asked chuckling while shaking his head. "sure go ahead" i said casually, "i bought different types of colognes because you look so very

disgusted and uncomfortable whenever you're around me and the other day you puked because of my cologne so i thought you should sniff one of these and tell me which one is your favourite " he explained. I looked at him for a long while. " isn't that just weird. Is that even appropriate?" I asked eyebrows raised. " why?, what's wrobg in what I've just did. I'm doing you a favour here. You spend miserable 6 hour working near me but if ypu think it's a bad idea then fine. I'll throw these down the drain and continue using my cologne. He said smi Page 79

Cora's pov

.

I woke up around 5:40 and my four bodyguards accompanied me to the gym. I got messages and calls from every dimension, people were wishing me a happy birthday. It seemed like a promising day. Even though it was raining heavily. I met with Ellen at the gym who had just made it back in town. She was planning on settling down in Johannesburg, finding herself a flat near her work place. For that

moment she was still staying at her brothers place which by the way she didn't know that i knew. " really i don't know how i can thank you guys, what you've done for me... no one would have done that for me" she said as we were running on the treadmill. " ohh come on, anybody else would have done that. It's not like we shifted the whole planet for you. Have you found a place to stay?" I asked. " not yet, but I'm still looking, I'm sure I'm going to find something soon. I'm looking for something that's cheap but yet homely" she said. " I'm sure you're going find something" i said stepping off the machine. " I'll go and take a bath" i said taking my gym bag. " i brought clothes to change too, i thought what the hack, i always wasting time going back to the house to shower. I'm going to take a shower here" she said taking her bag. " you still have two hours, unlike me" i said chuckling. " i waste one hour driving home and then i still have to take a shower, it's hectic " she said sighing heavily while rolling her eyes. She seemed free and happy. " you seem different, i didn't know that you could be this bubbly" i said shaking my unbelievably. " who wouldn't be happy, it's

raining outside, it's such a lovely day" she said raising her hands out. " and then you call me insane" i said chuckling. " it's contagious" she said laughing. " anyways i feel safe now, at least i got 30 years as a free woman. I haven't felt so safe in a while. Now i could go to the malls without looking behind my back. I can unworriedly let my child play outside" she said. " well you deserve to be free, it's your right after all" i said smiling. Anyways i took a quick shower, wipe and moisturized my body then wore my pink Jordan tracksuits, sneakers and a cap along with my Gucci watch. Applied a little bit of makeup . I got to tge hospital just in time.

.

" is it me or you just look extra gorgeous today" the receptionist commented as i walked in. " I've noticed too" Dr Francis said walking by. " ohh please" i said chuckling. "Please make me 5 copies of these, i owe you one" Dr Francis said giving some file to the receptionist. " you should get an assistant Mr Francis. You alway owe me one." The old woman said shaking her head. " so what's the occasion?" He

asked as we walked down the corridor. " can't a girl look beautiful without any reason?" I asked chuckling. " well... i wouldn't know. Happy birthday by the way, and i need to show you something in my office. Follow me" he said. " am I in trouble?" I asked following him. We walked into the elevator. " you're such an inquisitive women. You'll see" he said well the elevator took us to tge floor where his office was and we walked in there. He took out a bag and took out different types of male cologne. Put them on his desk. " if you're selling those, no thanks. My husband has enough in his closet and he doesn't use any of these colognes" i said browsing through all of them. " Can i please talk?" He asked sitting down on his chair. " are you going through some financial crisis, i don't get why a whole doctor would sell colognes on the side. Just take a loan or something " i said picking each and everyone up just to check. " can i speak now?" He asked chuckling while shaking his head. " sure go ahead" i said casually, " i bought different types of colognes because you look so very disgusted and uncomfortable whenever you're around me and the other day you puked because of

my cologne so i thought you should sniff one of these and tell me which one is your favourite " he explained. I looked at him for a long while. " isn't that just weird. Is that even appropriate?" I asked eyebrows raised. " why?, what's wrobg in what I've just did. I'm doing you a favour here. You spend miserable 6 hour working near me but if ypu think it's a bad idea then fine. I'll throw these down the drain and continue using my cologne." He said smiling but shrugging his shoulders. " okay fine, let me see" i said taking the colognes one by one and spraying them on my wrist to sniff them. " this one should do" i said giving him the ' NY police officer ' cologne. " couldn't you have opted for something else. This is the cheapest of them all " he said. " you asked me, it isn't the other way around. Stop crying and suck it up like a man" i said but my attention was at the pictures behind him. " are you always this rude?" He asked. " is this Ellen, she used to be slender?" I asked picking up the photo which was framed. She was in her school uniform, " yeah, she was 17...wait a minute. You know Ellen?" He asked standing up so intimidatingly. " Yes, no but... okay fine. I know her" i

said sighing after stuttering. " ohh! So you're the Cora that she's been talking about. You're the gorgeous woman who helped her...why didn't i see this. This makes perfect sense " he said running fingers through his hair. " there are a lot of Coras around the world. " i said putting the photo down. " i know that, but you're the only Cora that i know around the city and the way she described you. There's no doubt that it's you. It has to be you, because he described exactly how your husband is and the gym..." he said, i was just frowning. " what are you getting at exactly?. Never mind. I need to get some paperwork done and study. So if you'd excuse me " i said ." Wait, I've been wanting to meet the people who helped my sister just to say thanks. ' Thank you for setting my sister free' and I'd like to meet and thank your husband in person" he said so genuinely. " it's no big deal, it's done and dusted. Forget about it, and i don't think that my husband would be pleased to meet you. You're the least of his favorite people. I guess I'll see you during my rounds" i said then left, he seemed a bit dumbstruck. I went to the receptionist where i found my brown

bag of breakfast along with a bunch of tulips which had a card written ' Happy birthday my heartbeat ' . My day got made by then, " you're one lucky young woman " Mrs Smith, the receptionist said. " ohh come on, it's nothing that big" i said smiling while putting the card back into the bunch of tulips. " it's these small gestures that reach out to the roots of the heart" she said. " you're such a hopeless romantic Mrs Smith" i said chuckling and leaving.

.

" My husband " i answered my phone smiling. It was 7pm, i was on my way to the gym. " could you cancel the exercising for tonight. The guests are impatiently waiting. I'm at your apartment to fetch you " he said fastly. " really now?" I asked rolling my eyes while taking in a deep breath. " i haven't heard your voice since like forever and when i finally hear it, that's all you say" i asked. " please il mio cuore batte " he said slowly. " okay fine " i said then hung up. " Connor could you just drive straight to my apartment " i said. " yes ma'am " he said. We got there 5 minutes later. He was somehow inside my apartment which i had

left locked earlier on, but i was not suprised. He was Salvatore after all, " what's the hurry Joaquin. Didn't you tell the guests that i knock out late and the i have to go to the gym. Now I'm going to get muscle cramps tomorrow" i said throwing the bags on the couch. " i thought i did, anyways it happened. I bought you something " he said walking towards me with three shopping bags. " what's this, is this my birthday gift?" I asked opening the first bag. There was a vanilo bodycon and, which looked unforgingly tight but extremely sexy. I had no doubt that it was going to suit me perfectly. The second bag had vanilo matching high heel and the third one had a lingerie, black and almost close to nothingness because it was just stringed bra and panty. " these look high uncomfotable... i bet they can turn any man on" i said looking at him through what he called panties. " put then on for tonight, i have already pictured you in them" he said holding my waist. " hurry up and take a shower " he said giving me a peck on the lips. " while i shower could you brush my hair" i said opening the wardrobe abd coming out with my Brazilian weave which was perfect hanging

on it's doll head. " and here's the brush" i said handing him the brush. " you look appetising tonight. Palatable, i could eat you right now " i said. " if that's a bribe for making me brush your waeve then you better try harder because it's not working. " come on, be a good husband and help your wife out. Will you and you look appetising for really " i said smiling. He was wearing a silver grey scotch suit a crispy white shirt and a black bowtie and black formal designer shoes.

I took the quickest shower ever, brushed my teeth and wrapped a towel around my body then fetched my toiletry bag from my gym bag. Went back to the bathroom, moisturized my body then did my make up. " i think you've combed my weave just fine" i said looking at him. I dropped down the towel to wear my lingerie. He was starring at me the entire time. " what do you think" i asked standing up after putting on my high heels. " let me see" he said waking towards me. He held my waist, " don't even think about it " i said pushing him away, he was trying to kiss me. " let's stay here for a little while" he

said seriously. " I'll have to take a rain check on that idea" i said pushing him away away. " I'll be waiting outside" he said. " am I arousing you that much. Ohhh my baby can't stand the heat, what did you have in mind when you bought these naughty dirty strings" i asked mocking him. " you're wasting time talking " he said looking at his wrist watch. He then left the room. I giggled a bit then put on my tight sexy dress. I put on my weave, brushed it to one side. Applied nude lipstick, i took my handbag then. " let's go " i said after locking the door. I found him chatting with the bodyguards outside.

.

" Happy birthday " people screamed as soon as we walked into the house. i check the time on my wristwatch, It was 9:40 pm. they were a lot even though it was just family and close friends. " grandma, grandpa...my favourite people " i said walking towards them. " i couldn't say the same for you, we've been here for the past two days and you haven't come to see us. Not even once" grandma said folding her arms. " sorry grandma but you know

how the med school is. Tell you what, my first paycheque is coming straight to you guys nust to say sorry" i said giving them puppy eyes. " i like the sound of that bribe " grandpa said. " ohh come on, i was just kidding. Happy birthday dear" grandma said giggling. " i knew you were and i was also kidding about my paycheque " i said blinking a few times. " silly girl" grandma said pulling my cheek. " i'd also like to wosh a happy happy birthday to my first and last daughter inlaw" father inlwaw said coming from behind me. " father...mother" i said in a greeting manner. " Happy birthday Cora " Joaquin's mother aaid. " thank you mother in law " i said smiling. She seemed somehow off, maybe unhappy. " isn't she just beautifully " father said. " excuse me " mother in law said then walked away. " what's wrong with her?" Grandmother asked frowning. " i must say, i really never liked that wo---" can i steal her for a moment " amanda said already pulling me by my hand. " happy birthday bitch" my friends screamed giggling. They were standing in a circle with glasses of champagne in their hands. " thank you girlfriends" i said smiling. " so where are my gifts. Don't tell me

you didn't get me any gifts" i said tilting my head to the side. " don't worry. We got you something which will be worth your while " divya said picking up a gift bag and handing it over to me. I took it and peeked inside. " fuck..." i murmured dropping the gift bag down. " are you guys drunk?...whose idea was this?" I asked frowning and folding my arms. " well we all came up with this idea. Isn't that such a perfect gift. We all know how pregnant women gets horny so we thought we should get you machinical fix just in case Mr Salvatore gets tired of getting it up " priya explained. My eyes were popped out, jaws dropping. They bought me a fucking dildo. " you're clearly drunk... but if you wanted to buy a dildo. You should've at least bought me a much bigger and longer size because This is nothing close to the really thing my sweethearts " i said fake smiling at them, i then left them gagging. " ouch!" Esihle exclaimed. I just smiled and joined the guys in their circle. " Mbutu did you get your wife from a mental asylums or what ?" I asked. " i sometimes wonder too" he said and we all giggled. " the birthday girl looks stunning tonight " Michael said. " happy

birthday Cora, i must say you look quite gorgeous " he said as we hugg. " thabk you guys" i said. " i don't usually compliment other people's woman but i must say you look really look beautiful " Rajesh said hugging me." Ok that's it. I've heard enough " Salvatore said separating. us. They all just laughed at him, " let me leave you guys" i said walking towards my parents who had just emerged from a passage leading to the guest rooms downstairs. " i was starting to think that you didn't make it " i said smiling at them. " happy birthday my baby" mom said hugging me. " i hope you saw your gifts" she said. " i haven't received any gifts since I've arrived. What's going on vele?" I asked frowning. " they've been put away in the library " she said. " Hi father" i said squirting down in front of him. " Happy birthday Nathi" father said. " thank dad" i said smiling.

.

" may i get your attention everyone?" Salvatore said hitting the empty glass with a spoon. He was sitting next to me on the long table. Everybody was settled down and the waitresses were serving us. He helped

me up, holding my hand. " Papà, sarai di nuovo un nonno (Papa you're going to be a grandpa again)" he said smiling at his father. " excuse me, before this conversation goes any further does anyone care to translate" Mbutu intruded before father inlwaw could say anything.

I'm going to be a grandpa everyone congratulations son" father said standing up. He came to Salvatore and hugged him. " I'm going to be a great grandma, finally" grandma said smiling. congratulations were shared around the table. " and we are not just expecting one but three musketeers " Salvatore added. " wow, you didn't tell us this Cora " amanda said. " wait, so some of you already knew?" Siboniso asked. Well we had a small argument about that, the guys were breathing down on Salvatore for not telling them. I signalled at esihle to speak up but she shook her head ' no'. Well i let her be. We had our main course meal till we had dessert. " i bought my wife a little gift, which I'd like to give to her before she falls asleep on this table. If you'd guys could just accompany us outside" alonzo said. " what is?" I asked

as he helped me stand up. " you'll see" he said covering my eyes with his hands as he lead me towards the main door everybody was following behind. He opened the door. " be careful " he said. He removed his hands and we were standing in front of black jeep wrangler unlimited 4x4, it had a big red ribbon on the bonnet . I looked at him him frowning with questioning eyes though. He reached out to his pants pocket and came out with car keys. " Happy birthday il mio cuore batte " he said handing me the car keys. " it's mine?" I asked unbelievably. He nodded, " thank you, thank you thank you " i screamed kissing him all over the face. " open it" he said. And i did fastly, it smelt freshly, brand new. The interior design was red leather with features of black. The outline of the stitches beautifully bare." You like it?" He asked. " are you kidding me, I'm in love with it" i said loudly.

.

Good night people. Unedited

[6/3, 19:11] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's pov

.

" happy birthday to you

Happy birthday to you

Happy birthday dear Cora

Happy birthday to you

How old are you now... "

Well after receiving the biggest gift of my life. We went back inside the house to cut the cake.

Everybody was sitting down around the table. Which was cleared, had only a few glasses of champagne and snacks and then my cake. Which had a single 22 designed candle, everybody was singing except for Salvatore who was starring at me the entire time.

His eyes were so deep on my skin, i wondered what was going on in his mind. I was looking into his eyes, smiling. " make a wish" grandma said after they stopped singing. I closed my eyes, made a wish then blew off the candle. They clapped after that, and the the cake was cut. I felt like a little kid once again. I

had everything i had dreamed of, everything was complete and going well. I couldn't have asked for anything better than that. " i have something that I'd like say" Esihle said standing up fastly. It was like somebody pushed him or something. I knew exactly what was coming, the girls knew. Amanda gulped her glass of champagne. " I'm... I'm, never mind" she said sitting down. " No, go ahead. I'm sure everyone would be thrilled to hear what you want to say. Go ahead, speak up" i said trying to encourage her. She stood up and looked at her mother then her older brother, Sandile. " I'm going to be a mother, I'm pregnant" she said, there was silence in around the table for a little while. " you're joking right " Nomsa, her mother said chuckling unbelievably. " No I'm not, I'm seriously pregnant" she said looking at her, eyes filled with fear which i didn't fathom at the moment. " couldn't you've announce this at home. Was it your plan to embarrass me here...WHO'S THE FATHER?" she asked, no she snapped. " I'm the father" tiaxiang said standing up, holding Esihle's hand. " ofcourse, why didn't i see this one coming. Esihle didn't i tell you to stop seeing this boy...you never listen. Look

at you now, pregnant before marriage. He won't even marry you...your father would be so disappointed in you. I'm even ashamed--- " Don't drag my father into this mother, i am sayingthat I'm proud of getting pregnant before marriage but I'm not ashamed either, married or not...Li and i love each other. I don't regret ever getting pregnant, infact I'm glad I'm pregnant. i knew you'd react this way. I'm tired of living my life according to your rules, you can't rectify your mistakes through my life. I have every right to choose how i live my life, I'm tired of succumbing to your selfishness." Esihle said crying, " you will not talk to me in that manner young lady, sit down when you talk to me" Nomsa said through gritted teeth. " not today mother, I've had enough. I'm fed up, why can't you just let me live my life tge way i see fit. Why me?, my brothers get to make each and every decision for themselves and i have to be the good sweet daughter. God through mommy first, I'm fed up of having to hide my tummy. Having to sneak behind your back just to meet my boyfriend. I'm tired of you getting to choose friends for me, and those stupid potential husbands you set me up with.

I'm 6 months pregnant, suck it up like... you can go to hell for all i can" she spoke her heart out. The sweet little kindhearted i once knew all gone. Just like that, she then raised up her big shirt then untied the corsets one by one. Everybody was exclaiming around the table. " there it is" she snapped. " I'M STILL YOUR MOTHER ESIHLE DLAMINI!" she snapped standing up angrily. Try poking a pregnant woman then you'll know what fire piercing through your skin feels like. " I'm out of here" she said walking towards the door. Tiaxiang followed him, " Esihle!.Esihle... don't you dare walk out on me.

Don't leave with that boy!" She screamed following esihle who was walking like a flamingo. " I'll go and check on mother" Sandile said following them. " Wow, what a way to go" father inlwaw said sighing. " who wants the cake" Salvatore said standing up to cut the cake. " I'm going to need a more larger piece" Siboniso said. " aren't you supposed to be following your mother?" I asked frowning. " i could ask the same about your husband." He said looking at Salvatore. " we're not that close, just because i

forgave her doesn't mean that I'm her consoller now...don't start with me" he said casually. Everybody laughed, " it was about time Esihle bursted " Sandile said, more like to himself. Everybody looked at him, but he said nothing furthermore. The four that left never came back, " Cora, aren't you just a drama queen?" Mbutho asked. " me?. What have I done now" i asked frowning. " i mean from the drama that has just unfolded it's only evident that this day was made for drama queens " he said, everyone laughed. " Hey, stop laughing and why isn't there any bottle of juice here?" i asked standing up. " where are you going " amanda asked. " to get myself a glass of juice " i said. " he's right you know, you're a really dramaqueen. There are to waitresses and yet you're going to get yourself a glass of juice " she said, i heard them giggle.

.

Salvatore's pov

.

" i thought you'd go after your lover " i said to father

as i was accompanying him to his car. " mind your tongue Pal" he said seriously. " come on, everyone knows that you two are back together. I guess mother is a fast healer, it hasn't been that long since her husband passed away and now she's warming up your bed" i said folding my arms. " we has sex just a couple of times and then she decided she didn't want to anymore. Stop talking so badly about your mother, that woman has been through a lot. I'm seeing someone else now, it's about time i moved on. She was never mine to have, I've accepted that fact" he said. " i don't really understand your game Papa. She loved you like crazy and you too and now that you finally have the chance to be together ' she was never yours to keep '. What's this really?, what are you playing at" I asked frowning. " you won't understand, sometimes love is not enough" he said. " yeah you're right. I don't understand " i said shaking my hand. " anyways, goodnight. Take care of yourself and my daughter in law" he said patting my shoulder. " when am I meeting your new girlfriend?" I asked as he got inside his car. " if things works out" he said then closed his door. " if things works?..." i

talked to myself as i made it back to the house. Everybody was gone, grandma, grandpa and Cora's parents had gone to bed. I found Cora talking on the phone as i walked in to our bedroom. She was standing in front of the dressing table.

.

" goodbye Conn " i said giggling the hung up, Connie and Charles couldn't come because they had exams. " so... i guess you knew about Esihle's pregnancy" he said holding my waist from behind. " it's a maybe" i said. " okay...if you did then why ways i kept in the dark?" He asked kissing my bare shoulder. " it wasn't my place to do so...she wasn't ready. And i was surprised you didn't jump to Tiaxiang's neck" i said looking at him through the mirror. " Tiaxiang and i will have a manly talk which is of no concern to you. He will marry my sister" he said thoughtfully. " that's a little bit rude...anyways are you going to force the poor guy?" I asked turning around to face him. " like i said...manly talk" he said shortly. " I'm going to bed" i said walking towards bed. I put my phone on the side stand of the headboard. Then

took off my high heels after sitting down, he was taking off his suit. I took off my dress. " my feet are swollen" i said walking towards closet. I hung my dress perfectly then went into the bathroom to remove my make up and brush my teeth. I then got undercovers, he went into the bathroom then came back a few minutes later. He was wearing his boxers only, and i was wearing my lingerie" let me see your feet" he said removing the covers. He started massaging my feet, " these look perfectly fine to me" he said. " Salvatore?..." i called out his name. " mmh " he said concentrating on my feet. " why didn't you sing to me earlier on, i haven't even heard you say happy birthday" i said. " i did say happy birthday when i handed you the car keys. I wrote a message and a card, come on" he said sighing. " okay but you haven't sing to me " i said. " you want me to sing?" He asked. I nodded, " it's hard being a husband. So i must write a text message, a card, say 'happy birthday ' but all that is still not enough ?" He asked. " i want to sleep, please sing" i said smiling at him. " i have an idea" he said standing up and walking towards the music player. He touched his phone and

then a song started playing. He lowered the volume
he took the microphone.

beautiful, beautiful no other name

I knew from the moment you came

I see in your eyes the dawn of the day but

Nothing would ever be the same

Feel my heart beating through my chest

I'll get used to just saying yes

Yes I'll love you with all i am

Yes tonight is when we begin

Yoouum i wanna dance with you

Yooooou.... " he started singing along " come on
let's dance he said getting on top of the bed. He
pulled me up, my eyes were popped out. " what are
you doing?" I asked giggling. i promise I'll stand
for you.oh oh oh Yoouuuu I'd do anything for you

Tonight my lover all i want, i wanna sing for you.

Yeah Happy birthday baby, happy birthday to you.

Happy birthday baby, happy birthday to you

Wrap you in love for the rest of my days

Pray you find joy through pain

I can't protect you from every heartbreak

The world isn't easy that way

.

I'll be there for you when you call

Let me pick you up when you fall

Yes I'll love you with all i am

Yes tonight is when we begin

Youuuu i wanna dance with you

Youuuu i promise I'll stand for you

Youuuu I'd do anything for you oh yes oh yeah

Tonight my lover all i want, i wanna sing for you. Oh
I'll sing for you

Happy birthday baby, happy birthday to you

Happy birthday baby, happy birthday to you

Oohhh ohhh ohh

Beautiful beautiful no other name I knew from the moment you came. he was singing while twirling me around, a little bit of jumping from there and there. I was giggling like a child. " happy birthday Cora "

He said catching his breath after the song was over. " what was that?" I asked smiling. " i hope you're happy now" he said holding my neck. " overjoyed" i said falling on my bac back down in bed. " how are my singing skills?" He asked sleeping on my side. " perfect... thank you, for the best birthday ever" i said. " let's make it even more better" he said putting his hands on valley of fire. " oh boy" i said laughing. He came closer for a kiss.

.

[6/3, 19:11] Lynne: Page 80

Salvatore's pov

.

" Hey...wake up, it's 6am" i whispered into cora's ear. " 15 more minutes " she murmured tiredly. " you've been saying that for the past 30 minutes, you'll be

late" i said softly. " i should wake up and go to the gym or else I'll be late for the hospital " she murmured, " i should get out of bed" she whispered. " yes, you should wake up" i said chuckling. " please let me sleep" she said pulling the covers over her head. " I'll call the hospital and tell them you won't be able to make it today" i said taking my phone. I made the call then lied back down after pulling down the covers to see her face as she slept. We were both tired after night before's love making or rather morning because we slept around 2am. I ended up falling asleep too.

.

Cora's pov

.

I was woken up by the loud knock on the door. I opened up my eyes and Salvatore was sound asleep next to me. I checked the time on the wall and it was 9:30am, never had i ever in my life slept till that late. " who's there" i asked getting out of bed. " it's Mrs S, you can't sleep till this late. Breakfast is

getting cold" grandma shouted outside the room. " mmh, okay...we're coming grandma " i said. " hurry up, you have exactly ten minutes to get down here" she said. " yes grandma" i said softly, i had a slight headache. " Salvatore!, wake up." I said hitting his bare back. he opened his hazel blue eyes, " we have exactly ten minutes " i said walking to the bathroom. I put on my shower cap then showered, my hairstyle needed renewing. " when is grandma leaving again " he asked joining me in the shower. " you ask her" i said laughing. " please don't " i said yanking his hand as he was trying to touch me. " what now" he asked sighing heavily. " I'm simply following grandma's orders plus I'm still tired from last night's...you know what. You know that your giant cucumber always leave my valley of fire in need of the CPR" i said. " i can kiss it better " he said holding my waist, he pinned me against the glass. " Joaquin " i said loudly and firmly. " come on, i know you want to" he said taking my hand and making me hold his giant cucumber. He attacked me with a tantalising breathtaking, rough kiss which left me breathless. " grandma will---..."forget about grandma" he said

pulling kneeling down in front of me. He put one of my legs on his shoulders and ate my pussy like crazy. " mmh...ahh yes, ahh,ahh,mmh,yes baby" i kept on screaming and moaning. My knees felt so weak, he came back up and kissed me and i tasted my saltish juices on his lips. Our breathing escalating with every minute passing by, everything was happening so fast that the next thing i knew he was fucking me hard and i was screaming his name, my fingers digging in to his masculine built back. I cum first and he followed. My knees couldn't carry me anymore, i slid down on shower floor.

.

" is your mathematics so poor that you turned 10 minutes into 40?" Grandmother asked as we walked downstairs. " come on nonna, we were still feeding your grandchildren " Salvatore said holding my waist. He was behind me, " when your breakfast is ice cold in the oven, tell me how exactly were you feeding my grandchildren or maybe you've got a kitchen in your bedroom" grandma asked firmly. " we were feeding them the man to woman kind of way" he said. " shut

up Alonzo, so shameless" grandma said hitting his head. " ouch, grandma!" Alonzo exclaimed . " Cora must be starving, go and have your breakfast. And don't forget to take you pills. I need those kids with strong bones" she said walking upstairs. We warmed up our breakfast and ate, " I'm taking you out for a ride" i said dipping my chips into a small bowl of catchup. " mmh, i like the sound of that...i wonder where Lorenzo is." He said looking around. " you hid my boy away last night, i thought I'd find him running around. He didn't even have the cake" i said looking at him " don't look at me like that, you came back late. He fell asleep i guess" he said shrugging his shoulders. " speak of the devil" he said looking at the staircases. Alonzo was ascending down the stairs, " baby Lore " i said walking towards him. He looked rather tired and worn out. " mommy" he said holding his tummy. " hey, what's wrong. Are you sickm does your tummy hurt?" I asked picking him up. " my tummy hurts a lot mommy" he said and then he started to cry. " ohh noo, you must be coming down with flue, I'll take you to the doctor. Don't cry, petunia!, could you get me Lorenzo's

medication bag please" i screamed. " your head is a little bit hot too, Alonzo why didn't you tell me that Lorenzo is sick" i asked putting my hand on his head. " he was perfectly fine when ge went to bed last night " he said ." Let me see" he said taking him. " stop exaggerating thing, his head is perfectly fine. I'm sure the tummyache is normal since he still has got some teeth coming or maybe it's something he ate" he said. I looked at him for a long time, " fine, we will go to see a doctor" he said raising his hands up. " he's cry, calm him down will you" I said then ate my breakfast. " buddy, stop crying now. Grown up man don't cry. Let's go and get your medication. " he said walking towards the staircases with him. So the ride was cancelled. I went upstairs and took my calcium, iron and vitamin supplements which were so horrible. Sometimes they'd make me feel like vomiting. The ride was cancelled and we took Lorenzo to the doctor and i went to the salon. Plaited my hair and did my nails, they were just short almost natural like nails. I like to believe that i was a simple kinda girl. We came back to the house around 2pm, i walked in to the suitcases which were

by the door. " whose bags are those?" I asked walking to the sitting room. Where i found my parents and grandparents and Esihle watching television. " your lunch is in the microwave, the ordered one is in the refrigerator. Have them both because i will not have you throw away food" grandma said as soon as she saw me. " thanks grandma, even though I've already had my lunch" i murmured the last part. " Cora can we talk for a minute" Esihle said standing up. " where are my grandsons?" Grandpa asked. " they're coming grandpa, alonzo is still talking with the driver who's going drive my parents home" i said walking towards the kitchen, Esihle was following me. " so, what's up?" I asked putting my handbag on the kitchen counter. " I'd like to apologise for the drama that i caused yesterday. I must have ruined your special day. I'M so sorry, i didn't know that things would turn out like that. I just thought that she'd be happy for me, try not to cause a scene but i guess i was wrong" she said sighing heavily while rolling her eyes. She looked agitated and swaety. "Here, have a glass of water" i said offering her a glass of still water. She

took it and drank" thanks" she said drawing in deep breath. " sit down, you look like someone who's going to faint any moment from now on" i said, she set down on a highchair. " how could i possibly calm down when i have no place to stay, mother kicked me out of her house Cora. I have no where to go" she said then started to cry. " Hey, don't cry...everything is gonna be okay. What did Sandile and Siboniso say about this" i asked. Pulling her in for a hug. She was leaning on my chest. " bhut' Sandile doesn't want to see my face. He's on mother's side like always. I went to his place hoping that he'd let me in but he kicked me out too. Siboniso, you know how small his house is. I couldn't have gone there besides he's always trying to avoid fighting. I didn't want to disturb his peace tigus i came here. You're my only hope, until i find a place to stay. I promise I'll be out of your house within a week or two " she said looking up at me with teary eyes. I wiped her tears. " stop crying, I'll go and talk to your brother. I'm sure he wouldn't mind, this house is huge anyways. It sometimes feels so lonely, we could use another two people " i said looking at

her, she smiled a bit. " how is your baby doing down there?" I asked. " fine, i guess" she said shrugging. " let me go and talk to Joaquin. " i said walking out, i found Alonzo in front of the main door. The limousine was already there. He was talking to Rob, " can i have a word with you" i asked, he took a few steps towards me. " what's up?" He asked, putting Lorenzo down. Go and sleep in your room buddy, mommy will come and sing you a lullaby. " he said. Lorenzo dragged his feet into the house. " we have Esihle inside, she just told me that her mother kicked her out of the house, Sandile wants nothing to do with her and as we know. Siboniso's house is too small. So you're her last hope" i explained. " what about Tiaxiang, why can't she go and stay with him?" He asked putting his hands in his pockets. " you know that Esihle is a very traditional Zulu girl. She doesn't believe in staying with a man before marriage. The poor girl is devastated inside the house, she's so emotional wrecked. Her hormones are all over the place, i have enough hormonal issues going on. I can't deal with a crying woman right now. You're her brother, please go and talk to her." I said

firmly. " she knows that tiaxiang doesn't believe or want to get married. What's the point in upholding her morals after the milk is already spilled. I don't understand how you women think sometimes , some women are so stupid and naive. I don't even get how she fell pregnant in the first place. Now i got emotions to nurse " he snapped a little bit " am I also included in those ' women ' because if i am then all hell will break lose Salvatore " i said folding my arms. " ofcourse not" he said sighing heavily. " let me go and talk to Sihle" he said then walked inside.

.

" i came here with the hope of spending some quality time with you but the you had to go to the mall. We hardly said a word to each other and now I'm leaving " mom said after weshared a hug. We were standing on the side on the limousines. Dad and the bags were already inside. " I'll come and see you these coming holidays, i promise. I'm so sorry we didn't get that much time to speak. But we'll FaceTime, I'll gove you updates about the pregnancy. " i said smiling. " I'll be waiting " she said then hugged me

one more time. "bye father, bye mom" i said peeping inside the car. "take care of yourself Nathi" father said waving. Mom got inside the car and then Rob drove out. And then Salvatore came rushing towards the BMW x6 that was also parked inside the house. "where are you going to?" I asked following him behind. "i need to have a word with Tiaxiang. My sister is crying because of him. Get back inside the house" he said getting into the car. He then drove off. I was left in an awe, "your brother can be insane sometimes. Lets me order dinner, his grandma is actually a perfect cook that my food would taste like poison" i said walking inside the kitchen where there was Esihle. Who was busy on her phone. "Joaquin is also a great cook" she said looking at me with a frown. "yes bit you know how love is blind. He won't criticize my cooking even if i added sand and stones" i said, she laughed a bit but then the serious face was back. "what if Joaquin hurts Tiaxiang. I've been trying to call him to warn him but he's not picking up my calls" she said. "Alonzo wouldn't hurt Tiaxiang, okay. Maybe just a little bit but Tiaxiang also has his kung fu kicks and

all that staff" i said laughing. " this is really life Cora, Tiaxiang is so tiny compared to Salvatore. He might break his bones" she said pacing up and down. " he was his friend before he became his brother inlaw. Just relax, I'm sure they're going to have a man to man normal talk...of i may ask, what has ge done to upset Alonzo so much?" I asked switching on the microwave to warm up my home cooked lunch, " we're actually taking a break, we fought last night. I blame him for the whole thing, how come i got pregnant even though i was on injection. He must have added something strong to his system. Sometimes i suspect that he got me pregnant on purpose. A few weeks before I got pregnant i had suggested that break up because our relationship is clearly going nowhere. He refused and begged. I gave in helplessly. He could see that i was dragging my feet.went to Korea two day after that,He came back and then a few weeks later ' I'm pregnant ' coincidence?. No, i don't think so" she explained. " so he wants to keep you but doesn't want to get married?" I asked frowning, she just sighed.

.

5 months later

.

So here i was pushing my heaviest baby pump or rather parachutes. It was November and i was busy packing my clothes ready to go home. The university was closing the next day which meant no residency until next the following year. Which was going to be my last year of residency and then I'd have to volunteer at another public hospital. I was carrying two baby girls and a boy. My feet were swollen, i looked like hell. Actually I was supposed the next day but i missed Alonzo so much. I could already smell his cologne and envision my head on his e

Warm broad chest. He hand stroking my hair gently. Well Esihle and Tiaxiang tied the knot after that man to man talk which lead to Salvatore coming back with a bleeding nose and Tiaxiang a black eye and swollen lips. It was so hilarious, they got married with great difficulty though. The bride price was so high but it was just peanuts according to Tiaxiang

even though he hated paying it. It was more like buying Esihle to him. She gave birth to a healthy little girl, his father named her Omuhle. She was currently two months old, so cute and little.

My suitcase wouldn't lock, I got so frustrated that I took my handbag and left the room. "Let's go, I'll get my clothes tomorrow" I said to my bodyguard while locking the door. "Yes ma'am" they said in unison. We walked into the elevator and then into the cars. I was riding with Samian and Dumisani while Conor and Zakes lead the way with the other car..." What else could I do, I miss you" I said talking with Alonzo on the phone. "You miss me or my cologne and check, let's be honest here." He said chuckling. "No, I really really do miss you. The whole you, I couldn't spend another night without you" I said smiling as if I could see him. "Okay, I get it. It's your thing to sugarcoat things these days." He said. "No I'm not, actually let's talk in person. We've just taken the road that leads there. I'll be there within 10 minutes" I said chuckling. "You want to look me in the eyes while you lie?" He asked laughing. "No

i...why has the car stopped. What's going on " i asked as our car stopped because the front one just did. The road was separate since it led to our home only, it was just a single car road. " let me call up the guys" Dumisani said on the passenger's side. I was at the back. " hello, Cora...what's going on. What's happening? Are you okay? " Salvatore asked sounding so worried on the phone. " i am fine, i don't--- and then there was an opening gun shot from the front. " hit reverse, reverse" Dumisani said to Samian who quickly did that but then we hit a truck at the back. " Cora, what happened...talk to me. honey" he kept on speaking my phone was dropped on the seat. I searched for it panicking. " we're being attacked Salvatore. Guns, they're shooting at us, please save me!" I screamed holding the phone with my shaking hand. The next the i knew guns were blazzing at our stuck car. " Sam, Dumi!" I whispered. Salvatore was busy talking on the phone which was down the car floor. The gun shots were suddenly quite and so was Dumi the Sam, the front car was in fire. I tried to reach out for Sam but my hand came back with blood, the same happened with Dumi. "

blood blood blood, Salvatore there's blood everywhere" i screamed looking at my blood red hands. And then my door opened. " Hello Star" a man wearing a balaclava and a tuxedo said. He had an injection in his hand. " please don't hurt me" i said moving away but then other door opened. I felt the needle piercing into my neck and then lights out.

[6/3, 19:12] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's pov

.

I opened up my eyes, my head stinging and aching so hard. It was so heavy that my eyes felt like they'd fall out. The the sun light was hitting my eyes so brightly , i looked around. Trying to figure out where i was but unfortunately, i couldn't figure it out. I tried to sit upright, my hand was cuffed to the head bed railings. My other one was free, i touched my tummy which felt normal. It was still as much big as it was. I leaned on the railings, it was so cold and there were no blankets in the bed. Just the base and mattress, the room looked so old and walls burned out, there

was dust in on the floor. The Windows were broken, all i could see was the blue sky outside. " help, help" i tried to scream but my voice was nowhere near being heard. It came out as a whisper and whiz. My throat was so dry and harsh. I was starving, i couldn't remember what happened. I had vivid memories of the attack, my head was all over the place. " Mrs Salvatore...i see you're awake" a man said walking inside the old room, he was wearing a balaclava and a tuxedo. Then it all came back to me, " who are you, what am I doing here. What do you want---- " shut up, shut the fuck upm you slut" the man screamed angrily. He was so scary that i almost peed on myself, i kept quiet for a while." please just let me go, my husband has money. He will pay you whatever you want. Please let me go" i asked softly, " i said shut the hell up, i do not need your husband's handouts. I work hard for my money. And you my dear Starlight is going to bring me loads of cash. Considering the fact that you are a four in one. Nc nc nc...I'm going to be swimming in a pool of millions." He said chuckling and giggling like a maniac. " you're not going to get away with this Don,

why don't you stop being a coward and show yourself. Salvatore is going to find you and kill you like a spineless Dog that you are" i said then spit on the floor. And then a loudm hard thunder slap landed on my fast and then another one. I cried like a hurt dog, the fact that he called me starlight made me realise that he was the Don, after all he was the only man who wanted me ruined. " ohh dear...look what you've made me do. I've ruined your beautiful little face. Come let me see" he said sitting down and holding my face. " don't worry, it's nothing a make up can't conceal, now smile for Daddy" he said the licked my right cheek all the way up. I was crying silently, so sure that my cheek was all red and swollen." I hate you" i murmured crying " Razor!" He called out and then a guy came rushing, he was also wearing a balaclava and a tuxedo. " give her her fix, she's so feisty. Send her to sleep " he said standing up and and the the guy came to me. He took out a bottle of what looked like a medicine and an injection/syringe. He drew the liquid from the bottle and then came to me. " This is going to sting a bit but it's bearable " he said holding me by my neck. "

please don't hurt me, I'm pregnant pleas---" and the i passed out.

.

Salvatore's pov.

.

" you inserted another tracking device in the back of my wife's head and didn't tell me about it" i asked charging at telescope but i was held back by Machete(Raj) and Venom (Mbutu). " look man this is no time to fight with each other" Venom said. I was going out of my mind. Kevin has been out of contact, he just landed. He was out of the country and he was our PI. " What else could i have done. I had to get prepared for the future in advance. I'm the one who cracks his head when people go missing. I have to always plan in advance. "

Telescope said. " just get on your computer and give me the location " i said angrily hitting the table. Four years ago when Dr Davis and Kevin were helping me with Cora's escape plan. I had asked them to remove the tracking device that was inserted by the Don at

the back of Cora's head but then without my knowledge he inserted another tracking device, only he could track. " it shows that she's in cape town, in some old old" he said looking at his computer. We were in our warehouse. After that phone ca that night, THE Don got hold of the phone and said only two words. " check mate" and the hung up. I got to the scene of the accident late, she was already taken. One car was on fire and the other one had bullet holes on the front doors. I found Samian and Dumisani dead. Used my phone to track her phone but it only lead me to our private lake, a few minutes from our home. Her handbag was in the car, it had been two fucking days since she was kidnapped . " what are you still waiting for, lets go" i said putting my gun at the back of my trouser. " What, we can t just march there without planning. You know how we do thing" The Jaguar exclaimed. " what do you expect me to do then Micheal, my wife is 7months pregnant. She's probably getting sold as we speak, she must be scared and lonely. Heaven knows what that son of a bitch must have done to my wife already" i shoutedm then set down i defeat. " Boss, i

understand how you feel but we gotta get some strategic plan. A lot could go down while there, some of us might not return. You know how the battlefield is. We need a consecutive plan. The structure of the place she's in" Machete said. Which actually reminded me of something. " i need to contact my lawyer. I said taking out my phone. I spoke with George for 15 minutes then came back to the guys. " I've got the architecture of the old building she's being held captive in. It's an old hotel, Hotel Manorama, some walls have fallen down but it's still standing. This is the before and after of the building." Kevin said showing me on the computer. " it's a few miles away from the city." I said looking at the computer. The other guys were on their cell phones. " i managed to get us five more guys to accompany us" Venom said coming back. " The police are on our tails about the shooting, this won't be an easy one since they found the cars." THE Jaguar said coming back on the planning table. " but you're misleading them, right?. We can't have them breathing down on our necks since we're going to war. It's more risky" i said looking at him. " yes I'm

doing my best, i told them that Cora is currently in Italy wuth your grandparents. Since we got that girl to board with your board in disguise, they're going to see Cora boarding to Italy. It's all sorted. We have no case." He said putting his phone in his pocket. " i managed to get us more guns and bombs, we need to wipe out all the evidence this time. The last time we rescued Priyanka we almost got arrested with all the dead bodies and bullets they found on the scene " Machete came back too. " i called Dr Davis, we're surely going to need a doctor this time around. Cora is pregnant anything could go wrong. " The Serpent said coming back. " we are going to need the bullet proofed Van too" i said as i was drawing the plan. "Walkie talkies and a trained snippet " i said running my fingers through hair. " here's the plan, we got this other abondoned building opposite to the hotel, this is where the snippet will be. On the 7th floor, if he has man there. They're probably 15. Three must be patrolling the place down here and...." i explained the whole plan. " but we need to get there by tonight and make some alternative to our plan after seeing how the security standards are" i said then my phone

rang. " George, you got the paper?" I asked fastly. " yes sir, I'll be in your house within 2hours" he said. " good" i said tgen hung up. We will be boarding around 4pm, on the jet. We should be there by 6pm, so we'll see everything clearly we attack tomorrow morning " i said to the guys. " what if we find some buyers there, since we all know that it takes 5 days for him to ship people to another countries and tomorrow is the forth day. Do we attack everything that breaths there?" Kevin asked. " we attack everything that breaths then burn down the building. These man who buy woman and children are the big part of human trafficking. Consider it as saving the country" i said the picked up my jacket. I hadn't slept or ate a thing. Atleast now i knew where exactly she was.

.

Micheal's pov

.

" I'd advice you guys to do not shoot any foreigners. Those guys are dangerous and connected. This will

be a start of another extended war. I have to convince Salvatore otherwise, we have loads of enemies as it is. We can't afford to increase the list. It would be better if we tied them up and hand them over to the police or something" i said as we were walking down to our cars. " let us assume that a guys points a gun at you. Wgat then, i agree with Salvatore man. We can't afford to leave an evidence behind." Mbutho said.

.

" have you found Cora?" Amanda asked as soon as i walked in to the house. " not yet, but we got some leads. We're getting there. Don't worry" i said, she started crying. Like she has been doing for tge past two days. " we will find your friend Amanda, please don't cry. I'm tired, i need to gp to sleep. I got a headache " i said sighing but hugging her. " what if...what if something has happened to her or the babies. She's my sister, i can't afford to lose her...she is my family Mike. What if she's--- " nothing has happened to Cora, nothing. Okay, just have faith. She and the babies are going to be just fine,

she's a strong woman" i said holding her tightly. I let her cry in my arms until she finally stopped.

.

Cora's pov

.

I woken up with a splitting headache once again. Whenever I'd wake up, I'd wake up confused but that time i woke to a man caressing my thighs. " What are you doing" i asked sitting upright. And pulling down my dress," you look so hot, i can't help myself " he said then violent tried to get in between my thighs. " help, help" i screamed and this time my voice was loud enough. A guy came running in. " help!" I screamed. " get off of her her razor" the guy said, " hadeh maraza" he the one ontop of me said laughing and the the one infront of me was shot to death. He was bleeding on top of me. " Geez, these guys don't listen. Look what he has made me do. I'm not a bad guy here. It's just that people make me do things. I normally wouldn't do" he said removing the guy off me. My white dress was blood stained. My eyes

were closed and i was screamed in fear, my body folded together. " Geez, will you stop screaming " he said covering my mouth with his hand. Ge then took off his mask, it was the Don. " we got your buyers coming in around 4am. We can't afford to have you looking and smelling like a pig. Now let me tell you what's going on happen. A woman is going to come and help you take a shower, get you dressed up and smelling fresh and you're going to behave. You must be happy, you're going to get shipped to Nigerian. I don't know and i don't want to know what your buyer is going to do to you and your little devils" he said slightly hitting my tummy. " who knows, you might get used for money rituals" he said then stood up. " how long have i been here?" I asked in whisper. " probably hours, don't worry your little self, you'll be out of here within no time" he said then walked out. I was freezing cold and hungry and thirsty and dirty. I had taken a bath for almost three days. It was getting dark and the mosquitoes were paying me a visit. " God please save my kids " i remember saying a little prayer. I lied back down folded into a ball. My hand was cut by the unforgiving handcuffs. My

whole arm hurt from hanging in the same position. My babies who kicked almost every 3 hours hadn't kicked that day. Or maybe they did while i was passed out.

[6/3, 19:12] Lynne: Page 81

Cora's pov

.

" i must say, your belly suites you" the don said. There were a lot of guys starring at me as i was taking a bath in a basin. All naked, exposed, vulnerable, crying, emotionally shuttered. If being watched by 10 guys all naked and pregnant wouldn't break a woman's confidence and pride then i don't know what would. They kept on commenting on every single part of my body. Some were laughing, i tried to shut their voices out of my mind but still i could hear then. " here, take this" the old women who looked like a hard core said handing me a big white towel. I wiped my body, then threw it down to step on it. She gave me clere to moisturize my body, from channel to clere. Then handed me black

undergarments, which looked cheaper than the ones i used to wear while i was a prostitute. Everything that was happening there brought me back to that place. It brought back all the memories i'd worked so hard to make them sink below the pool of memories. I never thought that i'd have again to be naked for another man other than my husband. She handed me a little black dress and a white jacket and then high heels. " i can't walk in these" i said looking at her. " can't or won't?" The Don asked first, walking towards me with a gun in his hand. He ran it over my face, " mmh sweetheart " he asked. I took the high heels and put them on immediately, " good girl, not so feisty anymore are we?" He asked and the other guys bursted with laughter. " okay, the show is over guys. Back to your positions. The client will be here any minute from now on" he said and they left looking so disappointed. " make her look pretty, no. Make her look gorgeous. This is might be the last time she'd ever put on makeup" He said sitting on the bed. The woman did my make up, " will you stop crying, you're ruining your make up. God you're so irritating " she said angrily. " I'm sorry" i whispered,

trying to hold back my tears. She continued, " you shouldn't have double crossed me Starlight. I treated you so well, i treated you girls like family and what did you do. You ran away with the big fishes. You ruined my life but it's okay because today you're going to rectify your mistake. If you wanted to really run away then you should've at least changed your face and name. I thought King Kong was clear, love can make people so pathetic. " he kept on going on and on. " if it is money that you want then why didn't you just ask for ransom?" I asked in my shaking voice. " you've been staying with the devil himself but you're still so naive...THIS IS NOT JUST ABOUT THE MONEY, YOUR SO CALLED HUSBAND KILLED MY FATHER. HE CHOPPED MY FATHER INTO PIECES THEN FED HIM TO THE DOGS" he snapped angrily hitting his head with the gun. " i didn't even get to bury my Dad...come and sit down sweetheart " he said patting the space beside him. I walked over and set down, " i want to make him suffer like he did with my father. I want to make him die slowly just like he did, the only way to do that is if you and the little devils that you're carrying die" he said. " stop calling

my kids Devil, my kids are not devils" i said angrily. " i guess this is why that son of a bitch is crazy about you. You're hot and you're cold, huh. Intriguing and stubborn " he said grabbing my thigh so hard that his finger prints were left there. It immediately turned red, and so painful. I was so sure it was going to turn green at any moment. " now listen and listen to me carefully. I am not your husband, i won't hesitate to put a bullet into this pretty head of yours. You don't get to get angry or shout at me. Are we clear?" He asked. I nodded, " Yes" i said. " good" he said. " now as i was saying, I'm avenging my father's death. Who knows maybe after i sell you then i might go after his father too" he said. " it was you father who provoked Salvatore. He killed his girlfriend " i said softly. " he too was supposed to die that--- " Sir, Mr Abhorechie has arrived" a guy said walking in. " exactly at 4am, he's a time keeper i must say" he said checking his wristwatch.

.

" let's go Mrs Salvatore " he said pulling me by my arms. We walked out of the room, it was still pretty

much dark. we took the old staircases. Some walls of the building were not there, we finally entered into some room which had one wall down. I could see the ground from there. It looked like we were on the third or maybe second floor. We found a black big scary man there. He was wearing a white suite. He had about five men with him. " So this is the girl" he said first, his Nigerian accent couldn't be missed. " Yes Mr Abhorechie. Where is my money" The Don asked. The man clicked his fingers and the guy carrying a briefcase came forward. He opened it and there were US dollars inside. " 2 million dollars as agreed" Mr Abhorechie said. i was handed over to him while the Don took the briefcase but then i heard gun shots and screams. " what's going on, is this a set up?" Mr Abhorechie asked panicking. His guys pointed out guns and so did the Don's guys, i was caught up in between. My heart thundering as if it wanted to come out. " ofcourse not, i don't know what's going on. Weasel, Miles go out and check." The Don said to two of his guys. " you two, go out and check " Mr Abhorechie said to two of his guys. So he was left with three guys and the Don with two.

They were still pointing guns at each other, " i swear if this is a set up, you son of a bitch my people are going to find you and kill you slowly" Mr Abhorechie said. He wasn't even carrying a gun. " like i said i have no idea what's going on. It must be her husband" he said. " you told me she was clear and safe" MrAbhorechie shouted angrily. He was suddenly sweating as cold as it was. The guns shots kept on going on, and then within a second three guys were shot on the head, everybody took cover. Hiding on the corners. Living me standing in the middle of the room. " fuck, shit" they cursed while i tried to lie down. My brain wasn't functioning well i was cry. I was lying next to a dead body. He had a hole on his forehead and was looking at me. One of the Don's guy tried to shoot where the unforeseen gun was fired from but his chest got filled with blazing bullets. " let's run boss... in count of three " the guy who was left on Mr Abhorechie's side said . " 1 2 3, run" well as i had envisioned that they didn't make it to the door. I could hear them whizzing on the floor. Which left me with the Don who was sweating by the corner. " come here" he saod to me.

" No!" I protested but the he fire the gun closer to my head. " i said come here" he said. I stood and walked towards him. He hold me and pointed the gun to my head. " please don't kill me" i pleaded.

.

" my heart beat" i heard his voice. Looked towards the door. I couldn't believe my eyes, i blinked a could of times. " Joaquin!" I screamed out his name in joy and relief. He had a gun pointed towards us. " i knew you'd find me. Somehow i knew you'd come" i said crying. " are you okay, are my babies fine?" He asked. " i am fine, but i don't know about the babies. They're not kicking Salvatore, they drugged me" i said crying loudly. I saw him clenching his jaws, " okay, enough of this lovey dovey act. Drop your gun down" The Don screamed. " i won't do that" he said. " you think, I'm joking here. You think this is a circus " he said switching off the gun safety. He was slowly pulling the trigger. " okay, fine. I'll drop the gun down" he said putting it down and raising his hands. The gun shots outside were still there. " now you're going to tell your guys to srop shooting and you and

I are going to turn around in circle. I'm going to make it out of here with your wife " he said. " do no shoot, i repeat do not shoot" Salvatore said on the walkie talkie. We switched positions as he had asked, tears streaming down my face. Just when i thought freedom has come. " you enjoyed slicing and dicing my father, you sick twisted son of a bitch " The Don screamed angrily as we were standing by the door and Salvatore was standing by the unwalled side of the room. " Just let my wife go man, she knows nothing about this. She's innocent, it's me that you want. Let her go, take me instead" Salvatore pleaded. " the fuck she is, she ruined my life, my business and you took my father away from me. I had to fend for my family, do you know what i went through. I had to collect his pieces by the trash cans, all grinded and eaten up. FUCK YOU SALVATORE, YOU DON'T DESERVE TO BE ALIVE" he shouted crying and then fired a few times at my husband and i saw him slowly falling down. " Salvatore " i screamed trying to get away from him. I don't know how but he fell down on the floor too. Everything was happening so fast i ran towards the end on the

room. And saw him down on the ground. " Joaquin, Joaquin " i screamed crying. His friends were in the room tying up TheDon, theywere talking but i couldn't hear them. I remember running outside, forgetting that i was pregnant or wearing high heels. I found his lying on the ground, his eyes closed. I put his head on my thighs. " Salvatore, Salvatore please wake up, wake up Salvatore. Please don't do this to me" i screamed crying. He opened up his eyes faintly, they were blood red. " i love you " he murmured and then shut them again. " i love you too, please don't do this to me. Don't die on me... please wake up" i screamed looking up at the sky and then back at him. " you promised me, you promised to be here with me. You can't leave me alone" i cried holding him to my chest. " please, please" i whispered in pain. Everything hurt. My heart physically hurt, " let me check his pulse." Dr Davis said taking him away from my embrace. For a moment there i thought i was dreaming. My mind just blacked out, i could here them talking. He said something like " let's rush him to the hospital, we could lose him at any moment from now on " i saw them putting him on a stretcher.

My hands and dress along with my thighs had his blood. " Cora, Cora . Let's go. We have five minutes to get out of here" one of them said. I don't know who but the next thing i knew i was flying in somebodies arms. " check the ground properly, did you grt hos gun" somebody else asked and the answer was yes. I was put into the car. My head was spinning. It was like i was in some sort of a nightmare which kept on going on and on. My ears got hurt by the excruciating sound, it was like being in world war II . The sound brought me back to earth. I looked back and the building was crumbling down. " where is my husband, is he dead" i asked fastly and confusedand scared. " Dr Davis is taking him to the hospital.you need to get cleaned" Kevin said. I looked around and realised that i was in a van with Raj, Kevin and the other guys i didn't know. " No, i need to see my husband, you're lying to me. My husband is dead isn t he?" I asked trying to open the door of the moving car but Rajesh pulled me back down. " Calm down, Kong is badly injured. He's a strong man, I'm sure he'll survive. need to be strong for him and your babies. Get a shower first " he said.

" we're here" the driver said as the car parked in front of some condor.

[6/3, 19:12] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's pov

.

I was sitting down under the water, hoping and praying that everything would just turn out to be a nightmare and i'd wake. I watched as the water washed down his blood along with my tears, i felt so tired and defeat. I could bare anything in this world but not losing Salvatore, no not him. He was my home, my best friend, my boyfriend, my husband, my companion, my soulmate and most of all the father of my kids. The kids i had no knowledge if were alive or dead. Maybe i was carrying three dead bodies in my tummy. I just wanted to see my husband, i wanted to see if he was alive or not but Kevin and Rajesh wouldn't let me. They kept on telling me to get myself clean, get myself together. Everything was a mess, i wahed and scrubed my body. Trying to wash all the blood off my body, it

was somehow planted in my mind. All the dead bodies and blood, i felt so dirty and disgusting. My head was spinning and pilled with memories. The man's laughter, the dead body on top of me. The piles of bodies. The dead man who was staring at me. I got out of the shower and wrapped a towel around my body. I walked out of the bathroom. And then there was a knock at the door, i was standing in the middle of the room starring into space when Kevin walked in. " i got you these, i don't know if they'd fit you" he said putting a pair of white tracksuits and sneakers on the bed. " i want to see my husband, i just want to see my husband. Why won't you let me see my husband?" I asked, it was all just a whisper and silent cries. " get dressed first, we'll take you there " he said then walked out. I picked up the big tracksuits and dressed up... both Kevin and Rajesh were with me in the car as it was on it's way to the hospital. It was no longer the van but a black Mercedes Benz. I was looking outside the Window, no words were exchanged. I got out of the car as they did. " this way " Kevin said as we walked. I felt like a walking dead, " Mbuto says

they're in the waiting room on the third floor" Rajesh said getting off the phone. We walked there, " where's is my husband?" I asked Mbutho as soon as i saw him. " the doctors are still operating on him in the theater" he said. " are you okay, ypur friends are on the way. " he asked. I set down in defeated, tears blurring my vision. " is he going to be fine, he is still alive. Right?" I asked looking at Michael and Tiaxiang " let's wait for the doctor" Tiaxiang said, while Micheal was avoiding my eyes. We set there for almost two hours, anticipate the worst to happen. Dr Davis finally walked in, " how is he?" I asked first, standing up. " Mrs Salvatore please sit down" he said. " don't fucking tell me to sit down, where is my husband?" I asked angrily, i felt light headed and weak. " we did everything we could, he has slipped into a coma. His condition is beyond critical, there are many broken bones and fractured ones. All we could do now is pray for a miracle" he said. " coma?, when is he going to walk up?" I asked holding my head. " that we can not predict, he's badly injured...Mrs Salvatore, you're bleeding. You're bleeding, this is not good" Dr Davis said looking at

my legs. I looked down at myself. The tracksuits which was once white was suddenly red. I touched my inner thigh and my finger came back with blood. " I'm bleeding?" I asked looking at my fingers. It was like i was going crazy, of course I was bleeding. How could i have asked that after seeing the blood. The next thing i knew i was falling down but somebody caught me but then i blacked out

.

When i came to, my head was all over the place. My body hurt, i couldn't move. My throat was so dry. The first the i did was move my hand to my tummy but something was different that time. My tummy felt so small. I tried to move but my abdomen was in so much pain. " my babies, where are my babies" i asked screaming. No one was in the room. I pressed the emergency button and a nurse came rushing in, " where are my babies?" I asked panicking. " Mrs Salvatore please calm down, the doctors are still checking your little girls. You gave birth through c-section. Please lie down" she said pulling me back down as i was trying to sit up right. " what about my

little boy, where is he. I had three babies in my tummy, where's my little boy?" I asked, eyes darting between her. " is everything okay here" Dr Davis asked walking in. " she won't let me see my babies" i screamed crying. " she's only mentioning the girls, where is my little boy Dr Davis?" I asked crying. " I'm sorry Cora but we lost him" he said giving me sympathetic eyes. I wiped off my tears, " you're lying to me. You're joking right" i said looking at him unable to believe or accept what he was saying. " I'm afraid not, he died after a few minutes of birth. He had a congenital heart defect, he had a big hole in his heart. His death could've been avoided if he hadn't overdosed the foreign toxic substances that were found in his system. The same drug that was found in your blood is the cause of his death. Considering the fact that he was a premature, he couldn't have handled all the trauma and abuse. He passed away on his way to the theater, and not only that. The other little girl is breathing through ventilators, her broca's area got injured and traumatized. As it is located to the left inferior frontal cortex of the brain, it caused muteness. You

can see her crying but her voice just doesn't come out. As for the other one, she's perfectly fine. They're both in the incubators, we need you to name them so that we can fill in their birth cards" he kept on explaining. " so my son is no more?" I asked, not crying though. I guess my brain was in denial or trying to process everything. I didn't feel like crying, " how is how is my husband?" I asked. " his condition is still the same" he answered shortly. " can i see my kids " i asked taking a deep breath. " of course, nurse go get the wheelchair. I'll personally take you there, you and your family will be transferred to the hospital in Johannesburg tomorrow morning " he said. The nurse came back with a wheelchair, they helped me sit in it. My legs felt so numb. He pushed me to the incubator room. " here are your little girls he said stopping inbetween two incubators. The other one had a ventilator on her throat. I couldn't see the properly as i was sitting down but i can tell that they looked so white. So white that i asked the doctor to help me standing on my feet. " these are not my kids, are these my kids. These kids are white doctor. I was supposed to give birth to coloureds. Where are

my girls, did you exchange my kids?" I asked looking in between the two girls. They were so frail and tiny and identical. " Mrs Salvatore these are your little girls, i was a little bit suprised too since you're half black. But they came out like this. We could do a DNA test if that's what you want " he said. " no, that won't be necessary. My mind is all over the place right now..." i said sitting back down. Can i get a moment alone, with them?" I asked. " ofcourse, I'll be back within ten minutes " he said leaving. I'd never imagined myself in that kind of situation, feeling so alone and broken. Everything we talked and reminisced about with my husband was taken away from us, within a blink of an eye everything just crumbled and fell down. The baby name we had argued about in the middle of the night all forgotten about. I felt like a loser, there was that feeling again. That thought again, that said ' maybe, just maybe i was never meant to be fully happy' . Maybe i was designed to suffer, everytime when happiness came knocking on my door, great disappointment and sadness would follow. " any names yet?" Dr Davis asked walking in. " i was to see his corpse" i said. "

ohh, I'll go and get him" he said as if he was alive. As if he was going to cry oneday, crawl, walk, go to creche. As if i was going to be able to snap at him one day when puberty would take over, see his first girlfriend, get married and finally see his kids. His chapter was over, i guess he was just a season. Never meant to be a part of my life. He came back with my little boy, covered in a white soft hospital blanket. He gave him to me. I unveiled him, he seemed physical fine to me. I checked everything, opened his eyeslids. He had his fathers eyes, he was as much white as his sisters. " he's beautiful " i said as tears streamed down my face. We've come a long way, him and i. I named him Mngobiwethu Miceal Salvatore, Miceal means a gift of God. I named my little girl who was breathing through ventilators Miracle Misuthandolwethu Salvatore, after all it was a miracle that she was alive. And the other one, i named her Maia Othandiweyo. I felt that she was the only one who was supposed to survive but the angels intervened and Misa was alive too. Maia means close to God, she was indeed loved(Othandiweyo). Doctor Davis pushed me back

to the ward where i found all my friends. Amanda hugged me crying but i wasn't crying, " I'm so sorry" she said. They all hugged me crying. " we lost a child, the boy. It's okay, i mean people lose their inborn babies everyday. It's not like we're the first ones. It's normal right, it happens " i said smiling a bit. " don't say that, you don't deserve all this. Why do bad things always happen to good people, you don't deserve all this Cora. " Priya said crying. Esihle wasn't there, i guessed it was because of the small child. " I'm sorry Cora, I'm so sorry. I wish there's something i could do to make you feel better" Divya said. " please help me lie down, my whole body hurts" i said, they all helped me get in bed. " we're getting transferred to the hospital in Johannesburg tomorrow morning tomorrow. " i said looking at all of them.

.

Amanda's pov

.

After Micheal called me and told me that they had

rescued Cora. I immediately called up the girls and we took Mbutho's chopper to cape town. We got there within two hours but then we had to wait in the waiting room because she was in the theater getting operated. We went to see Salvatore in the mean time. He was in a coma, his body had a lots of casts. The machines kept on beeping, heaven knows how much i hate hospitals. And then later on Dr Davis had to tell us that they lost a son, i didn't think that i'd be able to face her. And now there she was all talking as if everything was fine, her life was turned upside down but she was smiling a bit. Y

Trying to convince herself that everything was fine. She looked like someone in denial, i was scared for her. At tgat stage a lot could happen. If she could just cry then i'd feel at ease. At least i'd know that she was getting everything, she was going to heal. I almost thought she had gone mad. She told us the names of the kids, they were beautiful names.

[6/3, 19:12] Lynne: Page 82

Cora's pov

.

They offered me soft porridge to eat, i didn't feel like eating. I just wanted to go to sleep and make everything go away. " one more spoon" Amanda begged feeding me. I opened up my mouth, they kept on sharing jokes. Trying to divert my mind, trying to make the feel better. Well the things was i didn't want to feel better, or maybe i knew that it was going to take years to mend me up. At that stage, my mind was just frozen. I also had a few spoons of yoghurt then some fruits. " i called up your mom, she's been dead stressed. And Salvatore wouldn't tell him everything, she's travelling to joburg as we speak" Amanda said. " i don't think i want to see my family, right now. I just need to be alone" i said, my breasts hurt a little bit. They'd dampen my tops sometimes, " i'd like to be left alone" i said looking at all of them. They'd be there for hours, they exchanged looks before looking back at me. " we can't leave you alone right now" Priya said. " Guys please, just come back tomorrow morning or we'll meet in Johannesburg " i said trying to raise up my

up body a little bit. Siwe K helped me with the pillows, " please " i added. " we'll see you in the morning. Take care of yourself, we love you" Amanda said holding my hand. I nodded, they left. A nurse came in an hour later. She gave me pills then cleaned and lubricated my stitch, it was neatly done and small. " supper will be served within an hour, would you like something" she asked, " a glass of water, and that remote control please " i said, she poured me a glass of and gave me the remote control. I opted for music channels, just to ease my mind. But every channel seemed to be playing sad songs.

.

We were transferred to the white gardens hospital after we've eaten and had breakfast. We were not travelling in the same helicopter though, i got to see my husband that morning. No words were said, i didn't know what I'd say to him. His condition was so hopeless. He had many supporting systems connected to his body. The casts and the bandages. Both his legs had casts and they were hanged up. His neck had a cast, his hair was all shaved off and

his head was bandaged, his chest had two patches of elasto plaster. Maybe that's where the bullet had hit him. " Cora, my baby" mom cried walking in my ward. A lot of people followed after that, she hugged me. Hurting me in the process, i winced" I'm sorry, sorry. Are you fine, i thought I'd never see you again. And then the tragedy that took place after that, i wish i could ease your pain somehow. " she said crying, i couldn't hold my self anylonger. I cried with her. " I'm so sorry my child" she said wiping away my baby, i saw Salvatore and the boy in the mortuary " she said, i cried even more louder at the mention of my son in the mortuary. " it hurts mom, please make it stop. It hurts, it hurts. Please make it stop " i kept on pleading my closing my ears. " shhh" she kept on shushing me while i was in her embrace. It took me like forever to calm down.

.

5 days later

.

I was the one to wash my son and dress him up. I

just wanted to make sure, i didn't believe that he was really gone. And i would never see him again, maybe just maybe he'd wake up and cry. Things like that kept on running in my mind. I took a few pictures of him, watched as his casket went down the ground. But still my heart wasn't contempt, i was all too much to bear. our time is over, your eyes are shut.

I won't get to tell you what i needed you to know.

It's dark enough, the moonlight doesn't show.

And all my love could never bring you home

There's no more stars to find

And I'm too far behind

And i'd love to let you, i'd love to let you go.

You're always on my mind

I call a thousand times

And have to let you go but i love you more and more than you could know.

I set alone, awaited your reply

Was driven home when i started to cry

I should have known, i should've said goodbye

I only hoped, i would've had more time

.

There's no more stars to find And i am too far behind.

And i'd love to let you go, i'd love to let you

You're always on my mind, when i call a thousand times

And i have to let you go but i love you more and more then you could know.

We're both too young to live and die this way i kept this song on repeat as Rob drove me back to the hospital. I just wanted to cry things over, they say crying eases up things but the more i cried the more i went deeper into the cave of darkness. It never got easier, it just go worse and worse. The first thing I did was walk into Salvatore's ward, he was in the ICU. For the past few days i hadn't said a thing to him. I'd just walk up to his ward and whip in silence. But that day was different, i needed him. I needed him to tell me that everything was going to be fine, that it was

going to get better with time. " please wake up" i begged holding his hand against my cheek. " i can't do this alone, it hurts. I'm alone alone, I'm tired. Please wake up and tell me that everything is going to be fine. Tell me you'll fix everything, like you always do. I can't even look at our little girls. I need you Joaquin." I said crying, but it was all a whisper and that too in vein. Everyday i'd just walk into his ward and whip in silence or talk but nothing changed. Nothing changed,

The girls were out of the incubators four weeks later, i was breast feeding them. Even though that wasn't the plan but the doctor recommended it. Everyday i'd pump out six bottles of milk from my breasts. I vowed that, that was the last time i was ever getting pregnant. My breasts hurt like hell. Maia cried like a lunatic, Miracle would cry too but it was much less because she had no voice. Whenever she'd cry, i'd find myself silently crying too.

.

" the company for care taking recommended them, I'd checked with the references. They're good in

what they do" amanda said, she was talking about the two nannies i was willing to get. They were going to start working on January. It was a two weeks before Christmas eve, i haven't been seeing that much of Lorenzo. We talked on the phone though, sometimes she'd come and visit me when i felt emotional stable a bit. I had learned to not always crying, crying never helped me anyways. " i don't know Amanda, i have a bad feeling about all this" i said looking at their pictures. " I'll request Kevin to investigate thoroughly about them, so you'll feel at ease" she said. Salvatore had always investigate thoroughly about people who came into our lives. " i don't know Amanda, i don't trust anyone at the moment " i said sighing. " relax, you're just paranoid right now everything will be okay...I've started going to church. I mean si we k and i, i wouldn't have guessed that she used to go to church. She was a hard core until..well she met Kevin and lost her way. We should go to church when you're fully recovered " she said. " i don't know Amanda, i just want to go home and be alone with my three minions. I don't think I'm ready to face God at the moment.

Everything is a mess, and I'm beginning to question his existence. Of he does exist then he must be happy to see my endless miserly. He deserves an Oscar award " i said chuckling but not really chuckling. " don't talk like that, this is probably just another one of his tests on your faith " she said. " wow a test?. If this is a test then I've failed dismally, a test at a cost of my son's life. And now my husband, he won't wake up, his bones are broken. Everything is a mess. I didn't know that one's life could been washed away in just one single blow, like a hurricane everything happened so sudden and unexpected. Tell me where was he, where is he when i need him. I think God is fake, he's is fake. He's just another myth that we people keep our faith in. After all we have to believe into something. That's how the universe turns around, you gotta believe into something. Well I'm done, I'm done believe. If he's out there let him do whatever he wants. I'm done praying and begging. Nothing changes after all, my life is like a merry go round. I always end up in the same point" i shouted so angrily. I didn't know that i carried so much anger within me until i saw her get

startled. The room got filled with silence after that, " have you considered seeing a psychiatrist " she asked holding my hand. " you think I'm going crazy, don't you?" I asked giggled. Come to think of it now. I had gone crazy, i was mad. Angry, frustrated, raging with fire. I had so many Whys in my head. " No, ofcourse not. It's just that I've seen how you get better after seeing one. That's why I'm asking, you've probably seen the worst things out there. I think it would be better if see one" she said holding my hand tightly. "What if i don't want to get better?. i don't need a psychiatrist, I've been there before. Yes they know how to make all the hurt and bad memories sink under the pool of memories but everytime something happens. Those memories resurface. They resurface even more stronger then before. People think that you're like a car in a body shop. You walk in, and they fix you ,and you're out and you work like brand new. It doesn't work like that, it takes constant fixing... " i said crying loudly, she stood up and embraced me. " what can i do to make you feel better?, I've seen how you fake a smile everytime we're around. You're not you anymore. I want my

wild girl back" she said wiping away her tears and sitting back down on her couch. " i just want my Joaquin back, only he knows how to make feel better. He knows how i break and bend. I want my Joaquin back..." i said, wiping away my own tears. " he'll survive, he'll wake up sooner than you expected. You gotta keep faith in God, you need him more then ever right now " she said, " everything i touch breaks, it's like I'm cursed. First it was my mother and then Nina and now my son, i can't lose my husband too... i think you should stay away from me. " i said feeling so emotional wrecked up and hopeless. " don't say that Coh, you're not a curse okay. You're a blessing. You've helped a lot of people. I won't let you believe such nonsense" she said firmly.

.

" i think my mother in law hates me, i can see it in her eyes. She blames me for Joaquin's situation. I don't blame her, i blame myself too" i said chuckling a bit. " to hell with monsters inlaw, as long as her son loves you then to hell with her" she said. " didn't you fix things with Grace?" I asked frowning. " all

mother-in-laws are full of shit. They're pretentious snakes, you never know when their smiles are genuine...i actually wonder if we'd turn out to be like them " she asked. I couldn't help but laugh. " i don't see myself being like that to somebody else's daughter. And point of correction, not all mother-in-laws are full of shit " i said smiling. " you always manage to see good in evil. Mother-in-laws are full of shit and that's that. Period, i got my eyes on you. I give you 25 years, I'll be watching you." She said. I just laughed. We sat and talked a little bit more. She made me forget how miserable my life was. She shared her mother-to-daughter-in-law scenes. It was hilarious to listen to her

[6/3, 19:13] Lynne: Continuing

Cora's pov

.

Grandpa and grandma left a week ago, there'd been to S.A. for 5 weeks. It was two days before Christmas and i was in the car going home with my two little girls. Who were pretty much healthy, it was

strange walking inside the house. At the back of my mind i had envisioned Salvatore welcoming us with a his warm smile or better yet fetching us from the hospital. " mommy!" Lore screamed running towards me. I was carrying one of the girls. " hey baby Lore "i said holding him closer, i could see that he wanted me to pick him up but i really couldn't. " pick me up, mommy " he said jumping up and down. " let me put the baby on the couch first" i said walking towards the sitting room. I put the baby on the couch then picked him up, " i miss you mommy" he said holding me tightly. " whoa!, i missed you too. Has aunt P been treating you well?" I asked as we were walking outside. He nodded, " mom, is the baby girl going to sleep in your room" he asked. " The babies are going to sleep me until they're grown like you" i said pulling his nose. " in your room " he asked seriously. " yes" i said chuckling. " but that's my Papa's room" he said. " and it's also their father's room" i said. " you're going to sleep with the baby?" He asked. I nodded. " but you're my mommy" he said sulking. " the three of you are all my kids, they're are your little sisters. You should take good care of them" i said putting him

down and opening the limousine. I got in and picked the other girl. " I'm going to sleep in your room too" he said. " but Lorenzo, you're grown now, grown man don't sleep with their mothers. You have your room...Rob, could you get my bags and plastics in" i said as i was opening the door. " yes ma'am " he said walking towards the boot. " they also have their pink room and you said we're all your babies...I'm just a baby mommy. What if monsters come and eat me at night" he said. " ain't you just good at blackmailing people, you're just too sly for your own age Lore. We can sleep in one room as long as you will be using you small baby cot" i said smiling. " yey!" He screamed running around the house. " where's petunia?, Petunia!, Petunia" i called out softly. I put the baby down on the couch. Rob kept on walking in with my things. " Yes ma'am, i didn't hear you coming" she said ascending down the stairs with a smile. " call me ma'am one more time and you shall face my wrath" i said folding my arms. " sorry, let me look at those beautiful souls" he said walking towards the twins. " ncooh, they're so beautiful, hello there" she said seeming so

argumentative as to which one she should pick one. " leave my kids alone, they're sleeping, you won't like Maia once she wakes up. " kahle kahle which one is Maia because they look absolutely the same to me. How do you tell them apart?" she asked looking at the two of them thoughtfully. " i got their little feet tattooed " i said pulling her hand . " serious?" She asked. " of course not silly " i said laughing. " Mxm" she said looking so disappointed. " you didn't really think that i'd get them tattooed...anyways, i want you to help me move their baby cots from their nursery to our room. And Lorenzo also wants to sleep with me so I'm going need his baby cot from the storage" i said as we were walking upstairs. " this sounds like a strenuous thing, you shouldn't work so hard with your stitch. Why don't you just call the securities at the gate, ask for their help. I don't think you should even be taking these million steps " she said, she had a point. They hot me breathing out loudly. " you have a point, I'll just move to one of guest rooms downstairs, let me call the securities " i said taking out my phone.

.

2 hours later i was settled. I got all the baby stuffs i needed from the closet, also got my clothes from my room. I was taking a bath, i left Maia and Miracle sleeping in their baby cots and lorenzo was playing a game on mu phone. My stomuch didn't look so well when i looked myself in the mirror, my figer was ruined. I made a metal note to hit the gym and diet after i was fully recovered. I wrapped a towel around my body then got out, " P, what are you doing here " i asked startled to find her in the room. She was carrying Miracle in her arms. " to keep the boredom, far away from you ofcourse" she said. " go and get dressed so we can catch up " she said. I went into the closet

, moisturized my body , lubricated my stitch then dressed up into my night dress and warm gown. " I'm starving, hospital food is so horrible " i said sitting down on the couch. " we have some last night's left overs. Do you want me to warm it up for you?" She asked. " restuarent Paradisè should deliver my lunch within 30 minutes. Let me order pizza from

panarottis, i also want Chinese food and vanilla ice cream. Little guy, can i have my phone please " i said extending my hand. " are you going to have all that?" He asked laughing. " don't you guys want some, i thought you'd like take a little bit of a break from cooking today but it's fine if you want to cook" i said shrugging my shoulders. " no, no...i was just asked. Don't mind me " sge said fastly. Anyways i placed the order in different places. " so tell me, who had the privilege of eating all my meals while i was hospitalized?" I asked, looking between the two of them while i pumped milk out of my breasts. Two more weeks then i was going to stop breastfeeding. I was going to ask Dr Osborne for the pills which are responsible for slowing down the hormones responsible for milk secretion. " aunt P eat your food mommy " Alonzo said first, he had his finger pointed out at Petunia. " Ha! Lorenzo. Mara sonke besikudla" she said, making me laugh in the process. " Not me mommy" Lorenzo said defensively. " you're such a snitch and a sell out yooh" she exclaimed unbelievably. " mom, what is she saying?" he asked confused. " are you suppose to be having cold things,

like ice cream?" She asked. " just a little bit of it won't kill me" i said sighing heavily. " Ahhah!Cora, I'll go and make you a cup of coffee and some biscuits" he said putting Miracle in her cot. " a little of ice cream won't kill me" i said after her.

.

" your lawyer is here" petunia said walking inside the room. It was 5 pm, " George is here?" I asked standing up. " actually she had come two days after you got hospitalized. I just forgot to mention it to you" she said looking guilty. " did he say why?" I asked walking outside. " no, he just wanted to see you. He didn't say why" she said. " I'll be right back " i said to her, she nodded. I left her with the babies. " Mrs Salvatore " he said shaking my hand. " George...please sit down " i said. We sat on the dining table. He had an envelope with him. " how are you holding up, i heard about the unfortunate tragedy that happened.how are the kids " he said . " I'm doing just fine, the girls are fine and we also lost our boy. Salvatore is in a coma...but I'm sure you're not here to listen to my misfortunes. " i said sighing,

swallowing the big lump in my throat. " I'm so sorry Mrs Salvatore " he said. " what brings you here George?" I asked clearing my throat. " before your husband went in search of your, he made me draw up a few papers. He said if something happened to him, i should give you these" he said handing me the brown envelope. " what's in here" i asked taking the envelope. " why don't you open it and find out. " he said. I opened the letter, there was Will and other paper and different banking cards. A hand written letter ' if you're reading this letter then I'm already dead' that was the first line of the letter. I put it aside then read the other documents. " what rubbish is this George, my husband is still alive. My husband is not dead, what is this?" I asked infuriated. " i understand that, i know that " he said. " you understand, then what is this. My husband is not dead George " i said angrily. " Mr Salvatore gave me strict orders that if he does not get in contact with me within three days. I should give these to you. I came here but you weren't available, i went and saw him. His condition is hopeless, that's why i came to give you these" he said. " you saw my

husband?...even if you did, it's not your business to decide if his condition is hopeless or not. Please leave my house " i said standing up. " Mrs Salvatore please, this is not only about you. It regards his businesses too. There are some people you need to contact, this is not only about you " he said. " George please leave" i said looking up at the ceiling. " you know where to find me, you must read those documents...have a lovely day " he said smiling then left.

.

" are you okay?" Petunia asked me as i was bathing Maia, i had already bathed Miracle and dressed her up. It was almost 7pm." Yes, I'M fine" i said, not even looking at her. "Cora, you have tears in your eyes " she said. " seriously, I'm fine" i said wiping away my tears. " let me bath this little one, go to sleep. You seem so stressed" she said. " No... i mean thanks but let me bath her. I won't get much chance next year. I'm hungry and I'm coming down with some headache " i said looking at her. " I'll warm up that pizza for you and get you some pills" she said

standing up. Just came back just when i was moisturizing Maia. " thank you Petunia, before you go to sleep. Can i ask you for a favour?" I asked. " yeah, sure. You can ask for anything " she said kindly. " coould you do some shopping for me, Rob will drive you to town and he'll drive you home after that. I'm sure you also want to spend Christmas eve with your family. You can come back on the 26th evening. I know you're only Lorenzo's nanny and you only get paid for that. I promise to pay you extra if you could just help me around. " i said looking at her with pleading eyes. " sure, you don't have to ask. You guys are like my second family. You don't have to pay me. I'll do your groceries only if you give me a list. I tend to be very forgetful sometimes" she said. " ohh thanks, thank you" i said unbelievably. " good night ma'am " she said smiling. " good night P" i said chuckling a bit. I fed the girls then put them to their cots. I was eating when Lorenzo woke up rubbing his eyes. It was around 8:30. " mom" he said standing up from his bed. " hey, what is it, can t sleep?" I asked walking towards him. " come here, are you hungry?" I asked picking him up. " i want my

Papa" he said then started to cry. " shhh...We'll go and see Papa on on Christmas day." I said hugging him tightly. How was i supposed to comfort someone else, No, not just someone else. A kid while i was breaking and hopeless myself. " you must be hungry, I have some pizza, I'll sing you a lullaby and then you'll fall asleep " i said kissing his forehead and wiping away his tears. " i love you okay, your dad loves you too" i said brushing his braids as he ate.

.

I had to wake up every two hours, changes the girls sleeping positions then feed them. I hardly slept, Petunia went to the mall to buy us Christmas groceries, i had just bathed the twins and fed. i was bathing Lorenzo when the doorbell rang. " don't split water around, I'll be right back" i said picking up white towel to wipe my hands. " who is it?" I asked opening the door. It was Salvatore's mother. " mother in law " i exclaimed suprised. She had a suitcase in her hands. " Cora" she said finding her way in. I was still dumpfounded. " what brings you

here?" I asked smiling a bit as I followed her inside after closing the door. "Do I need a reason to come at my son's house?" She asked looking around. "Of course not, I was just--" relax" she said smiling. "I heard you came back home. So I thought you could use all the help you could get. After all they are my grandchildren. So where are they?" She asked leaving her suitcase. "Down the corridor, second room. They're sleeping at the moment" I said following her with the suitcase. "They have to wake up, grandma is here" she said loudly.

.

Unedited.

[6/3, 19:13] Lynne: Page 83

Cora's pov

.

I joined her in the room after putting her suitcase in the other guest room. She had already woken up the kids with her loud voice. She had Maia in her arms and Lorenzo was somehow in the room, all wet. "Grandma did you get me sweets" he asked. "Oh I

forgot" she said glancing at Lorenzo then back at Maia. " i thought their melanin would have changed by now, they don't show and signs of blackness" she commented looking in between the two girls. " but grandma you promised me the other day" lorenzo said sulking. " Lorenzo there's plenty of sweets in the house, come. Let me wipe your body " i said walking into the bathroom. " are you sure that these are your kids" she asked. Her question got me blinking a few times. " i also had my doubts but their hazel blue eyes got everything cleared" i said chuckling nonchalantly. " You can't put your bet on that, most white people have hazel blue eyes. " she said chuckling. I just shrugged my shoulders and brushed the uncomfortable feeling off. Anyways i dressed up Lorenzo and then took a shower myself.

.

Petunia made it back around 12pm, salvatore's accountant was responsible for paying all his workers. I tranferred 1k to her account just to show my appreciation. It wasn't month end yes so she hadn't been paid. She was thrilled, wouldn't stop

thanking and blessing me. She went home for Christmas and i was left with Nomsa, my mother in law and my kids. She suprisingly prepared dinner, it was just a simple delicious meal. " how your kids?" I asked. Not that i didn't know, i just want to know how the relationship between her and Esihle was. " they're doing just fine " she answered shortly. " all three of them?" I asked standing up with my empty plate . " i like straightforward people, stop beating around the bush. If you wanted to ask me about Esihle then you should've directly done so" she said calmy. " i myself is usually straight... So have you guys talked things through?. I mean the situation was so intense during the dawry day and at the wedding too." I said collecting other dirty dishes. " my daughter and i are doing just fine. " she said. To me that was a vague answer that said ' can we please stop talking about this'. " mhh, it's good to know. We wouldn't want Omuhle to grow up in a hostile environment, now would we?" I asked walking to the kitchen with the dishes. I put the dishes on the dishe washing machine while i cleared up the table. Lorenzo was still eating. Sitting on his

high baby dining chair combined table. " What are your plans for Christmas" she asked walking into the kitchen. " I'm just gonna stay indoors with my little family and then we'll go to see Joaquin later on. Lorenzo has been crying for him" i said looking at her with a faint smile. " I've been really wanting to ask you this, no one is willing to answer me. I know you're the only one with all the answers" she said looking so serious. " what is it?" I asked frowning. " what really happened to Joaquin, what happened to my son?. I know it's all connected to your kidnapping, it breaks my heart to see him lying so almost lifeless in that bed. It's like they' re trying to put many different people's pieces together" she said looking so emotional. " talking about this will only bring back all the memories of that day and i don't want to remember. It was the most horrible day of my life, i understand your curiosity as his mother but i can't. Excuse me" i said then walked out of the kitchen. " where are you going Cora?" I heard her ask. I went into the guest room i was using. Prepared to bath my girls, Lorenzo walked in as i was bathing Miracle. " mom, I'm not taking a bath today. I'm so tired" he

said sighing heavily with his hands on his waist. " aren't you just a drama king ?" I asked giggling. " I'm tired mommy " he said throwing puppy eyes at me. " we could skip the bath tonight but don't get used to it. Go and brush your teeth. Pee and put on your PJs, they're in the second drawer in the bathroom. You saw where i put them. " i said. " i love you mom" he said. " i love you more" i said shaking my head. I finished up bathing the girls then bumped milk into their formulas, Lorenzo who was supposedly ' tired' was playing a computer game. Anyways i took a quick shower then wore my comfy PJs. " okay, enough of the playing, go to sleep now" i said taking his computer. " mommy!" He screamed upset jerking his whole body. " hey, stop doing that" i said firmly. " i was about to win " he said looking down. " i bet you don't even understand this thing, i don't get why your father had to buy you this thing." I murmured to myself. " go to sleep please. I also want to go to sleep, it's been a long day" i said covering him with a blanket. " please read this one for tonight " he said taking a book under his pillow. " when did you get this book" i asked frowning while taking the book. He

just smiled naughty, anyways i read him to sleep. I went upstairs to our bedroom, it felt so cold. Had a lot of memories, it was actually a good decision for me to sleep in the guest room. I could see him in every corner of the room, every little conversation of ours. His smile painted all over the walls. I went into the closet where i found my bags, the one's i had left in the resident. They were all together with handbag, i took it and offloaded everything on the couch. That's when i came across my wedding band, i asked myself ' how come they didn't steal it. I put it on, still wondering. Then there was my dead phone, i opened it up and took my memory card. I put everything in the bag and took my laptop bag. Just when i was about to exit the closet, i noticed his biker jacket. It was as if it was staring at me. The one with a lots of badges. I took it out of the coathanger then walked out of the closet. I noticed that the brown envelope wasn't where i had left it and saw it earlier on. I put everything i was carrying on the dining table then went to knock on mother in law's room. " yes" she answered. I walked in, she was uncovers reading the bible. " sorry to bother you

this late at night but have you see the brown envelope that was on the left side of the table. I can't find it" i said fastly. She looked at me for a long while, " i put it on the upper right shelve of the tv stand. You should put stuff like those away from the kid's reach. Lorenzo could have spilled juice on it" she said. " ohh thanks. I'll remember to do that next time" i said faking a chuckle. I went and took it, i started reading everything. It was pointless after all, he had given everything he ever owned to me. All heck whole of it, that's if he had died. He was still alive so i had no access to his money. I was his nominee, the benefit of a nominee is that in the event of death of an account or locker holder the bank can release money in the account or contents of the locker to the appointed nominee. I only had ' either or survivor ' account and then his blackcard. It was just all too much and confusing, i had to get incontact with his accountant and lawyer. I didn't understand half the thing. I avoided reading his handwritten letter. There were some papers which needed my signatures. I needed to get in contact with George. Anyways i was brought back to earth by the crying baby. I

packed everything in my bag then rushed to the room. They were both crying, i didn't know what to do. I picked the them one by one and put them on my bed the fed the using both my arms. Maia wouldn't stop crying. " stop crying!" I screamed frustrated. I was crying myself, " please just stop" i said softly but crying. I held each in my arms, shushing them while walking around. Lorenzo was sitting on his ass frowning, " why are you crying mommy?" He asked. " please just, just go back to sleep " i said closing my eyes.

.

" mom, the baby girl is crying " i heard alonzo faintly say. It was almost like a dream. " mhh" i murmured tiredl. " mom, wake up" he shook me more harder. I opened up my eyes. Maia's voice goe even more louder, " what time is it" i asked sitting upright, slowly. I dragged my feet to her cot and picked her up. " you can be very frustrating, why do you have to be such a lunatic " i asked, emotionlessly looking at her. Her face had turned all pink, she had popped out veins. I walked out of the room with her, that day i

fed her directly from my breasts. I was so frustrated, Nomsa came there to ' help me out ' right, i wondered how she slept while i didn't sleep a wink. So much for being helpful, Maia finally fell asleep after what felt like a decade. And then i had to deal with Miracle, who was silently crying. I breastfed her too then went back to sleep. That year took the award for worst year of my life. We didn't even set up the Christmas tree for Christmas. I was too tired to cook so we ordered in. The fish tank and a small orange fish i had ordered for Lorenzo got delivered. It might not have been the brightest Christmas eve ever but at the end of the day he was happy, he became even more happier when we went to see his father. Nomsa tagged along, she kept giving me looks as if she wanted to say something but something held her back. It was the same shit on new year's eve, Amanda asked me to come and celebrate with the whole group like we always did but i couldn't. I was officially a single parent of three at the age of 22 i could proudly say i knew almost all that's there to know about life. Everyday was a struggle . So i contacted George and he

explained everything to me. Everything that needed to be signed by Salvatore was going to be signed by me regardless of the fact that he was alive. He advised that i check every single business book because the COOs and managers along with the accountants couldn't be trusted. So every single monthly spending i'd to check. I also contacted the guy he had asked to handle the project of building hotel Paradisè. Everything got settled before i went back to the residency.

.

Lorenzo was doing RR in the very most expensive school in Johannesburg. Reason being safe, i didn't want to get a call one day telling me that he has been kidnapped or something. it was february. He did not like school as much as i thought she would. I got a call every single morning telling me he was protesting, i had to beg or threaten him. Nomsa was still staying with us and i got a nanny for Maia, the second one failed the interview. More like i didn't trust her with my kids so i got Petunia to be both Lorenzo and Miracle's nanny. Miracle was not as

much as troublesome as Maia. I doubled her salary. The other nanny's name was Gugu, black but educated enough to speak proper english. So other than looking after Maia she was going to clean around the house, twice a week. Maria coming once a week wasn't enough anymore. They exchanged turns in cooking.

.

" are you okay" Dr Francis asked me as i was reading the reports of a patient who had miscarriage. " do you still believe she fell down the stairs. Forget it i don't. I just don't get why woman tolerate such bullshit" i said sighing. " it doesn't matter what i believe if she won't speak out. The medical reports clearly shows that she was beaten up... forget about that. How are you doing and how is Mr Salvatore?" He asked as we walked down the hallway. " The same" that answer got imprinted into my mind. I got used to saying it. " have you been eating well lately?, resting?" He asked worriedly. " i eat and rest when i get time" i said shrugging. " it's important to look after yourself, especially when you're a medical

student. You need all the energy you could get...and right now you look so unwell. You've lost a lot of weight it seems" he said. " how do you expect me to be healthy, I'm a mother of three, i stress every sundsy i have to leave home. I have to be emotionally there for our little boy. Shush him when he cries missing his father. I'm a medical student. I have modules to pass, an important residence pass test at the end of the year. My husband has been in a comatose for three months now, not just that i have to check if his businesses are going smoothly. Where do i get the time to look after myself. That's npt just it Ettore, i have a mother inlaw gawking at me like a hawk." I said emotionless, the old Cora would have broken down and cried but i wasn't about that anymore. I learnt to live like a robot, i have a time table set for each and everyday. Ignored the scary dreams that haunted me every single nightm ignored the fact that i was starting to forget my husband's smile and laughter. " I'm taking you across the street for lunch" he said. " my lunch will be delivered within 10 minutes. This is the last month of me getting to have it" i said looking at my

wrist watch. " The one that you get to give to Mrs Smith?. Come, I'm taking you out " he said pulling me by my hand.

.

It was a friday month end, before driving home i drove to club Paradisè. The club was loaded, i was running good not as smooth as Salvatore ran it. I walked straight to the office which i had the keys to. The manager came in with the book that i needed. It had every detail from stock, sales, loses and profit. " Cora" he said smiling a bit. " hi, how is the businees going" i asked. " everything single detail is right there. The bank slips are attached there as you asked. I'll deposit the tonight's cash tomorrow morning. You'll get the notification. The slip will be delivered to you " he said. Well, my husband's phone was in my posession. It was easier because I knew the password. One crazy hormonal night during my pregnancy i asked him to give it to me. I had a knife in my hands, he was bound to give it to me. Sometimes i got shadey calls from his underworld clients. " thanks for the book. I'll take my leave" i said

standing up after putting it in my bag. " aren't you going to party with us?" He asked following me towards the door. " if i could yeah" i said chuckling. " goodnight, take care of the club" i said. He usually said that my husband used to interact with his clients. That's one of the reasons the club got loaded but i didn't have time for that and i wasn't my husband.

.

I got home around 22pm. I went straight to the guest room i used after checking on each and everyone of my kids. Everytime i came home they'd long asleep, my heart broke. I took a long warm bath, it somehow washed away all my tireless night and loneless. Loneliness was eating me slowly but surely, i missed my husband. I just wanted to be held in his arms. Told that i was loved. I fell asleep as soon as i hit the pillow, i was woken up by tiny hands touching my face. " hey baby Lore " i said softly after opening my eyes. " mom, when are we going to see Papa again?" That's the first thing he asked. " Robinson is going to take you there in the afternoon...how i school. Have

you found friends yet?" I asked sitting upright. " i don't like school mommy. The kids are so mean, i don't want to go to school" he said folding his arms. " but your teacher is nice" i said brushing his braids. " yes miss McKenzie is nice but i don't want to go to school " he said. " if you want to be clever, strong and big like your Papa then you'll have to go to school otherwise you'll shrink and become the size of an ant" i said. " you're lying mommy " he said laughing. " no I'm not, tell you what... you can ask your father when he wakes up. He'll tell you, if you do not go to school you shrink" i said smiling. He kept on shaking his head no. " mom why don't you go with me to see papa?" He asked. " mommy has to look after Papa's businesses while he sleeps so that when he wakes up he finds everything in order. I'll go on a Sunday" i said. "I also want to go with you" he said. " then you're not going to go today" i said smiling. " mom, why don't you take me out for ice cream anymore?" He asked another heart breaking question. " tell you what, we'll get ice cream on our way to see Papa tomorrow. It's a deal" i said. " deal sealed" he said then we high fived like we used to. A

lot changed, i did my best to be sufficient in all fields. Reminded myself that ' wgen the going gets tough the tough gets going '. I couldn't remember the last time i wore my full make up or one of my crazy outfit. It was either i was wearing formal clothes or hospital uniform. So i took a bath and went to check on the businesses. Also had a meeting with the RPPM, everything was good except that i made it back home around 6pm. Not just that i was tired too. " i came just in time didn't i" i said smiling as i found everyone around the table. " this is no time for a women to be coming home" Nomsa said. " you know how it is" i said putting my bags on an empty chair and sitting down. " how are my little girls doing" i asked kissing Lorenzo's forehead. " They're doing good, and we're running out of diapers. " Gugu said. " it's about time i changed everything their are three months old now. I bet those diapers don't even fit well. " i was thinking about that too" P said. " what happened to him?" I asked referring to Lorenzo who seemed rather moody. " i forbad him to have ice cream. It's cold and late.you know how hyperactive he gets" P said. " i promised you we'll have ice cream

tomorrow on our way to see your papa, didn't i?" I asked putting my arm around him... i bath the girls and they slept with me llike they always did on a Saturdays. All four of us slept together.

.

" have you guys seen my red diamond neckless?. I was rearranging my closet and it's missing" i asked joining everyone on the table for breakfast. It was almost 9am. " no, i haven't seen it" Gugu said. " ohhw" i exclaimed, " actually i borrowed it, i was meeting up with my church friends. You know how church women can be. I also borrowed your black and white strapped block heels. You should've see the look in their eyes" Nomsa said. " you took my stuff without my knowledge and you call it borrowing?. " i asked boiling up. " i thought it wasn't going to be much of a big deal. I was going to return your things. " she said casually. " That necklace was my first birthday gift from my husband. It costs more than 30k...It's fine as long as no damage was done to it" i said sighing tgen sat down. " so it's genuine...can i borrow it for today's service. I'll return

it after that" she asked. " sure" i answered shortly. I ran out of appetite, anyways i asked Robinson to drive us to the hospital, all four of us. I got a call from Amanda on our way there.

.

[6/3, 19:14] Lynne: Page 84

Cora's pov

.

..." can you believe the nerve of that woman. She said it so chilled, like what the hell." I exclaimed so infuriated. Amanda and i were talking about Nomsa on the phone. I was so frustrated, " as much as i hate to say this...but i told you so. I told you to ask her to evacuate, no good comes out of a mother inlaw and a daughter inlaw living under the same roof. But what did you say?, ' ohh, she's probably going to leave within a few days'. You reap what you sow" she said laughing. " I'm dead serious here and you're busy laughing. You can be such a pussy sometimes" i said taking in a sharp breath. " if I'm a pussy then you're sure a dick. So listen here Dickson

you have to options, it's either you ask your dear mother in law to move out or keep your significant belongings locked away. Knowing how soft of a dick you've become I'm sure you'll opt for the last option." She said. " she's Salvatore's mother and my kid's grandma, not just that but she's my elder. I can't just kick her out" i said sighing. " ohh please, since when have you become so ancient. She never got along with Mr muscles and i doubt they ever will. That woman doesn't even like your little girls, she doubts that they're even yours. I swear oneday she'll burst out" she said so firmly. I could tell that she was angry with me, " Amanda I'm tired of fighting. Just let her be, she has her concerns. I mean even i doubted them at first. She's not that bad" i said tiredly. " when will you wake up and smell the coffee Cora. Ever since the news about your past life got out. She has never been the same, she looks at you so codly" she said angrily, more like shouted. " I'm sorry, you just behave differently these days. My bitch would have bursted already. " she said sighing heavily. " This is not only about me Mandy, I'm a mother of three now. All on my own, i can't afford to

start a fight. I want a stable environment for my kids, if i go all gaga things would just become so hostile" i explained. " you see, that's what i was talking about. " she said. " i just smiled and sighed. " stop exaggerating things. Look there's an incoming call from Mom, will chat later" i said. " i love you okay" she said. She always said that. I don't know why, maybe to make me feel lighter. " i know, bye" i said smiling. " Hey mom, let me call you in a few minutes." I said as soon as I answered. I didn't even give her a chance to reply. We had just reached the café where we were going to get ice cream. Lorenzo was the first one to get out as soon as Rob open the door. " be careful not to fall" i said after him. " Rob helped me get the babies settled in their pram. Which was meant for three kids, the empty seat in between the two girls made my heart ache. But i bottled it all in, i had to be strong for my kids and husband. I've never really entered his nursery room, it's like i wanted to shave everything back and move on at the fullest of speeds but at the same time i was carry every single memory within me. Tgere were just different pieces of many different puzzles.

We got a table at the far corner. The girls were sleeping while Lorenzo and i were licking our ice creams... " so this means that you have no really friends " i said giggling. I had just asked him how many friends he had. He literally counted all the toys we ever bought him. " Mommmmy" he said looking around. " you're such a weird kid. You know that right?" I asked frowning. " mom, i do have a friend. Remember Kender " he said. " you can't be serious. You've only been with Kendra for like. 4,5 times?" I asked frowning. " she's my best friend. " he insisted. " i have this feeling that you'll turn out to be just like ypur father. A Womanis--- forget it. Finish up your ice cream and we'll go and see papa " i said looking at my wrist watch.

.

His skin seemed to be getting paler day by day. It was not dry or crank just kind of lifeless. It was like he was running out of red blood cells. The machines kept on beeping loudly. He had so many drips inserted into his flesh. I slightly kissed his lips, " mom, why isn't Papa talking to us anymore" Lorenzo

asked. He was standing on the couch on the other side of the bed. I held Alonzo's hand tightly. Lorenzo looked saddened. " He's just tired. His body is still in so much pain. He'll wake up, you'll see. We'll all go to dunban together, we'll go out for ice cream. We'll have so much fun. Like we always did" i said looking at him with a broad convincing smile on my face. " Papa is hurt?" He asked. " He's going to get better Lorenzo. He's a strong man " i said. The more we came to visit Alonzo the harder Lorenzo's questions weighed down on me. We sat like that and talked, sometimes the four of us would come and make funny videos while we make up his face and painted his nails. I got all the videos and pictures and audios of us saved in one USB card. All of the videos made ever since we met. It made Lorenzo giggle, the twins kept on growing and growing. My husband was still in the same state, the emptiness and loneliness in me took over. No one was there when i'd wake up from the nightmares of that one unfortunate tragedy. Sometimes i'd dream of my late son, Miceal. Everytime in my dream he was floating on a pool of clear water but then water would turn into blood and

he'd drown. I'd fail to save him, after waking up from that I'd hysterical cry while holding on to the pillow. I did dream of my husband too, that was one beautiful dream. We'd walk on the sea shore, he'd picking me up and spin me around and i'd giggle.

.

On the holidays of April, it was Lorenzo's birthday and i was home. Been home for the past for days, " Hey buddy...wake up" i whispered shaking him lightly, while holding the small round cake with my other hand. It was around 6am, he woke up and rubbed his eyes. Petunia had the camera rolling behind me, " it's your birthday" i said smiling. He opened up his eyes frowning. happy birthday to you you

Happy birthday to you

Happy birthday dear Lorenzo

Happy birthday to you ...i baked you this ugly looking cake. Blow off the candles and make a wish" i said giggling. He blow off the candles after making a wish. " is there something you'd like to say to Papa...on the camera." I asked pointing out at the

camera. " i miss you Papa" he said. " Salvatore we're about to cut the cake and eat it. It's a pity you aren't here to have a piece. I know it looks horrible on the outside but it taste delicious. I made it just the way you taught me " i said to tge camera. " okay bye" i said blocking the camera's eyes... we were all sitting around the long dinning table. Having full English breakfast prepared by me and petunia. I cooked everything i found on the refrigerator. It was my baby lore's birthday after all, Nomsa was still staying with us. She'd go to her house maybe for one or two days then come back. By the way i locked up my room and she wasn't happy about it. She switched up positions and played victim, asked me questions like' if i didn't want to borrow her my stuff then i should have just said so, am i making her a thief. She even dared to say it was her Son's money that bought me all the stupid glamorous things. Things got quite heating, the fact that i kept on saying sorry infuriated her even more. The next morning she came to apologise but i could tell that it wasn't genuine. She went from ' borrowing ' my stuff to inviting her church friends over. And that got me

buying groceries twice a month but i didn't fight her.

The door bell rang, " i guess your gift is here" i said standing up first to get tge door. " what is it mommy " he asked curiously. " Wait for it" i screamed giggling. I got the gift from the delivery guy " thanks" i said before walking back in..." a puppy, it's a puppy " Lorenzo screamed running towards me. I put the little puppy with white fur down. It aas so cute, " this is the best birthday gift ever" he screamed holding the puppy into his arms. " hey be careful " i said laughing. " can i play with him in my room?" He asked. " i haven't even put his belt around his neck... okay fine. You can go" i said. " i love you mom" he screamed running. " i love you mom" he said turning around. " i love you more " i said shaking my head. " finally, now I'll stop hearing about Josh's puppy and what not" Petunia said putting down the camera. Josh was one of his nemesis at school. " we're still going to Gold reef city, right?" Gugu asked. " of course" i said chuckling. Gugu loved going out. " i wish i could join you all guys but i got this ceremony i have to attend" Nomsa said. " we understand

mother" i said. " Lorenzo is really lucky to have a step mother like you. You'd swear you two were blood related" she added.tension built up around the table. " she's the best thing that has ever happened to me" i said faking a smile.

.

We spend the day playing games at gold reef city. All my friends were there, including some of their husbands. We had so much fun but it all went on vein when...Well i drove in at the same time with mother in law. She was driving my husband's Austin Martin, one of my husband's favourite car. She could have taken the BMW x6, she drove into the garage. I parked outside but rushed in before it could close. " what's going on here, did you car breakdown. Why are you using salvatore's car?" I asked fastly. I could feel my heart pumping. " No, my car didn t breakdown. Is there any crime in using my son's car?" He asked. " mother, this is salvatore's favourite car. He wouldn't even let me drive it. Couldn't you have picked any other car" i asked angrily. " i could have picked the Ferrari but it wouldn't recognise my

voice. I see no issue in driving my own son's car, I'm his mother after all." She said. " Salvatore wouldn't even let me drive it and you took advantage of his comatose. I hope you didn't scratch it" i said checking it out. " what is this?" I asked unbelievably. " it's just a small dent, I'll get it repaired. It's just that stupid taxi driver, he halted so sudden that i couldn't pull my break on time. We collided slightly " she said. " Salvatore is going to kill me, no he's going to kill you. Ever since you came here you've been nothing but trouble. It's like you came here with some stupid agenda. I'm not going to waste my energy and talk to you. Please leave my house, it's late you can leave tomorrow " i said raising my hands up. I was so frustrated, " and who are you to kick me out of my son's house?. I'm not going anywhere, this is my son's house " she said as i was walking up the staircases. " if you haven't noticed the ring on my finger tgen let me explain it to you. I am his wife, the mother of his kids. Please just leave my house. I'm tired mother, I'm tired of all the fake smiles. I'm tired of having to see your 10 friends every sunday evening. It's draining, I'm tired of having to correct

Lorenzo's words because you watch inappropriate shows on televisions. I'm begging you to leave in God's name " i pleaded putting my hands together. " if you think that I'm going to leave my grandson with a witch like you then you've got another thing coming. You killed his mother and then you tried to kill his father and now i see. You're after my grandson too. You want to have all this wealth to yourself. You want to spend my son's hard earned money with your illegitimate little devil's sprouts. Over my dad body, tell me Cora. How do you do it, how do you become a liar, a cheat, a killer, a witch and a prostitute at the same time. I must give it to your love portion. You got my son to sign over all his hard earned blood and sweat to your name. He didn't even think about me" she kept on going on and on. I had tears running down my face. I couldn't take that, i couldn't. I found myself running upstairs i locked myself in my room. Cried myself to sleep.

.

The first thing i did in the morning was call in the securities. It was around 7am, i had taken a bath and

wore my tracksuits. I found everyone around the table, having breakfast. I opened the door for the securities. "mother in law they will kindly show you your way home. Have you packed your suitcases yet?" I asked folding my arms and smiling. "what's going on here?" She asked standing up. "come, I'll explain it to you" i said walking towards the sitting room. "i told you I'm not going" she said folding her arms. "I've come to a conclusion that you and I can not share the same house. You see, I'm a prostitute, a liar, a killer and a witch and you my mother in law is an Angel from heaven. Maybe you're are Maria...that would make Sandile Jesus" i said then laughed at the end. "anyways since, my husband and i. The one you put at his father's door steps just a couple of hours after his birth. Do you remember him, the one who used to hate your guts. The one i pleaded with so that he could forgive you. If only i knew that you're just a lioness covered in a sheep's skin. I can't believe that i risked my life for such an ungrateful. Undeserving, judgemental, narrow minded pitbull like you" i said so disgusted and angry. "did you just call me a dog?" She asked angrily. "a

pig if you want...as i was saying. You wouldn't be here if it wasn't for me. I'm so stupid sometimes, so easy going. I thought you were a good woman. I've always been a bad judge of character, i tend to see good in everyone. But that's going to change, thank you for opening my eyes. And those two little girls are the really salvatore's. They are my husband's daughters, just because they look more white than black that doesn't mean they're not my husband's. I might have been a prostitute but that doesn't mean I'd cheat on my husband. I wouldn't even dream of it, how dare you call them illegitimate... just get out of my house. I don't ever want to see your hypocritic face ever. SECURITY, escort this women out" i called out. " ma'am?" They asked looking between the two of us. " you heard me, escort her out. Nomsa, make sure not to leave any of your belongings here." I said then went to the dining table..." this is far from over Cora " she said pulling her two suitcases out. " drive safely" i said smiling.

.

Her words stood still and alive in my heart and mind.

Some parts of it were true, i was a murderer. I killed Nina and my son, almost killed my own father and my husband was hanging on the the thread. If somebody would ask me today ' Cora, what kept you alive and strong'. Then my answer would be my husband, the hope that he'd wake up one day. And I'd finally cry with the comfort that he'd be there to comfort me. I used to watch the videos of us, i remembered the day he asked me. ' what comes first to me between a husband and kids'. I didn't answer him then but right his absences gave me all the answers. Unbelievably enough i think he came first, or maybe it's just that i missed him crazy and immensely and so helplessly. That it hurts, every night i'd cry myself to sleep but wake up and put on a big smile.

.

I got a call from Dr Davis, just when i thought things were going smoothly and i was succumbing to the bitter truth of my life. It was a month later after i kicked Nomsa out. The first week he would call and insult me. I found Mr Salvatore and Nomsa in

Dr Davis' office. " Father" i greeted him. He stood up and hugged me. " how are you doing " he asked. " I'm hanging on " i said smiling. " good evening Dr Davis " i greeted him. " Mrs Salvatore " he said shaking my hand. I sat down on the couch next to father inlaw. He was sitting between Nomsa and I, " so, why are we here Dr Davis " Father asked. " i called you all here regarding Mr Salvatore junior. He has been here for 6 months as we all can reckon. As i have been giving up updates on his health. Which is not improving at all, we did our best...the thing is his financial aid cannot cover up anymore. It has run out, so we're left with one option. Which is why you're all here" he explained, my heart was thundering. " you're not about to say what i think you are about to say. Are you?" I asked holding my chest, " I'm afraid we're going to have to switch off the machines. You have 48hours to make the decision " he said. " 48 hours to make the decision?. What the... you've already decided that, no. This is wrong, you cannot do this. My husband has been paying you for years and years. You can't take my husband's life" i stuttered feeling light headed. " isn't there any other

option we could opt for?" Mr Salvatore murmured. " Mr Salvatore try to understand, his condition is hopeless. It's beyond helpless. Even if he was to wake up. He'd just be a vegetable. His spinal cord injury is deep, both his legs got fractured. 4 of his ribs are broken. His skull got cranked, we're talking brain damage here, he might suffer from amnesia and--" he said " stop it, stop. I don't care if he wakes up crippled, just tell me what other options do we have " i shouted, i couldn't take what he was busy explaining. " you'd have to pay cash, every month. I wouldn't advise you to do that because calculating all the expenses, the total amount is a big sum. It's leave you dry" he said. " just give me the papers, i can't afford to lose him" i said crying. " why are you crying, just wipe off those crocodile tears. You put my son in here. Congratulations your wish has come true. The machines are going to be switched off. You might as well start to prepare for his funeral." Nomsa said angrily. She was standing, " sit the fuck down and shut up before I slap you" father said. I was just looking at her unbelievably, trying to imprint her words into my mind. " here's the bill" Dr

Davis said handing out a white paper at father inlaw who was on his feet. I saw him sink back down on the couch after reading it. I took it from him, " 52k?" I asked eyes popped out. " what for, it's not like he's eating your food. He's just sleeping, i understand that this is one of the best hospitals in the country but this, this is unreasonably ridiculous " i shouted holding the paper firmly. " don't just look at the total amount, read all the details and spendings.like I said before, it's not a wise option. Switching off the machines will save both you and him. Having know him for years, i know for sure that he won't stand being a vegetable. " Dr Davis said. I picked up my bag then rushed out. I found myself driving without knowing where i was going. I found myself in parking on the spot where we had dinner after getting back together. Where we had our first silly talk of having kids. He wanted mini me and i wanted mini him.and then we made love after that. Playing our favourite love song One of the happiest night's of my life, to think that i might never experience all that again shuttered me into a thousand pieces. To think that I might never see his face his, that i might live only to

see his eyes on our girls and his smile and charm on our our boy made shutter into a million pieces more. I got out of the car, the city lights were even more brighter that evening. I kneeled down, more like fell down on my knees. " if you're listen to me, if you hear me. If you've heard my prayers before. Please God just give me one more chance with my husband. I know I've said a couple of mean things but i have praised and worshipped you for years. Can't that compensated for my insult?, you can t do this to me. I can't be a widow at this age. I need you to send me back my husband, i promise to dedicate my whole life preaching your word. You can't take our way my home, haven't you seen enough of my tears, haven't you heard enough of my cries. Ain't you tired of hearing me cry?...i beg you, i beg for your mercy. Please have mercy on my family. Was i born to suffer, what's the point of being alive if all a feel

Is pain and suffering... i beg you to send him back to me. I won't be able to live without my Joaquin. Don't do this to me!" I screamed, prayed and cried. I remembered putting on hillsongs, singing and

praying.

take this fainted heart, take these tainted hands.
Wash me in your love, come like grace again. Even
when my strength is dust, I'll praise you. Even i have
no song I'll praise you. Even when it's hard to find
the words. Louder then i sing your praise, I'll only
sing your praise.

.

Take this mountain weight

Take these ocean tears

Hold me through the trial

Come like hope again

.

Even when the fight seems losts, I'll praise you

Even when it hurts like hell, I'll praise you

Even when it makes no sense to sing louder then I'll
sing your praise. Ooh ohh I'll only sing your praise x4

.

My heart burns only for you
And my soul waits only for you
And I'll sing till the morning comes.
And I'll sing into the miracle
I'll sing your praise

.

Even when the morning comes
Even when the fight is on I'll praise you
Even when my time on earth is done. I'll only sing
your praise. I sang and cried and begged. Prayed
to God to give me strength and show me the way out
of the darkness. It felt like my heart was being
ripped out of my heart. Like I've been running for
miles and miles. I was running out of light, darkness
was taking over.

[6/3, 19:14] Lynne: Page 85

Cora's pov

.

I don't know when i fell asleep but i was woken up by the bright sunlight hitting my face. I slept in my car, in the middle of nowhere. I switched off the music that was loudly playing. Checked the time, it was 7am. I called up doctor Francis and told him i was gonna come a little bit late. I drove home home, took a body soothing long shower. " Mr Salvatore came by and asked for you. We tried calling you but you wasn't picking up " Gugu said as i joined them for breakfast. " they want me to let my husband go, switch off the life supporting machines. I have like a day and a few hours" i said looking at my breakfast. " what are you going to do, Are you going to?" Petunia asked, i looked at her. " i remember what he promised me one day. He promised never to let me go, no matter what happened. He said unless, i asked him to, i made him promise... if i allow the machines to be switched off then that'll him letting me go. Amd and i haven't asked him to let me go" i said then took a deep breath. " i don't think he would have wanted you to let him go either. " Petunia said. " he's strong, i believe in him. He'll fight against death, he'll come back to me. I know what to do." I

said taking my phone and standing up. " Take care of my kids" i said, i was wearing tracksuits and sneakers. " Don't let him go Cora " Gugu said. I faintly smiled. It took me an hour to reach the hospital. I had already called up father inlaw, we were going to meet there.

.

" like i said before, I'm going to pay cash. I'm not going to let my husband die just like that. I have faith in God and Joaquin. He's going to wake up before you know it" i said to Dr Davis. " how are you going to manage this, remember you use the same black card to pay Lorenzo's school fees. Since you also lost your bursary, I'm sure you also use the same black card to pay for your fees and all that you need. The car services and groceries, you also have two little girls." Mr Salvatore said. " so what do you suggest i do father?. I don't care if we run bankrupt. It's his hard earned money after all. I just can't afford to lose him " i said upset. " I'll pay for the next 6months, I'm sure that'd enough time for him to come back to life. He's the only child I've got, i don't

want to lose him but i also don't want you and my grandkids to suffer. We must make sure that your future is secure" Mr Salvatore said. I wasn't really expecting that, " thanks, thank you." I said smiling. He seemed to have lost hope, given up on his son but there he was helping us. " ok then I'll get the papers arranged." Dr Davis said. And just like that my husband got another 6 months in advance. Hours, days, weeks and months passed by but he was still not waking up. I had turned into a praying worrior, took my family to church every Sunday and then we'd go to see him after that. Sometimes the pastor would come by and pray for him. I was wearing out, i spent almost most of my nights crying. My pillows got used to the ocean tears, i spent my birthday locked up in my room. I made a video of myself. The camera helped, it made me feel as if i was actually talking to him. His smiled had finally managed to wash out of my mind. His laughter, i only saw all those in videos but it was not the same. Nothing was ever the same, so 6 months got finished and there we were again, in Dr Davis' office . It was the 15nth of November , " i brought my card

with me. I'll swipe, i am not going to let my husband die just like that. I'm not, his has millions in his name. I don't care if we run bankrupt or starve to death. Father, if you're willing to give up on your son the it's fine but I'm not " i said firmly. " you gotta let him go Cora, it's of no use fighting this. It's been a year already. He's not waking up, he's never going to wake up. He has been lying on that bed for months. There's just nothing we can do about it. Look we tried, we tried. I come here almost every day but he just won't budge. Just let him go, everything will be fine with time. This too shall shall pass" Mr Salvatore shouted, he was infuriated but also crying. " like i said, I'll pay the hospital bill. Our love is stronger than death. If i go ahead and let him go then i won't be able to forgive myself even God won't forgive me. It won't be fair on you as his father, it won't be fair on my little kids. The girls haven't even heard his voice. What would i tell our son, this won't be fair on me. I don't think a year of chance is enough, if i have to then I'll give him eternity to come back to me " I swallowed the hard lump in my throat after saying all that. " if you'd excuse me, i

need to go home. I'll pass by the receptionist and pay" i said standing up. " why don't you understand Cora. Even if he wakes up, he's obviously going to be a vegetable. He'll hate himself, he's a proud man." Mr Salvatore said. " we'll cross that bridge when we get there" i said then left.

.

On the 20th of November, we were celebrating the girl's birthdays which was being held at the near by park. " you're kidding right?" I asked chuckling. " have you seen yourself lately Cora, I'm worried about you. What if you get sick, you're so skinny" Amanda said. " i also think Amanda is right, focusing on the businesses will give you more time to focus on your kids and yourself and also your husband " Divya said. " are you for really?. You want me to focus on the businesses and drop out of school. Abandon my one and only dream?" I asked but they all just ignored my gaze. " i won't leave my dream, two more years and then I'll finally graduate. I can't give up now. Besides it's not like i look after his businesses full time. I just check the books incasse

theirs theft, which pretty much seems useless since after all. The stocks and share's value is decreasing. We incur loss every single month" i said then sighed. The kids were playing around, with the guys. " we've sat down and talked, since you're all aware of our other unmentionables businesses and Kong get quarter of everything. It's black money. Each guy laundry his own money and we got his money stacked up some. We thought maybe you should take it, we'll get it cleaned for you. You need it to pay for the hospital " Mbutho said sitting down. "

No...everything is good. I don't need any money. I'm still capable of paying thanks anyways, your support means a lot to us guys" i said seriously. I wanted nothing to do with his underworld, i wondered what happened to that suitcase of 2million dollars.

Salvatore was going to wake up and deal with it himself. Anyways we had a grand celebration, father inlaw came by later that day and gifted Maia and Miracle with big white fluffy teddybears. We didn't talk that much but he sat down and had tea with me. He had just landed from a business trip. Connie and Charles come to visit for the December holidays.

Mom and Dad couldn't come because she was always working. They looked so grown and matured.

.

As usually our friends took a trip to Spain that time, Amanda begged me to come. No infact they all did but i couldn't, i felt like i'd be imposing. They'd call me and send me pictures. They tried their very best to make me feel not alone. But the loneliness came from the inside. Sometimes you'd be in the biggest crowd but still feel alone, i remember waking up at night. It was just one hour before the new year. I drove straight to the hospital. The visiting hours were long over but with a good bribe the securities sneaked me in to .y husband's ward. I left my kids and relatives sleeping." Happy New year baby wami" i said smiling then kissed his forehead. I could hear the sound of the explosives outside. "... It's a norm to make a New year's wish. Well i have just one wish, my wish is that you wake up. Come back to me my love. I'm so lonely, I'm alone alone. I can't remember the last i was happy. Please just come back to me " i said kissing his cold hand as i sat on the couch. I

spend the whole night talking to him, the doctors always said he could hear us. Everything around him, so i wondered if he just chose to ignore us, me.

.

The following year began so fast, it was back to school for me and Lorenzo. The residency was over and i had moved back to home permanently , so there i was volunteering at some public hospital. The facilities were so poor there, i must say working without getting paid was heartbreaking. I had gotten used to getting a bank notification every single month. The good thing was that the working hours got reduced from 12 to 8. So i saw and spent more time with my kids. It was 8am to 4pm kinda thing. I drove Lorenzo to school before going to the hospital, Rob would fetch him. He was going to turn 5 years old within 2months. Miracle and Maia were walking but you know baby steps. Maia had started calling me 'mama' . Miracle would have to if she wasn't a mute. But she was as much active as Maia, and she'd shrug his body down the floor while making noises more like scream if she didn't want

something. They were both naughty, Kendra would come by on weekends or Lorenzo would visit her since they didn't go to the same school. I was in touch with my friends and family, including Joaquin's family. Except for Nomsa but his siblings did call once in a while. I still paid the hospital bills with hope and faith. People were busy trying to convince me to let him go. But I just couldn't, Dr Francis and I still kept in contact. We talked about almost everything, he had a fiancée. She was cool. Amanda found a job as soon as she graduated. She was working at the White Gardens hospital after as a qualified physio therapist.

.

I mid March, I remember getting this one call from the hospital. The person on the other side gave me straight orders to get to the White Gardens hospital after ASAP. I didn't even report to my supervisor, I left in a jiffy. I remember rushing to my husband's ward without asking anything. I couldn't believe my eyes when I got there, he was awake. I blinked a few times. "Joaquin, you came back to me" I cried out

loud. Dr Davis was there. I remember jumping into the bed and hugging him. He didn't seem happy to see me, the confusion in his eyes couldn't be missed." You're alive, i told them you wasn't going to give in to death. You can back to me. You're alive, i missed you so much" i said crying but he wasn't hugging me back " Lady please get off me" he said. " am I hurting you?. Ohh sorry" i said getting off hum. " Dr Davis, who's she?" He asked sighing. " what, what do you mean. Don't you recognise me. Don't you know me...mxm this must be one of your prank" said smiling and wiping away my tears. " Do i know you?" He asked. " you're kidding right?... I'm your wife. Can't you recognize me. It's me Cora" i said. But he looked at me with a frown. " and I'm start to think you're pranking me instead. I am married?, to you?. The last time i checked i was married to Isabella " he said chuckling. " Dr Davis what's going on here?is he serious? say something " i asked angrily. " let's go and talk in my office " he said putting the patient's information board on the side stand.

.

Something small, I'm bed ridden guys

[6/3, 19:14] Lynne: Page 86

Cora's pov

.

" you're not going anywhere Dr Davis, you still haven't explained to me what's going on here "

Joaquin said holding Dr Davis' arm. It looked like he was trying to get off the bed. " I'd advise you to lie back down Mr Salvatore " Dr Davis said. " why can't i feel my legs" he asked forcefully trying to get down. He used his hands to pick his legs. They were hanging down the bed, " get back to bed Mr Salvatore " Dr Davis said loudly, he was busy trying to get him to lie down. " if you know what's good for you, you'll not touch. Keep your filthy hands to yourself" he said pushing Dr Davis away. There i was looking at a different man, he seemed angry and arrogant. Dr Davis let him be, he try to stand up but ended up on the fall. He groaned in pain, i came to his side. " are you okay?" I asked putting my hand on his shoulder. " The fuck...what happened to my leds?.

Why can't i feel my lower body?" He asked angrily. " i was going to explain this to you, help me get him up" Dr Davis said. With difficulty we helped him get on his bed. " the nurses will come and wheel you to the scan room where we will do thoroughly check up on your body and brain. It seems like you're suffering from anterograde amnesiam, which is a loss of ability to form memories for a long period of time which leads to the individual not to remember a period of time after the traumatic head injury. Which explains why you think this is 2012 August, you lost 7 years of your life during that fall... just rest, we'll do the check ups within an hour. I'll be back " he explained, " what really happened, what happened to my legs?" He asked loudly. His were blood red, " you also have a spinal cord injury and fractured bones in your legs. We will do tests and give you the accurate information" he said then left. Joaquin had anger written all over his face, his hand folded into a tight fist that his knuckles were suddenly pink. His jaws clenched. " I'll call your father and friends, the Kids will be so happy to see you awake" i said searching for my phone. I called up everyone close to us. " call

Isabella now" he said. " you and Isabella got divorced and she married someone else. You never loved Isabella, you didn't love her. I told you that you and I are married. We have a beautiful house just a few kilometers out of town, we have three beautiful babies. A boy and a girl " i said holding his fist hand.

.

Salvatore's pov

.

" do you remember now, we were so happy together. We're happy and in love" she said, seemed like the strange lady wanted to cry. I scanned her facial features, she had light brown hair and eyes, her eyes had under bags. Her lips were pink and full, her curly hair could've used a salon. I scanned her from neck to down, she was wearing blue hospital uniform and slipper. Who wears sleepers in the middle of the day. She had no manicure, let alone make up. Her skin seemed so soft just like the feel of her soft hand on my fist. Her collarbones so bare. I couldn't

really scan her waist or hips under those ugly hospital uniform. I want back to her face, her lips were shaking. " i know that i never loved and never will love Isabella. She and i have got an understanding, i don't know what you mean by ' divorced' but if she and i were really divorced then she'd be 6 feet underground already. Kids are the last thing i want, so i don't know what you mean by ' we have three kids' and as for you. I don't think I'd marry someone like you. " i said then used my other hand to remove hers from my fist. She looked at me for a long while, eyes darting between mine. " what?. So now i am not your type?. What do you mean by a woman like me?. I'm ugly?, do i look unattractive all of a sudden? You're suddenly allergic to me?, after all these years?. Fucking answer me" She asked angrily. " don't put words into my mouth, i never said all that. You're just not the kind of woman I'd marry. Besides that you look like a kid. And don't you dare curse" i said." You're back to being that stuck up, arrogant jerk again." She said before walking out.

.

I was taken for scan, which took longer than i expected. " when am I going to walk again. This is so frustrating" i asked Dr Davis as he was pushing me back to my ward. " these things take years of therapy, the tests will return and we'll take it from there" he said. " so what do i do at the moment. Do i just sit around, doing nothing?" I asked angrily. He didn't answer that. " you're very lucky that you can still feel your upper parts of the body" he said later on. I found my friends and family inside my wardroom. The strange lady was no longer there, " Papa" i said i said as the old man was hugging me. " my Son, you're alive" he said standing upright. " i hate tears Papa " i said, he wiped away his tears smiling. " Dude, you're back" Mbutho said, we shook hands. They all did, including their wives. " Mr Muscles, i thought I'd find Cora here" some girl said. " and who are you?... Cora as in the strange lady who was here?" I asked, everyone just looked at me frowning. " don't tell you you lost your memory " Micheal said. " well the Dr says...."

.

Cora's pov

.

I had sat there for a while, trying to process everything. Let it spread through my brain, everything single thing i had thought i'd tell him after he came back to me thrown outside the window. I had a lot i wanted to say but everything was changed, my past. Present and future all changed. I didn't know whether to cry or laugh out loud out of disbelief. I had imaged and crafted that day, awaited but it was nothing like i had envisioned. The first thing i did when i got home was run into my room. I closed the door behind me, i got into the bathroom. Under the shower. ' you're not the kind of woman i'd marry' his words played repeatedly in my mind as i cried under the shower. He was back but he was nothing like my husband, he didn't look at me the same. I felt so small and defeated..." Cora?, are you okay?" I heard Amanda ask. I was lying on bed, folded into a ball. Wearing my PJs. I've been lying there for hours, ignoring every knock on the door. She was brave enough to walk in, i ignored her.

" Cora?, are you okay " i heard Esihle ask. I guessed they were all in my room. I sat upright, scanned all of them. " we saw him... I'm sorry Coh" Amanda said getting on the bed. She hugged me. They all sat on the bed. " he forgot about me, he forgot about us and all that we share" i said chuckling unbelievably. " he'll remember soon, his memory is going to come back. Don't worry" Priya said. They sat till late, they did succeed in making me feel better.

.

" Papa!" Lorenzo exclaimed getting on salvatore's bed. He was so thrilled when i told him that his Papa was back. " hey be careful " i said. I was pushing the girl's pram. " whoa!...what's going on. Who's---" you call him buddy. He came to visit you every sunday. He's turning 5 next month" i said fastly before he could ask any further questions. I hadn't told Lorenzo that his father had memory loss, i hoped that Alonzo wouldn't say anything to hurt his feelings either " i missed you Papa" Lorenzo said getting on top of his father. " Mom and i painted your nails. Show him mom" Lorenzo said excitedly. " is it?" He

asked asked looking at me. " umh, i don't think that's a good idea" i said faking a smile. " show him mommy " Lorenzo screamed. " yeah, why don't listen to the kid and show me" he said seriously. I searching for my iPhone. Searched for the videos and gave it to him. " i see you guys had a lot of fun" he said handing me the phone after watching the video. He didn't even bother to watch the others. " meet Maia and Miracle " i said putting the girls on his bed. They started crawling around. " i was pregnant when the...when you, when---" they have already explained it to me " he said cutting me off. I swallowed the hard lump in my throat. " They did?" I asked looking at him. " Yes, they told me how i got shot because of you...i mean rescuing you. They told me that you and I are married and we have three kids. That we've been together for the past 5 years and a half. They mentioned all my businesses, they told me pretty much everything unless there's something you want to add" he said, i looked at him for a long time then looked away. " You think they told you everything " i said slowly. " is there something you'd like to say?" He asked but didn't seem anyhow

interested in getting an answer. " a lot actually" i said shortly. " okay " he said. " Papa, i have a small dog and a fish. Mom bought it for me. And grandpa bought me a big car, i drive" Lorenzo said. " you have a car?" He asked frowning. " don't be silly, it's a big toy car." I said chuckling..." so how is it that they look...they look.

---" different?" I asked and he nodded. " you said they explained everything to you" i said. " are you a nurse?" He asked out of nowhere. " I'm a gynecologist student. Doing my 6th year" i answered. " ohh impressive , so you must be a book worm" he said. I just shrugged my shoulders.

.

We sat there till late, the kids ended up falling asleep. " it's late, i must get going " i said standing up. " are you always wearing those ugly blue things. Thank God you're wearing sneakers today " he said as i stood up. I sat backdown, " do you still love me?" I asked. Stupid, impulsive question ever. He just chuckled. " forget i even asked that...ofcourse you can not love me because you don't recognise me. Do

you hate me now that you know, I'm the reason for your condition" i asked after embarrassing myself. " Do you think i shouldn't?" He asked. " i don't know?... only you can know, i prayed for you to come back to me. You're back but you're too far away from me. Even though i could touch you, even though i can finally see the colour of your eyes. You're just someone else who looks exactly like my husband. It's only fair that you hate me " i said... " there must be a reason why I rescued you" he said. " you said ' i love you ' right before you fainted. I had thought you died" i said smiling, why was i smiling. Why?, I'd never known. Maybe i was trying to hide the hurt. " your businesses aren't doing well. I'll tell Rob to bring you all the documents tomorrow. Maybe you'd like to see, before i almost forget. I brought you your phone, i won't be able to come tomorrow. Here's your cellphone, the password is " il mio cuore batte " goodbye Mr Salvatore " i packed our bags in the empty seat in between the two girls. Then piggybacked Lorenzo, the driver home seemed longer than normal.

.

A week later

.

To my surprise i found Salvatore home, " you got discharged?" I asked frowning. " as you can see... you stopped visiting " that was a statement. " i had a lot of things to do. It's been a busy week. But you got to spend more time with the kids" i said. " i hope you got settled well" i added. " i have a male nurse with me, I'm going to be taking one of the guest rooms down here" he said. " I'll go and check if everything is in order. You might also need clothes to change. I hope you got the ones i sent with Rob " i said, nothing has ever been that weird to me. " have you had anything to eat, you must be hungry " i added. " Do you always talk this much, you are also sweating. Is the man in a wheelchair making you nervous?" He asked. " No, no...of course not. Let me get started on dinner" i said walking towards the kitchen. " what would you like to have for dinner...actually never mind. I'll prepare your favourite " i said after turning back. " and what might that be?" He asked pushing

his wheelchair, following me. " chicken parmesan, bruschetta and lamb chops . Panna cota for desert" i said. " wow, so you can also cook. That too italian?" He asked. " you taught me." I said shortly as i opened the refrigerator. We had a light conversation, there was a lot i wanted to say but i couldn't. Dr Davis said we shouldn't stress him out. Most of the time he had headaches. Most of the time he was angry, most of the time he was quite. Most of the time he was in the office. Somedays he'd lock himself up in a room. Most of the time he i was crying in my room, most of the time he i faked a laugh. Most of the time he i tolerated his shit.

.

" what nonsense is this?" He shouted throwing the plate down the floor. " what is it " i asked taking a deep breath. He had just dropped the whole plate of breakfast, i prepared so lovingly. " the Viennas are burnt out, and the egg is too raw. And where is the sauce i asked for?" He asked angrily. " I'm going to be late for the hospital " i said looking at him unbelievably. " you can go, I'll prepare his breakfast

" Petunia said coming to my rescue. " No, it's all good. I'll do it" i said kneeling down to pick up the broken pieces. " i pick that up, you go ahead and prepare breakfast " Petunia said. " Thanks" i said sighing. I felt that i was getting punished.

.

" I've been sitting here for the past 20 minutes" he said angrily. I guessed he heard my pencil heels hitting the floor. Even though he was looking the other way. It was the day before his birthday and i had set up a candlelight dinner on the rooftop. With the help of his friends, he was there. " sorry I'm late" i said, he was staring at me like i was some piece of meat. " you look different... beautiful " he said after swallowing his saliva. " thank you...you look appetising yourself " i said pulling my own chair to sit down. " appetising?" He asked. " ohh...sorry, it's umh. What we used to say to each other. Of course that would sound so inappropriate since you don't remember us... forget about that, let's just pretend as you knew me." I said pouring two glasses of champagne. " what's this all about?" He asked

chuckling. " it's your birthday tomorrow. I wanted to be the first one to wish you and i know that i won't get time to wish you since you celebrate your birthday so grandly. I saw you planning, it's like we're back to square one" i said offering him a glass. " what do you mean?" He asked frowning. " before i came into your life you used to celebrate your birthday so grandly but things changed. Its would be just close friends and family, i remember the last time it was just the three of us. Me, you and baby Lore " i said smiling at the thought of that. " is it?... actually I've been meaning to ask you this but i never got the time. How come the girls are almost white and he's more biracial?" He asked. " let's not talk about that, but in short. He's my step son. His mother died in a car accident which was meant for me...our food is here" i said looking at Petunia who was approaching our table. " thanks P" i said as she put our plates in front of us..." so you were say?" He asked. " forget it" i said. " No, i want to know. There's a lot i don't know about my past life " he said. " the last time tried to remind you of your past it didn't end well...besides i think if you really wanted to know, you

would by now" i said. He fainted the last i brought things up, every word was too risky. " what do you mean by that " he asked. " i mean you're are Salvatore. If you want something you make sure to get it" i said eating. " and the mattress?" He asked, he always did that. Changed topics. " i want us to look up at the star." I said. " I'm the kind of guy to look at the stars?" He asked. " You're not but i am, and you did everything you could to make me feel happy" i said. He slowly nodded with a broad frown on his forehead.

.

" so what happened after that?" He asked asked chuckling. We were lying on the mattress, " you ran away after that. And i cried myself to sleep. You came back with ice creams " i said chuckling. " so what happened?" He asked. " what do you mean?" He asked. " you seem different, changed" he said. " i won't answer that " i said shortly... " what's the story behind the stars?" He asked. " you will tell me, once you gain back your memory " i said. " you dismiss my questions most of the time " he said.

.

[6/3, 19:14] Lynne: Page 87

Cora's pov

.

" So you're leaving me again? You're leaving me all alone Salvatore. Why are you doing this to me ?" I asked as soon as i walked into his room. He loosened up his tie, sitting on a wheelchair. In a black tuxedo. His birthday party was over and it was past midnight, every guest was gone. He just announced that he was going to Singapore for physiotherapy and i had to find out along with everybody else. To say it hurt would be an understatement, was i about to raise the kids all on my own again?. Answer Lorenzo's endless questions. " vedo andare (i have to go)" he said looking up at me. " non voglio che tu vada (i don't want you to go)" i said in a horsey little voice which carried a lot of unfathomable emotions but for sure one of them was fear. " vedo andare, devo farlo per me stesso. Devo farlo per te, noi.(i have to go, i have to do this

for myself. I have to do this for you,us" He said gentle. For a moment there i almost, just almost believed him. " Us? Us? Salvatore, tell me this. Just be honest with me. Has there ever been us since you regained consciousness. All you do is turn my life into a nightmare, you do shiton purpose. Is there any us...you're just selfish. You weren't here for the past 13 months, i was alone. All alone, and now you're fucking leaving me again. Why are you doing this to me Alonzo, fucking answ ----" shut up dammit, i demand a little bit of respect from you Cora. I told you not to curse while talking to me, what differences does my presence make anyways. Huh?, you call me selfish. You're the last person to call me selfish Cora. I'm in this damm wheelchair all because of you, I'm stuck in this damm wheelchair all because you!. You can't expect me to just sit around, i can't continue living like this. As crazy as it is, I'm also doing this for you. If i have to spend another minute in this thing then your life will continue to be like hell. Deep down inside i blame you, i blame myself too...." he snapped angrily, he had tears in his eyes. I kneeled down infront of him

and held his fist to his hand. " I'm sorry, I'm sorry Joaquin. If i could, if i could i would change how things turned out to be but unfortunately I can't. I'm begging you to stay, i know I'm still alone even though you're here. I still feel so lonely but it ease my mind to have you around. I love you Salvatore and i don't care if you can't walk. I'm here for you, I'll be your feet and hands. Anything you want. Just please don't leave me alone again " i begged crying. " That's another thing Cora, i don't love you. Maybe the man you spend the last years with did but I'm not that man. I can't remember that man, i can't see the reason why he fell inlove with you. Please let me go, it's not like I'm leaving for forever. I'll come back soon and then maybe we can work on getting to know each." He said. " please don't hurt me, don't say that. It hurts, just give us time then you'll learn to love me again. You'll see, everything will be set right" i pleaded crying. " please stop, stop it" he said removing my hands from his. PATHETIC, that's how i felt deep down inside. I never knew a Cora who begged to be loved but it was him. It was him, my Salvatore. Hearing him say he didn't love me broke

my heart like never before. " i love you " i whispered weakly. " please don't make this harder than it is, don't make it so complicated...What good am I?, i can't even play with my kids. I used to prepare my own food, i can't even do that anymore, i can't play Golf, i can't drive, i can't even take a bath on my own" he said. " I'm sorry you got shot and fell down the building, i know it's all my fault. Maybe if i stayed at the residency one more night things wouldn't be like this. I'm so sorry" i kept on apologizing while hysterical crying. I cried until I had enough, i picked myself up. Crying wasn't going to change anything, he wasn't going to conform. " So this is it?... will you at least keep in contact with the kids?" I asked standing up and wiping away my tears. " that's another thing I've been wanting to talk about, once you're inside you're not allowed to keep in contact with the outside world. It's part of the whole process but I'll come back soon and you don't have to worry. I've set everything financially covered and I'll leave a bank card for you " he said. " only if money could fix everything. it's funny how i used to think so when I was younger... Good bye Salvatore " i said then

turned on my feet. So tired that i could feel my feet wanting to fail me. " Cora I'm sorry if i hurt you in anyway " he said but i didn't dare to look back. I forever walked out.

.

Early Sunday morning i found myself in church, i had a prayer by myself before the service even begin. I could feel myself failing to hold on to faith, i was losing grip on the rope of hope. The world looked so gray in my eyes, my light was fading. Every part of me hurt. Nina's words came rushing into my head

.

Flash back

.

" you love him don't you?" She asked. " excuse me?" I asked lost. " Salvatore

, I'm sure you fell inlove with him the first time you met and you werein denial. Before you realised it you were into deep, ther's no way out. Even if you try you wouldn't be able to get him out of your head. Then

you'll know what pain is" she said putting in her white clothes. " what are you talking about?" I asked frowning, " you might think that you know what pain is right now but you don't. The day he walks out the door your whole world will be crushed and you'll see no reason to hold on. But the glimpse of hope that he might come back to you will keep you going. You'd want to die, he'd be long gone by then. You'll be forgotten about, having to see him will drown your soul. He feels so perfect, doesn't he?. Everything he does is so immaculate" she said smiling, that was the first time i saw her smile. But there was something deep behind the smile. " what are you talking about?" I asked confused....

.

. Flash ends

.

I was brought back to earth by the loud priest. " if you could ask God any one question right now and you knew he'd give you an answer to that question, what would you ask...i may not be suprising but by

far the number one question asked by people is...why does God allow pain and suffering in the world?. If you've never asked the question why does God allow pain and suffering then the chances are you will when it strikes you full force or strikes your love one full force."he said, have you ever felt that the preacher was somehow talking and your current situation. That's how i felt right there, non of my friends were there so i guessed they were home to say farewell to Salvatore. I didn't want to be there, i didn't want to shed more tears, i didn't want to be part of the whole emotional roller coaster. Infact i didn't him, i wanted nothing to do with him.

..." - Jesus was honest,Jesus said you're going to have suffering in this world. Jesus said this in john 16vs33. He said you're going to have suffering, but why?

- all i could do would be to look at you and give you a four word answer to that question ' i do not know ' i don't know.

- i cannot stand in the shoes of God and give you a full answer to that question, i do not have the eyes of

God and i do not have the mind of God.

- 1st Corinthians 13vs12says now we see things imperfectly like puzzling reflections in the mirror but then we will see everything with perfectly clarity. All i know now is partial and incomplete but then I'll know everything completely just as god now knows me completely.

- if you're going through an era of your life with a lot of suffering and a lot of pain then the last thing you really need is some theological treatise on pain and suffering because no amount of words are gonna be sufficient for you, it's always gonna sound trite when you're in the middle of suffering . What you need is the very really presence of Jesus Christ in your life.

- even though suffering is not good God can use it to accomplish good. You might hear that and say ' no hold on let's not skeem over that. I've gone through so much suffering in this world that i don't think that even God could find anything good to emerge from the suffering that I've gone through '

- friends if that's the way you feel today then let me remind you you, God is so good that he could take the the worst thing that could ever happen (that it the deaths of the Son of God) and turn it into something good that could ever happen which is the opening of heaven to those who followed. So can he not take your and turn it into something good that could ever happen?. And the answer is Oh yes he can, he can!

- he may use your suffering to draw you closer to him, he can use your suffering to mould and shape your character in to the best ways that it could never have been shaped. To point other people to Salvation through Christ. There are million number of ways that God can and he will cause good to emerge from your suffering if you're committed to him.

- we decide whether we're going to turn bitter or turn to God and find peace and courage.

- in other words someone can lose a child through a drunk driver and turn inward with rage and bitterness for the rest their lives while someone can lose a

child through a drunk driver and start mothers against drunk drivers

- one philosopher said this to me, he said pastor i believe that all suffering has at least potential good. An opportunity for good, he said it's up to our free choice to actualize that potential

- pain and suffering doesn't have the last word anymore but jesus is the last word

- suffering is a personal problem therefore God sent a personal solution in Jesus Christ.

-Sam 34vs18 says this' the lord is close to the broken heart and he saves those who are crushed in spirit '

- this wise philosopher that i got to sit down with said this to me at the time of my life when I going through some tough times. He said ' are you broken?, Jesus was broken like bread for you. Are you despised?, Jesus was despised and rejected of men. You cry out that you can't take it anymore?. Jesus was accointed with grief and amend of sorrows. Did someone betray you?, Jesus was sold

out for 30 pieces of silver. Are your tenderous relationships broken?, Jesus loved and he was rejected. Do people turn from you?. Guess what they hid their face from him like he was a leper. Does he descended into your deepest of hells, oh yes he does.

- infact from a nutsy concentration camps Cori Tingbom wrote these words ' no matter how deep our darkness is, he is deeper still' he is deeper still.

- so friends when pain comes into your life and you know it will or when tragedy comes into your life and you know it will. It's up to you to decide whether we're going to turn bitter or turn to God and find peace and courage

- peace for the present and courage for the future " his words gave me some hope, i was not there yet but i knew tgat one day i would. I would look back and laugh about those days. ...death is not my end ,I know heaven waits for me.

Though the road seems long, i never walk alone and i got all i need to sing. I know he loves me, i know he

found. I know he sees me and his grace will never fade.

.

And while I'm waiting I'm not waiting.

I know heaven waits for me

Should I suffer long well this is not my home. I know heaven waits for me.

Though the night is dark m heaven owns my heart... " we sang and prayed like never before. Some people were crying, we me to. The service was so good that i didn't want to it to come to an end but unfortunately it did. So i passed by restuarent Paradisè and bought lunch for everyone at home. It was somewhere around 1:30pm.

.

" you'd swear that you guys are watching something serious...Gugu would you fetch the lunch bags in my car?" I asked shaking my head as i found everyone infront of the television. I was not supriised to find Amanda and Leo there, " I've been waiting and

calling you like crazy Cora. Where have you been?" Amanda asked standing up, " it's a Sunday Amanda. I was at church and i switched off my phone because I knew that you people would be blowing my phone " i said as i was walking to my room, she was following me. " are y ou ok though?" She asked sitting down along with me. " is there a reason why I shouldn't be?" I asked taking off my high heels. " Coh, Mr muscles left and you're behaving as if nothing has happened?" She asked, i stood up. Taking off my clothes. "if you're referring to the man who was in a wheelchair then please don't call him Mr Muscles. Why wouldn't i be fine if that man left. remind me again, what is he to me. He's nothing to me, we lost Mr Muscles 13 months back. He never came back home but instead we took in a stranger so why wouldn't I be okay if a stranger leaves my life" i said then walk to the closet. I changed into my white long dress. " why are you talking like this Cora, this is not like you. You're scaring me, you weren't even here to bid him farewell" she said. " if he's not my husband then why should i have bid him farewell?" I asked loudly. " sorry " i said sighing. " so

what now?" She asked. " we'll see where life takes us, now we wait for the cycling wheel of life. I guess it's just me and my kids now" i said faking a smile. " and me, and your, your siblings. And All your friends. You know we'll always have each others back" she said, " you know maybe if he'd just took 2 minutes of his time and asked ' Cora are you okay ' it would have made a huge difference. Maybe i would have told him about Mngobiwethu, Maybe i would have told him about the shallow hallow empty place in my chest. Maybe i would have told him how much he reminds me of my husband. Maybe i would have ended up sharing the secret of how I'm scared to look at my late Son's photo. How my mind still thinks he'll come back to me one day, or or how i miss the feel of my husband's hand against my skin. But he never did, not even once. He never cared enough to, he was just a ghost of my Joaquin...mxm why am I even talking about this, I'm starving. Let's go and eat" i said wiping away the one tear that was threatening to expose the weaknesses in me. " Hey let's talk about it, talk to me Cora" she said, i shookmy head no. " no, I'll be just fine. I'll forget all

about him within a few days. Let's go and eat" i said.
" he left you a letter and other stuff" she said

.

.Cora

.

as you're reading this i must be somewhere in
between the clouds. I wish ypu were there to say
goodbye anyways the the pin to the card is ****.
Take care of yourself and our kids Cora. If you
couldplease tell them i love them everyday. And
don't forget to live a little bit for yourself. I'm sorry
for hurting you and making you cry.

.

Yours sincerely AJ

.

" fuck you, AJ my foot. He dares to call himself AJ" i
screamed tearing the letter into pieces and then my
phone rang. " Mom" i answered my phone after
taking in a deep breath. " Cora are you okay my
baby?" She asked sounding so worried. " why

wouldn't I be okay, what's wrong with you people and this question ?" I asked angrily. " Amanda told me everything, that you're not taking things so well. You should come home maybe." She said softly. " my life is right here in Johannesburg. You don't have to worry about me, I'm a survivor Mom. I'm Cora remember, i can stretch and bend but i never break" i said, i don't know who i was trying to convince. Me or her?, " npt just that, you father has consulted a traditional healer and somethings that makes perfect sense popped out. You gotta come home and we'll talk about this" she said, i sighed heavily. " you know I'm a Christian right?, i don't believe in what you're about to tap into mom. Tell your husband to just leave me alone, he hates me anyways. He might as well start acting like it" i said. " what rubbish is this Cora, what areyou talking about?" She asked cursing. " it's the truth, i turned him into a cripple. Actually I turned two man into cripples. And one has already confessed his hatred, i just think it's about time Dad and I stopped pretending. I know he hates me and quite frankly i do too. I hate that man, all thanks to him i met my worst

nightmare. Salvatore, if he hadn't molested me then i wouldn't have ran to joburg, then i wouldn't have met Salvatore. I wouldn't have fallen inlove mommy, i wouldn't have found such a precious, unique thing only to lose it. I wouldn't have lost, i wouldn't be in so much pain and suffering " i shouted while crying. " Shut up Cora, shut up. Ypu don't know what you're saying. You don't know how much your father regrets what he's done to you. He's not proud okay but he's repenting. He was mentally unstable at that time." She snapped. Then hung up on me but i called her up again. " what do you want Cora?" She asked. " Mom...do you think that Dad hates me?. Salvatore does" i asked. " your Dad is sorry Cora...and i know that Salvatore could never hate you either. He'll come back to you" she said. " you're such a liar mom, Dad must hate me. He's missing out on a lot because of me" i said. " you're clearly drunk Cora, just go back to sleep " she said softly. " Dad ruined my life, he ruined my life before it could even begin. I might as well get drunk. Everywhere i look i see salvatore's face. I think I'm going mad, I'm going crazy mother. Everything is a mess, he doesn't love

me. But i do, i do love him. " i kept on saying while walking to the wine sailor. I toom his most expensive whiskey. " Please Go to bed Cora " i heard Mom beg. " no let me take...hey mom do you remember that time when i was 8 years old and i drew myself in a doctor's coat and i showed it to dad. What did he say ' You'll never succeed, get out of here. You'll never be a Doctor '. Somedays he'd call me good fpr nothing, a loser. He said I'd never be happy mother, he cursed me to unhappiness. He did that to me, i was still so young back then. I couldn't even differentiate between good and bad. He cursed me...do you think his words changed my fate?"

.

I'm sorry for disappearing, as some of you have heard I was sick but please don't forget to like and comment

[6/3, 19:15] Lynne: Page 88

Cora's pov

.

I was woken up by the loud voices screaming, "

mommy! Mommy wake up... Cora wake up please. Cora get up!" I heard them scream. I slowly opened up my eyes and saw Lorenzo and Petunia, seems like i slept on the staircases. My head was spinning and pilled with memories of yesterday. " Aunt P is mom okay " i heard Lorenzo asked, i couldn't open my eyes fully. " go to the kitchen, I'll come and prepare breakfast for you" i heard Petunia say. " Cora get up marn, you're wasted" she said. " let me be P, just leave me alone " i murmured, still sleeping on the uncomfortable staircases. My whole body hurt, " come on stand up " she said pulling me up, i suddenly felt like puking. I found myself throwing up on the staircases. " i fucking told you to leave me alone, shit!. Look what---" Shut up Cora, there's a kid here " petunia shouted. I looked at the end of the staircases and lorenzo was standing over there. In his school uniform. " my baby...I'm sorry, mommy is sorry" i said wiping my mouth. " come let's go to bed" Petunia said, she helped me go to my room. I felt my body hitting the bed, i kept on murmuring the word ' sorry' until I fell asleep.

.

I woke up around 2pm, so not like me. I missed going to hospital. That was not good on the number of days i was scheduled to volunteer for per year. It meant i had to work over the weekend or holidays. Anyways i took a long warm bath, brushed my teeth slowly while looking at the mirror. I didn't recognize my own reflection, i shyed away from the mirror. Moisturized my body then wore my tracksuits. Nothing on the foot, i found Gugu mopping the floor and Petunia was cooking in the kitchen. " Good, Good morning " i said to Gugu, she nodded her head. That's just how she responds, " Hi" i said to petunia who ignored me. " look I'm sorry for my behaviour earlier on" i said sighing. " it's okay, you don't have to apologise to me Cora. I'm just a servant, nothing more nothing less" she said looking at me. " No I'm sorry, and you're not just a servant. You're family to me, i lost it. I was drunk" i apologized once again. " you must be hungry, let me prepare something fast for you" she said faintly smiling. " no, I'm not hungry. I need to make a phone, you'll find me on the roof

top if you need anything" i said standing up. I pumped into the twins walking hand in hand to the kitchen. " Mama...mama" Maia started screaming jumping up and down. " i thought i told you guys to sit in the living room. " Gugu screamed running after them. " let me take them with me so that you can clean in peace" i said picking them both up, miracles was busy clapping her tiny hands with her broad little cute smile. " Thanks" Gugu said sighing...i put them on the couch then called mu mom. She picked up on the third attempt. " i have patients to take care of Cora" she said as soon as she answered. " I'll barely take 2 minutes of your time" i said sighing. " state your business, if ypu called to insult me then please spare me" she said. " i called to apologise, I'm sorry for for insulting you yesterday" i said softly. Then silence followed after that..." Cora come home on the weekend so we can talk" she said, " what's there to talk about mother?, everything is in the past now. Just let by gones be by gones" i said sighing heavily. " sometimes it is your past that determines your future. There are things that are greater than us and our understand Cora. Come home and we'll talk

" she said. " what is this about, superstitions aren't part of my world " i said. " they're not part of my world either, but you're half black and there are a lot of traditions you didn't follow. Maybe after this your load will be eased down " she said. " I'll be there on a Saturday morning but what is this about if you may enlighten me" i asked, " it's about the spirit of the child who was terminated... Look i have to go bye" she said then hung up, " hey mother!" I screamed but it was already too late. " hey what are you doing, you want to die on me too" i screamed at miracle who was crawling towards the swimming pool. She started to cry, " I'm sorry, did i scare you. Did mommy scare you. Sorry, sorry" i said picking her up and kissing her all over the face. " sorry baby" i said wiping away her tears, her silent cries weren't such a pleasant site. " hey is everything okay here?" Petunia asked walking out to the roof top, she had a tray in her hands. " mhhuh, everything is good. What are you doing here though?" I asked sitting down along with Miracle. " i brought you some junk food to feed on. You can't go the whole day without eating " she said putting the tray on the coffee table. " you can be

sucha pest Petunia, let's see chocolate ice cream and a cake, fruits, juice. Ps bars" i said looking at the tray. " I'll have this just to get you off my back " i said taking an apple. " you'll have all the fruits" she said smiling. " i will, now go i want to spend some time with my girls. Tell Lorenzo to come up here when he arrives " i said and she nodded with a broad smile. Then my phone rang again, it was an unknown number. I answered while taking a bite on my apple. " Hi" a voice said, " Senzo?" I asked frowning. " Zabenathi Maphumulo is that how you greet your long lost friend?" He asked. I just chuckled, " i thought my husband had you killed " i said said. " almost Cora, he almost did but I'm a die hard" he said it so confidently and dramatic. I couldn't help but laugh, " you're such a chicken Senzo. He told you off and you got scared" i said. " no, it's nothing like that. I lost your number" he said. " you live just across the street away from my parent's house. You could have asked them for my number if you wanted to " i said rolling my eyes. " hey, i don't live with my parents anymore. So spare me" he said. " Coward, Coward, coward. You're such

a coward." I said loudly. " okay fine, your eyes is a little bit scary. You can't blame me, i still want to live " he admitted sighing heavily. " ohhh, anyways how are you. I'm actually coming home for the weekend. I hope I'll see you there. We can catch up all day long. You don't have to worry about him anymore, you can tell me about your salary, your girlfriends, your car, maybe the number of students you've slept with so far because knowing how much of a manwhore you are. I doubt that you let any slip by" i said. " you're still a blabbering mouth. You talk like hell Cora, just shut up. I'm the one who called okay" he said. " i said too much didn't i?" I asked laughing. " I'll have to come home this weekend, just to see your light brown beautiful eyes " he said. That has always made me blush, " that's not worki---ohh God what have you guys done?" I asked chuckling. Miracle and Maia just got there faces smeared with chocolate ice cream. " hello, Cora?" He said loudly. " you'll have to call me later bye" i said then hung up. " you're guys are so naughty " i said putting my bowl away. " look at you all dirty" i said shakingmy head. They laughed asif they've heard, at least Maia did. "

Mom " i heard Lorenzo call my name. I turned around and he was walking towards us. Barefoot but Still in his uniform. " Baby Lore" i murmured walking towards him. I kneeled infront of him, he was so grown. " how was school and how is your friend? What's his name again?" I asked frowning. " Arjun mommy " he reminded me. " yes Arjun, how is he?" I asked smiling. " Arjun is fine" he said. " look about what you saw earlier. That was just...it was just" ---" mom is not sick anymore?" He asked. " yeah, yes. Mom was sick and now he's not. And the F and S words, never say them okay. Those are bad bad words" i said putting my hand on his shoulder. " yes mommy " he nodded. " HOW ABOUT!" He screamed as his dog approached us, well we named him' How About ' after disagreeing on a lot of names. We kept on disagreeing and he would say how about we name him bobby and i'd say no, how about we name him sam. So his name ended up being how about. " the puppy jump into his arms like he always did. We spent our evening there.

.

My kids kept me going, the only reason i held on was them. I tried to stay sober, though wine became my friend. It helped me fall asleep without having to have nightmare. Sleeping sober became a daily struggle. So there i was, in my parents living room. It was a Saturday, somewhere around 12pm. My kids and i just came, we booked into a hotel. The house was too small to accommodate all of us besides that i had other reasons too, like my two little baby girls. " So, what's this all about?" I asked after getting my kids settled in Connie's room. Connie and Charles were at the university as usual. Mom had freshly baked scones and tea on the dining table. " With everything that has been going on in your life, your father thought it wouldn't hurt anyone to consult a traditional healer and so we did. You wouldn't believe what we found out " mom said, it was just her, Dad and i around the table. Lore was playing with her sister in the bedroom. " And?... what did he say. You told me about my first baby..." i said then swallowed the hard lump in my throat. " yes his spirit is still lingering about, he said that his spirit is restless as he was never taken care of. He's

shivering and he's the reason why your you lost your other boy..." that's just utter nonsense, and you know that i did terminate him. I didn't kill him, so why would he be after me. He should be after the one who killed him" i said angrily throwing a dead stare at Dad " that's beside the point Cora, just calm down and listen to the whole thing then you can decide whether you're going to run away or fix things" Mom said. " why doesn't he speak, let Dad speak. He's the traditionalist here" i said looking at him. " Cora, i begging you " mom said, i sighed heavily... " not just that, you didn't mourn his death. Which also brings me to this, ypu didn't mourn Mnqobiwethu either" she said. " how do you mean?" I asked frowning. " you know how black people wear black mourning clothes and all that " she said. " is that all, can i ask you something now" i asked, so crossed. " no, I'm not done. Your body was never cleansed of his spirit. And what transpired between you and your father, that was an abomination and you were never cleansed of that either. Not just that, your ancestors aren't happy with the hostility between you and your extending family and also. They don't recognise

your marriage to Salvatore, they want you home. That's why your things are so bad" she explained a hell lot. " can i asked you something now?" I asked. " was i supposed to mourn for a child that i never knew existed. Even if i did, was i supposed to mourn for my father's child. Do you know how twisted that sounds?. My marriage is not recognized?, i have no idea what that's supposed to me but as for the rest of my relatives. Why should we put amends, those people hated me even after their so call inhlambuko. To hell with the ancestors " i said clicking my tongue. " Don't talk like that Cora, your anger will get the ancestors more infuriated and believe me you don't want to suffer their consequences " Father said. " I'll say whatever i want to say. It's a free country" i said then stood up. " all i ask of you is that you give all this a clear thought. The healer said that if the significant ceremonies are not done in time. Your life could get worse, you could lose all that you have. You might lose more kids in future so i begging you to please think about this and do the right thing for your kid's sake" mom said, my heart skipped a bit. " I'll take my kids for a walk, I'm meeting up with an

old friend of mine " i said then walked to Connie's room. " Nathi Kuzomele uthathe isinqumo ngokushesha, ngale kwalokho impilo yakho isazohlangahlangana(Nathi you'll have to take a decision fast or else your life will still continue to be a mess)" Dad said as i walked away. I put my twins in their pram along with their bag of food and other necessities. " put on your sandals and let's take a walk around the neighbourhood " i said to Lorenzo who was playing with her toy car on my floor .

.

" we finally meet after such a long time and you look so gloomy. CORA " Senzo said as we were walking in the streets where we had grew up and find our feet. " sorry, it's just that there's a lot going on in my mind right now" i said coming back to earth. " what were you saying again?" I asked shaking my head. " i was just asking you where you kidnap these kids. The last time we met you had only one and now three. It hasn't been that long since we last saw each other " he said, i chuckled a bit. " 2 years is a long time Senzo." I said. " two years is not that long" he said. "

well in my case it is. A lot can happen within two years. A lot can change, even just a minute is long enough to change my entire life " i said thoughtfully. " you're getting serious now, what's wrong?" He asked putting his hand on my shoulder. " it's nothing, so what have you been up to for the past two years?" I asked asked brushing his hand off my shoulder. " i actual Got married and also got divorced. That all took me half a year" he said. I giggled out of disbelief. " really?" I asked frowning, he seemed serious. " yep, she was too expensive for my affordability. She was so lively and exciting at the begin, just like you" he said. " what changed then" i asked. " Mom, I'm tired of walking. Let's go back to grandma's house please " Lorenzo complained holding on to his waist. " but we just walked out Lorenzo " i said sighing unbelievably. " but I'm tired" he said. " let me carry you over my shoulders buddy" Senzo said. " yey...but only Dad calls me buddy" he said. " okay then" Senzo said raising his hands up... " so where were we...oh yes. She had no brains at all" he said. " i guess that's what makes you stand out" he added. " you can kill a girl with your flattering Pal"

i said laughing. " are ypu flattered?" He asked chuckling, " just a little bit" i said. "...do you believe in ancestors?" I asked after some time of silence. " of course I do, I'm a Zulu guy remember " he said. " so if they demand you to do something, some kind of a ceremony and you refuse. Do they really punish you or it's just a myth?" I asked, anticipating to get the answer. " actually i used to think that the whole thing was overrated until my aunt got a Stroke. Do you remember aunt Sophie, the light skinned one with dreadlocks " he asked me, i frowned and thought a bit. " oh yes I do, the beautiful one with that funny little cute voice" i said then chuckled upon remembering how funny her voice sounded and how she used to chase up around and we'd laugh at her. " yes that one...well she got a stroke. It was a punishment from the ancestors. Do you know what she did?" He asked. I shook my head no" what happened?" I asked. " her husband passed away a few years back she took off her mourning clothes before time. People tried warning her but she wouldn't obey. On top of that she started sleeping around and then one day she just couldn't get out of

bed. Sejika nelanga, uthuthwa nezicewu. Ungabona wena. Anyways some ancestors are not so kind when provoked" he said, i swallowed the hard lump in my throat. " that's so sad, she was such a beautiful lady" i said. He just shrugged his shoulders.

We took a stroll around till late.

.

" what changed your mind " mom asked after itold them i was gonna perfom all the necessary ceremonies but it was all gonna happen over the june holidays. " does that matter?" I asked. " no, it doesn't. I'm glad you thought about this. I assure you, you made the right decision " Dad said.

" anyways we booked into a hotel, we'll spend the night over there" i said to mom.

" Cora!, i just told you that your brother and sister are coming back home to see you and you're going to some hotel?" Mom exclaimed unbelievably

" it's not that far away mom, I'll come by before we go back to Johannesburg. I'll meet them in the morning, right now i just need to take a shower and

go to bed. This house is too small to accommodate all of us " i said sighing. She finally understood after some convincing. Anyways we spend the night in some near by hotel. I spent my morning at home with my family and Senzo was there too to say goodbye. He said he was going to visit me in Johannesburg sometimes, i took that as i bluff.

.

Weeks passed by and the holidays finally came. I found myself at home, been there for four days exactly. We dealt with the terminated child, i was actually wearing black clothes. We brought him home using a goat and some leaves of some tree. I don't know, it what they used though. After that he was sent to the cemetery. The goat was slaughtered and buried. I was asked to give him a name, so i named him Langelihle Xola Maphumulo. I was to mourn him for the next 3months and then mourn Mnqobiwethu. They said his spirit was at peace now, the fact that the goat ate the leaves proved that. " i didn't even know it was a boy" i said fixing my doek in front of the mirror. " he was just too young to die, i

don't know if i would have wanted him to live if i ever found out i was pregnant. But Dad had no right to kill him" i said as mom walked into my room. " you have to let things go my baby, you have to let this go. Let there be peace" she said. " i am his mother, i should have protected him ypu know. I should have known " i said sitting down on the couch infront of the mirror. I was in Connie's room, she and Charles slept on the couches while grandma from my father's side along with grandpa shared Charle's room. They were the ones helping us with the ceremonies. First i got cleansed for sharing a bed with my Dad and then

Dad apologised to the ancestors for cursing me. With all the ceremonies a got was slaughtered. I was the one who bought the goats and groceries and everything necessarily and i didn't mind. " it's time to go" grandma said walking into the room. I was wearing a long black dress. I bought a lot of black clothes actually. A doek over my shoulders and on my head, i also wore black pumps. We were going over to my grandparent's home for inhlambuluko. It

was somewhere in the rural areas of Durban, emdloti.

.

We set outside the gate. Washed our hand in the same basin and put some coins inside then we poured our hearts out. They apologized for the hate they gave. Like i knew they saw it as an abomination

Actual they saw me as an abomination because I was born of two races so that's why they never accepted me. Grandpa talked to the ancestors and another goat got slaughtered. So much killing in just one week. I also got a Zulu bandle (isiphandla). We got inside the home after that. There were a lot of people then i anticipated. The First and last time i was there, there were just a few houses. But now it looked like a village. I got to meet with my uncles, aunts, cousins, nieces and nephews. I only recognized maybe just three to two people.

" so that's your car?" One of my cousin asked, her name was Nandi if i am not wrong. I nodded, " my husband bought it for me on my 22nd birthday " i said smiling a bit. We were having tea. " next time

you should come with your husband. He sounds like a nice guy" she said. I nodded. " so you have three kids?" I asked, actually i kept on seeing different kids coming and going out of the round house i was in. " yeah" she said looking down. " i also have three kids. Besides the two that i lost, so there's nothing to feel ashamed of. So i have a total of five,just image at this age" i said chuckling. We were having tea and biscuits. " your situation is way more better than mine. I got three kids from three different fathers and that too I'm not working and they just won't support their kids " she said then sighed. " ohh, so how are you managing then?" I asked. " there's something call child grant you know" she said chuckling. I giggled a bit, " ohh, i almost forget. Have you ever worked somewhere before, you should give me your number maybe i can find something for you " i said. " i used to work as a cleaner in some company in town. I got fired, actually they were in some financial crisis" she said. Well we set and talked. Others came too, they weren't so bad after all. They invited me for Christmas, i promised to come but i knew then that that was a little bit of a lie. They

took my number and i took theirs. Mom and i also went to see her parents, my grandparents. They were not as friendly as my father's family. They were Afrikaaners after all so i wasn't suprised.

.

So june passed by

July passed by, spending my birthday without him was becoming a norm

August

September

October passed by...

.

" your Son hit my son and you're telling me to calm down " Mrs Vermeer snapped angrily. I was immediately called to come at Lorenzo's school because he was involed in a fighter. And he hit this white kid so hard that his nose was bleeding. His mother was fuming, if she could i swear she would've hit Lorenzo. Lorenzo was just sitting silent on the chair beside me, we were in the principal's

office. I must say i saw that coming, Lorenzo had been too quiet lately. He was angry, he missed his Father. " he's just a kid, what do you want me to say. I've already apologized for his behaviour. I'm sure there's a reason why they fought " i said angrily, she was really getting under my skin. " Miss whatever your surname is you son hit my child and you're sitting here justifying your stupid son's behavior. You must be ashamed of yourself sies man" she said then spit. " first of all it's not miss whatever, it's Mrs Salvatore. Secondly my is not stupid. I'm calmly asking you to calm down, i have a lot of things to do. So Mrs Vermeer will you please just sit your stupid ass down" i said through gritted teeth. " did you...did she just call me stupid. Principal did you hear that?" She asked. " Mrs Vermeer please sit down....Mrs Salvatore, your Son broke our number one first rule which is no fighting and for that we will have to suspend him for one week. Here is his suspension letter. And Mrs Vermeer, Mrs Salvatore has already apologized so please let this go " the principal said. " you can't just suspend my son, he's just a kid and the matter hasn't been investigated yet" i said to the

principal. " i already did, the cctv cameras shows that he's the one who started the fight. I suggest that whatever issues you have at home just get them fixed. Because it's clearly affecting the kid, we have a panel of counselors here at----" that won't be necessary, we'll leave now" i said taking my son's hand. " let's go Lorenzo " i said angrily. He was really. " I'm sorry mommy " he said. I buckled him up and closed the door. " i had to leave my patients because...you know what just keep your mouth shut " i said then went into the drivers side. I drove home angrily.

.

" why did you hit the poor boy like that Lorenzo. Why would you hit someone like that, who taught you to do that." I shouted pulling him inside the house. " leave me alone mom" he screamed yanking his hand. I turned and looked at him unbelievably, " what did you just say" i asked frowning. " you're acting cheeky with me now, huh" i asked taking off his belt. I gave him a whip, " I'm sorry mommy, sorry, sorry" he screamed crying. " Cora, what are you doing?"

Petunia asked holding me back. I let go of Lorenzo who ran to God knows where in the house. " what's wrong with you " she asked following me into the kitchen. " i ask him, he has been very disrespectful lately. He hit kids now, he might as well start to join wrestling. I can't take it anymore" i shouted pouring myself a glass water. " he's bound to behave like that, he misses his father. The poor kid misses his father" she said. " and i don't?. Do you see me going around and hitting people. I thought when he hit his little sisters it was because they provoked him. He crossed all limits today. I also miss him but you don't see me hitting people until they bleed" i said then drank up. " he's a kid, just calm down. Go and talk to him. You've been behaving like a robot lately. We don't react to situations the same way, you think i don't know that you drink a whole bottle of wine before going to sleep?, I've heard you cry too. Please just go and talk to Lorenzo " she said then got out of the kitchen. That was the first time i laid my hand on him, I've always used different methods of discipline but that day i just lost it... " I'm sorry mommy, please don't hit me " he said as soon as i

walked in to his room. " hey it's okay, I'm not going to hit you. I'm sorry i hit you okay, I'm sorry. Are you hurt?... come let me see, I'll help you take a bath" i said walking towards him, he was alarm. There were two tiny bruises on his ass. I put him in his PJs. " mommy is sorry. Would you like something to eat. I'll get you some noodles" i said standing up. " just lie down " i said walking towards the door. " mom, can i have ice cream too?" He asked. " Vanilla ice and noodles. Coming right up sergeant " i said saluting like a soldier. He giggled a bit.

.

" what happened Lorenzo, why did you hit that kid. Did he say something, did he provoke you" i asked after feeding him the noodles. He was now having his vanilla ice. " he said my Papa's is not going to come back home mommy, he was so mean. He said my dad might be dead" he said sadly, my spirit got crushed.... " mom, Papa is going to come back home isn't he?" He asked. I nodded, " your Papa's alive. He's going to come back home soon. He told you that didn't he?" Asked. He nodded. " forget

about what that white monkey said, your Papa's alive. Now have your Ice Ice cream. We'll see your homework tomorrow since you got yourself the whole week off. I see this was your plan" i said pulling his cheeks. " mommy " he said giggling.

.

November

December passed by, actually i did go to my grandparent's home for Christmas. They slaughtered the whole cow. They wouldn't stop exclaimed over the beautify of my kids. I spent my holidays home, but we slept in a hotel, life isn't so bad. You just need to accept that red is red and white is white. Blend in with the situation, accept things as they come. I spent some time with my best friend Senzo and he made me laugh and forget about most of my problems. On the other side i tried make Lorenzo laugh too, bacame his mother and father.

January

February

March

April

May, a year passed by and he was still not back at home. I must say, we were getting used to his absence. By we i mean, my heart, my mind and soul. The twins were 2yrs/6months old and Lorenzo was 6yrs/1month old doing grade 1. He was quit clever and brilliant, i was doing my 7nth year which was my last year in compliting my degree. I was back at varsity, having back to back classes and exams. It was such a busy year since it was my last year.

One fateful Saturday morning i was preparing breakfast, Gugu was cleaning and Petunia was bathing the twins. The door bell rang, " Gugu, would you get that annoying door" i said after it rang for the third time. " Gugu, how many time should I tell you to get the damn door" i shouted but there was no answer. The door bell rang again and again. " I'm coming, will you just stop. Geez... you?" I exclaimed as if i had seen a ghost as soon as i opened the door. " Wife" he said smiling. I was still so dumbfounded, and standing there like a statue. " Papa!" I heard Lore

scream behind me

[6/3, 19:15] Lynne: Page 89

Cora's pov

.

" Papa, Papa is back home " he screamed, he picked him up and spinned him around. " hey buddy" he said, i was still stand there. A lot of things came into my mind, all at once. He was standing right there infront of me, on his two feet again. He looked lighter in weight though, other than that he still looked as handsome as i remember him to be. His hair cut looked freshly done, he looked so alive. " why are you crying mommy?" I heard Lore ask, i touched my face and it was wet with tears. " Hi, are you okay?" He asked. " excuse me " i said then rushed to my room. I put on my boots, i was wearing a sweater and legging. I took my jacks, phone and hangbag... " hey where are you going ?" He asked as i walked towards the garage. I took my car key opened the garage and drove out. I drove out and found myself at Amanda's place.

" why did he come back?, why? Why is he doing this to me?" Those were the first words words i asked Amanda as soon as she opened the door for me. " hey, what's wrong. Come this way" she said pulling me somewhere, i found myself in one of her guest rooms. " my mother in law is in the kitchen, that's why i took you here...what happened. Are you okay?" She asked closing the door. I went and set down on the bed. " Who are you talking about...hey why are you crying?" She asked. " i am crying?... no I'm not cry, why can't i stop crying" i asked wiping away my with so much anger. " Hey stop hush, stop now. Do you want to peel off your skin" she said holding my hands. " talk to me, tell me what's wrong?" She asked asked. " he's back, Salvatore is back" i said. " so why are you crying, isn't that a good thing. You should be happy, aren't you supposed to be happy" she asked, eyebrows raised. " no it's not, it's not because he's still a stranger" i snapped angrily. " he still doesn't remember you?, did he say that?" She asked. " He didn't need to, i could see it in his eyes. If he did remember me he would have called me ' my heart beat' or ' il mio cuore batte ' or Cora not wife.

He never called me that before, and Salvatore would've embraced me into his arms. Or stopped me when i rushed out of the house" i explained. " okay but maybe you could be wrong. Let me call Micheal and he'll ask him. So we can talk on facts, people change you know" she said, a part of me hoped so but the biggest part of me was so realistic that it knew the naked truth already. Well she did do that, and as i had said. He still didn't remember us.

.

" i told you, didn't i?" I said sighing. She held my hand tightly. " things aren't that bad now, look at the brighter picture. He's back on his two feet again, this is the perfect time for you guys to work on things. Get to know each other, who knows maybe you will fall in love once again. Go on dates, have some fun. Loosen up a bit Cora, i think it's time you stop living under this shield you built. And please go back to your old wardrobe, for goodness sake all i see you wearing these years are these big rags. Look at your sweeter, where do you even buy these clothes " she asked, made me laugh out loud but

then i got back to normal. " what if i don't ever want to fall in love. Love only makes us sick, it haunts our dreams, destroys our days. Love has killed more than an disease. Now the question is do i want to go through all that again?, only a fool keeps on commuting the same mistakes " i said that without a smile or a chuckle. " what happened to my brave old friend?, who are you?. My Coh was this brave girl who feared nothing in this world, especially not LOVE. She was so alive and bright" she said, i blinked a few times. " what do you mean?, it's still me. I'm still Cora" i said chuckling. " No you're not, all i see is some lifeless woman. It's like life has been sucked out of you. Ypu forget how to live. If you're not drinking all alone, then you're on your books. Either you're taking care of tbe kids or dealing with the patients. Or you went home to Johannesburg, laughing to the stupid jokes that your Male friend shares. You don't wear make up anymore, you changed your entire wardrobe. You built a wall around yourself, i can't reach out to you. And i miss my friend. Whoever you are, please bring back my friend. You don't hang out with us anymore,

do you remember how we used to go for shopping and come back at the late hours, hit the clubs. Or how we used to watch a movie on your laptop while having some popcorn. Or how we used to listen to Rihanna the whole day, you and i used to do our stupid dance moves while cleaning. We sang along to every song of hers. But now, but now you hate Rihanna. You fastly switch off the radio whenever her song comes on. You used to love Luther Vandross Cora and you know why because he loves him. You threw away all the CDs, you ran away from your life. All i hear you playing now is Sad songs or either Gospel. You're always too busy to hang----.

"Stop it okay, stop. What the hell do you want from me Mandy" i screamed crying. she kept on going on and on and i couldn't take it anymore. I just couldn't, " i just want my friend back, i miss my friend. Please just bring my crazy friend. The one who knew what living in the moment meant. The one who was fearless and who loved life. The one who'd laugh out loud like crazy, the one who smiled to the fullest. I miss how your eyes would twinkle whenever you'd smiled. I miss her okay, i hate how you pretend to be

okay, i hate how you fake a smile and laughter. " she snapped crying. " you mean to say the one who was vulnerable and naive. The one who wore her heart on the sleeves, the foolish one who let him toy with her heart. The one who got her heart broken a thousand times before but still, still forgave. Well guess what, she's never coming back. She's never coming back." I shouted while i cried. Then there was silence. We set in silence for maybe about 30 minutes. " are you happy Cora?, are you happy?" She asked. " it doesn't matter anymore, as long as I'm safe. As long as my heart is locked away from him. I'll live" i said. " What about us, what about the rest of us. Do we also not get to feel your love?" She asked. " You know i love you Mandy, i trust you. It's him i don't trust" i said putting my hand on her shoulder. " you have only one heart, when you don't even love yourself how i expect you to love anyone else...just know one thing Cora, no matter how hard you try. You can throw it into the ocean. Bury it into the deepest pits but it will never stop beating for him, you know your every single inch belongs to him. You can never hide it, the fact that you came here crying because of him

should tell you something. You're hopelessly in love with him" she said. " i thought, i thought you were my friend Amanda. I came here to find comfort but all you do is----" sometimes we all need to hear the truth. Sometimes it's tough love that heals us. I'm sorry if i hurt you but I'm not sorry if my truth hurt you. Next time you come hear please come back as my Cora " she said then stood up. " are you abandoning me Amanda?. Do you know what I've been through?" I asked asked following her. " Cora, I'm trying. I've tried to be there for you. But you just won't let me in. I've been to you house every Saturday, even today i was planning to do so but maybe it's not me who'll make you change your mind. We all have tried, all of us. Even your family but we failed. Maybe it's him that you need. What do you want me to do when you just won't share your problems with me. Just go and talk to him, just this once. Please" she said then put her hands together in a begging manner. " i can't do this alone Amanda, i need you and i did share my sorrows with you." I said crying silently. " no you didn't, you wouldn't talk about your Son, you wouldn't talk about Salvatore.

You wouldn't talk about what you went through while you were kidnapped. All you did was cry and tell me things that are on the surface. How many times have i begged you to see someone professional and talk about this. How many times Cora, every time i brought that up you'd chase me out of your house but still i went back in. You know why because you're my only sister and i love you. I love you but i can't do this anymore. I can't keep on being your emotional punch bag, what's the point when you leave me halfway every time...please leave my house. You'll come back when you decide to take some action and stop running away from your own life. " she said. " Amanda please " i said in a horsey little voice. " you know i love you but please just leave. Try to understand where I'm coming from. Cora please Go" she begged. I wiped away my tears and walked out. Her mother in law was standing on the kitchen doorway, in an awe. I drove my car and found myself in the mall of Africa. I found myself in some restuarent I've never been before. My phone kept on vibrating in my bag.

.

" ma'am we're about to close, would you like something" the waitresses asked. I've been sitting there for hours just staring into space. The only thing i ordered was lime juice, i guessed that was my cue to leave. I took out a 50rand note and put it on the table then stood up to leave. It was raining out. I had no umbrella and i didn't need one, i found myself in standing in the rain. Appreciating every drop of rain that was hitting my skin. Half an hour was spent under the rain, i then walked into my car and drove home. There was thunder and lightening, i drove slowly . Maybe i was avoiding going back home but unfortunately slowly but surely i got there. Parked infront of the house. It took me half an hour again to get inside. It was almost 8pm. " Geez you're dripping wet" Salvatore exclaimed first, they were watch television. Well the kids were sleeping around him. He was watching television, he rushed somewhere as i was walking like a Zombie. " take of your jacket" he said after wiping my hair using the bathroom big white towel. " you don't have to act like

you care. You don't love me, remember " i said then pushed him out of my way. " Cora?" He exclaimed as he almost fell. I walked into my room and took a long warm bath. I wiped my body then wore my big crimson gown and socks and tied a towel over my head. I was only wearing my panties underneath, i got out and walked to the wine sailor like i got used to. The kids were no longer on the couch, anyways i took a glass from the kitchen then went to my room. Amanda's words kept on ringing in my head, " well guess what, she might as well go to hell. I don't care" i snapped, well that's how i pushed away the traces of guilty. I thought i was doing everything right. Everything was going perfectly, i did as my priest said. I turned to God instead of turning bitter and inward with rage, i did turn to God. I went to church every Sunday and Thursday evenings, prayed almost every single day. So then why didn't i find peace and courage?, what was i doing wrong?" I kepton asking myself. And then there was a knock on my door. Whoever it was walked in.

.

" the devil is in the house" i said chuckling, the alcohol was getting the better of me. " can we talk?" He asked sitting down on the bed. " you can speak but we can't talk, my mother told me to never talk to strangers " i said said then laughed. What was i laughing at, God only know. " you abruptly left when I came, i thought the first thing I'd do would be to apologize for the things i said to you." He said. " then apologise, are you going to take an hour explaining how you wanted to apologize or you're actually going to apologize?" I asked asked. " I'm sorry, i apologise for hurting your feelings. I hope maybe we can start afresh, get to know each other " he said. " i wonder one i should forgive you?, if you remember me you'd be on your knees now begging for my forgiveness...but you know what I'll forgive you. Jesus said ' let the one who has no sin cast the first stone' . Forgiveness is the first step to heaven, and i want to go to heaven. Do you know where you'd be while I'm in heaven" i asked pouring myself the third glass. " do tell me, i have no idea " he said sighing and he sounded so sarcastic. " Hell, that's where man like you go. Hell, you'll burn then...i should

probably shut up. Jesus doesn't like people who judge other people" i said putting my finger on my lips. " what do you mean by man like me?" He asked. " You know exactly what i mean...no I'm not going to say it, I'm the last person to judge you. Just get the hell out of my room" i screamed then giggled. " do you want to have lunch with me tomorrow?" He asked. " I'll go...because I'm starving, other than that i wouldn't go anywhere with a Donkey like you " i whispered, he laughed. " get out of my room...wait, how is it that i still find your eyes the most beautiful in the world. I hate you, i hate you Salvatore " i said sadly, wanting to cry. " wine is not good for you" he said walking towards me. " please don't, don't...just leave me alone " i said extending my hand towards him. " okay goodnight " he said then left. "How do you do this to me Alonzo, how could you...all those things you said were just a lie. How do you take me out of my misery and then put me back into deep again. I could just kill you, you know. I could strangle you to death. Bury you alive but i can't do that because I'm doomed. I'm stupidly inlove with you " i talked to the bottle as if it was him. I fell asleep

hugging the bottle.

.

" i thought we were going for lunch, you and i " he said as he saw me getting my kids strapped into their car seats. " it's a free country, i changed my mind besides i was drunk. We're going to Gold reef city" i said. He was in his jogging pants, all sweaty that i almost day dreamed. " can i also join you" he asked. " nah, we're cool. I'm sure you have a lot of things to do. You just came back after a long long time." I said putting our bags at the back. I then closed the boot. " Petunia, let's go" i called out and she came running.

.

Week 1

Week 2

Week 3, passed by and all the time i did my best to try and avoid him. I came home in the evenings if not at night, it's only on Saturday where i could not avoid him. Well because I'm home the whole day and it's the day i spend with my kids. Other than that he too is almost always working, but he does try to put an

effort. It just isn't enough for me. " i was thinking that maybe we could go out and do some shopping. You could use some new clothes " he said holding my waist as i was preparing breakfast. " isn't still too early in the morning to annoy me, and how many time should I tell not to ever hold my waist?" I asked sighing as i turned around. " if my fashion sense disgust you then you can go to hell for all i care" i said then pushed him away. " You look cute when you're angry, just like when you eat. You know when you chew and moan" he said getting closer to me. I don't know how but seconds later, his lips were on mine and my hands were around his neck. We were hungrily kissing, i pushed him away just when his hands found their way under my PJ Jersey. " stop" i said catching my breath. " come on, what is now" he asked getting closer again. " i said stop okay, just stop. That should never have happened " i snapped. " but why, you're my wife. Can't i kiss you, am i not aloud to even touch you. I've been trying but all you do is push me away " he said frustrated. " you don't even love me, you're not him. You're not my husband, this is cheating " i said angrily. " you know

what I'm going to work" he said angrily raising his hands up, he then left. " leave like you always do" i screamed after him.

.

" cut the poor guy some slack Cora" i heard Petunia say behind me, " excuse me?" I asked turning around to face him. " he's trying, the least you could do o

Is meet him half way. He buys you gifts and flowers that you throw back at his face" she said. " yeah that's because his stupid, shit face, arrogant self thinks he can just buy me with stupid gifts. He'll never be like him" i said then clicked my tongue. " maybe he might, if you could just let him in. I mean, it's still him. He's still the same Mr Salvatore i knew, all i am saying is meet him half way. He's trying " she said. " leave me alone P, ypu don't know half the shit I've been through. So please cut me some slack.

.

On the 19nth of July, i came back from school around 20pm. I was so tired, the house was so dark. I turned on the lights and boom. He was sitting on

the dining table. " whoa, you scared me" i exclaimed holding my chest. " whoa, you scared me?. Is that all you can say?" He asked standing in front of me. " whatever you're talking about I'm not interested. I'm tired, I've been out all day. The last thing i need is your nonsense " i said walking towards the bedrooms but he roughly grabbed my hand and brought me back to him. Our bodies collided. " leave my hand Mr Salvatore " i said angrily. " or else what?, didn't i ask you to have dinner with me. Didn't you agree? Or maybe you were drunk again. The least you could have done is give me a call and let me know you won't be able to make it. I've been sitting here for the past 2hours " he shouted. I had my eyes closed, reminded me of the time when Nina died. " i had an exam to worry about, i have no time for you nonsense Mr Salvatore " i said opening my eyes. " all i ever wanted was to spend your birthday with you...you know what?. You're not even worth my energy " he said then let go of my hand. He walked towards the garage, i guessed he was going to some club to get himself drunk and come back to tell me how sorry he was. The same old shit happened over

and over again.

.

I went to bed after taking a quick shower. " how dare he says I'm not worth it " i asked myself angrily. Anyways i went to sleep, i was woken up by my phone vibrating underneath my pillow. It was a message notification . I opened it and i couldn't believe my eyes, " how could he do this to me?" I asked myself as tears started streaming down my face. I cried my lungs out. Stayed awake all night, the first thing i did was go to his room and pack his clothes into suitcases. I waited for him to return back. His bags were already by the door. " what is it with my bags by the door?" He asked, i was in the kitchen preparing for breakfast. Lorenzo, Maia and Miracle were watching television. " Gugu, could you please take the kids to their play room. I need to speak to their father here" i said coming to the kitchen with a knife in my hand. Gugu did, " what's going, whatever it is just fix it I'm going to bed. I had a long day" he said yawning. " I'm sure you did, how was her pussy. Was it tighter or squashy or maybe

you prefer too wet?" I asked walking towards him. "What are you talking about" he asked, such a liar. "if you don't want to go back to sleep for 13 months again you won't dare lie to me" i snapped angrily. "what is this? , you sleep around now?" I asked fuming while showing him the pictures of him and whoever that stupid women was. All naked, "ohh...she didn't." He said angrily taking the phone from me. He looked at the pictures for one long time. "if you're done looking at your personal made porn pictures please listen to me carefully... here's what's going to happen, because i feel so kind today. You're just going to take your bags and leave my house. On any other given day i would have stabbed you, you're such a pig. It's a good thing that i don't love you anymore. Just leave my house" i said firmly, i could feel my tears burning up. Wanting to come out streaming. "look i can explain" he said. "you don't need to explain anything to me, i understand everything. You were horny and she has a free pussy. Understood, i mean it's not fair that i get to sleep around and come back home so late and you get sexually starved. I don't blame you... you can

come whenever you want to see your kids and they can visit you whenever they want" i said looking anywhere but him. " so you've been sleeping around, answer me Cora " he snapped. " yes, I've been sleeping around. Satisfied, now leave my house. " i snapped angrily. " this is my house as far as I am concerned " he said. " trust me you don't want to go there, if I leave this house then my kids come along. Do you want that?" I asked looking at him in the eyes. He turned and took his bags. " and ohh, please send me your address. I want to make sure that the divorce papers reach you" i screamed after him. He didn't dare to turn back. After he closed the door, i broke down and cried loudly.

[6/3, 19:16] Lynne: Page 90

Salvatore's pov

.

" She really did send me the divorce papers" i said clicking my tongue as i put them back in the envelope after reading them. " what does it say, does she want half of your things" Papa asked, it's

been a week since i came to live with him. " No " i answered shortly. " she wants me to just sign these and leave her at peace. It states that she wants nothing that belongs to me, she'll vacate the house as soon as she finds a job" i said throwing them on the desk. " so what are going to do" he asked. " I'm going to give the woman what she wants Papa" i said putting my hand in my pockets as i looked outside the window. " you're going to give up just like that?"he asked standing up from his desk and walking towards me. " I'm not giving up, I'm just simply giving the crazy woman what she wants " i said looking out the green golf course. " call it whatever you want but all i see is a quieter and a coward, are you just going to give up on your wife just like that?" He asked. " Dad that woman hates my gut, what else do you expect from me. She's so bitter, i can't take it anymore. I've apologized a thousand times before but still she won't budge. I think this is going to work on both our favours" i said. " she hates you?, she's bitter? What are you talking about. I've know that girl for years now and i don't believe a word you say. Or the things you say she

did" he said. " what are you saying, are you calling me a lie, Dad she looked me in the eye and told me she's sleeping around. I cheated too so i thinks it's settled now" i said. " she probably said that to get back at you, as far as i know my daughter in law she wouldn't cheat on you or anyone for that matter. That woman loves you and you're a fool to not have seen that, she loves you more than anything in this world and here you are calling her bitter and lose and all that shit. Do you know what she's been through, she lost a child for goodness sake. She has suffered enou---" wait what do you mean she lost a child?" I asked cutting him from the snapping he was tapping into. " i wasn't supposed to say that " he said then poured himself a glass of whisky. " no, tell me. What do ypu mean she lost a child ?" I asked holding his arm. " ...she was carrying triplets, you were so thrilled to become a father again, i remember the night you announced the news. It was her birthday, you were so happy." He said seeming so lost in his thoughts. " and then one month she got kidnapped, she was seven months pregnant back then, you were on the phone when The Don took her. Just a

few minutes away from your house, you wouldn't sleep searching for her. You searched for her until you found her but unfortunately you got shot and fell down the building and lost ypu memory. She on the other hand bleed and was sent to the theater but unfortunately it was too late. You lost a child, a son. She named him Miceal Mngobiwethu Salvatore. She buried him unbelievably, she grieved and mourned his death all alone. The drugs they used to knock her out with killed your Son, not just that Miracle became a mute. The drugs effected the part of her brain responsible for speech. Only Maia is normal, she wouldn't eat or talk for days. She bacame strong for her kids but you could see that he was breaking. You stayed in a coma for months, i had given up on you but she kept on faith. One-day the doctors called us to switch off the machines, but she put her foot down. If it wasn't for her you wouldn't be alive, you wouldn't be here" he explained, " So i have another son?" I asked unbelievably, i was still trying to process everything. " he only lived for a few minutes after the c-section " he said. " wait i have a phote of him" he said then went to open the shelf. He handed

me a framed photo. " he looked so beautifully " i said tracing his face. Then i saw my own tear hitting the frame. " he had your eyes, that's what Cora used to say" he said faintly smiling. " i think it's time The Don Died" i said angrily wiping away my tears. " wait, I think ypu should save him for the time when you remember everything.

If you kill him now, he won't feel your pain . You won't be angry enough. Keep on going for memory therapy, maybe you should go back to your house like yourtherapist advised. Find some reminders, anything" he said. " I want to kill that man Dad, he killed my Son" i said angrily getting out of the the office. " Alonzo listen to me, fix things with your wife first. I know you did try harder, my son wouldn't have given up so easily. You were just to eager to quit. Get yourwife back first" Dad said behind me. I got into my car and drove out in full speed.

.

Cora's pov

.

i need an angel to save me myself.

Holding my saviour to keep my heart up on the shelf.

Do you remember the things we had said

The things we had felt.

Calling forever, for every passing moment left.

I need an angel, to save me from my fate

To let the skies along the way.

.

I need an angel to save me from my myself

Holding my savior to my heart upon the shelf

Do you remember the things we had said

The things we had felt.

I need an angel to save me from my fate.

I need an angel to let the skies along the way.

I need an angel

" i didn't just wake up so bitter, you're my only witness to that. I didn't just wake up in this shield. It

took time to build it, i wasn't always so mean. I wasn't always so sad, things kept on happening to me. Things kept on going on and on in my life. No one understands, no one those. They've all just walked out on me. Decided they're too tired to deal with me, am i supposed to always act so strong. Am i supposed to be so understanding and forgiving?. Every day i ask myself, Cora are you so much of a sinner that so much tragedy has occurred into your life. I also get tired, I'm tired of people walking all over me. I'm tired of having to accept things as they come and I'm tired of being expected to move on like nothing happened. I'm tired of being strong, i also want to be weak and cry. Do you know how long i waited for him to return? 29 months and then another. He's not back, ohh Cora try to understand, stupid Cora is supposed to understand. " i said talking to my psychiatric, it's been a week since i kicked him out of the house. It was Mr TR SoKhulu, the one Salvatore and i went to for the first time together.

" who are they, what do you mean by they. Who do

you feel wants to to accept things as they come
Cora?" He asked writting down. " everybody around
me, my friends. My family, everybody. My moms
keeps 'saying you have to make peace with things
my child' like hell. She isn't the one who got raped at
13, she wasn't the one to lose a kids, she wasn't the
one to take a bath infront of man while pregnant.
She wasn't the one who saw dead bodies all around
her as if they were falling from heaven. She wasn't
the one who almost lost a husband. She was not the
one who had to juggle between being a mother of
three, look after her husband's businesses and still
strive to get her degree. She's definitely not the one
forgotten about. And Amanda, ohh my friend. She
wouldn't have servived a day if she had to walk a
mile in my shoes. She's not the one who was all
alone, they all don't know what it's like to be
emotionally abandoned. ' make peace child, Cora
forgive. Cora this Cora that" i talked while i chuckled
there and there. " Have you told your husband and
Miceal?" He asked. " No and I'm not planning to" i
answered shortly. " " and why is that?" He asked. "
because i know, i know for a fact that if he wanted to

find out something he would've done so already. He just doesn't want to know. I think he's scared of what he might find if he looks back into the past. He just wants to move on with a free conscious and I'm expected to do the same. I am not the one who lost their memory, i haven't forgotten anything. I remember everything as it is, every single detail of it is inscribed on my brain. I see things clearly asif thry happened Yesterday. I remember every tear I've shed, maybe I'm bitter. Maybe I've turned bitter, so what?" I asked angrily. " what do you mean by ' he just doesn't want to find out' what do you mean he could if he wanted to?" He asked. Before me there were so many woman. An approximate of 30 but there was this one special one. Kylie Smith, she died in a car accident. He was crazy inlove with him, his first love. Anyways after her death he kept his heart locked away, he used to date woman like a robot. No emotions attached, until he met me. We fell inlove but now that he doesn't remember i think he's scared to find out. He's scared that he might actually love me. When we have a conversation it's always on the surface, it never gets deep. He never ask me

something serious or either he's working and I'm studying. " i said then shrugged my shoulders. " that's it for the day, will see you tomorrow. Same time" she said. It was 5pm, i drove home. I wanted to try and find myself again, i was searching for Cora that i lost along the road. I was going to try ad do everything i could. I drove home but the first thing i saw was salvatore's car infront of my house. I haven't seen him in days, my spirit just sank. I parked inside the garage then took the stairs up to the first floor. There was a lot of noise inside the house, i found his and Lorenzo and the twins who were sitting on his laps playing a videos game. " that's not fair Dad" Lorenzo screamed trying to get hold of his remote control. " Dada...Mama, mama" Maia screamed clapping her hands, jumping up and down on the couch. Miracle didn't waste her time, she ran to me first. Gugu and Petunia, i heard then talk in the kitchen. " hey, did you guys miss me so much?" I asked picking Miracle up, the Maia came crying. " Me mommy " She kept on saying. I picked her up too. " Hi?" Salvatore said as i walked with the twins in my arms. " Hi" i said back. " mom, i drew a

picture today " Lorenzo said getting off the couch and following me. " you did?, what did you draw this time. Go and take it then come and show me" i said smiling at lorenzo who rushed to his room upstairs while i took the stairs up to the the girls room. " you guys haven't bathed yet, i bet you haven't even had dinner and your bed time is within the next hour" i said putting them on the bed. I ran some warm water for them. " mom look what i drew" Lorenzo screamed running inside the room. He was followed by Salvatore. " hey be careful not to fall...let me see" i said then took the piece of paper he was carrying. " it's You, Maia, Miracle and Dad" he said. " and our house and How About but you forgot to add Fishy" i said bending over to his height. " i think it's a beautifully picture" Salvatore said folding his arms while leaning on the door way. " ...it's, it's beautifully. You know what, I'll hang it on the refrigerator. And you my soldier deserve a PS bar" i said then kissed his lips. " eww mom" he exclaimed wiping his lips, i couldn't help but laugh and then i found Salvatore staring right at me. I cleared my throat in discomfort but he didn't dare to look away. " come on girls. Let's

take a bath" i said putting them down one by one.

.

" there we go" i said after i was done preparing the twins to go to bed, i had put them in their PJs, gown and sleepers. " Go downstairs to aunt P, she'll feed you okay?" I said and they both nodded. " come out now Lore" i said to Lorenzo who was in the bathroom taking a shower. Salvatore was standing on the same position watching my every move. He came out all drenched, " you just know how to turn people into your slaves Lore, who's going to mop all this messy you creating?" I asked walking into the bathroom. I took a towel and wiped him, moisturized his body then dressed him up into his PJs, gown and sleepers. " go and get me the mop" i said. He ran out, i sat down on the couch and took off my shoe. My feet hurt. " you do this everyday?" He asked. " when I'm not busy yeah" i said putting my shoes aside. " you're a good mother Cora " he said. I said nothing furthermore. But at the back of my mind i was like' i used to be a good wife, a good friend, a good girlfriend, a good companion until you

forgot me'. Lorenzo came back with the mop, " Go and eat, I'm also coming " i said to jim. " yes mommy " he said. I wiped the floor and washed the bathtub and show. " are you going to follow me around all night or are you going to say what you want?" I asked him. " there's a lot i want to say actually, i just don't know how to say it. Whete to start. Can we talk?" He asked. I sighed and turned back to look at him. " is it about the kids?" I asked. " it's about everything, it's about us" he said. " then there's nothing to talk about. All i need from you are those divorce paper, unless it's about the kids then please spare me your words" i said. " why are you pushing me away Cora, all i need is just 5minutes of your time to say what i to say" he said. " Salvatore I'm begging you with every single being in me, i don't want to talk. I don't want to hear it. It's too late to talk now...I've just started getting professional help. I'm trying to find myself again. Please don't ruin this for me, if there's any part of you that actual cares about me then you'll leave me in peace. Go and live your life, I'm not going to stop you. I'm also trying to find mine. I beg you to leave me alone " i begged. " i

will if you'd do me two favours" he said. " anything to make you go away" i said then sighed heavily. " look me in the eye and tell you you don't love me" he said. I blinked a few times. " I've never been much of a good lie so it's pointless " that's all i said. " can i have the videos of the past years. Every single one of them. I need them to jog my memory " he said. " that's all?" I asked and he nodded. " okay then, i hope we never talk about this ever again and i need those divorce paper. I need to file them ASAP " i said.

.

So we had dinner together, a conversation was shared around the table. Lorenzo kept on wanting me to confirm everything he told his Dad while i wanted was to go to sleep. I had already taken a shower, i was in my PJs. He put Lorenzo to bed while i put the twins, " I'd like to go to sleep so if you'd excuse us" i said to him as we met on the corridor upstairs. " why are these room always locked?" He asked referring to our room and Miceal's room which i kept locked. I've never really entered his room. " this is the main bedroom, most of your

things and my things are still there. I'll unlock it incase you need something and I'm not here" i said. " you know there's one hood thing that came out from your memory lose" i said as we walked down the stairs. " and what might that be?" He asked. " you forgot that you ever forgave your mother. That woman turned my life upside down. I'll never forget the things she did and said to me" i said. " i never liked that woman at all" he said then laughed. " i wonder how i forgave her, maybe i was drunk. I couldn't have been sober" he said thoughtfully. " unfortunately you were Mr Salvatore, i almost Died for that woman. You would've probably killed the both of us if you were drunk " i said chuckling a bit. " What do you mean?" He asked. " Goodnight Mr Salvatore, i have a long day tomorrow " i said opening the door. " I'm not giving up on us Cora" he said before he left. What he didn't understand was that there was no us, maybe we were too broken to be together. I've come to the conclusion that him and i were never meant to be... " just relax Cora, you can do this" i said to myself as i looked at my mirror image. It was my first night of try to sleep sober. I

played nice piano beats on my phone and put on my headset. I stayed awake for hours. I mean from 9 to 1am, that was horrible. But it was my first step, to finding myself.

.

Salvatore's pov

.

Flash back

.

He smiled at me and I smiled back, " what are you staring at " he asked then flipped me on top of him. " what are you doing?" I asked giggling loudly. " good morning my heart beat" he said so serious, looking into my eyes. His hand on my bare ass, grabbing it tightly. He was in his underwear only and I was wearing his shirt and my black G-string. " hi" I said running my fingers through his messy hair. I then kissed his lips slightly, " I think I'm in love with you" I said smiling. " you think?" He asked chuckling. " saying ' I think ' doesn't make it seem so deep. So I'll opt for that" I said. " What scares you?" He asked

tucking my hair behind my ear. " Loving you too much only for me to lose you" i said solemnly. " you're never going to lose me, you're my heart. If a container loses a heart then it'll surely die and so is the heart" he said. " that's some deep shit right there" i said frowning. " then i guess i can feel free to say I'M IN LOVE WITH YOU AJ SALVATORE.i love you" i screamed. " are you trying to defean me?" He asked unbelievably. " i felt like screaming, telling the whole world " i said smiling. " I'm inlove with you insane girl" he said smiling. " and I'm never going to let you go, you're stuck with me" he said squeezing my butt even mire tighter. I could feel his bulge poking my tummy. " even if we fall out of love?" I asked. " even if we fall out of love. I'm never letting you go" he said. Let me record this one. I want you to remember your own words.say that again " I said taking my phone under the pillow. " Even if we fall out of....

.

Flash ends

.

I was brought back to earth by Robinson's knocking on my window. " Mrs Salvatore we're here" he said, we were parked at the gates of the university. " oh sorry" i said then took my bags. I asked him to drive me because i was too tired to drive, after staying awake till morning. " I'll call you to come and fetch me, wait for my call around 3pm" i said. " yes ma'am " he said.

[6/3, 19:16] Lynne: Page 91

Cora's pov

.

It's been 2 months or three since i started therapy. Seeking professional help was a really great idea, even though it was a little bit expensive. Salvatore stopped pestering me for at least one month but then he got back to his old apologising self, wanting to talk and all that. So there he was staring at me across the table, i was in the library at home.

Revising for the next day's exam, " i don't listen to that kind of music anymore " i said angrily. " that's why I'm taking you on a date so that we can talk

about the kind of music you now listen to, your favourite dishes, what you do on your spare time" he counted, it was around 22pm and he was still there. Everyone was asleep, he seemed to be enjoying my anger. He liked irritating me. One of those days he just laughed, never took anything I say seriously. " just three dates, that's all I'm asking for " he said, sitting in a slumpy position. " Can't you see that I'm trying to study here and what is it with this your three dates rule?" I asked frowning and folding my arms. " the first date is for us to get to know each other, the introduction. The second date, take that as the body. The third date, is the conclusion. Time for the decision " he said. " have you always been this stupid and annoying. Can't you read between the lines?, can't you see that I want nothing to do with you?. Read my lips Mr Salvatore 'No, I'm not going anywhere with you' got that?" I asked firmly. " No woman has ever dared to call me stupid except for my grandmother. Have you always been this uptight Mrs Salvatore?" He asked chuckling. " what's funny?, I didn't catch the joke " I said faking a smile. " Sarcasm doesn't suit you my Wife, I'll come and pick

you up around 6pm. Be ready" he said. " hey but i haven't agreed yet " i exclaimed as he left but he didn't dare to look back.

.

So i found myself in some down town restuarent, i guess it has always been his style to book the whole restuarent. I looked at him across the small dining table, then looked down at my food. " ain't you going to eat, you've been smashing you food for the past 10 minutes. What's wrong?" He asked. Putting his fork down and wiping his lips using the table white cloth. " it's nothing...I'm tired, i just want to go home. My examination wasn't so easy. What if i get below 80, it was so horrible " i said then sighed. " You are a smart woman, I'm sure it wasn't so bad. Please eat something, you haven't eaten all day long " he said. " you won't understand, I've worked so hard for this dream. What if i fail" i said abruptly standing up. I went over to the window, looking outside at the city lights. I was wearing a shape burgundy satin wrap dress, which was just above my knees. After such a long time i was wearing my make up and six inch

heels and my Peruvian weave. " you're right i don't understand but getting frustrated about it won't change a thing." He said holding my waist, he was standing behind me. I took a deep breath, trying to calm my nerves. " how many times should I tell you not to hold my waist " i said. " why?, is it because i have this hold over you, because your heart starts racing whenever I hold your waist or touch you?" He asked asked. " Salvatore please " i softly said trying to move forward but he pulled me back to him. " shhh" he whispered into my ear, he started kissing my neck and i gave him full access to it. Everything felt so good, every sexual sensitive part of my body started to respond to his touch. I removed the lace of my dress off my shoulder and planted a kiss there. I wasn't wearing any bra, the next thing i knew my dress was hanging on my waist and he was caressing my breasts. All over to my waist, which made me moan. " you have such a beautiful body, why do you always hide it under those ugly sweaters" he asked. I couldn't respond, i was lost in the feeling of ecstasy. Until, well until he said " i love you Cora " he said softly against my ear but it

sounded so loud. " Stop, stop it " i snapped turning around to face him. I fixed my dress, " what's wrong?" He asked frowning. " please just take me home, i shouldn't have come here " i said walking over to the table to take my purse. " this was such a bad idea, i shouldn't have come here. Please take me home " i said walking towards the elevator. " i thought everything was fine, what's wrong with you?" He asked following me. " you don't have to hit the buttons so hard, the elevator will come down and i'll take you home " he said standing beside me. The drive was filled with silence and i was looking outside the Window, lost in my own thought.

.

" i thought i told you to take me home, what are we doing here" i asked as he parked under Hotel Paradisè. " there are some things i need to pick from my penthouse. You might want to come with me because i'll take long " he said as he was getting off the car. " Are you for really...you gotta be kidding me " i said unbelievably as i got out of the car. He locked his as i followed him. " how long is this going

to take?, i don't understand this. It's not like you'd be picking up bricks " i said said as i walked in. He was behind me, i haven't been there for ages but the place still looked the same. EXPENSIVE, " what are you doing?" I asked as i turned around and found him locking the door. " I'm sorry i had to do this but I've ran out of patience " he said, " what is this?, are you going to kill me...ohh, don't tell me you're going to rape me" i exclaimed looking at him as he walked towards me. " will you just shut up " he snapped, i got sturtled a bit. " can i go home now?" I asked asked after some time of silence. " You are not going anywhere until we talk " he said. " Talk, talk about what?" I asked sighing. " about Miceal, the one you never told me about. About the reason why you're so angry at me, why you're pushing me away. Why do you pretend as if you don't love me or even care. Why are you punishing me and yourself along the way. And about what just happened there, does the fact that i love you scare you? Why are you separating our family? " he asked all at once so angrily. " Who told you about Miceal?" I asked blinking a few times. " it doesn't matter, why don't

you ever mention his name?. You keep his room locked up, why?" He asked. " that's non of your business " i said said walking towards the door. I tried to open it , break it or whatever. " Stop doing that...and don't tell me it's non of my business because he was my son too. I deserve to know about him" he snapped roughly pulling me back in. " what are you going to hit me?, go ahead and hit me" i snapped angrily. He ran his finger through his hair, his face all red. " why are you making this so difficult " he said through gritted teeth. " What do you want from me?, what is it that you exactly want from me. Now you know about him, go to his grave and leave me the hell alone " i snapped. " we're going to do this your way, keep quite all you want but i tell you this. You're not leave this place until we've talked. Give me your phone " he said extending his hand. " i said give me you fucking phone dammit" he said forcefully taking my purse. He took my phone, opened it up, took out my simcard and memory card then hit it on the wall, not just that. He then picked it up and put it in the huge fish tank. I was looking at him, gagging. " what about my kids?" I asked. " the

day you rephrase that question to 'our' kids. I'll give you an answer to it." He said then walked towards the bar, "this is kidnapping, I'm so going to arrest you for this" i said angrily sitting down on the couch. "Go ahead sweetheart " Even Salvatore used to say that when we fought. I mean he used to say that before he forgot me. I kept on switching positions until I fell asleep on the couch but i woke up on the bed. I was still in my dress, he was staring at me as i woke up. He was standing over the bed, "aren't you too beautiful to drool on your sleep?" He asked, i fastly wiping my lips but there was nothing there. "breakfast is on the dining table, you'll find something to wear in the bathroom. I'm going to work. " wait you can't leave me here, i have an exam to prepare for and my kids... i mean our kids must be missing me" i said following him. " you're such a fast learner, it's our kids already. So are you willing to talk" he asked folding his arms. " there's nothing to talk about, what do you want from me Salvatore?" I asked. " I've already told you, try to remember and i want answers ASAP. Or else you might miss your big exam which is scheduled for next week " he said

then looked at his wrist watch. " i have to go, bye" he said then slightly kissed my lips. " Fuck you!" I screamed frustrated. I tried to open the door but it was locked. Screamed for help for almost an hour but no one came to my rescue. I went to the bathroom, " is he for really?" I asked unbelievably. The supposedly clothes he said I'd find in the bathroom was just his white big plain t-shirt and it smelled like him. Then there was a single white ugly looking underwear. I went to the wardrobe in hopes of finding some of my clothes which i knew i left there but there was absolutely nothing except for three of his suits, shoes and boxers and the white hotel gown. I took off my weave, brushed my teeth using his toothbrush. I then took a shower, i thought of checking the room service telephones but they weren't there. So i stuffed my face with food. Watched tv till i fell asleep. I had only a towel wrapped around my body.

.

Salvatore's pov

.

I unlocked the door, the time was 5pm. The First thing i saw was my torned apart suits , shoes and boxers on the ground. I then saw her sitting like a Zombie infront of the television. " You are such a hard headed young woman. What happened to my suits" i asked chuckling, she just gave me a dead stare. Then i noticed that she wasn't wearing the t-shirt. " i got us a movie to watch and food" i said raising up the plastic bags after locking the door and putting the keys in my pocket. " wait I'll go and take a shower and then we can watch it together" i said, i put the plastics on the table and then went and took a shower. I came bacl with towel wrapped around my waist. I put on the flash drive of our videos. " We had such a beautifully time together, can you believe that after watching this video some of the things are coming back to me. Slowly but surely " i said, she looked at me frowning. " you must be thinking that I'm lying, ummh i remember the time when we first met Cora " i said. " is it written ' FOOL' on my forehead?, do you think you could just lie and I'd believe you. Of course you remember because i explained everything on national television. Please

spare me your lies and deceit" she said angrily. " ohh, you're talking about that video, of course i did watch that too. But there was no part where you said you said you wrote me a note that said "YOU'RE A GOOD MAN MR SALVATORE BUT DON'T TRY AND LOOK FOR ME BECAUSE YOU WON'T FIND ME" i said, she blinked a few times. " that's utter nonsense, I'm not going to do this with you" she said trying to stand up but i pulled her back down. " Sit your fat ass down Mrs Salvatore " i said firmly. She gagged, " now I'm going to press play and we're going to watch these videos together " i said holding her arm. " i don't want to watch this, i don't want to. Please just let me go home" she screamed. "Shhhh, are you trying to deafen me. Keep your voice down. Are you hungry, I'll get you your take away, it's still warm " i said standing up. She pushed the take away that the food spilled all around the coffe table. " i guess you're not that much hungry. I'll eat" i saod sitting down. " where do you think you're going to?" I asked as she tried to stand up once again. " i hate you Salvatore, i hate you more than anything in this world. I wish i never met you " she said as tears

formed in her eyes. Her words got to me but i kept on my act. " I'm sure you've said that a thousand times before, just talk and then you can go home" i said but she set quietly. I talked while she left quite, the videos were too many. " okay it's time for bed, come let's go to sleep " i said. " come on, or you want me to carry you to bed?" I asked. She stood up and lead the way. " I'm going to sleep on the couch " she said. " there are no spare blankets as you've seen the wardrobe is empty. We're going to share the bed and covers and ohh the hitter is dead and it's cold" i said getting undercovers. " by the way, it was very stupid of you to tear up my boxers now I'm forced to sleep naked. " i said dropping the towel on the floor. She looked away. I couldn't help but laugh, i got undercovers, she set on the edge of the bed. " Goodnight Strange lady " i said switching off my side of the lamp.

.

Around 12pm, i heard cries. I switched on the lamp and its was her crying. Wrapped in a ball way, shivering a bit. " what is it, can't a person sleep in

peace around here" i asked frustrated. " why are you crying Cora?" I asked..." i want to go home, it's cold and I'm hungry" she said in a tiny voice. " will you just come to bed, i don't bite" i said, she slowly stood up and slowly. I mean slowly walked to the other bed side. She got undercovers with the towel still wrapped around her body. She pulled up the covers and turned away from me. " i told you i do not bite didn't i?" I asked getting closer to her. I put my arm around her. I could feel her heart racing, body alarmed and restless. She only got to relax when she fell asleep.

[6/3, 19:16] Lynne: Continuing

Salvatore's POV

.

" good morning " i greeted her as i found her in the bathroom. It seemed like she had just taken a bath. She was wearing my t-shirt at last, she was weirdly standing in front of the mirror, doing nothing but looking at her mirror image. I ran the shower, " do you know what i see whenever i look into the

mirror?" She asked asked without even greeting me back. " A killer " she added before i could ask. She then walked out of the bathroom and i followed her. " why would you call yourself a killer?" I asked. " keeping me here is not going to, it's not working for me. I need to speak with my psychiatrist" she said pressing the remote control and the curtains drew open. She went and stood over the balcony door which was locked. " i just asked you a question Cora " i said. " if you're going to keep me here for God knows how long will you atleast get me food and clothes?" She asked, glanced at me then back outside the glass door. " i take it that you are not going to answer me" i said sighing and then i went and took a shower.

.

" you did blame me for Nina's death, so I'm standing here wondering if you're also blaming me for Miceal's death. Why haven't you blamed me yet...actually there won't be any need for that because i blame myself. If i had spent one more night at the residency then my Son would still be

alive. I killed him" she said still looking outside the glass door. I was wiping my hair using the bathroom towel while i had another one wrapped around my waist " Don't talk like that, you know that's not true " i said, walked towards her. Tried to embrace her but she pushed me away. " No let me speak, i killed him. I did it, i killed your Son so why haven't you blamed me yet?. Why don't you just leave me, hate me like i hate myself. Things would be just easier that way " she said looking at me in the eye. Her lips were quivering, " now i can't even look at his pictures. I can't face anything that has to do with him. I couldn't protect him, i couldn't save him. " she said then chuckled, she was acting strange. " so when you stand in front of me, apologising i actually wonder what exactly you're apologizing for... Do you know that The Don wanted to exert revenge on you. It's all he talked about while he held me captive. How you mercilessly killed his father, fed him to the Dogs. Do you know what he did to me, he called up all his friends and i was forced to take a bath in front of them while they made funny comments about my body. I was pregnant at that time and now you're

actually wondering. No infact everybody is wondering why i wear big ugly sweaters, why i hide my body. Not just that, one of his guys tried to force himself on me but The Don shot him. He shot him while he was on top of me and i got smeared with his blood. I saw a lot of people die, I've never seen so many dead bodies in my life. I have nightmares about it, even today i still have nightmares about it. I'm glad I'm not crazy, it could have got worse" she said walking around while shaking her head like a mad person. She then stood infront of me and faintly smiled while she cried. " i thought i lost you that morning, i thought you were dead. That too i still see in my dreams... by God's grace you survived but Miceal Died instead. He was just so young, barely 9months, he was so tiny. I didn't believe that he was really dead. I thought he was going to wake up and cry, i didn't cry. I bath him, it hit me when his kasket went down the ground. I cried when they drove me home, that's when I knew i had lost him. He's never going to come back is he?. He had your, your beautiful hazel blue eyes. I grieved all alone and where were you Salvatore, where were you when i

needed you around. When i needed you the most, you couldn't keep your promise. You promised that you'd always be around, all the step of the way. I went to your ward, begged you to come back to life. I raised the kids all on my own. Lorenzo would call crying while i had to study, i had to be strong for him. I had to be strong for you and them but who was strong for me?. I had to deal with your mother's insults, and then the doctor told us to switch off the machines because your condition was not getting any better. That day, i thought, i thought i was going to die. That day i went back to God whom I was so frustrated at. I prayed all night then i remembered what you said. That ' you'd never let me go' and i was not ready to lose you. Not you, i could've tolerated anything just not losing you. I waited for your return, i had a lot of things to tell you. I wanted you to hold me in your arms for a thousand hours while we talked. I wanted to cry in your arms, you've always fixed everything so i thought you could fix my shattered heart. Drive away the loneliness in me." She said

.

She hit me chest. " but you never did, you came back a different man. You forgot me, and all that we share. I couldn't believe it, and then again i had to be strong for you. There for you, you turned my life upside down. You turned my life into a nightmare, you were the one who was supposed to fix everything. Fix everything!, but you made things worse. You broke things, snapped and got angry at me with every chance you got. You blamed me for your situation, okay fine Salvatore. I know I'm to blame but couldn't you've seen that I've been through enough already. All i ever wanted from you was to just hold my hand and ask me if i was okay. Just once, two minutes of your time. That would've made a difference, maybe then i wouldn't have let you in. Let you see how grey my insides had turned. You never cared, you don't care. You don't!, you resented me. All you gave me was hate" She screamed hitting me harder. " I'm sorry i was so selfish, I'm sorry i hurt. I'm sorry i hurt you so much, but i do care. I know i did care. I might not have remembered you as

my wife but to me you were the mother of my kids and i cared. I was just so angry, i didn't feel man enough. I know didn't love you but i didn't hate you either. I could never hate you Cora. I love you ---" Shut up, you liar. Let me finish" she snapped furiously. I myself was crying, seeing her cry like that and knowing that it was all my fault broke my heart. " And then you left again, pathetic enough i begged you to stayed. I had hope that things were getting better during that week. I should've known that you were planning to leave, i had to find out along with everybody else. Poor Cora had to be there for her kids again, do you know how hard it was to deal with Lorenzo. Anger consumed him, he hit kids. Cried in my arms, i found comfort in alcohol. After all it helped me get rid of the noghmares. Your memories, Alcohol might let you forget someone stuck in your head but when someone's stuck in your heart, it sucks ----" I'm sorry that i left you all alone, but it wasn't easy for me too. I had to work hard so that i could come back home and fix things with you. You know i loved you before some of my memory came back?. I'm so sorry, i know that no amount of sorries

are gonna make things right but please give me
Another shot, give us another chance" i said holding
her hands. " you think it was tough out there, you
think it was easy for me here without you? You
thought that everyday single dat wasn't a goddamn
marathon of my life without you? ..." she asked in a
horsey little voice. She then slide and fell on her
knees

.

"... and then you came back and cheated, i never
thought i'd live to see that day. I waited for two
whole years not even once have i thought of
cheating on you. But when you returned you cheated,
it didn't take that much did it. Within 3months you
got tired, what about me Salvatore. The one who
waited for years?, you think I'm just blowing things
out of proportion. Everyone thinks i should have
forgave you by now, i admit that I'm little bit messed
up. After all this damage i can't help it, Somehow at
the back of my mind i thought you'd understand. I
wanted you to suffer, i want you to know how it feels
like to be alone. But i guess we're different that why

that's not happening with you. I wish i could could just forget you like you forgot me maybe then i'd be able to erase you from my heart. I don't want to love you anymore because it hurts. I don't want to love anything or anyone at all because when i love, i love too hard. I end up getting hurt. You onced said to me ' when you lose someone, it stays with you. Always reminding you how easy it is to get hurt'. So what s the point of loving when you know that oneday you're going to lose?... you asked me why i pretend as if i don't care as if i don't love you anymore?. Well guess what, i don't know why i pretended for so long. I don't know why i wasted somuch time pretending. I guess i just didn't want to feel like this. It hurts" she said crying. I hugged her, we were both on our knees crying. Thistime she let me hug her and actually hugged me back. " I'm sorry we lost our child, i won't stand here and pretend as if i know how you feel like. How much pain you're going through but i also lost him. I loved him as much as you did, i know I've messed up big time. You probably never want to see my face again, i can't fix this either but the least i could do is to be here for you. I also need you Cora, i

can't do this alone. I'm sorry i cheated. I was angry and drunk that's no excuse, I'm sorry i couldn't protect you from The Don, I'm sorry he crushed your spirit and confidence. We'll do this together, this too shall pass. You're a strong woman and i know you're going to fight this, together we're even stronger. We're going to get through this my heart beat. I'm here for you if you need anything, just let me in...share your pain with me, let me carry some of it for you" i said as we cried in each others arms. " I'm, I'm scared that if i let myself be happy for even one moment that the world is gonna come crushing down on me again. What if i let myself be happy and then suffer again?, bacause with me it's always like that...it goes like a merry go round, i always end up on the same spot. Sad, i can't let you in...it'd be better if we just stay apart. Even then I'd still love, i won't mean i don't love you because i do. I love you and I'll always do but i can't let myself get hurt again, loving you hurts" she stuttered, her lips were shaking. " it's part of life to get hurt, we can't always be happy. It doesn't work like that my love. I know you tend to run away from the things that hurt you but you can't

get rid of me that easily. I know I've hurt you a million times before but if you'd just give us one more chance, I'd spend the rest of my life making up for it. Today I promise you'd never cry because of me, you can't get rid of your happiness just because you're afraid it comes along with pain--- " she did the unthinkable and kissed me while I talked. I kissed her back...., " are you sure you want to do this " I asked as I was about to penetrate into her valley of fire as I remembered she liked to call it. " take the pain away " she whispered. With difficulty I managed to get in. We made love for hours.

.

I had a habit of messing up
Staying out late and getting drunk
I let you down a thousand times, broken promises
It's like I ran away from you
My career was my excuse
Until I saw you're about to drown in your own tears

.

And as you cried in my arms

You woke up my heart

And i saw again what i found in you

Cause her heart, her heart won't let me lose her

No matter what i try i just can't say goodbye and lose her

When all the faults were said and done

You were there to welcome me home

I was convicted cause your love never wavered

I know you love me more than me, and you vowed to love through anything.

I never had that kind of love that was forever.

.

And as you cried in my arms

You woke up my heart And i saw again what i found in you

Cause her love, her love won't let me lose her

No matter how i try i just can't say goodbye and

lose... i played the song as i was was driving to the warehouse where The Don was kept. I left Cora sleeping, ordered food for when she wakes up. Seeing her like that woke up the Kong in me and i knew i had to kill The Don whom my friends kept locked away in the warehouse so that i could kill him myself. The memories I had were enough for me to make him wince like a dog he was. He took away a lot from me, more than i took from him. It was around 5pm, i lost count of how many rounds we had but that doesn't matter. What matters is the passion, she left me wanting more and more. I couldn't get enough and neither did she.

I parked inside, Mbutho, Micheal, Rajesh, Tiaxiang were already there waiting for me.

" you don't know how long I've been waiting for this day" Mbutho said as i got out of the car. " let's get started, where are the guard dogs?" I asked as i lead the way. " already chained inside" Tiaxiang said. " i want him to watch as they feast on his flash. Atleast his father was dead when they enjoyed themselves on him" i said then clicked my tongue.

[6/3, 19:17] Lynne: Page 92

Salvatore's POV

.

" are you comfortable enough now, does it hurt?" i asked holding his face into my hand. I wanted to look into his eyes and see him tormented. We had light up a stove under the metal chair that he was nakedly sitting on. He was tied on the chair, busy screaming as his ass was getting fried. " Don't cry just yet mate" i said patting his cheek so hard. My guys were just standing on the far corner chatting as if nothing was going on. " I'm sure my wife must have begged you to let her go, do you have any idea what you did. You ruined my life, you destroyed my wife. You killed my son" i shouted . " but don't worry, you'll pay for your mistakes " i said chuckling a bit. A black man's face turned red? Now that's hilarious. I let him burn and scream until he passed out, while he was unconscious we cut his thighs' flash and put him on the bathtub filled with ice and he woke up instantly as his body felt cold. The ice all turned blood red. " you twisted son of a bitch, you won't get

away with this. Your day will come" he screamed and cried. " will somebody please make him shut up " i said angrily and irritated. " i thought you'd never ask, I'm starting to get some headache from all his screams " Tiaxiang said then put a tape on his mouth and his loud screams and cries were contained. He was groaning and moaning while tears streamed down his sorry face. " you're right about one thing, my mother is really a bitch anyways I'm not there today, we can discuss about that when we meet in hell... so here's what's going to happen, you're going to watch as those dogs feast on your flash. As you can see it's no longer intact. I thought i'd be just a little bit kind to you and give you a farewell gift. Since you've been complaining about how your DAD got eaten by the dogs and all that shit, i thought you might want to see how they enjoyed themselves on him. The only difference is that we're going to be using your flash to demonstrate. I hope you enjoy our little film MATE " i said then threw his flash to the dogs who caught it mid way and enjoyed themselves while he cried. " if you're done crying, shall we get back to business?" I asked five minutes

later. The dogs were still on to his flash. " Machete i think it's time his fingers got off the palm" i said. " i was beginning to think that i might have just wasted my gasoline coming all the way here" he said smiling. We got him to sit on the chair and cuffed his hands on top of table. " i think i want to hear him scream and beg for mercy" i said taking the tape off his mouth. He winced, closed his eyes, " let me grab a seat and enjoy" i said sitting down. He started screaming like a wounded dog he was. It didn't take that much to get his ten fingers off his palms. " he's just a pussy, why is he screaming like a little girl?" Micheal asked then clicked his tongue. " taste these and tell me how they taste like. I want to know if my Dogs had a wonderful feast or maybe they were just too hungry " i said forcefully feeding him his fingers which he coughed out and they hit my shirt. " you fool!, are you going to pay for the dry clean?" I asked after i punched him in the eye. " i hope to meet your Son and your baby mama in hell" he said after spitting, his eye was shut, blood dripping out of his mouth. " will somebody please kill the pussy already. I'm tired of seeing his frozen small dick and burnt

out ass" Mbutho said angrily. " what did you just say?" I asked frowning. " and your wife, you should've seen the terror in her eyes. She kept on begging me to let her go, and those slaps i gave her. She's going to remember those days for the rest of her life. You should've seen her scream and cry, she--

" shut up dammit " i screamed angrily strangling him.

" No, I'm not going to kill you like this. Where's the grinder" i asked leaving him as his eyes were coming out all red and his tongue was coming out as well. "

are you sure you want the grinder" Rajesh asked looking at me like i was going crazy or something. "

get me the damn grinder and stop asking me questions. You have no clue what my wife is going through, he broke my wife and he's going to be broken. I mean literally. " i said angrily.

.

" STOP, i think he's dead. He's dead, you can stop now" Micheal said holding me back. I had cut off his legs and arms. I put down the grinder and Rajesh disconnected it. " he's dead Kong" he confirmed

after checking his pulse. I took out my gun and shot him twice on the head. " where's the metal dustbin, i want him burned" i said taking my handkerchief and wiping away the blood on my face. I was covered in his blood. All that was left of him we burned along with my clothes, i was left in my boxers only. I drove home, it was around 21pm. Dad was in bad already, i took a long warm shower. Moisturized my body and wore my cologne then wore my tracksuits and sneakers. I drove to my penthouse.

.

" Hi" i got sturtled by the voice as i switched on the lights in the bedroom. It was Cora, i was suprised to find her still there. I thought she'd gone back home or something since the door was unlocked. " You are still here?" I asked walking towards the balcony, i unlocked the door and got out. " Ohh, you want me to leave ?" She asked sounding kind of disappointed. " No, that's not what i meant. I just thought you'd be gone when i return since the door was unlocked " i said said walking back inside. She was wearing my t-shirt. She got out of the bed and net me half way, " if

you want me to go then it's fine, I'll leave " she said looking down. I raised her head up by her chin, " Don't be like that" i said then kissed her forehead. " have you eaten?" I asked looking into her eyes. She looked down and came back with my hand, " what, what happened to your hand?" She asked sounding so worried. " it's nothing, I'm fine. Let me order pizza and ask Robison to bring you clothes " i said taking my phone out of my pocket. I did that and went to stand on the balcony, " Are you okay?" She asked standing beside me. " What do you mean?, i told you I'm fine" i said softly. " Not just that, after everything that has happened. Are you okay, i never asked and I've been thinking...this must also have a toll on you, it might not be the same but you must be going through something. You must be dealing with your own personal demons hence I'm asking you if you're okay. If you want to talk, I'm here for you " she said fidgeting with her fingers, she kept on stealing glances at me like a kid. " I'm good, thanks for asking" i said looking anywhere but her. " oh okay, I'm going to watch television. If you could call Robinson again, tell him to tell petunia to get me my

toiletries and tracksuits along with my a pai---" i killed him " i said cutting her off. " what?" She asked walking back to the balcony. " i killed The Don, cut him into peaces" i said turning around to face her. "..i thought that after killing him I'd find some sense of peace and closure but all i feel is anger and more anger. You should've seen his smiling face" i said. " change takes time to showcase, so that's how your hand turned red?" She asked asked holding my hand into her tiny hands. " Maybe we should both see a psychiatrist and pour our hearts out. It worked the last time we did it together. Just a couple of weeks is all we need " she said looking me in the eyes. " i don't know, I'll have to think about it " i said then sighed..." so that son of the devil is dead?" She asked and i nodded. " i hope he burns and his skin washes off in the lava of hell" she said thoughtfully angry. " i think you look beautiful when you're furious " i said said holding her waist. " flirting won't get you any where. It has been so long since you called me fat ass, i was unattractive not so long ago " she said, " i was stupid, let by gones be by gones . But it's a fact that your ass is big " i said said smiling.

" Fuck you " she said hitting my chest while smiling, i kissed her while getting my hands under the t-shirt. She held my hands in place, " I've been thinking " she said looking up at me with apologetic eyes. " seems like someone has been doing a lot of thinking lately" i said after sighing.

.

" Maybe we should take things slowly, I'm still working on myself and it seems like you need that too. It'd be better if we let ourselves heal first before we pick up where we left off, we can be there for one another. But we can't...you know what i mean, right now i just need to get better. I hope you understand?" She said after slowly explaining, " sure, if that's what you want " i said. " No, don't do that. I want to know what you think. What do you want Joaquin?" She asked looking all shades of guilty. " whatever makes you happy Cora, if you think that this is the best thing for the both of us then it's fine by me. We will do this together " i said, she sighed in relief. " thank you " she said smiling. " at least allow

me to kiss you while at this, and how long is this going to take?" I asked squeezing her ass. " What?, Alonzo can't get enough of Cora's ass" i said, " you remember?" She asked asked frowning. " our signature?. Yes. I got hold of all the wristwatches you bought me, i went into our room and some memories came back a little. I'm half there il mio cuore batte " i said, she smiled but then started to cry. " I love you " she said smiling and crying all at once. " i love you " i said then kissed her all over the face. " but there's one thing that hasn't been cleared yet" i said wiping her tears with my thumbs. " what?" She asked frowning. " have you forgiven me yet?" I asked seriously. She looked down and then back up. " i wouldn't have allowed you to make love to me if i hadn't forgiven you." She said. " you want to hear it don't you?" She said chuckling while shaking her head. " i forgive you " she said. " but i'd also like to apologise for keeping Mi-, our son a secret. And for lashing out on you whenever you wanted to talk and for purposefully making you wait on my birthday and for...for getting crippled " she said said then looked down. " all what you mentioned above is justified,

there's no need to apologise. Though I must say you're a hard woman to deal with when you're frustrated " i said, she giggle a bit. The pizza got delivered. We went in and had it while we watched out videos. We were watching the one where all the friends were gathered, doing karaoke.

.

We were laughing, well i was laughing my ass out and she was laughing there and there. But she suddenly kept quite. " hey What's wrong?" I asked holding her hand we were covered in a blanket, in front of the couch. " Nothing, I'm just sleepy" she lied through her teeth. I could tell she was lying. ..."
we had sex without using a condom...You slept with another woman months back. I could catch disease and the last thing I want is to fall pregnant again. How could i have been so stupid " she said, seemingly frustrated with herself. " we used protection... she and i " i said then cleared my throat. " we'll get tested for every possible sexually transmitted disease if that's what you want " i said . " if you used a condom it's good, there won't be any

need for that. I just need morning after pill ASAP. Everything is going to be okay" she said, calming herself down. " it wouldn't be so bad if you fell pregnant though " i said, she gave me a dead stare. " i was just kidding, please don't kill me" i said raising my hands up. " well it's not funny" she angrily said. " I'm at the verge of starting my career, the girls and Lorenzo are still so young... please don't ever make a joke like that, you don't want to deal with me when I'm pregnant." She said then tried to stand up. " Hey, I'm sorry. Come back here, i was just kidding " i said pulling her back down, " stop it " she said laughing as i started tickling her. " we just got back together, we should be laughing and smiling not what you're doing right now " i said.

.

Cora's pov

.

Robinson dropped my staff around 5am, he had to go back home and take Lorenzo to school. I took a quick shower, dressed up and Salvatore drove me to

school. We passed at the pharmacy and bought morning after pills which i took immediately. When my classes were over, i found him waiting by the gate. In his Austin Martin, " we gotta talk about you wearing tracksuits in summer. The sun is scorching hot" he said as we hugged. " Don't start with me. " i said as he opened the door for me. " serious babe" he said. " Salvatore, don't. And Don't call me babe, you never call me babe. I don't like it" i said warningly, "there's nothing wrong with me calling you babe, you're just being extra now. did you happen to drive my car while i was knocked out because it seems like it crushed into something? " he asked. I started to laughing, " what's funny?" He asked frowning and stupidified. " first you call me extra and now you're asking me what's funny." I said laughing my he threw me one of those scary looks that i quickly kept quite. " it was that she-devil, your so called mother Nomsa. And she called our kids illegitimate, you should just go and shoot her " i firmly said. " would you like some ice cream?" He asked out of nowhere. " are you kidding me, i just gave you the culprit's name and you're asking me if i want ice cream " i asked

loudly. He just shrugged his shoulders. We passed by our favourite best ice cream shop and he bought two vanillas and two strawberries. "all this for me?" I asked. "one is for Lorenzo, and the other two is for the girls" he said. "and you" i asked. "I'm good" he said. We drove home in total silence, i was busy enjoying my ice cream.

.

Anyways two weeks later my exams were all done, i rang the door bell at Amanda's place. Nelly her helper opened the door. I haven't been there since the fight we had, "good day Nelly" i said smiling. I had a bottle of wine and a bunch of white roses in my hands. "good day Mrs Salvatore, if you're looking for Amanda. She's outside in the garden" she said without wasting anytime. "okay, thanks" i said smiling. I then went to the the gardening. Which was behind the house. It was beautiful and well kept. "hey mandison" i said poking her as she was sitting on the bench, lost in her own thoughts. "whoa!" She exclaimed. "you scared me, hi. I didn't see you coming" she said said standing up with a hand on

her chest. She was wearing a beautiful summer dress. " Hi" i said smiling and hugging her. She hugged me back, alarmed. " i bought you these and this wine" i said giving her the floors and putting my bottle of wine on the bench. " i thought i'd never see you again" she said hugging me again, she cried and i ended up crying. " okay, that's enough " i said pulling away. " i missed you Coh and i am sorry for those things i said" she said chuckling a bit. " let's sit down and talk, no let me call Nelly . She'll bring us glasses " she added.

.

..." he did what?" She asked asked after i told her everything abd that Salvatore cheated on me. " hey relax, we're cool now. It's in the past, right now i just need to get my best friend back" i said smiling. " and all your other friends. So that we can search for whoever that bitch is and kill her" she said angrily. " Amanda please" i said warningly. " okay fine, since you've started working on yourself. Look at you wearing a summer dress and that too so short, i'll consider taking you back" she said checking me out.

" am I forgiven yet" i asked. " of course silly, come here" she said squeezing me into a hug. We drove to the other girls, one by one till late at night. I dropped her home and went home myself.

.

" you're here?" I asked Salvatore as i put my keys and bag on the kitchen counter. " i thought you said you'd come home early. I took the kids to bed, I'm actually finishing up with baking the twins birthday cake. " he said then gave me a slight kiss. " Ohh " i murmured. " Don't tell me you forgot their birthday " he said. " No, it's nothing like that. Are you done yet?, let me help you with whatever is left" i said taking out an apron.

.

We celebrated their birthday as a family but i later on found myself in the cemetery with a single red tulip. A red tulip is known for representing endless, eternal love. Salvatore told me this, he's the one who buys me tulips after all. Other than that i was never a girl who liked flowers and all that stuff. " i figured I'd find you here" i voice said behind me. And i knew it was

him without even looking, i stood up. " i was about to leave" i said wiping away my tears and turning around to face him. " Don't go just yet, let's sit down and talk " he said, so we set in front of his grave. " i saw how sad you were, i knew from yesterday that you were thinking about him. The truth is i was too, this is a sad day for both of us. But it's also the happiest day of our live, atleast we should make it like that. i thought we should shower the ones we have left with love. We have two beautifully baby girls who were also born in this day, atleast we're left with something. We should try and let go, try to be happy" he said. " are you saying that i should just forget all about him, i can't do that. He's my son too" i said. " No, I'm not saying that. All I'm saying is that we should keep in our hearts and memories but move on with our lives. It won't be fair on the girls if we keep on disappearing every after part, he'll always stay in our hearts Cora but we got to let him go okay" he said looking at me. I slowly nodded. " I'm sorry, next time I'll not come here. I just---" it's okay, let me take you home and we can watch a movie with the kids" he said. We stood up to leave.

.

Early december friday night my girls and i were at club Paradisè, after such a long time. We were on the VIP section having drinks..." i just think that you should take him back before he cheats again" Priya said. " you don't know what you're talking about, you're probably drunk " i said pouring myself a glass of wine. " i am drunk?, look at you" she said chuckling. " Micheal wants another kid" Amanda said after gulping down the whole glass of wine. " Wow" Esihle exclaimed. " Leonardo is old enough now, give the man a baby" Divyanka said. " I don't want another baby, you know how i fell pregnant. I've compromised with Leonardo already. My career is starting to blossom. Plus I'm studying part time. He just have to understand " she said frustrated. " I've been thinking of getting rid of my eggs. I'm so not getting pregnant again" i said thoughtfully. " ohh shut up Cora, you're not helping at all. Look Amanda if you don't give him what he wants then he might start loo---" hey guys i think that's the girl who fucked with my husband " i said looking at the bar

counter. She was with another man and two girls. " which one" they all asked at once. " the one with the blonde hair, it a pink dress" i said. " excuse me" Amanda said standing up and we all followed.

.

" excuse me " she said poking the girl who turned around. " yes" she said in her tiny whoring voice. She was batting her fake lashes. " are you the 360 degrees whore that slept with my husband " i asked coming forward. " Now which one is your husband because i do not recognize you" she said. I found myself pulling her fake hair. " you fucking 360 degrees whore" i screamed as we fought. Then the fight begin between her girls and mine. I don't know how but i broke a bottle on her head and she fell down. The bouncers came a little bit too late.

.

" Good lord Cora, you fight in the clubs now?" Salvatore asked driving home, they called him and called an ambulance for that girl. She was just unconscious. " i hope your 360 degrees whore dies

and don't you dare shout at me. You had no right to take my giant cucumber and give it to her" i shouted then cried. " okay, I'm sorry my heart beat. But what's a 360degrees whore?" He asked, but i could feel him chuckling. " i call ger that because she goes around opening her legs for every man...I'm so drunk, i feel like puking. Please stop the car" i said. I wasn't feeling so good. " that's because you had a whole bottle of wine after hitting that 360degrees whore" he said stopping the car while laughing at me.

.

[6/3, 19:17] Lynne: Page 93

Cora's pov

.

I was woken up by Salvatore, " Cora wake up, the police are here to arrest you " he said and i fastly sat on my butt. " police?, jail? I'm going to jail?" I asked panicking. " you killed her, she's dead Cora " he said. " what?, she couldn't have died. It was just a small bottle" i said unbelievably. " I'll talk to George, maybe he'll manage to obtain bail for you. This is a mess, i

don't understand why you had to hit her" he said standing up. " i killed someone and I'm going to jail, please don't let me go to jail. Please Salvatore " i pleaded holding him by the collar. " creasing my shirt won't help the situation, you might want to take a shower because you might be in for a long long time" he said, that's when i started to cry. " no, i can't go to jail. What about my kids, you, my career " i said crying. " you didn't think of that, when you went ahead and killed someone " he said. " you better go downstairs before they come right up" ge added. I walked towards the door while i cried, " hey Cora, there might be a possibility that i was just kidding " he said as i opened the door. I turned around and he was laughing. " Joking?, you were joking. This is all funny to you?" I asked charging towards him. But he ran, jumped on top of the bed. " i hate you Salvatore, this is not funny okay" i screamed crying while i pointed at him. " Hey, it was just a joke. Don't cry" he said trying to touch me. " No don't, don't touch me and get out of my room before I kill you" i snapped angrily pushing him away. He just looked at me like i was going crazy or something, he was in an awe. "

people can't even joke around in this house" he murmured walking towards the door. I suddenly felt like puking, i rushed to the bathroom and did just that.

.

I felt so sick " I'm never drinking again" i said as i walked in to the kitchen where there was Gugu and Petunia. " where's Salvatore?" I asked sitting down. " he just left, he didn't say where he was going. But he looked so pissed, he banged the door on his way out" Gugu said. " Good riddance " i murmured to myself. " i wonder where he slept because we agreed to not share the bed so long " i asked myself. " good morning mommy " Lorenzo screamed running inside the kitchen. He then sat on the high chair, he was followed by his younger sisters. " i haven't received my morning kiss yet, so how could it be a good morning?" I asked looking at him. He stood up and kissed my cheek. " Good morning mommy " he said once again. " good morning Mongezi, how was your sleep" i asked smiling. The twins were busy nudging me to pick the up. " mommy" Maia

screamed hitting me harder. " Hey, that hurts okay " i said warningly. And then they both started to hit me even more harder, while one laughed and the other one had a huge smile on her face. " where's my belt, Lorenzo please borrow me your belt" i said that and they started to run giggling. I chased them, they kept on doing the same thing until breakfast was served. " mom, can i go and see grandpa. I miss him and then i also would like to go to Kendra's home." Lorenzo said," maybe we could all go, i miss that old man too" i said.the twins both started to clap their hands in excitement. " And Kendra?" He asked. " I'll speak to your father, maybe a sleep over could be arranged" i said thoughtfully. I prepared apple pie and we drove there around 12pm.

.

One thing i hated about that place was the fact that it had a lot of security we had to go through.

Secluded communities are just bullshit, plus father in law had his own personal securities too. They let us in after calling inside the house, we knocked on the main door. Knocked for a couple of times before

Joaquin opened for us, " what are you doing here " i asked eyebrows raised. " this is my home, remember " he said said. " Papa" Maia and Miracle started their march again. " so the question is what are you doing here?" He asked after picking them both up. " we're here to see father, this is our home too" i said pushing my way inside. " So where is he?" I asked after putting the pie on the kitchen counter. " he's out, in a meeting in sandton" he said. " we'll wait" I said. " Papa can i use grandpa's play station " Lorenzo asked. " sure" Salvatore said but he's eyes were on me. " Go and play with Enzo" he said putting the girls down. They ran, " I'm going to sleep " he said after glaring at me for the longest of times. " Are you upset because I was angry because you made a silly joke?" I asked holding his hand. He turned around, came closer and closer until I was leaning on the kitchen counter. " Silly joke?" He asked hovering over me. I hate that, it makes him look and feel so dominant because I'm short and he's tall. Way tall that i don't even reach his height while wearing 6inch heels. " Maybe silly is not such a kind word but that was a bad joke" i said , my back

was bended over the kitchen counter. " let by gones be by gones" i added with a frown. " I'm 40 years old, i have no time to get upset over silly things" he said. " whoa, you're 40 years old already?" I asked chuckling. " what's funny?" He asked looking so crossed. " ohh sorry, i was just saying that the last time i checked you were 37 and now you're 40. Years really pass by so easily " i said then cleared my throat. " yeah, you're right. The last time i checked you were just 19 and look at you now all 25" he sarcastically said. "Hey, what's that supposed to mean? Are you trying to say I've grown old" i asked feeling so insulted. " exactly what you meant when you mocked my age" he said. " okay, so i guess we're fair and square now. If you could please get out of my way then" i said then took a deep breath. " when are we moving back into our room because I'm running out of patience with this arrangement " he said, but his eyes were on my lips rather than my eyes. " let me see, therapy is getting done within a week. I'm going to start working out and then the kids are all going to school next year and I'll graduate and get a job offer. Once i start working

things will get hectic so how about forever, just getting out of my way dude" i said so upset, he just indirectly called me old. Okay i did too, so then why was i upset?. He without a warning kissed me, i found myself kissing him back hungrily.he picked me up and put me on the kitchen counter. His tongue explored every corner of me while his hands were all over me. " I want you" he said looking into my eyes and i actually nodded. We continued kissing, " you guys aren't planning on doing what i think you're about to do in my kitchen, are you" a voice asked, shit it was father inlaw. I quickly jumped off the kitchen counter and pulled down my skirt. " Father!" Alonzo exclaimed then sighed. " I'm just going to go to the kids " i said weirdly. " good day Cora " he said. " hi" i said waving. The situation got even more stranger.

.

We were done with therapy, the end results were visible in me. We always worked good together, so on the 15th of december we were going to take a vacation to Miami, all of us as friends. I was busy

packing my bags because we were going to leave the following day. Even though I've been feeling so sick lately and moody, " let me do that for you, you look like you're about to faint. Sit down " he said as he walked in. He took the jean that i was trying to fold and i sat down on the bed. " can't i just go to my parents, the last trip we took together was so horrible and i swore to myself that i was never going to put myself in the same position" i said. " we talked about this didn't we?" He asked " yes but--" no buts Cora, you don't really expect me to go there all alone" he said, i sighed and kept quite. " plus i was hoping we could... you know" he said then came and kissed me. I was busy smiling like a teenager in love. " Ohh...stop it" i said pushing him away while smiling. " I'm going to let it slide for now" he said then went back to folding my clothes. " you were not really considering taking this were you?" He asked as my human cranial book showed up. " and this, and this" he said as more books showed up. " come on, what if i get bored" i said. " you gotta be kidding me " he said then put them on the side. " since we'll be leaving early in the morning, could you drive me to

the pharmacy. I need to buy a few things" i said, he loked at me with questioning eyes. " okay" he said shrugging his shoulders.

.

So the next day we bid our kids goodbye, you can imagine how that went. We met at the airport, they were so loud. I was leaning on Salvatores arm, will holding on to it. " what's wrong with her?" Amanda asked. I was wearing sunglasses and tracksuits along with my sneakers. I had my hoodie pulled over my head. " she's been sick lately " Salvatore answered. " I'm still here you know" i said taking off my sunglasses and hoodie. " hi" i said said hugging them all one by one. " so here's what I've been thinking, we'll party alone and the boys will party alone." Esihle said. " that's not such a bad idea if you want to come back home without a husband " i said and they all laughed. " so when is the flight departing, i can't stand here any longer" i asked hanging my sunglasses on my vest. " what goes down in Miami anyways, who voted for Miami. Because i wasn't there when the decision was made " Priyanka asked.

" I'd also like to know" Divya added. The guys looked at each other and then laughed, we were left frowning. " what's so funny ?" Siwe asked. Sandile and siboniso weren't there. The last time i saw those two, can't remember. " ouch" Kevin said. " we as your husbands chose the destination" Mbutho said. " is it because of the beaches " Esihle asked. " the beaches and the Casinos " the guys said in unison. " then why not Las Vegas?" Priya asked. " Miami has the best beachs and partying spots plus the tourist attractions " Tiaxiang said. " i think that's our flight guys let go" Michael said. " you can take me anywhere in the world, i don't mind. As long as I'll come back home still in one piece" i said raising my hands up. " plus we haven't never been to Miami " Amanda said poking me. We both laughed, " Miami here we come" we both said then giggled.

.

It was a 17hours flight, we got there by 22pm and checked into a hotel. It was good that we checked into a hotel because the last time we checked into a rented house and things turned out to be so horrible.

" Good night " i said getting undercovers after taking off my shoes. " aren't you going to eat or go down to the beach" he asked. Taking off his clothes. " it's 22pm, good night " i said once again. I was sleeping in my trackpants and vest, all i did was wipe off my make up, take off my bra without taking off my vest and then take of my sneakers. " are you sleeping already?" He asked getting undercovers. We haven't shared a bed in ages, and when we finally did i was too tired. He side then switched off the sidelamps. We slept with him cuddling up to me, i could feel his bulge poking my ass...i was woken up by Salvatore who was whispering sweet something into my ear. I opened up my eyes and he was staring at me so closely. " it's 8am" he said removing my messy hair off my face. " you took a bath already " i asked. He just smiled and kissed my forehead. " we have a lot to do today, we're going site seeing. I ordered breakfast, go and take a shower. " he said looking so excited. " you look happy" i said. " that's because i am here in this elegant hotel room, beautiful city with the most beautifully woman I'm inlove with " he said. I couldn't help but smile, " I haven't seen you

this happy for years" i said then got out of the bed. I took a quick shower, blow dried my hair and let my golden brown colored afro lose. I wore white shorts, pink crop top, white sneaker then tied my red scotch shirt on my waist. " how do i look" i asked Salvatore as i walked into the balcony from which you could see the beach. " wow, ummh" he exclaimed. " what, is it that horrible. Too skimpy, I'll go and change" i said feeling so exposed. " No, no don't. You look sexy...i was just suprised. I haven't seen you wearing clothes like these in ages " he said said pulling me to him. I was sitting on his lap. Breakfast was already there, on the table infront of him. " really " i asked. " you look gorgeous " he said putting his hand on my bare waist. " let's have breakfast before it gets cold" i said quickly jumped to the empty chair next to him. He laughed at me.

.

So we met up down at the hotel lobby, and toured the city in a limousine. Well the tour ended up with us girls doing some shopping and the guys went to the Casino. Salvatore wasn't back when I came back to

the hotel, i took a quick shower, shaved my legs, moisturized my body, wore my channel Coco cologne, did my make up. Red lipstick .Put on my new red lingerie, high hills and then put on the accompanying gown. The candled light romantic dinner i asked for was arranged in the balcony. And the music player was set, the bed was set.

Everything was good, all i did was just wait for him. He came in just when i was losing my patients. " i thought you'd never come" i said as he walked in. " go and take a shower " i said standing in the middle of the room. " what's the occasion?" He asked, he seemed tipsy. " it's a dinner treat, hurry the food is getting cold" i said smiling. " okay" he said.

10minutes later he came back with a towel wrapped around his waist. " come" i said already standing near the bed with the hotel white gown. " are you okay, you seem a bit nervous. " he asked as i helped his put on the gown. I tied it up after he dropped the towel on the floor, made sure not to look at his giant cucumber. Not just yet, " all is well" i said. He put on the sleeper. " come" i said pulling him towards the balcony. " come and sit" i said pulling a chair for him.

" this is getting weirder by minutes " he said sitting down. We had candle light dinner over a small conversation. " you look beautiful, appetising " he said checking me out. " thanks" i said smiling. " don't you want to go to bed ?" I asked standing up after drinking up my glass of wine. " I'm coming " he said still drinking. I went in and played the song which i had kept on repeat. " and where did you getting the music player, i thought we had non here" he said walking inside. " i was hoping that maybe we could get it down tonight " i said dropping down my gown. He just froze on the same spot.

the mood is set, uh huh

So you already know what's next, uh huh ahh

Tv on blast turn it down turn it down, don't want it clash when my body is screaming out. Now, i know you're hearing it. You got me moaning now. I got secrets that i want to show you, i got secreats i'ma drop then to the floor ohh. And no teasing, you waited long enough.

Go deep i'ma throw at you, can't catch it.

Don't hold back, you know i like it rough

Now I'm feeling you huh, now you're liking it huh

.

so why you standing over there with your cothes on.

Baby strip down for me, go and take them off

Don't worry baby i'ma meet you half way.cause i know you wanna see me.

Almost there, so baby don't stop what you're doing... no heels, no shirt, no jeans, all I'm in is just skin. Your skin,...all i wanna see ypu is just skin. You're a beast baby the songs kept on playing.

.

I walked up to him and untied his gown. Slowly took it off. " and why didn't i see this coming?" He asked chuckling, i put my lips. " shh" i said putting my index finger on his lips. " okay" he murmured smiling, almost laughing. " don't laugh okay " i said warningly and he nodded. I started kissing him, he tried to hold my waist but got hold of his hands. " try and keep your hands to yourself " i whispered. He chuckled,

even today i still find his chuckles sexy. I kised his jaw line all the way to his sexy long big neck. My hands on his chest busy massaging his nipples, his heart started to race and his breathing accelerated. I planted kisses down to his shaved chest, till in nibbled one of his nipples. I was busy sucking on it, my other hand found it way to my giant cucumber. I was doing all this while looking up at him, he froze a bit as i got hold of his male rod. I kissed him all the way down, passed his six pack. Then squirted down to give him a hand job, i kissed his cucumber all the way to his balls. Kissed the vein between them. He couldn't help but grab my hair. While he groaned, all the laughing gone. I drew one of his balls into my mouth. Came back to his cucumber and put it into my mouth. Sucked him until he cursed. " fuck, yes baby, fuck" he cursed. He fucked my mouth, i romanced him for 15-20 minutes. Then pushed him to the near by couch, sat him down. I took off my thong only, got ontop of him. Rubbed his pink head against the labias of my valley of fire. " hands to yourself Mr Salvatore " i said as he tried to hold my waist and pull me down. I wanted to hear him beg

and cry for it, " Cora " he said frustrated. " what?" I asked smiling. I then slowly slide it in, biting my lower lip. I held on to his shoulders, let him hold my waist while i moved up and down slowly, side to side and front to back. " mmmh, aah" i couldn't help but moan while biting my lip. I got off him held on to the couch while he tapped it from behind, spanking my ass. " harder" i screamed as i could feel my orgasm building up. " fuck " he cursed fucking me harder and roughly. We both cum at once, my knees felt so wobbly.

.

The next round was under the shower, he had me pinned against my wall.

3rd round on the bed, i had my legs on an angle of 180°, and he was sucking my bud. I was grabbing on to his hand, screaming with my eyes closed. He kept his tongue going in circles, in and out. Pulled my but out with his lips, i was wet. " yes, uhh huh joaquin. Oh fuck baby " i screamed out his name. He teased me with his pick dick head like i teased him. That was a pure torment, he finally penetrated and i

was holding on to his masculine back, scratching it. He flipped me over later and i ride him like a cow girl. The fourth round was on the bathtub, that was one of the most blissful nights of my life. Even though it left my pussy all recked and on fire. "Thank you for the most insane sex, i love you" he said kissing my forehead. " i love you " i said smiling. We slept staring into each others eyes. Good thing i bought a lot of morning after pills.

.

I had my morning after pill as soon as i woke up. We had breakfast after taking a shower together, we all then went down to the beach, played volley ball. We went clubbing, gambling, shopping, site seeing, tasted a lot of dishes. Some made me puke,we went on yatch parties. or we'd sometimes just sit around the fire down the beach. Going home was such a shame.

[6/3, 19:17] Lynne: Page 94

Cora's pov

.

We returned from Miami on the 22nd of december, 3 days just before Christmas. on the 23rd I had just came back from a morning jog, i decided to start exercising again after such a long time. I got muscle cramps here and there, i found Salvatore in the kitchen with the kids. He was preparing breakfast, while they made loud noise. " you should have just took my advice and joined me in the gym. Look at you, you're panting " he said, i drank water from my bottle. " it felt so good, i passed by the lake. So beautiful " i said. " I'm going to take a shower and then we'll all go for Christmas shopping. Shopping on the 24th is always horrible" i said. " mom, what are you going to get me for Christmas" Lorenzo asked. " mom i want Barbie the doll" Maia said. " mom i want Bambi, and sponge Bob and that Sharko robot" Lorenzo screamed. " Mom i was a dog too, and a play house. Lorenzo has a car. I also want one" Maia said. Miracle kept on poking me. I looked at her, she had tears in her eyes. " what would you like for Christmas princess " i asked picking her up. I kept on suggesting things and she'd shake her head no. " excuse us, you can ask your father for whatever

you want" i said putting her down. " come here and tell Papa what you want " Alonzo said and i passed Miracle to him. I felt like crying too, she has never called me mother before. When she cried, she cried in silence or rolled angrily on the the floor. To understand how she like, you had to look into her eyes. Make sure to double check, all she did was point at things. I took a shower, wrapped a towel around my body as i got out of the shower. I went to the bathroom and took out jeans, undergarments, white t-shirt and high heels. I put the items on the bed, went and sat infront of the dressing table to moisturise my body and make up my face.

.

" are you okay " Salvatore asked putting his hands on my shoulders. I didn't even see him coming. " yeah, I'm good" i said faintly smiling and putting my hand on top of his. " okay then, I'm going to change " he said said then kissed the top on my head. " do me a favour and wear jeans and a white t-shirt along with your white Nike air max sneakers." I said " anything youwant Mrs Salvatore " he said then walked into the

closet. I finished dressing up then went to help the girls change into white t-shirts and jeans. Then white sneakers, Lorenzo also wore the same. " okay, let's go" i said closing the door after buckling up the kids in the SUV 4x4 we were going in.

.

We did shopping, groceries first. I was pushing the twins in their pram while he pushed the trolley and Lorenzo was walking on my side. We then went to the gifts shop, bought gifts for family and friends. Ordered gift from a toy store which were going to be delivered on Christmas day. After that we went to the spur and had lunch. We came home around 6pm after watching an animated film in the cinema. My feet were swollen as i took off my high heels, while sitting on the bed. We bought pizza for dinner and i asked petunia and Gugu to deal with the kids. Alonzo had an emergency he had to take care of at hotel Paradisè. I took a bath, went downstairs and got myself 4slices of pizza which i had in bed. While i watched a romcom movie on my laptop, it was hilarious that i found myself laughing out loud.

" i could hear you laughing from the gate" Alonzo exclaimed walking in, he threw the car keys on the coffee table and took off his jackets. It was 9pm, " you seem agitated, what happened?" I asked pausing my movie. " whatever it is that's making you laugh, i could use that" he said taking off his clothes. Which he threw on the couch. " so what are you watching " he asked getting undercovers in his boxers only. " you won't catch the joke really, it's some silly romcom but what are you so stressed out just spit it out" i said. " isn't it that stupid receptionist of mine, she mixed up bookings. Now I've lost fifteen customers who were supposed to check in insuits this morning. Now they've checked into some other hotel, not just that. We're running out of rooms. You know how festive seasons can be" he said then clicked his tongue. He then took my piece of pizza. " not my pizza, hey go and get yours" i said trying to retrieve it from him. " it's just a one piece " he said holding my hand. " I'm starving and my feet are swollen from all the walking. You're not being fair right now" i said folding my arms. " I'm tired too, I've just come back from work. Can i have dinner?" He

asked looking at me . " you're bullying me Salvatore " i said standing up. I went downstairs, warmed up four pieces of pizza for him then poured juice into a jug. I also got myself vanilla ice cream then went upstairs to our room. I found him laughing, " no, you didn't." I exclaimed, he started my movie all over again. " this is so funny" he said laughing. " here's your dinner" i said offering him the tray. " thanks " he said taking it. I took my bowl of ice cream then went to get on my side of the bed. " this is so funny " i imitated him. " can i carry on where i left off" i asked. " I'm still watching " he asked said. " it's my movie and it's my laptop, you have your own laptop. Please, i want to finish watching my movie then go to sleep" i said firmly. " will you just please keep your voice down. I'm trying to listen here" he said. " i want my laptop Salvatore " i said warningly. " why don't we just watch the movie together. Why are you being so dramatic" he said." I'm going to ask you for one last time" i said but he ignored me flatly. I got out of bed and went to the bathroom, got a glass of water. I walked to his side of the bed. He was too concentrated on the movie that he jumped off the

bed as i poured water down his head. " what the fuck, are you crazy?" He asked angrily but I was furious. " i warned you not once, not twice but thrice. You might as well take a shower. " I said then got back to bed. " you know, I'm beginning to think that you're going crazy. No actually, i don't think...You're absolutely crazy. You should get admitted into a mental asylum." He said fuming then went into the bathroom. I sighed, smiled then had my ice cream. " call me crazy one more time, next time the water might come out of the stove" i screamed after him.

.

I was busy decorating the Christmas tree, Gugu was helping me. Lorenzo, the girls and Alonzo were playing football outside. The sun was scorching hot. I suddenly felt like puking, rushed to the bathroom. " are you okay " Gugu asked, outside the bathroom. I stood up after a while and washed my mouth then got out, i found Gugu standing on the door. " are you good?" She asked, i nodded and went to sit on the couch. " maybe it's the jogging, i feel so tired. And the eggs smelt so awful. Let's continue " i said

walking back to the Christmas tree. " I'll be back" i said then walked to the kitchen, i got four glasses of juice in a tray then went out to offer it to Salvatore and the kids. " i hope you didn't poison this juice" he said drinking it up. " no, i just put in 6 sleeping tablets." I said. He paused and looked at me with a frown. " relax, i was just kidding" i said chuckling. " when are your grandparents landing?" I asked. " they'll call once they get to tge airport. It should be around 5pm. Why do you ask?" He asked. " i want to prepare dinner, and also. I invited my family and my two cousins for Christmas. They'll arrive tonight. I hope it won't be a problem." I said, " cousins?" He asked. " yeah, i told you about them. My extending family, we're good now remember?. So they wanted to meet you and see where i live. Nandipha works as a cleaner in Kevin's company. You'll get to see her. Actually they wanted me go go down to durban like i did before. We should go and see them sometime " i explained. " are the rooms going to be enough to accomodate all these people?" He asked. " the rooms should be enough since we've moved back to our room" i said. " they're all your guests" he said

they Lorenzo started to drag him to come and play. I went back inside. " you guys are going to help me with dinner before Robinson drive you home. Plus you'll be getting bonus " I said to petunia and Gugu. " that's why I love you" petunia said hugging me. He perfume was so offish. " yeah yeah" i said smiling but pushing her away. We prepared a lot of dishes and they were driven home.

.

I was chilling in front of the television, watching really house wives of Atlanta. The kids were upstairs taking a bath, i felt so tired to even bath them. So i let them mess with the bathroom, it made them feel grownish. Salvatore was out to fetch his grandparents. My cousins called, they needed to be fetched from the bus station and i was the only one at home. It was 6pm, thank God mom and dad drove. I helped the kids dress up in their PJs and we got into my car. I drove to the bus station if you're happy and you know it clap you hands we sang along as i put on the kid's songs. We always did that, it connected us.

.

" whoa guys, and who's this?. I didn't know that such a lot of people would come. Otherwise i wouldn't have took the kids along." I exclaimed as i found a whole lot of people in the bus station. So it was nandipha and her three kids then Thandi and her little brother mvelo and there was this other little girl Thandi was carrying. " and who's this cute here" i asked playing with the girl. " she's so cute " i said taking her from Thandi. " you can load you bags in" i said opening the boot. " so how is your new job treating you?" I asked nandipha. " it's okay, i can't really complain because the payment is high. It's just that the working hours are irregular " she said all that in Isuzulu and i had to concentrate more to catch up. " that's great and you Thandi, how is your fiance " i said. She smiled. " he's fine" she simply answered. I got my three kids to sit on the front sit while they all squeezed at the back seats. We got home 40 minutes later.

.

I parked infront of the house, my kids were already

sleeping. " I'll be back, you can offload your bags so long" i said warningly inside the house. " Mrs S" i screamed giggling as i found grandma and grandpa in the living room. " I've been waiting for you for so long" grandma complained. " sorry grandma, i was out to fetch my family. " i said after we hugged. " grandpa, how are you doing?" I asked. He smiled at me" good" he shortly said. " where's Joaquin , come. I want you to meet some people and your grandkids have grown so much. You won't even recognise them" i said pulling her outside.

[6/3, 19:17] Lynne: Page 95

Cora's pov

.

" i thought you said only two cousins we coming" Salvatore said as we were getting undercovers. My parents arrived just 30 minutes later after my cousins arrived. We all had dinner together, it was a houseful. And the kids were so noisy. Busy running around. The gifts were already wrapped and around the Christmas tree. " i didn't know they'd come with

their kids" i said. They had to share a room with their kids. Mom and dad had their usual room, grandpa and grandma their usual room. Then Connie and Charles had their sepate room. Nandipha and her three kids took the last room while Thandi and her little brother and her baby slept in petunia and Gugu's room. The house had guests room, petunia and Gugu's room,main bedroom, the twin's room, Miceal's room and then Alonzo's room. It had a total of 10bedrooms, the gueshouse had only four bedrooms which were used by the securities and robinson. " and then you had to drive at night, with my kids. We talked about you driving at night, didn't we?. You know exactly how i feel" he said, he was pissed. " I'm sorry, i had no other option " i said said putting my head on his shoulder as he leaned on the headboard. " what if something happened, you know i have a lot of enemies. Right now you're forcing me to get you bodyguards " he said so upset. " No, not bodyguards again. Nothing happened, I'm still alive, it will never happen again. It's just that Rob was not here, it was just an inconvenient situation. I promise to never drive again " i said then kissed his jaw line.

He was just sitting silently like a robot. i got ontop of him, kissed him but he didn't respond. " you of all people should know better than to drive at night...i d
Tried calling you. I was so worried when i couldn't reach you" he said. " I'm never driving at night again, nothing happened. I'm still alive. The kids are fine, I'm here" i said holding his face. " will this be enough to lighten up your mood?" I asked taking off my vest. " huh?" I asked as his eyes got fixed on my boobs. " is it me or your boobs just get bigger day by day?" He asked asked holding my boobs into his huge soft hands. " what are you talking---" then there was a knock on the door. " who's there"he asked firts. " it's me Nandipha, sorry to disturb you this late at night but could you maybe borrow me two pain killers. I promise to return them tomorrow " she said. " don't be silly, I'll get you the whole thing" i said putting on my vest. " where are you going to, what do you think you're doing " Salvatore asked through gritted teeth. " I'll be back soon" i said, then went to bathroom, i got a box of pain killer.

.

" you got a headache?" I asked walking out to her. I closed the door behind me. " No, it's not me, it's my daughter Sanele. I think she has flue." She said." In that case then let me check and see if i can find something in Lorenzo's med box. These are not suitable for kids under 12 years of age, they're too strong. You can go to the kitchen, get a glass of water so long. I'll meet you in your room. " i said. I got a few syrups for kids then went downstairs to her room. " here, let me check her head" i asked sitting on the edge of the bed. "She's burning up, bring me that thermometer" i said, we waited for atleast 5minutes. " this is not good, tell you what we'll take her to the clinic nearby tomorrow. Got and get a wet towel, put it on her forehead. We have a mattress in the store room. I think it's best if she uses, I'll go and get it while you help her take the medication." I said. I spent almost an hour helping nandipha out.

.

" not tonight Salvatore, I'm not in the mood okay" i said moving away from him. One minute i wanted

him close and then the next i was literally annoyed by him... early in the morning we were woken up by Lorenzo, Maia and Miracle jumping in our bed. " hey guys" i whined sitting upright. " happy Christmas mom" Lorenzo screamed then Maia imitated him like she always did. " it's merry Christmas guys not happy Christmas " i said giggling. " merry, merry,merry,merry" they kept on screaming while jumping up and down. " merry Christmas Mira" Alonzo said pulling Miracle and tickling her, she had her usual internal laughs we couldn't hear and the beautiful smile plastered on her face. Her hazel blue eyes twinkle. " tickle me Papa" Maia screamed seeking her father's attention. " come here, my first-class drama queen " he said said pulling Maia and tickling her. " what gift did you get for me the other day. I saw you and your dad walking towards that pawnshop " i said pulling Lorenzo to my thighs. " it's a suprise mommy" he said putting his tiny hands on his face. " mmh, i see. My little rascal has a suprise for me. I can't wait but guess what?. I also have a suprise for you" i said tickling him. " what is it mommy?" He asked giggling. " it's a suprise " i said

shrugging my shoulders. We spent an hour, just chatting with our kids in bed. " okay, how about i take you guys for a shower. Your Papa can also shower then i can send you out to the mall for some small things. I'll be preparing Christmas lunch so long. I guess we'll have cereals for breakfast " i said getting out of bed. " come on little soldiers, let's go " i said clapping my hands. " Mom since last night we used their bathroom, today we're using mine" Lorenzo said. " it's a deal. Get in, take off your clothes while i get these two monkeys clothes to change " i said opening Lorenzo's door. " you're monkeys" Lorenzo said laughing. " what's a monkey" i heard Maia ask sounding so confused as i walked to their room.

.

Rob drove nandipha to the clinic while the rest of us prepared lunch while having breakfast at the same time. " so best friend, what did you get me" Connie asked nudging me with her shoulder while she chopped carrot, grandma was doing touch ups on the tuckey i had boiled the day before Christmas. I

was preparing lamb stew, while taking care of the steamed bread. Mom was busy frying rice. Thandi was baking cup cakes using one of Alonzo's recipes. The kids were playing in the kid's play room, which started as being Lorenzo's but ended up being for the three of them. I had send Alonzo to the mall alone since well my trio refused to accompany him. You know how kids can be once they meet up with other kids. He was going to buy gifts for my cousin's kids since they came unannounced , i gave him a list. " nothing at all, go and ask Santa " i said seriously. " you're kidding right?" She asked frowning, i just shrugged my shoulders and continued with what i was doing. " you're, argh i can't believe this" she exclaimed loudly. " what happened Con?" Grandmother asked. " nothing grandma, i almost chopped my finger" she lied. " you know i have this close family friend's kid. Cora, you remember Christopher Russells right?" Grandmother asked. " yeah, Alonzo's friend from Italy." I reckoned. " yeah Chris, he's been single for years. I just think that you Connie and him would make a great couple" grandma said. " no offense Cora...since he's my

brother inlaws childhood friend. He must be in his 30s, I'm just twenty one, we could hook up if I'm looking forward to being the youngest widow in the world. All that's left of that guy is to die" she said. " 30s you say" i said then laughed out loud. " Damn my husband must be really hot if he looks ten years younger than his actual age" i said then laughed again.

.

We exchanged gifts after having lunch together. I bought mom and grandma necklaces and then bought wristwatches for Dad and grandpa and decided to buy a wristband for Salvatore, written ' to infinity ". I got Conn an iPhone and Jordan sneakers for Charles. I did my research with mom's help, got play houses for the twins, a bicycle for Lorenzo who by the way bought me a necklace written 'i love you mom' i couldn't have asked for anything better. I got two beautiful dresses for my cousins then clothes from Woolworths for their kids, also bought them one teddy bear each. My husband got me a our family portrait, painted by the most renowned artist

in the country. It was so huge and beautiful. Grandma and grandpa got me earrings, which looked expensive. Connie bought me a teddybear, it was special because it was exactly the same as the one i used to have when i was little. That my father burned down to ashes one unfortunate day. Dad got me a beautiful sapphire scarf, Charles got me high heels. We had such a wonderful day. Father inlaw joined us too with a bottle of wine and flowers for me. I was the host after all.

.

My cousins stayed till new year's eve, the kids were sleeping while we were at our roof top. All our friends there, music blasting out loud. The guys were braaing meat while we ladies were sitting on the couches having wine. Salvatore was stealing glances at me like never before and i actual liked it, it made me smile and look away shly. Then they came to sit back down with the meat, 30 minutes later. " I'll go and get more wine " i said. Dishes of food and booze were on the table nearby. Just that we were running out of wine. " let me come and help you "

Amanda offered standing up. We were talking about Micheal wanting another baby, Amanda was telling me that she was giving in then someone held my hand. " Amanda, can i steal my wife for a moment" Salvatore asked as we were walking down the staircases that lead to the rooftop. " sure" Amanda said then walked ahead. " what is it" i asked, the next thing i knew i was pinned against the wall. He kissed me so needful, hungrily and excited. I kissed him back with my hands around his neck. " I've been wanting to do this since 7pm" he said smiling down at me. " you look so beautiful, i love you. I love you so much. I love the way you smile, the way you talk, the way you giggle and laugh. The way you moan while you eat. The way you moan when we make love. The way you shiver under my hands. The way you lips taste, the way your eyes twinkle whenever you smile to the fullest. I love absolutely everything about you my heart beat " he said then kissed me all over myface. " whoa, what happened " i asked chuckling. " something happened last night, i thought it was just a dream but i remember everything. I remember France, California, Paris. I

remember your favourite Rihanna song. The one you used to twerk with, i remember the night we went to the club in our PJs. Our first date and that first dance we had on the rooftop while i played Luther Vandross on my phone, our favourite song. The walks on the beach. I rememb----" shhh, i get it now" i said putting my finger on his lips. " i love you more than anything in this world " he said crying. I kissed him through his tears. " marry me " he said. " whoa, we're already married. Don't tell me you forgot about our wedding" i said smiling. " No, you wanted divorce. Remember, you signed those papers. Marry me once again my love" he asked. " yes, I'll marry you" i said without hesitation. And i'd marry him a thousand times more, yes he hurt me and i hurt him sometimes. But the love we share is great then the heart breaks we cause each other. Every time my heart heals, it beats for him. " yes, yes yes " i screamed. He picked me up and we kissed. " Wow!" Somebody screamed and it was Amanda. " how long have you been standing over there?" I asked. " long enough" she answered. " hold this " she said taking the staircases up and handing me the bucket

of ice with three bottles of wine. We followed after her. " hey everyone, Mr Muscles has gained his memory back and not just that he did it again. He proposed " she screamed. " it is going to be a happy new year indeed" Mbutu screamed. " congratulations guys " Siwe said. Congratulations were in order.

.

I got the twins admitted to RR the following year. Luckily the school also had classes for mute students. So they were going to go to the same school, just different classes. And also Lorenzo had to change schools, he was not so happy about our decision. Salvatore wasn't happy about the twins going to school' so young' he said. But they were going to turn 4years in november, i figured it was the best thing for Miracle. And we also got home schooled in sign languages in the evenings. It had been two weeks since they started schooling. It was almost February end. I was going to graduate in April, so i was a housewife for the time being. " don't tell me you're not ready yet" Amanda exclaimed on the

phone. We had plans to go to the mall. " no, I'm ready, got ready a few minutes ago. I just don't feel like going anymore. I feel like sleeping " i whined. " please Cora, do not bail out on me on the last me. I'm on my way to the mall. Get Rob to drive you or something " she pleaded. " he drove Salvatore to work. And i have to fetch the kids from school at 2pm" i said. " it's 10am, you'll get the kidson your way back home. Leo also goes to the same school Dude" she exclaimed. " I've been jogging Amanda " i said. " i know, i too just came back from a morning jog. Just get your ass on that car seat and drive. Meet me at Edgars, i saw some awesome jeans there" she said then hung up. I sighed then stood up. " P, tell my husband i went to the mall if he happens to call the house " i screamed. " okay sisi" petunia screamed back from the laundry room. I took my car keys from the door then took the staircases down to the garage.

.

" these are just ordinary jeans Amanda" i said sighing." Look at the embroidery on the pockets.

These are not just an ordinary jeans. These are classic, they scream elegance and sophistication" she explained so beautifully like a sells woman. " yeah right, go to the fitting room. Is your almost invisible ass doesn't show then these are just ordinary jeans " i said. " I'll be back " she said smiling. " i told you, ordinary jeans, from Edgars now let's get out of hear. I'm hungry" i said standing up from the shoe section. " not yet my dear, I'm here to shop" sge said. " Amanda, we did shopping in Miami, not so long ago " i said, not feeling so good. " that was months ago, this is the last week of February Coh. Come on" she said pulling me out of the shop. We went shop to shop, until i couldn't take it. We were walking towards the restuarent just near the entrance when i suddenly felt so dizzy. " are you okay, Coh, Coh, Coh " she kept on calling out my name. Then i felt my body hitting the ground, lights out.

.

I woke up with a splitting headache, checked my surroundings. I was at the hospital. I opened up my

eyes fully and saw Salvatore speaking with a man. Who looked like a doctor. They were whispering God knows what "Joaquin...water" i said trying to sit upright. "hey, you're awake" he exclaimed coming to my side. He helped me drink a glass of water. "are you okay?" He asked holding my hand. "yeah, just that my head is pounding" i said holding it. "Doctor, can i have some tablets for headache?" I asked. "Mrs Salvatore, in your condition i wouldn't advise you to take any painkillers unless your gynec----" doc, can i have a word with my wife. You said, i could take her home. Rught?" Alonzo cut the doctor. "yes sure, but you mustn't leave without getting the prescribed medication. She must take it immediately" the doctor said before leaving. "I'll help you get dressed" he said. I was in a hospital gown, i realized. "what time is it, how long have i been here?" I asked sitting upright. "it's been a few hours, i sent Amanda home. She called me on your way here. Just relax, we'll talk at home. I'll explain everything" he said helping me get dressed. He was dressing me up like i was a kid. "let me see" i said holding his hand to look at his wrist watch. "Geez, it's so late" i

exclaimed upon seeing the time. It was 23pm. Which meant I've been out for hours, a hell lot of them. " i was supposed to get the kids from school and----" shhh, relax. Rob got the kids home safely. Everything is fine" he said helping me put on my shoes. " wait here while i get your medication " he said, kissed my forehead then left.

.

" i can walk on my own Alonzo " i screamed as he just scooped me out of the car after parking in the garage. " stop being so stubborn " he kindasnapped. " why are you so hostile towards me" i asked upset. " I'm sorry" he said. He went and put me on the couch in the bathroom. " you shouldn't take a shower anymore, you might slip and fall. I'll run you a bloobly bath" he ordered. " what would you like to eat?" He asked. " Geez, stop treating me like a kid. What's going on here?, I'm going crazy trying to figure it out. What is it, I'm dying ain't I " i asked with my head between my legs. " i have cancer, don't i. I mean it's the only sensible explanation with the puking and swollen feet, the mood swings. Spit it out

already..please" i pleaded with my head between my legs and hands on my head. " No, you're not dying. It's nothing like that, you're perfectly fine. And you have years of life ahead of you. Your body just got dehydrated from the strenuous activities you've been indulging in. You're perfectly fine " he said, i look into his eyes and i could tell that he was lying. " is it?" I asked and he nodded. " so then why do i feel like you're hiding something from me?" I asked frowning. He sighed, " you trust me don't you?" He asked and i nodded. " with my life " i added. " then trust me on this one too, take a bath, i'll go and get you something to eat" he said. I nodded, " i love you " he said then kissed my forehead. I took off my clothes and got into the bathtub. He only left when i was comfortably sitted down.

.

I wore my long silky night dress and a gown and sleepers. I was sitting on the bed eating and he was busy massaging my feet. " I have something that i want to tell you" he finally said after a while. " is it serious, urgent?" I asked. " No" he simply answered.

" then you can tell me in the morning, it's 1am. I'm tired. I just want to sleep and oh my tablets" i said putting the tray on the sidestand. " I'll go and get them" he said. He came back with them in his hand along with a glass of water. I took them with questioning eyes but didn't say anything. He went and took a shower then came back to bed.

.

I woke up with the feeling that someone was starring at me, i opened up my eyes and found him starring at me. " good morning baby wami" i said smiling. " " hi" he simply said. " i need to get the kids ready for school " i said. " they already left, it's 9am" he said. I sat upright, " why didn't you wake me" i asked confirming the time on the wall. " you need your rest" he said. " I'll just go and take a shower " i said standing up and putting my sleepers on. " no showers, remember " he said. " relax, I'm not going to fall" i said. " i said no showers Cora" he said. " Geez okay" i exclaimed so angrily. I went and took a bath. Got dressed up in my tracksuits and sleepers. He was already dressed up, the bed was made "

aren't you going to work today?" I asked. " No, sit down we need to talk " he said. " okay, what is it " he asked. " just promise me that you won't stress, you'll keep a clear mind. You won't do anything stupid" he said these things all at once. " now you're scaring me" i said alarmed. " relax, everything is going to be fine" he said. " okay what is it " i asked. " we're going have a baby" he said. " mhh say that again " i asked blinking a few times, eyebrows raised. " we're going to have a baby, you're pregnant " he said with a frown. " you're kidding right?" I asked giggling loudly but i double checked his facial expression and he looked dead serious. " I'm pregnant?, but how?" I asked, heart thundering. " you're four months pregnant, i think it happened that night we reconciled " he said. " how, how when i took the morning after pills. I did take them, remember?" I asked asked standing up. " yes i was the one who bought them that morning but you know these things ain't 100% accurate." He said walking towards me. " i just had my cycle this month...i, i, didn't for the past three months. But i can't be pregnant, there must be a misunderstanding" i said, more like talking

to myself thoughtfully. " you were not supposed to bleed Cora, think about it. It only last for 48 hours or less" he said. " how could've been so stupid, three whole cycles missed and i wasn't aware" i snapped angrily. " Hey, it's okay. Stop stressing. I think your God wanted us to have this baby. We should be happy, I'm happy. I'm going to be a father again " he said holding me into his arms. " the doctor said the bleeding was caused by the hogging and stress. You've been stressed about Mira lately, i just didn't realise it was that deep. He also said that your womb is weak since you know all the things it has gone through. This is going to be critical pregnancy, we must keep the levels of stressing low. " he said, i angrily got away from him. " then it's not okay, it's not okay. It's never going to be okay. Why did i have to be pregnant, i can't be pregnant " i said angrily. " i beg you to calm down " he said. He walked closer to me and hugged me again. " i told you i don't want another baby, the kids are still so young and i am going to start working soon. This is wrong...then what if what happened to Xola, what happened to Miceal also happens to this one. I won't be able to

survive this Salvatore, i won't, i can't be pregnant " i said crying in his arms. " Vincenzo is going to be okay, he's going to live. Nothing is going to happen to our little boy" he said holding me tightly. " Vincenzo" i asked pulling away. " it's a boy, his name means a conqueror. He's our little conquer " he said putting his hand on my tummy, which looked nothing of a 4months pregnant women. " he conquered the jogging, the night clubs, alcohol." He said kneeling down, i chuckled wiping away my tears. " so we have Lorenzo and Vincenzo?" I asked chuckling. " Lorenzo will be so thrilled, finally he's getting a twin brother" he said looking up at me. I laughed a little.

[6/3, 19:18] Lynne: Page 96

Salvatore's pov

.

" i can see that she's stressed, freaked out and frustrated. Just trying to be calm " i said to Kevin as we were in my office. One week later after we found out about the pregnancy. " Give her time man, i see you stressed. If you're panicking then how can you

expect her to be calm?" He asked. " I'm afraid if i leave her alone for even one minute, she might do something stupid. You know how stubborn Cora can be " i said leaning backwards on my chair, sighed. " seems like you've found your match " he said laughing. " this is not funny man, let me just go home and check if everything is okay" i said standing up. " Kong sit your white ass down " he said seriously. " if she's the one who forced you to come to work then think what's going to happen if you go back home so early. She'll get angry unnecessarily. She'll get stressed out for no reason at all, and that's going to affect your baby man. Woman like to think they're not sick, just pregnant. They like being spoiled but when you start overdoing things. That's treating them like babies, your wife is mature enough to know what's good for her and the baby. Relax and let her handle things" he said, i sat down. " now that our meeting is adjourned, I'll take my leave. Do not go home early" he warned me once again. " i heard you the first time man" i said. " okay, see you around motherfucker. Or what was it, oh ' kidsfucker'. Be good man" he said laughing. " we

shall see who's going to have the last laugh you
dick" i said chuckling.

.

Cora's pov

.

" the wedding is not happening anytime soon guys. If
you think that I'm going to getting in my white
wedding gown with a parachute pulling me forward
just forget it. It's not happening" i said firmly but all
they did was laugh. " Coh your pump is barely visible,
your have a flat tummy you pussy" Amanda cursed. "
that's because i wasn't taking the horrible
medications, this thing will pop, anyways the
wedding date is not finalized yet. Which means i can
wait for years" i said. We were having tea in my living
room, all my friends just came and bombed me
with wedding magazines. " here i was thinking i was
going to be matron of honour in June " Esihle said
then sighed heavily. " you wish, I'm the best friend
here. I get to be matron of honour " Amanda said. "
Cora, who's your best friend exactly because I

thought i was your best friend " Siwe asked. They all laughed loudly, " you guys are so silly." I said shaking my head. " on a serious no though, when is the wedding day. I want to make sure that my bridesmaid's attire fits perfectly. Unlike the last time you hijacked us. What was the hurry for again?" " Priya asked. " we were so inlove, we couldn't wait any longer. So why not get married within two days if you can afford to?" I asked shrugging my shoulders. " Yes girl, that's my best friend everyone " Amanda said, i couldn't help but laugh. " actually my husband and I haven't really talked about the wedding. I'll talk to him tonight then get back to you guys tomorrow. By the way, Ain't some of you supposed to be at work?" I asked frowning. " there's something called a day off, it's more beneficial if you work as your own husband's PA" siwe k said then we laughed. " and you Amanda?" I asked. " there's something called ' calling in sick' especially if you work under your crusher" Amanda said, now that was hilarious. " finally she admits it, i saw that guy staring at your almost invisible ass.But you bitch kept denying it " i said loudly. " hey not so loud what if my husband

finds out, he's surely not going to let me continue working there" Amanda said looking around. " Mike is not here" Divya said. " these walls have got eyes and ears" Amanda said. " how i wish i had someone crushing on me, that ninja warrior has got girls staring at him wherever he goes" Esihle said. Now that one could call her husband anything related to Chinese or Japanese even though Tiaxiang was Korean. " even I've got girls flirting with my husband but it doesn't bother me anymore because he's got his eyes on me" Priya said smiling. " Lucky you " i shortly said. " if this is about that 360degrees whore then get over it already. Do you know how many times Rajesh cheated on me?. Plus you said it yourself the man was drunk and frustrated " Divya asked. " that's no excuse, but i tell you one thing guys. Let him sleep around again, I'll also do the same. I swear on my unborn baby " i said seriously. " whoa, calm down " Amanda said. I inhaled and exhaled, " good, now back to the wedding" Siwe said....

.

My friends left later, the kids came back from school and i helped Lorenzo with his homework. I felt like having pizza so i ordered one for dinner, gave petunia 300 rand notes to pay the delivery guy when he arrives. I went into our room and lied down, was woken up later by someone kissing my cheek. I opened up my eyes and found him starring down at me. " you look so peaceful when you're asleep " he said removing the strands of hair off my face. I sat upright, " you're back" i said rubbing my eyes. " what time is it " i asked looking at the wall and it was 5pm, " Madrid must be here already " i said getting off the bed. " she got here 5minutes ago, wash your face and let's go " he said. I went to the bathroom and did just that. Madrid was our sign language tutor. Everybody at home was learning, including the nannies Robinson except for the securities. We had our one hour sessions then had dinner, well like i expected they all ended up having pizza. The kids were lying in our bed as i read them a bed time story, just after they too a bath. " once upon a time there was a teeny tiny womanwho lived in a teeny tiny house. Oneday the teeny tiny woman put on her

teeny tiny bonnet and went out of her teeny tiny house to take a teeny tiny walk. The teeny tiny woman had only gone a teeny tiny way when she came to a teeny tiny gate. The teenytiny woman opened the teeny tiny gate and went into a teeny tiny garden. Now in this teeny tiny garden the teeny tiny woman began to pick some teeny tiny beans. She put them in her teeny tiny basket. Then the teeny tiny woman found a teeny tiny bone. The teeny tiny woman put the teeny tiny bone into her teeny tiny pocket and ran home. Then the teeny tiny---" they're sleeping already" Salvatore whispered. " Ohh " i exclaimed then smiled. Put the book on on the side stand, Salvatore put his head on my shoulder then put his hand on my tummy. " i couldn't have asked for anything better than this" he said. " Thank you" he said. " for what?" I asked. " for giving me such a wonderful family, what else can a man ask for. I have everything I've ever dreamed of. I never thought i'd ever find a perfect woman like you. Never imagined myself being somebody's parent. All the responsibility, a family i could call my own. You make everything so easy and i want to stay here in

this moment with all of you" he said. " you're saying thank you to the wrong person, you should thank God... you know when i was a little i used to picture something like this but this is actually more perfect. Senzo, Connie, Charles and I used to play families but then life happened. I stopped dreaming and focused more on reality that was starring back at me. A husband, marriage, family, kids and all that's inbetween shoved away. It's a gift from God to find something so sacred and rare. I guess he always has plan B just when we think things couldn't get any worse" i said then sighed. We stayed like that for what felt like eternity. You know it was like watching the sun rise, listen to the singing birds, the beauty of the nature in the wilderness somewhere in Paradise. Something that could only be described immaculately in movies, something so foreign but yet so good. It's like the realisation of falling inlove with the right person at the right time. You feel like you have the whole world in the palm of your hand.

.

In the morning

.

" I've been meaning to talk to you about our wedding" i said as we were in the bathing tub, we just had our morning glory. It was somewhere around 10am and the kids had long gone to school, i was leaning on his chest. " what is it?" He asked asked holding my hand and moving his thumb on my clear diamond ring. " i told about the wedding not being recognised by the Maphumulo ancestors right?" I asked. " so we have to do things the right way this time" i added. " the right way, how?" He asked. " you know the whole Lobola thing and traditional wedding, i don't know but father said it's necessary so the ancestors can guide and protect me. All the mishaps might go away" i said. " So how is this really done" he asked. " i don't know, ask Tiaxiang or Mbutho" i said shrugging my shoulders. " Mbutho was already married when we met and i wasn't part of Tiaxiang's Lobola thing and i heard it differs with families " he said. " how about you go down to durban, talk to Dad about everything " i asked turning around to

face him. " and leave you all alone here?" He asked. " not this again, just go down there and ask about the darn thing. Geez stop treating me like a kid, i can take care of myself" i said angrily getting out of the tub. I took a towel and wrapped it around my body. He found me crying in closet, i was busy searching for something to wear. So angrily " what is it?" He asked holding my hands. " leave my hands" i said trying to get away. But he tightened his grip until I got tired of fighting him. " i know that this is not hush about me refusing to leave you alone. What is it?" He asked searching for God knows what in my teary eyes. " yes it's not, it's not I'm scared okay. I'm scared, i can't. I can't get this thought out of my mind" i said fastly. " what thought?" He asked. " that Vince might leave me too, that's why i want to set everything right with the ancestors. Dad said they're questioning my where about because I was not sent off accordingly. I don't believe in all this, but I'm shit scared. I don't want to lose another baby, why don't you understand?" I asked blinking a few times. He let go of my hands, " you know what might kill this baby, it's you stressing out for no reason at

all " he said after sometime. " don't say that " i said in a horsey little voice. " Sorry" he shortly said. " I'll go to durban next week, i have a lot of meetings this week. We'll fix everything that's worrying you before he's even born. I promise " he said then kissed my lips slightly. " now please stop crying" he said wiping off my tears and giving me a faint smile. " Thank you " i said the hugged him.

.

9days later

.

I was impatiently waiting for Salvatore to ring the doorbell as he was on his way home. Everybody was asleep and i was sitting infront of the television, having the awful popcorn. He was coming back from Durban, been gone for the past two days to ask about the lobala. Finally the garage door's opening sound was heard. I rushed towards the door that lead to the staicases that lead to the garage as if someone or something was pushing me. " So?" I asked as he got out of the car. He almost froze to

death. " Fuck, you scared me. Why are not sleeping?" He asked holding his chest. " So what did he say?" I asked. He smiled, and closed the door. " let's go upstairs, we'll talk while i eat and take a shower" he said putting his arm around my waist. We walked upstairs side by side.

.

" that's ridiculous, ten cows?" I exclaimed unbelievably. " what?, ten cows is such a small amount I'm actually willing to pay more than that" he said. " you must be joking, I'm not some property you can just buy and own. This is utter nonsense, I'll speak to Dad about this. The price is too high" i said searching for my phone in my gown pockets. " hey, come on. Let me tell you the whole thing, we haven't reached the wedding part but yet you're complaining. Come i want to shower " he said pulling me by my hand.

.i graduated when my tummy was still so small, it was just a small baby bump. I looked good in my gown. Mom was so proud, even dad. Grandma and grandpa made it just to congratulate me in person.

So i decided that i was going to start working when the kids were a little more older. Working 12hours a day has small chances of a parent being a present parent. I wanted to be there, see vincenzo talk, take his first steps, crawl, getting naughty and all that. Since i couldn't see much when the twins were younger. I was going to start working once he turned two years old by then the twins would be 6 and Lorenzo 9.

On month six of my pregnancy the lobola was paid, we traditionally got married on month 7. It was so beautiful and fun, actually my friends and i had to go and live at my grandparent's home for the wedding. It was a horrible but yet fun experience. Mind you we slept in one round house. Salvatore actually paid 15 cows instead of 10.

.

" junior won't stop kicking, my feet are swollen, my nose is huge, i can't even see my pussy, i can't stand the smell of eggs. And you're busy telling me calm down?. Didn't i say no eggs in this house?" I asked angrily. They were frying eggs in the kitchen and the

whole house smelt like labour ward for chickens. I was 8 months and heavily pregnant. They all kept quite but then bursted into laughing, Salvatore and his three kids. "mommy is pregnant" Maia said laughing, she was busy clapping her tiny little hands. I couldn't believe my eyes. I couldn't understand whether she understood what she was saying or just childish. "I'm going out, I'll leave you alone. With your three stupid kids, your stupid eggs in your stupid eggs. I'm never returning, rascals" i said then found my way down the staircases that lead to the garage after taking my car keys. "hey, it's not my fault. Miracle loves eggs, so i bought them for her. You know how i have a soft spot for her" he said following me. "Got that sir, now I'm leaving" i angrily said. "where are you going to?" He asked. "anywhere but here, in this disgusting stinkng, godforsaken stupid, annoying smelly, fucking damn house" i shouted, actual that was a lot lot to say because it left me running out of breath. "okay, i don't think that's fair on the innocent house rather take your frustrations on me. The one who bought the house. You can't just insult our beautifully home

like that" he said smiling but i wasn't, i was dead damn serious. " fuck you and your so called beautifully house" I'm leaving for forever " i said opening the door. " wait, where do you want to do it" he asked closing the door." Do what?" I asked loudly. " the fucking, on the car bonnet. Remember that day?" He asked then laughed. " i could just cut your throat right now, you're so perverted" i said unbelievably. " okay maybe that wasn't so funny but can i be your chauffeur for the day ma'am?" He asked extending his hand in a charming manner. " suit yourself " i said angrily putting the car keys on his hand. I went and opened the back door for myself. He closed it and got to the driver's seat. " where to ma'am?" He asked. " to hell, how about that?. Just drive the damn car, i want to get out of here" i said. " yes ma'am " he said then chuckled.

.

I'm wrapping up the story guys

[6/3, 19:18] Lynne: Page 97

Cora's pov.

.

I was on month 9 of my pregnancy, infact i was waiting for days. He could come out anytime and i was scared, I've never really been in the labour ward. I had three kids already but i didn't have to push while i screamed. I was busy making preparations for my white wedding which was scheduled for November 1st. I had just came out of the wedding planner's office, a little bit out of time. With every new alteration i needed done, I'd just go to him and we'd discuss the details. I wanted everything to be absolutely perfect, that's why i argued that the wedding should take place on November 1st. Then i would've exercised enough to fit perfectly in my wedding gown. Robinson was driving me to Joaquin's office. We got there an hour later, the sun was scorching hot in Johannesburg. " thank you, you can go back home now. Get rest before to pick up the kids from school" i said after getting out of the car. " and how are you going to get home ma'am?" He asked. " I'm here to see my husband, remember?" I asked chuckling. " ohh, have a great day ma'am" he

said before leaving getting to the driver's seat and driving off. I took out my phone from my handbag and walked towards the entrance of hotel Paradisè. The ashier opened door for me, i walked straight to Bianca. One women I'd never forget, she was so rude to me on my first day to hotel Paradisè. The first day i met my husband, " Good morning Mrs Salvatore " she said smiling. " Hi, where can i find my husband?" I asked. " Mr Salvatore is currently in a meeting right now, do you have an appointment?" She asked after looking at her computer. " i believe i don't need an appointment to actually see my own husband. Forget about that, I'll actually wait in his office" i said then walked towards the elevators. It took me to the second floor where there were offices. I walked out and walked towards my husband's office which was the first thing you say ahead the hallway. Just that it was the last office. His PA opened the door for me and i set of the couch, well i set there for almost two hours.

.

" what are you doing here?, didn't we agree that you'd

be staying at home. It's not safe for you to be walking around anymore" he said, glancing at his wrist watch a couple of times. Then to the one on the wall, he had a file in his hands. His was wearing a blue suit, white shirt, the last two buttons unbuttoned. He looked extra handsome. " Hello to you too" i said slowly. " Sorry, how are you and how is my little boy here" he said kissing my forehead then sitting down next to me. He put his hand on my tummy. Vincenzo started kicking like he always did when his father touched my tummy. " i don't know whether you two are going to get along or he hates your guts" i said smiling. " you should've called, i have back to back meeting today. I have a meeting within an hour" he said playing with my tummy. He was busy lifting up my dress, he always wanted to see the tummy straightly. " we missed you " i said putting my hand on top of his, Vince kicked one more time. I giggled a bit, " i know you wouldn't have traveled all the way from home to here just because you miss me. I irritate you, you hate the mere sight of me well of course if we're not fucking. The only time you say i love you is when you want

my giant cucumber " he said taking my hand and putting it on his giant cucumber. " stop it" i said giggling. He always did that to arouse me, it worked like magic since i was pregnant. I even cried and begged for it, sometimes he'd just tease me and leave me. He said it was the only way he could punish me for all the shouting and cursing. Some nights i'd kick him out of the room just because I couldn't stand the smell of his Moisturizer, it was crazy. " I came here to show to these, okay" i said opening my bag and coming out with our wedding planning diary. " Now, I've come to my final decision. I want this pillow case designed cake. Instead of that Cinderella designed one " i said showing him the pictures which were attached to the diary. " i told you that that Cinderella designed cake was so childish and small and glittery " he said. " yes but it had a meaning behind it, you rescued me. You're my prince charming " i said smiling. " now if it's so...what about this one. What does it mean" he asked brushing my tummy. " it's for all the tears i shed on a thousand pillows. But then you came along and wiped them.all the smiles and bliss we shared in our

bedroom. For all the moments, minutes spent lying on the pillows just looking into each others eyes. If pillows could talk I'm sure our story would be endless" i said looking into his eyes. He stared back into mine, for a moment there we went into our own little world. " now that's better, Cinderella story is such a cliché. The Cake of pillows, now that's unique. I'm adding that to my speech" he said smiling. " have you decided on the suit yet?" I asked. " I've gone through a few ones, I'll talk to my tailor guy tonight" he said. He was having he suit tailore made all the way from italy. Which meant he had to go there for measurements and i was my dress was getting designed by the lady who designed Amanda's dress. She knew her story. " let me go through my file one more time. He said standing up walking towards his desk. " Mom says she's going to take a two months paid leave after the baby is born. She never go to take care of her grandchildren while they were young. I think Vince is going to be the most spoiled kid ever" i said pulling down my dress and putting my hand on my tummy. " you're absolutely wrong, i think Mira is going to be the most

spoiled one. Everyone asks about her" he said. " even you spoil her, you always spare her whenever she makes mistakes " i said. " she's just so cute, i can't help myself " he said the sighed. I just laughed.... " I'll take my leave now" i said glancing at my wristwatch. It's been 40minutes, he was going through his file while we talked. I just felt like a destruction. " let me call Rob to bring the car in the front" he said picking up his telephone. " ummh...i might have sent Rob home" i said figgitating with my fingers. " so you were going to take a taxi?" He asked standing up. " it's not such a big deal" i said. " yes it is, it is a big deal when you're carrying my child and you still want to take a taxi" he snapped. " why are you shouting, I'm not your kid. You can't just shout at me" i said angrily standing up. " i can do whatever i like, what do you expect from me when you behave like--- " my water Salvatore " i said looking down. " I'm still talking, you will drink water later. Liste---" Shut up, my water just broke" i said loudly. " your, what?. Your water just broke Cora" he said, eyes popped out. " My water just broke" i murmured, heart racing. " what do we do" he asked still standing

in the same position. " I'll call an ambulance " he added taking his cellphone. " there's no time for that goddamnit, just take me to the hospital. Ouch, aah " i cried out loud holding my abdomen. " don't move" he said walking towards me. He picked me up..." does it hurt?. When did it start? I'm sure you must've ignored the labour pains" he said as he was drivini. I was sitting on the front seat which was pulled backdown. " isn't too soon, I'm supposed to give birth on the 13th." I asked inhaling and exhaling. Actually, i had felt the pains in the night, but i ignored it. Rubbed a freeze burn until it died down. The way we exited the hotel with me screaming, that scene was so going to last.

.

8hours later

.

I was inhaling and exhaling while i walked around like a crazy women. I was in my own Labour ward. The nurse would come to check how far my constructions have gone then walk out. Salvatore

ran to God knows where after he got tired of my screams, strangles and slaps. Everytime the pain would come back, i'd curse and slap him. I was alone in the ward, the gown i had worn earlier on the floor. The chair moved, i was nakedly rearranging everything in the room. After the pain dies down i'd put everything back in place. " Ahh, fuck fuck fuck" i screamed pulling my hair.

.

Salvatore's POV

.

I was with Dad and Amanda in the waiting room, who were literally laughing at me. " here, have a look" Amanda said giving me her mirror. I looked at my rearranged hairstyle. My red face, " i swear I've never met a crazy women like her" i said fixing my hair. She's the only woman who'd hit me, curse and i'd let tolerate her but the day it was just too much to handle . We've been sitting there for hours. Around 8pm we saw a few more nurses and her gynecologist walking to her ward. I left there three

hours back." What's going on?" I asked following them. " it's time" she said closing the door. I could hear her crying and screaming while they begged her to push. An hour later she screamed out louder than ever then i heard a baby crying. I was pacing in front of her ward, i paused a bit a listen.

.

" congratulation Mr Salvatore, your wife has given birth to one healthy baby boy" the doctor said getting out of the ward 30minutes later. " can i walk in" asked smiling. " ofcourse" she said. The nurses followed after her with a trolley of blood covered shirts. I walked in, she had Vincenzo in her arms. She was smiling down at him." Hey...can i see him" i asked walking towards them. She looked at me then back at the baby. " you can hold him" she said handing me over the tiny little Vincenzo who was covered in a small hospital blanket. I held him into my eyes for the first time, unveiled his face. It was tomato red and tiny. " he's so tiny and beautiful " i said smiling while looking up at him. He had his eyes closed, " he's so beautiful that he's making you cry"

Cora said looking at me. I touched my face, my cheeks we wet. " Thank you my heart beat, thank you for such a priceless gift" i said holding her hand. She just smiled, the doctor came and took the Vincenzo for all the procedures/check up that he needed to go through.

.

Dad and Amanda came in to see the baby, Cora forcefully sent me home around 12am. But i made it back there, early in the morning. I found her breastfeeding him, " good morning. I brought the clothes you asked for. And i bought you some goodies and these" i said putting the baby's bag, pastic of nice things and a bunch of tulips on the couch. " can he suck, he's just so tiny. Is he fine?" I asked asked trying to get a full view on his face. " I'm start to feel jealous. He's getting all the attention " she said. I kissed her forehead, " you know you're my number one african queen" i said brushing her hair, she smiled. " how are my trios " she asked. " they wanted to skip school and come here, I'm worried they might want to take the baby into their arms.

They must stay as far as possible from my little boy
" he said said. " now i don't think our little drama
queen is going to be pleased by that" she said. "
Maia will have to deal with it, she's a grown ass
woman" i said solemnly. She laughed but ended up
wincingin pain. " are you okay, what's wrong?" I
asked not knowingwhat to do. " No jokes" she said
after sometime. " i think Vince vandalised my valley
of fire. It hurts" she said, " no jokes, sorry. I was just
trying to make you laugh. You seem too serious " i
said kissing her forehead. " my state doesn't allow
me to laugh. He teared it up, can you believe that he
weighs 3,90kg." She said unbelievably....

.

Cora's pov

.

My friends and his friends came to see us around
3pm, i asked Lorenzo to let my trios come but he
plainly refused due to the insane reason that they
might hurt his little boy. Mom was going to come
over the weekend, her leave got approved for the

following month. Which i found very crazy, i just didn't understand why she'd take a leave. I mean she could've always visited the kids on weekends and holidays. Grandmother and Grandpa were going to come on the weekend too, Ellen and Kendra came to see me too. Kendra took a few pictures to show to Lorenzo, those two were best friends like best best friends. Everything was good, our son was healthy and lively. We were going to get discharged within a few days. Everything was perfect, it was a thursday and i was alone with Vincenzo when the she-devil walked in. " Hi " she said smiling, she looked skinny. Well skinnier than the last time i saw her. " Nomsa please leave my ward before I scream " i said. " please just hear me out, just once" she pleaded. " No, i don't want to hear it. Get out of here" i snapped. "Im sorry for the way i behaved and for the things i said. Please forgive me for my trespasses " she said. " I'll never forgive you, just get out of here. You don't deserve my forgiveness " i screamed angrily." Cora i am sorry---" what's going on here?" Salvatore asked as he walked in. " please get her out of here" i said. " you heard her, please leave us in peace " he said. "

Son, i just wanted to see my grandson just once" she said, playing victim. " you're not going to see or even touch my son. You want to call him names too, you had no right to call my kids illegitimate. Get out, just get out of here " i snapped holding my son closer to my chest. " please give me Another chance, one more chance" she pleaded. " Nomsa please, my wife has not recovered yet. She doesn't need this. Just get out" Salvatore asked one more time. She walked outwith a tail between her legs. " the nerve of thatwoman " he said then clicked his tongue. " how are you, i bought you lunch" he said walking towards us. " what is it" i asked...

.

[6/3, 19:18] Lynne: Page 98

Cora's pov(most unedited)

.

On a friday we got discharged, on a sartuday we were going to go the the Catholic church for the baby naming and baptism. " do you think Maia and Miracle should also have this naming ceremony. I

just don't think it's fair that they didn't get baptized according to your tradition while both of the boys will" i said as i was bathing the Vincenzo in his nursery room. The trio were also taking bath in their rooms. " but their old now and besides that they have names" he said. " Lorenzo did and Vincenzo does" he said. " you know what I'll speak to Papa and he'll get intouch with the priest. We'll start with the twins." He said giving in." I'm going to take a shower " he said said standing up from the rocking chair. We put Vince's cot in our room. He had no nurse to look after him. I wanted to raise him. Do everything, i dried and dressed him up. He had sky blue eyes unlike his father who had hazel blue eyes. Salvatore said his great grandpa had the same eyes. He even showed me picture, i think Vince looks like his father still. He was so cute more beautiful than handsome. I picked him up after wrapping him up in warm blankets. He wasn't the type of kid to cry a lot unlike Maia and Miracle who drove me absolutely nuts. He only cried when he was hungry or when he needed to change the diaper. I went to our room and put him on his cot, he was asleep. Bathing him always did

the trick. I went and took a bath so long, Salvatore was still in the shower. I stopped bleeding two days after Labour, only my stiches and worn out body made me feel uneasy. I poured methylated spirit and sold in the bathtub the got in. " before i forgot, I'm taking a flight to Italy on monday, along with my grandparents. For the suit, I'll make it back on Friday because i am meeting up with some of my business associates " he said wrapping a towel around his body. " so soon?, Your son just got born and you're traveling already " i asked unbelievably. " the designer is so busy Cora, the appointment is scheduled for tuesday. If i miss it, it might take a month just to get another one. The wedding is it 4 months, altera---" okay, i get it. No need to go any further with the details of might Bes." I said. He sat on the edge of the tub and held my hand. " you know i wouldn't leave if it wasn't so important and inconvenient. I'll be back before you know it. I promise " he said then kissed my hand. " we'll talk every morning and evening" he added. " okay, maybe I'm just overreacting" i said then sighed. " i love you" he said. I looked at him for a long time. " i said i love

you" he repeated once again. " i love you " i said softly.

.

The baptism ceremony took place in the evening, mom, his grandparents, family friends were present. Even Salvatore's long lost half brothers were present. The she-devil did the good thing by staying as far away as possible from my little family. We were going back home for dinner, Salvatore hired three chefs to prepare dinner for us. Robinson was driving us home, in a limousine. It was just me, my husband and kids. " Monwabisi is such a beautiful name" Salvatore said. That was Vincenzo's second name i gave him. It's means the one who brings joy. " yeah it is" i said shortly. A lot was going on in my mind. " my priest and a few of my church members will come tomorrow afternoon. To see Vincenzo and pray for us. I want you to be there" i said looking at him. " please " i added. " This is too much Cora, isn't enough that i have to attend these baby naming ceremonies. You want me to go to church now?" He asked. " it's nothing like that, your father asked you

to do this as per your family traditional. I'm only asking you for this, i haven't asked for anything in a while. Please just be there, you can stay for atleast 3p minutes then leave after that. The pastor and other church members are always asking me questions about you. Wby don't you come to church and i always have to make excuses " i said softly. " let's talk about this tonight in our bedroom, not in front of the kids" he said looking at the trio who were playing a game on my tablet.

.

We had dinner, i asked siboniso and Sandile why they never came to visit and they made excuses like ' since me and their mother weren't getting along they thought they should stay away too' like my war was wiyh them. I had just breastfed Vincenzo, i was getting undercovers. Salvatore was already undercovers working on his laptop. " so will you be here tomorrow?" I asked. " if that's going to get you off my back then yes" he said without even looking at me. " what's that suposed to mean?" I asked getting infuriated. " Cora, you should just tell your

Pastor that you got married to a Kingpin. I sell drugs, rob rich people or kill people for a living. I'm nowhere near God" he said. " but you can change, you don't need all of this now. You have everything you've ever wanted " i said holding his hand. " change is something that comes within one's heart. Please don't force it on me" he said. " Ok fine but one more thing... I've thought about it. We agreed on four kids right?" I asked. " yes so?" He asked. " i gave you five, that you initially asked for. I was thinking of cutting off my fallopian tubes, which mean i won't ever give birth or go to my cycle. " I said. But he didn't say a thing. ' Salvatore?" I said frowning. " it's not a big deal, go ahead and do that " he said then sighed. " you know what I'm tired of your bullshit" i said then clicked my tongue. " it's not a big deal, go ahead...is that all you could say? ." I asked infuriated. " okay that came out bad, sorry..." he said closing and putting away his laptop. He took my hands into his, " I'm just stressed out about this big project i need to get...what i meant was that. It's a good idea, we're a big family now. You know what, I'll also do vasectomy. I'm sorry for the way i answered"

he said the kissed both my hands. " come here" he said said pulling me into his embrace.

.

So on a sunday they came and he spent exactly 30minutes before making an excuse that he was going to a meeting.... " Connie says she's going to come this side after she graduates and Charles is planning on going overseas. He has put out a few applications for internships." Mom said as we were sitting on the terrace having tea with grandma. " you said Charles is into agricultural development right?" Grandma asked. " yes, he's so passionate about it. It's the only thing that he talks about " Mom said. " well, he should come to Rome once. There's this friend of mine, he deals with agribusiness. I'm sure they can learn a thing or two from each other. " Grandma said. " that would be great, he'll be so thrilled. And all my worries would fade away, the world is not such a safe place anymore. I was scared for him to go into a foreign country. Plus he's so reserved " Mom said. " Mom, stop treating Charles as if he's a kid. He's 23 years for crying out

loud" i exclaimed then smiled. " and as for Connie, she should get in touch with the Cebisa's. Mbutho has a huge business that deals with marketing. Who knows she might just find a vacancy right after graduating " i said. We sat and talked for a while. Until i was called in by the trio screaming ' the baby is crying'. They all left on a monday morning, including mom who was going to come back months end. That was the most boring and tiring week of my life.

.

So i stopped breastfeeding Vince a month later. Got pills to stop the milk secretion, i started exercising right when my stiches got untangled and healed. I used the home gym twice a day while i sticked to the non sugar straight diet, . It was working like magic. Whithin two weeks i could see the results.in the mean time i had to work on my wedfing, having a wedding planner helped a lot. On the third month my husband and I hired a well known qualified personal trainer. He knew his business, i went back to my normal size 32 waist and size 34wide hips. All that

belly fat burned out, i was slim and ready for the wedding night.

Almost 4months later.

.

" let's go bitches" i said to my friends. We were going to the club, bachelorette's party it was. So the last time, i didn't have it but Salvatore did. So this time i wanted to do things differently, wanted to do everything i never did. We were going to club Cubic, it was also one of the best clubs in the city. We got out guests booked in to hotel Havanna, they were so many that if they got booked to hotel Paradisè which was expensive as hell. We would've suffered a huge loss. And be left with a lot of bills to pay after the wedding. Hotel Havanna was a 20 minutes drive from hotel Paradisè, our guests were mostly my extending family. They even invited their neighbors. Arrived in a bus. You know how black people can be. So on my husband's side it was his know family then a few family friends. Including Christopher Russells,

My childhood friend Senzo came too. I begged Salvatore to treat him with kindness and he promised to. My mom's parents were present too. The wedding reception was at hotel Paradisè, I've just been there earlier to check. Everything was going as perfect as planned, we were going to get married in church and the decor was set there too. Everything looked as perfect as I have dreamed it would. So there I was in a limousine with my girls, it was 10 of us. Me, Amanda, Siwe K, Siwe S, Priyanka, Divyanka, Esihle, Ellen, Connie and Christopher's date Amber. We were already having wine while we twerk, sang along and screamed. An hour later we were in the club, we didn't waste time. Just got to the dance floor like we planned too. I was dancing with my best friend. We were more of jumping up and down while the electronic music blasted out loudly. The disco ball glittery all around.

.

Salvatore's POV

.

'

" i mean i don't care, i trust my wife but it wouldn't hurt just to check on her right?" I asked, really not feeling at ease about Cora going out at night.

Without me knowing her destination, " Dude chill out, let's get in" Micheal said pulling me inside the hotel room they booked. Said it was a surprise, the first thing i saw was naked women. Well woman in thongs and bras and high heels. " surprise" the guys said. " Fuck, what is this?" I exclaimed. " relax man, this is your last day as a free man. Spend it wisely" Mbutho said. " I'm married, not so free " i said showing him the ring on my finger. " it's not like we're all here to fuck 'em. Just watch, drink and go to sleep " he said as they pulled me deep inside. " This is the stupidest idea, Cora will literally kill me. Strippers, really?" I asked . " More like hookers" Sandile said. " we're all married, maybe our wives are doing the worst wherever they are. Since they asked not to be followed or tracked" raj said. "Okay, let's party" i said raising up the glass of whisky which i got offered by one of the hookers. " To the Married-

bachelor " Tiaxiang said, it absolutely made no sense.
" Chairs" we said in unison.

[6/3, 19:18] Lynne: Page 99

Narrated

.

The sun shined through the window of C

The sun light rays hit the windows of some motel in town, Cora opened up her eyes in complete confusion. She felt a leg on top of her head, she tried to sit up but her head was pounding like hell. On the third attempt she finally managed to remove the heavy leg and sit up right. All of her friends were sleeping in one bed...no wait there were guys there too. Naked guys, i mean not fully naked. Just that they were wearing man G-strings, there were a lot bottles of liquor around the room. Everybody was sleeping flatly. She put her feet down on the cold tiled floor after finally managing to dig herself out of the piled bodies. She walked to the bathroom, almost fainted after look at her horrifying image. The

red lipstick was out of place, hair standing up. Her weave must've fallen somewhere in the room. Her mascara and eyeliner out of position. She splashed her face with water but it wasn't helping so she locked the bathroom and found herself under the shower. 15minutes later she got out and wiped her body. Now she looked refreshed but still her eyes were swollen and had dark circles around them. Memories of last night came rushing like floods into her head, they were so disturbing that she found herself shaking her head. She put the short dress she was wearing back on then walked out of the room. Everybody was still in the same drunkard position, drooling and snoring. She searched for her purse until she found it, searched for her weave and found it under one of the guys which she pushed and fell down off the bed. She went back to the bathroom combed her weave and put it on her head and put on some lipstick and powder. Now she looked better but still horrible for someone who was about to get married whithin a few hours. Wait a minute, she was getting married within a few hour.

.

"Noooooo!" She found herself screaming loudly that all the others woke up like soldiers ready for war, even though some were falling. She marched back to the room, " are we in hell?" Amanda asked wiping off the drool, her eyes closed and hair upside down. Only if he could see herself in the mirror. Cora realised that some of her friends were in bikinis only, including her little sister Connie. Who was sitting on the far corner still sleeping. " it's my wedding day and look at me. And last night i kissed a guy, he wasn't even cute. It was you wasn't?" She asked while she cried and charged for the poor guy who was still recovering from the deep sleep. Everybody else was busy searching for their belongings. " it's my wedding day and look like a monkey" she cried sitting down on the messy bed. Everybody else was busy dressing up, she wiped her tears and took her phone out of her purse. Called Robinson, who was by the way waiting outside the motel for them. The poor guy slept in the car, " I'm going home, whoever hired these man will pay them" she said putting her

phone on the purse, searched for her high heels and got out of the room. She was walking bare footed," wait, you can't leave me here" Connie screamed following her while she was busy putting on her tight jeans. Well that's what everybody else was busy doing, dressing up on the go. Amanda threw a few hundred rands notes to the guy before leaving the room.

.

Robinson dropped off everybody else in their homes before he drove Connie, CORA and Amber home. " goodmorning mom, grandma. Goodnight" she said passing them by the dining table, she threw herself on the bed as soon as she got into their room. They just laughed at her, " what happened to you, got hit by a bus?" Mrs Maphumulo asked and they laughed once again. " haha very funny" Connie said walking towards the kitchen. She made two cups of coffe then went upstairs to Cora's room.

.

" hey wake up" she said putting the cups on the side

stand of the headboard. "wake up" she said hitting Cora's ass so hard that she sat up" the fuck is wrong with you?" Cora exclaimed crossed. "you might want to look at the time, you booked for a massaging therapy which is within an hour. You might want to add a facial to that too. Have this coffe then go and take a shower " she said. "i already took a shower" Cora said. "here's your phone, call the spar and add me too on the facial massage. And don't forget about your hair, eyelashes, manicure and pedicure which needs to be done whithin the next two hours " Connie said, Cora sighed in frustration. "Salvatore will kill me if he finds out i kissed another man " she said then grabbed her hair. "I'm going to run you some bubbly bath, you'll tell him yourself but for now have that coffe" Conn said standing up with her cup of coffee. She did as she said and Cora called the spur, "I'm going to take a shower, get into that tub. It should help a bit" she said smiling and then she left. Cora drank her coffe then went to the bathroom bathroom. She waxed her legs and valley of fire and armpits before getting into the warm water, she ended up falling asleep in the tub. She was woken up

by Connie 40 minutes later, she washed her body then wrapped a towel around her body after wiping it. " your wedding gown has arrived" her mom said walking into the room. The massage beds were already sat there, Connie was already getting her body massaged. " where's it" Cora asked. " let me go and get it " she said. " and mom, keep the kids as far as possible from me and take care of Vince. Make sure they wear their gowns and suits, okay?" She said looking so stressed out. " don't worry, i got this" her mom said.

.

The full body massage helped a lot, especially the facial. She also got her nails, lashes and hair done, they glued a brand-new Indian weave on her hair. It was going to get styled later on by one of the hairstylist who was going to return... "where are you going Cora " her mom asked, Cora just took her car keys and was rushing towards the garage. She was wearing tracksuits and sneakers. " I'll be back mom, I'm meeting up with Salvatore " she screamed, got into her car as soon as the garage door rooled up.

She found her husband waiting for her on the roof top of hotel Paradisè where they agreed to meet. He was facing the other side, " Hi" she said, Salvatore turned around with a smile. " what's so urgent that you called me here. You know it's a bad omen to meet up before the wedding, right?" He asked walking towards her. " i want to tell you something, umh last night i did something stupid. I'd understand if you do not want to go ahead with the wedding. It was not intentional, i was under the influence of alcohol. I was drunk and excited and---" whoa, calm down. What are you talking about?" He asked holding her shoulders. She was talking so fast that he didn't understand her. " i kissed a guy last night, a male hooker to be exact but i promise you. It was just a tiny moment kissed, i was wasted and now i regret it. I'm sorry, i'd understand if you do not want to marry me." She said, but her eyes said neither of the things she was saying. He removed his hands from her and turned his back on her then walked to the edge of the roof. " I'm sorry, it was just a stupid mistake, i got carried away" she said hugging him from behind. " i might have done something too" he

said. " what?" He asked. " well my friends threw a suprised party for me and it was loaded with, strippers. Hookers" he said, she removed her arms around him and stood next to him. Put her hands on her pockets, " so you kissed another man, huh" he asked after sometime of total silence. " how was it, did you enjoy it" he asked. " it was... i can't remember, it was a two seconds thing. I was intoxicated and I'm sorry but don't stand there and act innocent while you've been starring at some other naked woman. At least i gathered the courage to tell you, if i didn't call you here then you would've probably taken this secret to your grave" she said then turned around to leave but he held her hand. " you're right, i wasn't planning on telling you. At least not anytime soon because you're so unpredictable. No one ever knows how you'd react, when you're expected to react crazily you end up reacting calmly and when you're expected to react calmly you react crazily " he said holding both her hand into his. " I'm sorry i was starring at some other naked woman while i have my own insanely hot woman" he said, she smiled a bit. " so what now?" She asked. " we forgive each other

and go and get married" he said pulling her by her waist. " you forgive me" she asked. " if you'd also do the same" he said and she nodded smiling then sighed softly. " but know one thing for sure, nobody kisses King Kong's wife and gets away with it" he said

.

It was 4pm in the evening, she was standing in front of the dressing table, looking at herself in huge long mirror. Her long off the shoulders neckline mermaid dress white wedding gown looked as perfect as she had imagined. Her Crystal diamond necklace sparkling around her neck. " you look beautiful " her mother said handing her the bouquet of red roses wrapped up in a shiny white ribbon. " you think so" she asked smiling at her mirror reflection. " you look like a princess" her mom said holding back her tears. " okay, it's time" priya said. All the bride's maids were wearing bugurdy red satin wrap short dresses. Which they looked incredible in, " let's do this" Cora said then took a deep breath. She had Miracle and Maia wearing white gowns with red figer belts, white

stockings and white heels. Hair tied up into a neat bun. The white limo they hired parked in front on the church where they were going to exchange their vows. The wedding planner set everybody in position and then the church bell rang, the orchestral musical instruments started playing. Mira and Miracle started walking in with baskets of white rose petals. They were dropping and handfull with each step they took. Lorenzo was standing near his Dad in a black tuxedo with red bow tie. Luke the rest of the groom's man. The groom was wearing black Italian formal shoes, a black tailor made trouser, black shirt and a red coat. The pocket of it decorated with a black and white stiched rose. The bride's maids followed after the flower girls, they stood on the opposite side of the podium. The guests were wearing either, red, black or white which were the colours of the day.

.

Finally the bride walked in, her mother was walking her down the isle. Joaquin couldn't keep his eyes of her and clearly you couldn't blame the guy. She looked more stunning then ever, more beautiful than

the way she looked on their inconvenient wedding. She had a wide smile planted on her face. Her eyes on her husband. She thought wow, the suit looked exquisite but he looks more appetizing and gorgeous in it. There were 8 stands from each side of the red carpet, each stand draped with a silky see through white cloth then there was a bunch of white roses in a white glass vase on top of each stand. There there were Tiffany chairs instead of the ordinary church benches.

.

" we're gathered here to celebrate this day with Mr and Mrs Salvatore as they renew their vows in holy matrimony...the priest read all the rightful scriptures...

" with this ring i the wed vow to love, cherish, respect, protect and take care of you for the rest of my days. I vow to stand by your side in sickness and in health. Even if you ask me to let you go, I'm never going to let you go " those were Salvatore's simple but meant vows. They somehow put a teary smile on Cora's face. Only she could understand themclearly

" with this ring i Cora Zabenathi Salvatore" she said then paused with a smile. " ...i vow to be truthful and faithful to you...to take care of you and our kids. To love you unconditionally and love you only. I'm going to try and be less stubborn---" she said then Salvatore and the rest of the people chuckled. " i know how much you hate it when i curse and I'm going to try a curse less. I vow to be faithful and loving, to respect you a little bit more but i can't vow to stop being crazy. " those were Cora's crazy but deep down from the heart vows. They may have sounded crazy but Salvatore understood them clearly, that's just how Cora was. " you may kiss your wife" the priest said. The they kissed, his hands on her weist and hers on his shoulders.

.

They went for a photoshoot at Zigzag studio. Since it was late at night they required all the brightness they could get.after the shoot they were driven to the hotels Paradisè. Which was a wow factor, the chandeliers were even more brighter. The wall wall was drapped in white silky clothing which had

linelights on each end- up and down. There were were four long rectangular on each side of the red carpet, each table could take 24people. Each table had red satin cloth then a glass of it's size on the top. Long glass vises with crystal and red juices then a bunch of red roses inside. Black serving plates, side plates, two forks, a knife, table spoon, teaspoon, a long glamorous glass for wine, a glass for juice, a cup for coffe or tea since it was 8pm. The floor tilling was white as usually but they dropped rose petals on it. The main table. Main table was long a glassy, with joinedbed of white which hanged all the way down. The serving dishes, two long podium of white roses on the back then the wall od white roses behind. On the right there was a table which was designed in the similar way as the one of the guests. That table was for the groom's man and bride's maids. On the left there was a table of there pillow deigned white cake which had a few candles light around it. Between the main floor and the guest's tables there was a dance floor.

.

Each bride and groom walked in one by one, each and groom had their own song the DJ played while they walked in dancing

Then it was finally the time for the husband and wife to walk in...dancing to Ariana's song- Everyday ft future. It was more of dabbing and shaku shaku, then shoulder dancing

anytime I'm alone, i can't help thinking about you.

All i want,all i need, all i see, is just me and you.

He giving me the good shit, that makes me not wanna quit. The good shit×2

Ohh he give it to me (everyday×8) they danced till they reached the others in the front. Where they all danced as a whole. There were scream of " hey, ohh, go girlfriend " by the time they sat down they were breathing heavily.

Well speeches of advices were said by the elders and friends, the couple cut the cake. The Bosquet was thrown and cashed by Amber which made the guys laugh at Christopher. Joaquin did get under

Cora's gown and got the lacey band which was cashed by Charles. The dinner was served and people wouldn't stop compliment the food. Then it was finally time for the husband and wife dance.

.

. call it magic, call it true

I call it magic when I'm with you

And i just got broken, broken into two

Still i call it magic, when I'm next to you

And i don't no i don't no i don't no

No i don't it true

And i don't no i don't no i don't no, want anybody else but you.

I don't no i don't no i don't , no i don't it's true

And i don't no i don't no i don't no i don't, want anybody else but you

.

Call it magic, cut me into two

After all your magic, i disappear from view

And i can't get over, can't get over you

Still i call it magic, said you're precious too

And i don't no i don't no i don't no, no i don't it's true

I don't no i don't no i don't, want anybody else but
you

No i don't no i don't no i don't, i don't it's true And i
don't no i don't no i don't, want anybody else but
you" they were dancing slowly to that song as his
one hand was on his weist, hers on the shoulder and
the other two entertwined. Chest to chest, cheek to
cheek. " I love you" Salvatore whispered into her ear,
" i love you more" she whispered smiling. The other
couples also got on the dance floor. The bride got to
change into her red long satin dance for the after
party where the elders and kids were sent home.
They played all kinds of games, sabg and danced the
night away.

.

" where are we going Joaquin " Cora asked giggling

as they were getting off their private jet and Salvatore had Cora's eyes covered as he helped her down the stair. She was wearing a short summer white dress and sandals, they were on their honeymoon destination which was a surprise for Cora. He help her get into the jeep wranger which was in the airport. " i can hear the sea waves and it's chilly " Cora said as he was helping her off the car which was parked infront of the big beach house at umdloti-Durban. " that's cheating, i should've covered your ears too". He said chuckling. " okay here we go" he said uncovering her eyes. She blinked a few times before looking around, she was met by the big beautifully mansion. " it's a mansion" she said looking at him with a frown. " it's yours my love, a gift from me to you. A holiday house in Durban, in that way we won't have to check into hotels when you're here to see your parents. Plus i have a few businesses this side. It's your wedding gift" he said handing the keys over to her. He slowly took them, " are you for really" she asked smiling. " it's our home" he said. " wow, I'm overwhelmed. I don't know what to say. This must have cost millions" she said as

tears of joy started to form. " okay don't cry on me now, you can go and check it out. I'll come with our bags " he said he ran into the house after unlocking it. It had exactly five bedrooms, the furniture almost all white and leather. With the touch of powder blue. The cojoined dining, kitchen and entertainment which from you could walk to the private beach. One or two minutes away from the house. The wine sailor filled, the cinema, the office, the gym and a playroom for the kids. Cora took off her sandals and threw herself on the kingsize bed which had four poles on each corner then white drapping on each side but they were tied on the poles. A long rectangular couch at the feets of the bed. A bathroom on the rightful, a balcony on the left with sky blue long couch and a glass table.

. Wardrobe, a small couch and a coffe table. " i guess you like it " Salvatore said walking in with their suitcases. " i love it, it's lovely" she said sitting upright. " thank you Joaquin " she said walking towards him. She puts her hands around his neck and looked into his eyes. " i don't know what I've

done to deserve a man like you. It's like you were sent from heaven to just fill my life with pure bliss and love. God knows no words could ever be enough to explain how much i love and appreciate you. Your effort, your unconditional love, kindness, patience. I can be crazy sometimes but you know how to handle my shit. I love you Salvatore " she said. " I love you, you and i have been through a lot. I think we deserve a little bit of happiness. My happiness lies in your happiness, to see you happy makes me happy. So I'd do absolutely everything for you." He said then they kissed, got caaried away. He took off her dressas she raised her hands up, she was left in her panties only. She took off his shorts and vest, boxers and the sandals. He kneeled down and slowly took off her white panties. Her valley of fire cleanly waxed, he looked up at her and smiled. He pulled her down and they both kneeled on the floor of their new bedroom. Kissed while their hands caressed each others naked and beautifully godly made bodies. Send shivers down each other's spine, goosebumps. Blood rush, hearts racing at the same pace as they kissed with somuch hunger and thirst. Her other

hand on her giant cucumber, slowly moving up and down and it was hardening. He layed her down on the cold tiled floor. Went down with the kisses from the collarbones. Inbetween her breasts, down her tummy which had butterfly, her abdomen until he reach the golden pots. He opened her legs widely and kissed her labias before inserting her huge middle finger without a warning. She gasped for air, biting her lower full lip. While she squeezed her boobs. He separated her labias and started sucking her, her back arched as he wouldn't stop. He went on and on, eating her like a beast until she cum. He whole body shaking. She screamed his name. He finger fucked her still, inserting three fingers in her valley of fire then replaced them with the real deal. His giant cucumber, she was tighter since it had been months without them becoming one. They fucked slowly, slowly without any rush. Screaming each others names. She was scratching his back, he turned her around and tapped it from behind until he came inside her. " i love you" he said kussing her bare back. They made love till late at night.

.

Cora's pov

.

I woke up next to my husband, my body hurt. It had last night's bruises and lovebites. I kissed his shoulder then got out of the bed, put on my sleeper and gown. Then went to the bathroom, the sun was rising beautifully on the horizon of the sea.

I found myself kneeling down and closing my eyes. " Thank you...for grace, for mercy, for parents, for the beautifully little family you gave me, thank you for such a loving husband, thank you for life, kindness, prosperity, thank you for the trial and tribulations that moulded the woman i am today, thank you for this day and many more to come. thank you for clarity. Amen" i said then stood up with a broad smile on my face. " hey, come back to bed. It's cold" Salvatore said softly as he was starring at me from the bed. I went back in, took off the gown and got undercovers nakedly. " what were you doing over there" he asked in a whisper. " thanking God...you

know what I've noticed about God's trials?. He hardly ever tells you that this is a trial and if you hold out for six months. You'd be through and some of us gets to five months and 29days then we give up. We didn't know that we had one more day, never give up...you see waiting is the one of the tests God subjects the servants he wants to use.

He said Abraham you're going to have a son who'll be the head of the nation who'll be unique in the earth. But how long did he have to wait 25years. He had to watch his wife grow past the childbearing stage. Then Joseph...who was sold as a slave, his sole came into irons. Until the time that his word came into pass. God was tasting him, what was the test? Waiting. Then Moses had to wait 40 years before he could deliver Egypt. You can't bypass endurance and enter into the promise of God. Just when it seems impossible to hold on, that's the time to hold on. Don't give in, you're in the test. Just hang in there. God is faithful. Waiting causes us to realise more and more our dependent on God" i said, he was busy staring at me with a smile and a frown. " thank

you for the morning sermon or should i say beautifully lecture?" he asked . I giggled a bit. " i want to open a group, for woman going through all kinds of abuse, pain and trauma. I want to make a difference, be the difference. I think i know why God put me through so much at such a young age. I have found my purpose, i want to share my story with the whole world. It might save many" i said with a smile. " what about your dream, your career?" He asked. " who says i can't handle both, I'll open my own surgery and be a motivational speaker on the side" i said. " Damn, that's why i love you, Mrs Salvatore " he said. " and i love you Mr Salvatore " i said giggling as he was tickling me. Getting ontop of me, the rest is history. Our story ended right there on the bed as it has begun, but our journey continues as we continue to face trials and tribulations but after all this we come out more stronger. Stronger and stronger, our love could conquer absolutely everything. There's nothing in the world that i believe in more than our love. This story started with just a 17 year old young woman who knew nothing but pain and suffering but through it all she shined. Like the shining star in the

cave of darkness she shined even more brighter.
Grew into one of the strongest woman. I am Cora
Zabenathi Salvatore and this is my story

.

THE END